



LIMITLESS SWORD GOD

BOOK 01

Fire God

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Limitless Sword God

(无极剑神)

by

Fire God

(火神)

Synopsis

Su Yun was a prodigy, blessed by the gods. However, life is never so easy. Soon after reaching 6th stage in spirit novice realm cultivation, his progress stagnated due to incurring a rare medical condition.

A few years go by, and Su Yun has spent all his time gambling or drinking, wasting his youth away, but one day everything changes. Qing Er, the only one who stood by him was forced by his clan to be a sacrificial bride to someone she didn't love, only to be executed by the groom on the wedding night for fleeing. Burning for revenge, he scoured the world for a cure for his rare medical condition from both righteous and villainous side.

Countless years go by, and finally Su Yun not only found a way to cure his rare condition but also gain immense knowledge on a myriad of martial techniques.

But before he could fully cure himself, he received news that the groom suffered an assault that damaged his internal organs. Rather than wait for decades to become fully cured, Su Yun decided to hatch a plan for the assassinate of the groom. Unfortunately, he underestimated the strength of the groom's family and was killed instead.

Then he regains consciousness. He comes to a realization that he went 15 years in the past. This time, he vowed to protect Qing Er, but first he must cure his rare medical condition. Will he learn from the mistakes of his previous life or is everything still set in stone?

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Soaring Translations, Translation Nations @ [Translation Nations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1 – The Trash Master and Phoenix Maid

It was a cold night. In a shabby hut, a candle was flickering.

Inside the simple and cramped room of the hut, there was only a single bed and chair. Near the bedside, there was a young girl wearing a plain, white military uniform and gazing with a pained face full of tears at a young man on the bed.

The man, whose pale, blue eyes were shut closed, was lying in a coma.

Bang!

The door was pushed open.

A handsome man with a tall build appeared at the entrance of the door.

“Miss, he is probably already dead! I will arrange for people to clean up the corpse. Time is of the essence. Quickly, let’s go back home. If the master of the main house finds out about this unexcused absence, you and I, both, will receive punishment.”

“No! I will not go back. I will stay here and accompany young master,” said the young girl. As she lay on the young master’s chest crying.

“Have you forgotten your responsibilities? Quickly come back with me,” said the handsome man as he frowned.

“Young master has had a sudden accident. Besides, what will I even do after I arrive back at home? Young master gave me a home and raised me since I was little; and now, with him all by himself, how can I just leave him?” As the young girl said these words, tears were raining down from her tired, red eyes.

“You...” An angry scowl emerged on the handsome guy’s face, but he could not say anything.

“Well-”

Just then, a slight groan was heard from the person lying on the bed.

The surprised girl suddenly stopped crying, rushed to the bed, and saw that the thin, pale young man had slowly begun to open his eyes.

“Did he wake up?”

The two people in the room were stunned.

In fact, Su Yun had already woken up. However, he had had a severe headache, so his whole body felt weak to the point where he was unable to move a muscle.

Even though the voice of her master was strange, she was very familiar with it. The girl listened intently to the words the young master spoke, without missing a word.

“Qing Er? Is that really Qing Er? Impossible! Qing Er is already dead... but this voice... You can’t mistake it.”

Su Yun painfully recalled; as he remembered events from the past, his emotions burst out.

“Young master...,” the startled Qing Er said quietly and then cried out, “How great! You have finally woken up!”

Su Yun slowly opened his eyes, only to see a beautiful female face greeting him.

The girl’s face was flawless. She had eyes that shimmered like precious stones, cherry-red lips, and a simple yet flawless beauty that would bewitch and intoxicate anyone.

She was quite young, -only about fifteen or sixteen-, but her body was exquisitely graceful, with a well-endowed chest. However, it was evident that she was still a child, as there were crystal tears on her face. Su Yun could not help but pity her.

Su Yun stared intensely at the girl.

“Qing...Er? Is it really you?” Su Yun gawked.

“It is me... master, it’s me!” Qing Er grabbed her master’s freezing cold hands. “Master, you had an accident. As soon as I heard, I rushed over here. How are you feeling? Do you feel better? Are you hurt anywhere else on your body?” Qing Er asked these questions, full of concern.

“Me?”

Su Yun looked at himself, puzzled

“What happened?”

The familiar people; the familiar scenes. Isn’t this the small hut that little Qing Er used to live in?

Hadn’t this room been sold already?

Furthermore, Qing Er, Isn’t she...”

Su Yun could not understand what was going on. What’s more, his head became even dizzier.

“After eating it, while battling head-on with an intermediate spirit disciple, he still did not die! Hmph! So all that happens is that he remains a miserable wretch,” said the handsome man, beside Qing Er, under his breath.

“Ling Xuan Shi?” Shuyun could not recall anything, since his mind was still foggy.

Su Yun covered his head, “This terrible pain... this feeling... my memories seem so hazy.”

“Seems that Su Yun’s head is heavily injured,” said the handsome man under his breath.

“The damages, from the intermediate spirit disciple to inside your body, must have not been eliminated. Eat some medicine and take a long rest, and you should recover within a few days,” Qing Er said.

As Su Yun stared at Qing Er's beautiful, little face his heart twitched, and he suddenly reached for Qing Er's hand, refusing to let go.

"Mas-Master..." Qing Er could not react.

Her reflex was to let go of the hand, but her heart wanted to remain like this. The scene produced a lovely atmosphere between the two young people.

The handsome man was enraged. He quickly took away Qing Er's hand and said, "Outrageous! Su Yun! You cheap bastard! Even daring to touch Qing Er! I will hack you to death!"

After he finished speaking, he then proceeded to cut Su Yun's head off.

Clang!

As the sword neared Su Yun, a bolt of spirit energy was shot out from Qing Er. The man was forced back and was forced to use his own spirit qi to counter the bolt.

"Mosha, what are you doing? He is my master! Why are you trying to hurt him?" Qing Er angrily shouted as she bit her teeth.

"Master? Only you think of him as master! But to everyone else, he is considered garbage, especially to the main house. You still care about him? Do not forget, you are a promising person in the main house, but it's the exact opposite for this guy. This guy... you should quickly cut all ties with him!"

"Master has always taken care of me! I will not back down when it comes to supporting young master," Qing Er said as she bit down on her lip firmly.

[TL she can't have much more lip can she?!?]

"You need to understand compromise. Look at this garbage: Already eighteen years old, and even with seven artifacts, he could not reach the spiritual realm! He does not even think about

practice. If he is not drinking wine, he is out gambling. How is he different from mud? I heard that you used to serve under him and even got beaten a lot. How do you still have feelings for this scum?! He is an ordinary man now! You and him are in two different worlds. Do you understand now?" Mosha shouted as he lectured.

"You... don't badmouth my master!" Qing Er's face reddened from anger and she shouted back, "Get out of my face!"

"Quickly, come back to the main house," Mosha replied.

"If you don't get out, I will not leave here today," Qing Er answered.

"You... Fine! Truly ignorant!" The man could only helplessly comply and quickly walked out of the room.

Bang!

The door was slammed shut.

A silence soon entered the broken home.

Like the calm after a storm.

Qing Er's complexion finally lightened a bit. After a bit more, she quickly went to the window of the room to look outside for Mosha. Discovering that no one was watching, she quickly took out a grey bag from under her belt and placed it under Su Yun's blanket.

However, as she was completing the action, a hand grabbed her arm.

Startled, Qing Er looked up to see Su Yun looking at her quizzically.

"What is this," asked Su Yun.

"Money," Qing Er whispered, scared that people outside could hear.

Every month, Qing Er would give Su Yun money to survive.

"Where did you get this money?"

“Didn’t Mosha tell Qing Er just now? The main house treats promising candidates very well, such as by giving them money. Because I never finish spending it, I always just give the rest to Su Yun.”

As she said this, Qing Er’s head faced downwards and looked uneasy.

“You don’t even know how to lie,” Su Yun said as he shook his head, “300 is your monthly allowance, but you always give me all of it, don’t’ you?”

A surprised expression appeared on Qing Er’s face.

“How did master know that?”

“What day is it,” Su Yun asked.

“New Dynasty, Year 1001, March 3rd.”

After Su Yun heard this, he became silent.

“Master, what... is wrong,” Qing Er asked with a puzzled expression.

Suddenly, she was captured by a tight hug from Shuyun.

“Qing Er, I’m sorry,” Shuyun apologized.

It was a simple phrase, but it had been left, unsaid for fifteen years.

Qing Er was completely flabbergasted. She simply could not understand her master’s actions. After her master had had an accident, it seemed that he had become a changed man.

After a long time, she gently spoke, “Master, no matter what happens, you have to live. Not just for your wife, but also for yourself. You have to live on, okay?”

Su Yun nodded in response.

A light smile crept unto Qing Er’s face, as she turned to leave the room.

“Master, the hour is late. In a moment, I will get some spirit doctors to look after you. I have to quickly go back to the main house. This time the house head is outside doing business, so he is not at the residence. I snuck out, but even if the house head discovers me, I’m not afraid of fines; but I was worried about master, so... Qing Er will leave. Take the money and maybe use it to buy some food and clothes.”

“No, Qing Er, you take it. From now on, don’t come to deliver money to me anymore.” Su Yun grabbed the purse and threw it at Qing Er.

Qing Er was stunned as she caught the purse, “Was there not enough money?”

“Nope, I just don’t want to live like this anymore.”

As she eyed the man in front of her, Qing Er was startled by this.

He was surprised to find a smile on her face, “Well Qing Er, quickly go back now!”

“Mas...master, is this okay?”

“I feel great.”

“But...”

“Quickly go! If you stay any longer, the house head might find out, and I will also get in trouble.”

Qing Er bit down on her dark-pink lips [TL What lip is there to bite, at this point.]. “Then... Master, if you have any difficulties, don’t hesitate to let me know. We will solve any problem together; and no matter what happens, Qing Er will always stand beside master.”

“No problem!”

Qing Er hesitated, then took a step back and quickly left the hut.

Su Yun took a deep breath. While looking at the flickering candle, his heart rate began to beat really fast.

Bang!

Just a few moments later, the door was flung open again.

However, it was not Qing Er, but the handsome, young man Mosha.

“You haven’t left yet,” asked Su Yun.

“I sent her away. I came back to specifically lecture you,” said Mosha as he coldly stared at Su Yun.

“What do you want to say,” asked Su Yun.

“Just a few things,” said Mosha.

“Then talk.”

“Very well. Even though Qing Er was your mother’s child, Qing Er is very gifted and will later play an important role in the Su family. She has a difficult and long road ahead of her. Furthermore, her partner has already been decided. Although she is grateful to you as a parent, you’ve already fallen so low that you are now not even a member in the main branch. I mean look at yourself. Just what is the difference between you and trash? Look at her, almost in the Phoenix Branch! Just don’t think you can eat swan meat when you’re a toad, alright?” (TL: Basically, a Chinese saying that means that because you are poor, you shouldn’t hope to associate yourself with successful/promising people).

Su Yun was silent.

“Get over yourself!” Mosha sneered, as he turned to leave.

“I want to ask something,” said Su Yun suddenly.

Mosha stopped in his tracks and turned around.

“Qing Er’s marriage is forced, but how was the Sky Branch involved?”

Mosha expressed surprise. “How did you know?!”

“Was this a secret?”

“Not really, but right now, even Qing Er does not know! I believe even you have heard of the Sky Branch before, a place where every person is famous. Anyways, don’t bother the miss anymore! Otherwise, you’ll certainly regret yourself. Also don’t even mention Sky Branch. The Su family will not even let you! There is absolutely no place for you!”

After finishing, Mosha quickly left.

Su Yun lay on his bed.

Previously, after waking up, his mind was dizzy; but now the memories were clear.

Just now, Qing Er and Mosha’s remarks had convinced him of everything that was uncertain in his heart.

He had been reborn.

Based on his memory, Qing Er was already dead.

In his memory, at ten years old, Su Yun had been considered a genius, who quickly reached the fifth stage. During that time, even Qing Er could not have compared to his talent. Qing Er and Shuyun were always monitored by the main family as the most promising candidates for the main house.

However, after the fifth stage, Su Yun’s talent disappeared. For the next eight years, his level of progression only increased his cultivation to only sixth stage.

As a result, Su Yun gradually faded from the limelight of the main house and, eventually left the spotlight all-together.

Later, as a result of his disgrace to his family, Su Yun’s parents kicked him out, causing his self-esteem to sink even further, and eventually led to his fall into depression.

His daily alcohol consumption and gambling had caused him to lose everything else that he owned

On the other hand, Qing Er’s talent continued on, which caused

her to reach the next realm to directly obtain access to the main house.

And yet, Su Yun, who had just turned eighteen, would have his last strength test, which would still only be sixth stage.

In accordance with the Su Family Rules, he was banished to the outer sect and lost all of his family privileges.

The Su family had always been brutal. In other words, it was the survival of the fittest.

For this reason, he left home, and because of unsatisfactory results, he took out his anger at the family steward.

“Those were the contents of my previous world; but this is a new world, so thing is set in stone.”

The su house wanted to climb the ranks of the Profound Sky Sect Branches, so they arranged a special marriage using Qing Er. With Qing E’s looks and talent, she was not short of admirers and many houses coveted her.

The romantic life of Qing Er was not Su Yun’s business, but Qing Er had been against the arranged-marriage candidate.

But what could she do? The marriage had been set, only to serve as a political marriage in order to increase the Su Family’s relationship with the Profound Sky Sect Branch. After Qing Er had seen that nothing could be changed, she decided to give Su Yun one last visit; but Su Yun had been out at the bar, drinking his sorrows away, so he missed the parting.

Qing Er decided to flee, but, in the end, she could not get far. The Profound Sky Sect Branch was enraged and executed Qing Er.

Su Yun remembered it was New Dynasty, May 9th, Year 1005.

After Qing Er died, the Profound Sky Sect Branch had made up a cover story that had said that Qing Er died from disease, which Su Yun believed initially. However, he later found out through the

gossip of elders, the truth of the matter.

Thus, Su Yun had woken up from his hopeless situation.

After his last family member was gone, he began to truly understand himself and recognize the world.

No one would deliver him money every month, no one would help take care of him when he was sick, no one would care about him at all.

Su Yun, after losing, came to understand that he owed Qing Er a debt.

So he had decided to take revenge.

However, how the Profound Sky Sect Branch have been so easy to deal with? How could he have compared to the experts of the spiritual master realms in the branch. This had just been wishful thinking. Nevertheless, Su Yun did not give up. He left the Su Family to travel the world. He looked for an expert to apprentice himself to, so that he could repair his condition and temper his heart and mind.

Even so, many people were baffled by the problem of why he could not enter seventh stage. Even skilled teachers were helpless.

Therefore, Su Yun had become more desperate. He eventually embarked on a road of no return. He snuck into the demon continent, found spiritual artifacts, and even risked confrontation with the Rumo sects. But in doing so, he discovered that he could replace human blood with a demon blood substitute.

But reality was cruel. Even though the blood had been changed, this initial condition was still difficult to repair. In all under the heavens, Su Yun had nowhere else to turn.

It had been a road of no return, after all. However, there was a chance to become a world-class expert.

The original reason that Su Yun suddenly lost talent was that he

suffered from an odd disease.

This spiritually handicapped person would suffer from a rare disorder. However, the disorder was rare, so it was almost always the case that it was hard to detect. Nonetheless, if it was detected, curing it was not that difficult.

However, just as he had begun his treatment, a good opportunity to attack the Profound Sky Sect Branch appeared. Although the timing was perfect, he did not have time to fully cure the illness. When faced with these two choices, he could not wait, since to completely cure the disease it would take decades.

He had thought to himself, “But now was not the same!”

Before he attempted his assassination, he carefully set a strategy. It had been an attempt to use an artifact to behead the Profound Sky Sect elders. Then borrow the artifact’s power to destroy the Profound Sky Sect Branch.

However, he underestimated the strength of the elders of the Profound Sky Sect Branch. During the battle, Su Yun was eventually killed by the elders.

After death, his consciousness returned back to his shack from fifteen years ago. He had returned to a time before Qing Er would flee from the Su Family; a time where it had been three years and four days after he had gotten kicked out of his home.

“God has given me a second chance,” Su Yun muttered.

A vow suddenly appeared in his heart.

Chapter 2 - Not Paying Back

“Two bottles of antidote, a low level medicine drop, one bottle of black wolf blood, three bottles of talcum powder, three pieces of tiger heart meat, then use the rest of the money to give my black spirit stallion a shelter, but make sure to give feed my black spirit stallion. I will need him tomorrow!”

In front of the counter, a young man wearing a green and black attire placed a small pouch of coins on the counter.

His skin was pale, he had thin cheekbones, nonetheless, his overall outline of the face was handsome, especially his pair of eyes, seemed like they had the ability to see through a person's thoughts.

An elderly shopkeeper peered into the small money pouch, stammered: “I say Su Yun, the meat of tiger hearts have nourishing, but you are only at sixth stage. Inferior in terms of cultivation, if you eat the tiger heart meat, be careful of the spirit qi inside the meat! I heard you went to the near the inner sect prefecture and got injured. If you eat the tiger meat, you might be throwing your life away! Are you sure you still want to buy them?”

“Just quickly get the meat ready.”

Su Yun did not try explain.

“He really is fearless,” the elderly shopkeeper said as he shook his head, while he went to prepare the meat.

After a short period of time, the desired product was placed on the counter.

“Three spirit coins for the bottles of antidote, five spirit coins for the low level medicine drops, two spirit coins for bottles of black wolf blood, one spirit coin for the bottles of talcum powder, ten spirit coins for the tiger heart meat, adding the spirit stallion rental, the total comes out to thirty-five spirit coins! If the spirit

stallion is not returned within a week, it will result to an extra charge! If the spirit stallion is wounded, fall ill or is killed, the compensation will have to be paid accordingly.”

While the elderly shopkeeper was talking, he was untying the straps for the small money pouch. Surprisingly, he found that there was exactly thirty-five spirit coins in the pouch, not too little and not too much.

“Next morning, I may have to come back for more materials.”

After he finished conversing with the shopkeeper, he hurriedly left from the store.

Seeing the young man nimbly leave, the elderly shopkeeper could not help but exclaim: “This kid, he rarely comes to the store. How come that this time, he came and bought a bunch of strange materials and even rented a spirit stallion? What does he need the materials for?”

Su Yun quickly exited the store. He was carrying materials that cost his entire life savings.

If he desired to obtain more spirit coins, the easiest method was to find a job working for the families or main house. It would take about a month to earn fifty spirit coins.

Before, Su Yun could never focus on any type of job to earn money. Therefore, he relied on Qing Er’s money.

In front, there was a curved path, seemingly endless, paved with brown stones, painted on top was an illustration of a majestic griffin, which looked very lifelike. On both sides of the path, there were old worn down cottage homes, covered with moss that grew during the countless years.

Every pedestrian using the path was carrying firewood, buckets or materials to transport. Their faces were full of concentration and anxiety. It was an extremely busy street.

Not everyone in Su Family’s territory was related to the Su

family. Some lived there to escape war, while others cultivated for training their bodies or escaped the punishment of various crimes they committed elsewhere. They just lived in Su Family's territory, followed the rules and tried to survive in the cruel and harsh world.

Cultivation training conditions were very simple and modest in this area. The cultivation square for practicing was just an open area, with bricks and stakes enclosing it. The square was in dire need of repair. Near the surrounding area, there were many small stores to buy elementary martial techniques.

There was no spiritual medicine supply, no treasure supply. There was even only one lecturer who came every three days. It was not an exaggeration to say cultivating in this area was painstakingly difficult.

Nonetheless, the Su Family did provide an opportunity for advancement for people in the outer sect.

Su Family rule: If a person enters the 10th stage of cultivation, they are eligible to enter the inner Su sect.

Immediately after entering the inner sect, he will be rewarded a new home and would be able to select a weapon from the storehouse. Every single month, he would be rewarded five advancing spiritual pill and two hundred spirit coins. The person would be also allowed to enter the advanced cultivation practice area and gain access to even more advanced techniques. Basically, it would allow a person's future accomplishment to become much easier.

This was the huge difference in treatment between the inner and outer sect!

For this reason, despite the difficult life of the outer sect, there were many people working hard to increase their cultivation stage to enter the inner sect.

“Hey Su Yun!”

Just then, a shout came from the side of his vision.

Su Yun looked up to see a young man pinned with several badges walking towards him.

These people were from the Main Su Family, the chest badges represented their identity in the Su territory. Their duty in the outer sect was to maintain order in the outer sect.

Su Yun did not think that the overseeing team was actually this group of people.

Su Yun was unfamiliar with these people, since the Su family was so large. There were many people that Su Yun did not have any connections with. Therefore, uncles and brothers were only titles used to address each other. However, he recognized one person.

One head of the Su family was called Su Gui Mu. His father was also in charge of finance. There was also a casino that was operated in the shadows of the Su Family that Su Gui Mu's father also controlled. Unfortunately, most of Su Yun's money that was left by his parents were wasted in the casino.

Su Yun did not like Su Gui Mu, because Su Gui Mu scammed Su Yun of a lot of money from unfair financial contracts. When Su Yun found out what happened, it was already too late.

As Su Gui Mu came over to Su Yun, a sneer crept over his face.

“Hey, Su Yun! I heard you were kicked out of your home!”

Su Yun remained silent.

“Tut, tut, tut, you appeared to be confused.” As Su Gui Mu looked up and down at Su Yun's attire.

“What do you want?” Su Yun said.

“Haha! The isn't anything. It's just you still owe me two thousand spirit coins. I just don't know when will you return the money you borrowed!” Su Gui Mu said as contempt flashed across

his eyes.

“I have no money!”

“No money!” Su Gui Mu’s face immediately turned ugly. He viscously shouted “How dare you owe me money, Su Yun and you still can’t pay me back! Do you know the result of not being able to pay back the money?”

“I know.”

“So are you going to give my money back!?”

“I already said I have no money!”

“You.....” Su Gui Mu was burning up from anger. Suddenly, his angry face disappeared and was replaced with a viscous smile, he patted Su Yun on the shoulder: “Forget it! You only owe me a little money. I’ll give you more time!”

Not yet? This is change of mood was certainly not a good thing.

After talking, Su Gui Mu pulled Su Yun close and asked: “However, brother, nothing in this world is for free. How about you help a brother out, like I helped you? How about you let me take Qing Er to dinner and I will just write the two thousand spirit coins off? I’m even willing to send you another thousand spirit coins.”

“For dinner?” Su Yun frowned.

“I am not asking much. I am only asking for a meal!” Su Gui Mu laughed: “Qing Er is extremely talented, I really admire her! I just want to get to know her and nothing more!”

“But I have heard that you drugged the drinks of women you have taken to dinner and your father raped them! Your father’s influence has allowed him to escape punishment from his crimes every time! Now you want to rape Qing Er, too?”

“You.....dare slander me, my father is honorable, I am innocent.” Su Gui Mu’s face reddened, angrily shouted at Su Yun: “Are you

going to help me? If not, return my money now!!!”

“Not yet!”

Su Yun responded facing Su Gui Mu straight in the face.

“I will fucking kill you! ” Su Gui Mu became furious, and directed his punch straight into Su Yun’s face.

Su Yun carefully stepped back and carefully avoided the punch.

“Only at six stage and is this arrogant? Surround him! I will make sure that he is punished today!” Su Gui Mu shouted.

Behind Su Gui Mu, the men began surrounding Su Yun, cutting off his chance to escape.

However, Su Yun was not nervous at all, he responded: “Su Gui Mu, I do not want you father to be expelled from office. If you do not want that, take you men and walk away!”

“Bah! What ability do you have kid? You were kicked out of you home and dare to challenge me? ” Su Gui Mu sneered with disdain.

“I may not have the capability, but if I inform the master of the house, do you think you will go unpunished?”

After Su Yun finished, Su Gui Mu laughed out loud.

“This is really funny! Su Yun, you still don’t get it? Look at your situation. Appealing to the patriarch of the house? Will the head even believe you when you proclaim everything you said? You are in the outer sect, right now you are not even eligible to enter the inner sect. Now you want to complain to the patriarch of the Su Family? Hahahahaha, this is really a good joke!”

Nonetheless, Su Yun calmly replied: ” I do not, but what about Qing Er?”

“Qing Er? That bitch! Who cares?”

“Are you sure about this?”

“What? You think I am not confident?”

“The disciples of the inner sect, do you really want to mess with them?”

“Inner sect disciples? ” Su Gui Mu was stunned for a bit. Although he was confident about the inner sect, some special disciples such as Qing Er had a lot of backing. He did not know if Qing Er made friends with some high level disciples of the inner sect. Su Gui Mu’s frown deepened.

Su Yun was not beating around the bush, he directly attacked with Qing Er’s status as an inner disciple.

Su Gui Mu face lost his confidence after he thought about it more.

In accordance with what Su Yun said, he couldn’t really afford to provoke the friends of Qing Er.

Even if Qing Er was lying, the inner sect elders will listen to her complaints for sure.

If there really is an investigation, he will probably be found out. His whole family will suffer, especially him and his father. Too many people are involved, the casino will probably have to shut down after. His family may even be ruined.

Seeing Su Gui Mu in a daze, Su Yun decided to leave.

“I do not have money yet.”

A voice floated over.

Su Gui Mu grinded his teeth, but said nothing.

However, things could never end this easily.....

Chapter 3 - The Appearance of a Fellow Traveler

Su Gui Mu was flabbergasted at Su Yun's ability to negotiate. Although Su Gui Mu's family was very influential, they still had many enemies. If word of this got out, his enemies could easily bring his family down from its position. Su Gui Mu just did not want to risk it.

But right now, the casino does not have a cover-up plan for this matter.

Su Yun quickly headed back to his home to begin to cultivate using the materials he bought.

Although his cultivation was not high, his countless years of experience in the world of his past gave him a huge advantage. He had a deep understanding of the methods for cultivating now.

For repairing his meridians, he researched almost every field. His understanding of the body far surpassed most veteran cultivators.

Especially for medicine, Su Yun could be even considered a master, even if it is only barely. In the countless years he travelled the world of his past, he practiced with many renowned cultivators and doctors for repairing his meridians. After years of sweat and toil, his accomplishments for his own body was not to scoff about.

Despite his poor cultivation talent, Su Yun still had an impressive learning capability for memory and understanding capability.

Nonetheless, cultivation speed was not based on learning ability. His body was still damaged.

But that was the problem in his later years. Right now, he already knows how to cure his condition. He will use the herbs to quickly heal himself, so he can finally begin cultivating.

After he finishes curing his condition, his talent will be able to

come back.

These were Su Yun's thoughts in his heart.

However, as he neared his hut, a low growl reached his ears.

Su Yun glanced at the origin of the sound. He saw a luxurious carriage pulled by a beast with a huge purple body the size of a cow and two large horns.

The purple beast emitted a mighty aura, his body seemingly filled with energy, comparable to the legendary spiritual beasts of the wild. This beast was also very loyal and only recognized one master in its entire life. The purple horned beast is said to be able to pull a 400 kg carriage easily. It could act as a horse to pull a carriage, but also give adequate protection when needed. Therefore, this beast was very expensive, which the rich could only afford.

Su Yun glanced over the yellow sign on the carriage and immediately knew the person who came over.

As he carried his materials, he slowly walked towards his hut.

Kacha.

The hut door was slowly pushed open.

Before the worn out table, there was an old-haired elder sitting while drinking tea from a chipped cup.

Su Yun looked over the the white haired elder, then at the luxurious carriage parked outside, eyes shaking a little and quickly closed the door.

“Su Gongzai, long time no see, how are you doing?”

The white elder straightened up and faced Su Yun with respect.

“The white elder sees my current embarrassing situation, what would you like to talk about? For you to personally come, it must be something important, right?”

Su Yun placed his materials on the floor as he talked.

The white elder's eyes flashed with doubt as he swept his eyes on the materials, but did not inquire about the purpose of the materials, instead he went straight to the point: "For today, I only have one thing to talk to you about."

"Do tell."

Su Yun gave a genuine smile, waiting for the response.

The white elder gently took a white envelope from his breast pocket and placed it on the table.

"This is a parchment that is worth thirty thousand spirit coins, which will be honored by any one of the banks in the prefecture." The white elder continued: "Today, I came in accordance with the mission given to me by Miss with a message to convey to you. Miss was already adored by the Immortal Sword Sect and was announced as the heir. I am afraid that the future spiritual partner will elect others for candidates of marriage and therefore, I want you to lift the marriage. This envelope, will.....be your compensation."

Su Yun held his silence.

It seemed that the White Family has come.

The Su Family and White Family were comparable to each other, but the Immortal Sword Sect was much more powerful. It had hundred of thousands of sects with the influence much more far-reaching than the two families.

Miss of White House is extremely gifted, which fit your peerless talent before. However, you have lost everything and Miss of White House still retained her talent, so the only result is the dissolution of marriage between you two. Now Su Yun, you have nothing, no talent, no status, not even enough food or clothing, how can Miss of White House become your bride?"

While Su Yun opened his bag of materials he bought today, he said: "Take the money away!"

The white elder's face changed to a cold expression: "You do not agree?"

"I agree." Su Yun said in an unmoved and calm manner and continued: "However, in order to officially dissolve the marriage, we need the people affected by the issue to come personally and ask for it."

After the white elder heard these words, a look of surprise arrived on his face. He thought for a moment, nodded and then walked towards the door of the hut.

He quickly walked outside to the carriage and went towards the window. Then the white elder gave a salute by the window.

After a moment, the curtain of embroidered silk was lifted and a woman wearing a light yellow sleeved dress went down the steps of the carriage.

The woman looked beautiful. She had perfect facial features, a well proportioned shoulder and waist, skin the color of creamy white orchids, and eyes like gemstones. She naturally emitted a charming aura. She was a woman that would cause men around her to naturally care for her.

As she lightly walked towards the hut, if you looked carefully, you could see a slender sword under the embroidered sleeves of her dress.

Creak.

The door was pushed open.

Inside was Su Yun, who was still sorting out the materials he bought for cultivation. He did not even give her a glance as she entered the hut.

Bai Yan was not angry at all.

In her opinion, Su Yun was perhaps disguising his feelings.

The youth in front of her was had a piece of tiger heart meat on

the table and began to use a knife to poke a small hole through it. Then he removed the wolf blood and began to pour it into the small hole and continued these actions.

What was he doing?

She did not understand, but she really didn't care.

"I want to dissolve the marriage."

The clear and pleasant words hung in the air, like a spring breeze blowing through.

After she said those words, she stared at Su Yun, waiting for a response.

However, there was no change in Su Yun's expression, he did not even frown.

"Okay."

A word came out.

It was bland and did not cause any ripples.

Bai Yan was stunned.

She did not understand why Su Yun even seemed happy.

".....You promise?"

She was not confident as she asked these words.

"Yes."

Su Yun's expression remained aloof.

Bai Yan eyebrows creased.

I do not know why, but she felt this person was not the useless person as in the rumours. He did not seem like the gambler and alcoholic the rumours described. Why did the actual person and the rumours differ so much?

Well, forget it.

She then placed the white envelope gently on the table.

“Take the money away!” Su Yun shouted.

“You do not need it?” Bai Yan asked.

“Yes.” Su Yun responded.

“Why? Do you want to save face in front of me?” Bai Yan could not help but sneer: “ I heard you owe Su Gui Mu a lot of money, but your gambling money is dwindling. It is sufficient for you to use this thirty thousand to pay Su Gui Mu back right?”

“It’s not arrogance or conceit, but my principle. My actions have come to a stop and violated my principle, so I must change.” Su Yun said.

“Well, since you insist, I hope you do not regret it!” Bai Yan took the money and turned away to walk out the exit.

“Wait.”

Su Yun suddenly said.

“Bai Yan’s eyebrows raised as she turned turned back towards him: “What else do you have to say?”

“I just want to say one more thing.”

“Okay, say it.”

“I hope you do not regret it.”

Su Yun finished.

But in Bai Yan’s ears, she was unimpressed.

She did not say anything and turned to leave the hut. She did not take the last thing he said to heart at all.

Roar!

After a while, the purple beast began to move and the carriage began to speed away.

Su Yun heart remained very calm, for this was only a small episode of his life. It did not affect him much. Even in his previous

life, he had forgotten about the White House.

He did not even care for his own woman, how could he care for Bai Yan?

Su Yun shook his head and continued to pound the tiger heart meat on table. He continued until the black wolf blood thoroughly permeated into the meat. He repeated his actions like a machine: poking holes, injecting blood, beating and repeat...

After a day of hard work, he stopped and went to bed.

If he could not cure his disease, cultivating was futile. His only way to was quickly find ways to cure his condition.

“Hurry! Hurry! Bastard, he actually dared try to trick me! In a bit, everyone should use their full strength and give this guy a proper beating! We will beat him to death today!”

Just as Su Yun was about to go to sleep, one shrill clamor came from outside. Then, he heard the rustling of footsteps coming towards his hut.

Su Yun's eyes widened, suddenly jumped out of bed and looked outside.

Chapter 4 - Mysterious Devil Technique

This voice, it's Su Gui Mu.

The tone was furious, Su Gui Mu's daytime intimidation was nothing compared to the seething anger he portrayed right now.

Although the Qing Er was an inner sect disciple, she was still a commoner. This meant that in the main house, she did not have power and could not directly interfere in internal family matters, so Su Gui Mu was unafraid of Su Yun's earlier threats.

Looking at Su Gui Mu's complexion, he saw that he was pouring out killing intent.

If Su Gui Mu took action tonight, there would be no consequences. Right now, Su Yun was disabled, kicked out of his home, had low status, and no money. Even if Su Yun died, nobody would even bat an eye.

Time was of the essence, there cannot be any more surprises.

Su Yun's heart began to beat faster. Then he jumped to the table, picked up the black wolf blood left on top of the table, dipped his finger in it and put on his clothes.

Shua.Shua.Shua.

Su Yun began to paint a skull on his shirt.

His movements were quick, skilled and soon a demon skull pattern appeared on his chest.

Demon school basic ghost technique: Ghost Skull Array. The pattern was extremely simple, even a sixth stage disciple such as Su Yun could easily utilize the technique. Using the chest area as the origin, the blood as the medium, and the surrounding ghost skull array to activate the technique. This technique accessed the power within the body, making a powerful aura, and resulting in the body becoming blood crimson, multiplying the user's strength.

However, this technique would only last for ten minutes, resulting in the user fainting because it used the user's blood to fuel power for the technique. Afterwards, the user would require a lot of blood to recover.

The Immortal Sect would never teach this technique, it was exclusive to demon sect disciples. Especially since the technique was reckless and very simple. This is why the Immortal Sect tried to eliminate these types of techniques, because these techniques would cause a shift in power.

Because of the rare disease that Su Yun had, this odd ghost technique was very familiar to him. Su Yun had practiced many different types of techniques that did not rely on his cultivation stage.

After completing the Ghost Skull Array, Su Yun poured his spirit qi into it, activating the technique. Su Yun's body immediately began to turn crimson, sweat began to pour out, and his eyes began to give off a faint blood-red, gaining a sinister look.

Crash!

The door was rudely broken open.

Piles of people rushed in.

"Su Gui Mu."

Su Yun breathed heavily, while the men began to pour inside his little hut.

The people rushing in were stunned by Su Yun's crimson skin, causing them to become cautious.

Su Gui Mu asked in a trembling voice: "Su Yun, you....what did you do?"

"Why have you charged into my home in the middle of the night?"

Su Yun asked while enduring the pain caused by his blood being

consumed by the technique.

Hearing Su Yun, Su Gui Mu frowned: “Of course to collect the money you owe me! You owe me so many spirit coins and today, I will collect them!”

“Did we not agree to wait?”

“Wait? Wishful thinking! To tell you the truth, even if Qing Er goes to the main house to complain, I am not afraid. Therefore, either kneel down, beg for mercy and pay me back or I will cripple you! I will turn you into the useless trash that you really are! Choose!”

Su Gui Mu spoke with an arrogant smile.

He was determined to punish Su Yun!

Su Yun remained silent.

After a moment, he asked.

“Is there no third choice?”

“No!” Su Gui Mu answered.

“Then I will make one!” Su Yun responded.

“Make one?” Su Gui Mu paused for a moment.

As he was looking at Su Yun, Su Yun moved as fast as lightning and rushed towards him.

Su Yun’s spirit qi exploded out, his body’s spirit qi flowed outwards like a flood had broken through a dam.

“Excellent movement technique, young master.....is he really only sixth stage?”

One of the subordinates exclaimed.

The others did not even have time to give a remark, because at that moment Su Yun’s fist had already reached Su Gui Mu’s chest.

Bang!

Su Gui Mu was caught off guard and directly flew out the door. As he fell down hard on the ground, he spat a mouthful of blood and barely kept himself from fainting.

Surprise!

Shock!

Everyone was completely stunned!

Although Su Gui Mu was not a genius, he was still at seventh stage cultivation compared to Su Yun's trash sixth stage cultivation. However, Su Gui Mu was grievously wounded with only one punch from Su Yun!

This was only possible for disciples of early ninth stage cultivation, but it was hard for even peak eighth stage cultivation.

But....how could Su Yun do it?

“Young master!!!”

After the members recovered, they rushed to prop Su Gui Mu up.

None dared to provoke Su Yun.

After the bout, they knew that if they attacked Su Yun, they would suffer the same or even worse than Su Gui Mu.

Although it was a trick, it managed to fool Su Gui Mu's six members.

If Su Yun was a ninth stage cultivator, the members would not be a match for him.

“You.....how could you have such strength?”

A guy called Su Wang Cai asked with shock and hostility in his eyes as he stared at Su Yun.

“Why can't I have this kind of strength?”

“You....obviously because you are only a sixth stage cultivator.” Su Gui Mu got up wiping the blood from his mouth, then he weakly said with resentment: “ However, you dared to hurt me! Su

Yun! Fine! Maybe I underestimated you, but I will make you suffer a miserable death!”

“You want to get back at me?” Su Yun asked.

“Why do I have to do it? I can just ask my father....he will let Su regulatory law punish you!”

“You guys are sorely mistaken!” Su Yun shook his head.

“How? With my father’s influence, how couldn’t take care of you?” Su Gui Mu asked.

“Of course he could!” Su Yun said.

“Hahahahaha, this is really funny!” Su Gui Mu laughed out loud.

“Su Yun, maybe you have evaded punishment two times now. However, the end result is still the same. What can you do against the people from major powers?”

A short bearded man disdainfully said.

“It is like a mantis trying to stop a carriage or like ants trying to shake a tree!” (TL: basically, someone trying to do the impossible) Several people sneered.

But Su Yun did not appear angry, he only gazed at the crowd, put on a hesitant look, and then said: “It is a secret, the master of the house did not let me speak about this. However, today the secret will have to come out.”

Everyone’s smiling face disappeared.

“You should know that the last strength test, I was only ranked at sixth stage cultivation. In fact, it was fake! I had already entered that realm a long time ago. The so-called sixth stage trash is only what outsiders know! Why do I hide this? This is because I am the Su Family’s secret weapon!”

“Secret....Weapon?” Su Gui Mu was flabbergasted.

“Yes!” Su Yun said: “This is something that a very only a few

trusted people know about, I am not sure, but if you remove me, then your family will most likely be banished from the Su Family! After all, the Su Family promised me no harm as long as I remained a secret weapon. Nonetheless, I gave you face, otherwise you would be dead! I only punched you and caused some minor injuries. To kill you, it is as simple as killing an ant. Easy!”

After the words were said, everyone was terrified.

Su Gui Mu looked at his surrounding subordinates in confusion.

“Young master, he.....what he said is probably true. There is no way he is only at sixth stage cultivation, otherwise that punch would have not injured you so badly....uh....”

“If what he said is true, then we must be careful of provoking Su Yun now.....he may contain even more secrets!”

“I.....we’ll withdraw quickly, so we will not further provoke this guy!”

The nearby members of Su Gui Mu’s group did not care about Su Gui Mu’s mission anymore. They only tried to persuade Su Gui Mu to leave!

“But.....is this it?” Su Gui Mu was still unsatisfied.

One punch caused this?

However, what will be the result? Su Yun just spared him! A sixth stage cultivator can seriously wound a seventh stage cultivator to brink of death? Is he really an outer sect disciple? He must be hiding his power, what he said is probably true! Master, we have to tolerate the humiliation, so we will leave.

“Quickly men! Help me up!” Su Gui Mu said as he gritted his teeth.

“Yes....Yes sir.” The group led by Su Gui Mu all turned to leave.

“Stop!”

Su Yun suddenly shouted.

Everyone shivered. Su Gui Mu stared at Su Yun with a complex gaze.

“What more....what more do you want?” Su Gui Mu hissed.

“The part of me being a secret weapon, do not go proclaiming it to everyone, otherwise, if a person from the main house heard of it, do not expect to keep on living!”

Su Gui Mu and his group all shivered and nodded.

“Tomorrow morning, bring a pound of fire monkey blood, otherwise, I will not forget this matter!”

Su Yun continued.

“A pound of fire money blood?” Su Gui Mu almost spat out his words. “It will take five thousand spirit coins!”

Fire monkeys were very precious and rare. Therefore, the blood was even more rare and expensive. Su Yun was asking for a pound, Su Gui Mu could not believe Su Yun’s audacity.

“I will use it for cultivating. Count it as the item that you will give to me for sparing your life. You do not agree? You even look reluctant? Do not provoke me or I will take something much more important.”

Su Yun said with indifference, but everyone present could tell he was threatening Su Gui Mu and his group.

Su Gui Mu’s heart filled with regret, but how could he offend Su Yun right now? Su Gui Mu could only bear his anger and quickly leave.

Soon, the hut returned to its tranquil atmosphere.

But after the group left, Su Yun collapsed on the ground....

Chapter 5 - People Sneaking in the Night

His father was suspicious after Su Gui Mu returned injured, but did not delve deeper. Nonetheless, Su Yun's display of strength was enough. Su Yun no longer feared of any retaliation from Su Gui Mu.

The next morning, Su Wang Cai brought the fire monkey blood to the hut.

Su Yun accepted the fire monkey blood after he propped himself up. Soon after, Su Wang Cai left and Su Yun began to quickly drink the fire monkey blood.

The fire monkey blood was an extremely expensive, top grade item, therefore, Su Yun's body began to quickly recover.

Soon after, mostly recovered, Su Yun began to place the prepared meat into a sack. The blood was wrapped to avoid it from seeping out of the bag. Then, he took some steamed buns and a few rusted swords.

Once everything was ready, he headed for the marketplace.

Using the black spirit stallion he rented before, Su Yun went on the path to the city and sped away.

The black spirit stallion was a type of spirit stallion that had a large amount of spiritual strength, while sprinting, it solely relied on its spirit qi. In addition, the pace was quite fast comparable to a racing stallion.

The Su Family did not restrict anyone's freedom, allowing free access to the territories outside of the Su Family. However, with the rampaging beast of the mainland, it was extremely difficult to survive in the wilderness. Once a person left the Su Family, they would be on their own, which meant that surviving would be an everyday struggle for them.

As a sixth stage cultivator, Su Yun did not even have the strength

to kill the weakest beasts of the wilderness. Therefore, he could only follow the main path through the woods carefully, to avoid any trouble, and tried to hurry to his destination.

Nonetheless, as Su Yun travelled countless kilometers, he did encounter a few rampaging beasts. Therefore, he could only sneakily evade them as he quickly hurried to his destination.

Finally, after two days of riding the spirit stallion, he finally arrived at his destination...

The Tiger Plains!

Su Yun's hut was about 500 kilometers away from the Tiger Plains.

His black spirit stallion was exhausted, so Su Yun pulled it to a clearing and tied it to a tree. Then, he found some fodder(TL: spirit stallion feed) for the spirit stallion. Afterwards, he then headed to the Tiger Plains.

The Tiger Plains was under the jurisdiction of the Immortal Sword Sect. Furthermore, this area was home to the Immortal Sword Sect's Number One school of their seven schools.

If one did not have eighth stage cultivation, it would be suicide to try to enter the plains.

Here, countless vicious spiritual beasts ran amok, everywhere was dangerous, the area was covered by poisonous gas. If one makes a small mistake and encountered a spiritual beast that was too strong, that person would not even be able to escape.

Su Yun began to carefully enter the plains. The outer areas of the Tiger Plains did not contain spiritual beasts that would truly endanger to Su Yun, so he was safe for now.

He carefully treaded deeper into the plains and entered an open area.

The open area of the plains had a river flowing through. The

flowing water was clear and did not have any monsters inside. The water seemed to be flowing into the sea.

Su Yun went to the side of the river and walked along it.

Roar!

After the sudden sound, a rustling was approaching from the forest.

Su Yun's face suddenly changed and quickly jumped into the river.

Splash!

Su Yun began to dive.

Even with Su Yun's skill, there was a problem with the meat he was carrying as he dived.

Utilizing some water repelling drops, they spread around the surrounding water, and began to create a shrouding mist that wrapped around him. This allowed the river's water to become isolated from the tiger meat he was carrying.

On the shore stood a beast that contained a white body as big as a calf, with demon-like red eyes, sharp fangs, and a ferocious hellhound head. It was only a stage one spiritual beast, however, even ten Su Yun would be unable to compete with the beast.

The beast had smelled Su Yun's scent and quickly rushed over.

However, Su Yun was currently underwater.

Many creatures of the Tiger Plains were not comfortable with water, many were even afraid of water. The river bend he was at protected his life.

The white hellhound stood a moment, but after seeing that Su Yun was not coming ashore, it turned to leave.

Upon seeing this, Su Yun swam for a few more minutes. Then, he turned towards the central plains shore and jumped out. He

squeezed the water off his clothes and continued on foot.

On his way, he met a myriad of spiritual beasts. Fortunately, the same technique worked on these spiritual beasts he encountered. Nonetheless, it was not easy. Many of the spiritual beasts could cast magic, resulting in several splashes above the water where he swam. Luckily, the magic blasts never hit him.

Su Yun could only swim in the river, moving forward to his destination. If the shockwaves of a magic blast explosion hit his body, he could only grit his teeth in pain and continue. If he stopped, it would only mean death.

After laboriously swimming, experiencing countless dangers, after three hours, he finally reached his destination: Tiger Plains Center – Forbidden Tiger Emperor Grounds.

This forbidden grounds was off-limits to the beasts of the Tiger Plains, because there was an active spiritual beast king here. There was a spiritual beast of unknown realm at the grounds: Everlasting Tiger.

The tiger's body was absolutely huge, the size of it was close to a few small rooms. Its whole body was an eerily green. It had razor sharp claws and teeth. However, Su Yun's biggest fear was the two holes by the mouth of the tiger, which could shoot out toxic gas that could erode through anything it touched.

Many people talked about coming here, but without core spiritual realm, they would not dare to set foot here.

After leaving the family's home, Su Yun set out to accomplish a task for the family. Under the moonlight, he came across the tiger. It was a narrow escape, but luck was on his side. He had run across a team of adventurers that assisted Su Yun to escape the early jaws of death.

After accumulating experience, he was not afraid of the Everlasting Tiger a bit.

Everlasting Tigers usually had their lairs set up as a tilted burrow, which was in a very open area. This allowed the tiger to freely move about.

With his past experience, Su Yun quickly discovered two different burrows.

However.

He did not dare come too close.

The famous Everlasting Tiger had absolute power. If Su Yun was found out, he would easily be caught. Even if Su Yun tried to escape into the water, the Everlasting Tiger would just poison the river with Su Yun in it.

Five hundred meters was the most suitable distance.

Because it was the plains, there were no trees or boulders obstructing Su Yun's vision. As long as he could distinguish the tiger burrows, he could calculate the distance.

Soon after, Su Yun confirmed the location of his first tiger den.

However, one was not enough.

He marked the position and continued to search for his next tiger lair.

The Everlasting Tigers in the area divided the area and each owned their territory. A tiger must never lightly enter another tiger's territory.

After an hour, on the back of the first marking, about five thousand meters away, Su Yun confirmed his second hole.

Not too far away, Su Yun could hear the bursts of sounds that resembled a tiger's growl emitting from the den. The sound could make anyone nervous.

It seemed that this den had an Everlasting Tiger resting inside.

Su Yun got a stone and painted at roughly the distance between

the location of the two dens. After calculating a few points, he then removed the tiger heart meat from his bag.

Tigers were low level core spiritual beast. Su Yun did not know the reason, but tigers loved to eat tiger heart meat and tearing the flesh from it.

Su Yun made some quick calculations after placing it the meat, then immediately turned toward the den without the tiger.

However, after only running a few steps, he heard a roar coming from behind him.

The Everlasting Tiger left his den?

Su Yun was startled.

He hurried to a stop, climbed up the side of a boulder, and looked towards the distance at a huge green body left the nest, ready to eat the food he left out.

Su Yun seeing this, immediately left a piece of the tiger heart meat on the ground and stared at the green tiger ready to leave the den. After taking a deep breath, he removed a bottle of Talcum, opened the cap and with all his strength, threw the bottle toward the distance.

As pink powder scent filled the air, the bottle flew in a parabolic shape towards the nest and landed not too far from it.

Clink!

The bottle landed on the ground.

Ready to leave Everlasting Tiger raised his head to sniff the air and was enticed by the strange smell. He immediately dashed towards the boulder at a fast pace.

Near the boulder, the scent of tiger heart meat made the Everlasting Tiger's mouth fill with drool.

A disc sized piece of tiger heart meat was on the ground!

The Everlasting Tiger growled with delight. It immediately opened its mouth and took a large bite out of the tiger heart meat. After a few savage chews, the black wolf blood oozed out of the tiger heart meat. The wolf blood filled his mouth and entered the two holes inside his mouth. It mixed with the gas and began to create a noxious liquid.

The tiger's mouth began to feel very painful, as gas accumulated inside the two holes and needed to vent out. However, the gas flew into the tiger's mouth because it was blocked by the food it ingested.

The tiger began to feel extremely uncomfortable. Its whole body felt as if it was boiling up, hunger, restless was slowly rising and the gas filling up inside.

The sweet fragrance from the Talcum powder was still in the air.

The Everlasting Tiger immediately headed towards the source of the fragrance.

At the aroma's source, Su Yun held open the lid to let the fragrance evaporate out.

As the distance between the two closed, he took out another piece of tiger heart meat and placed it on the ground.

Su Yun continued repeating this actions and maintained precise timing. This was very dangerous, the aroma that had to lure the Tiger needed to be place before the Tiger arrived, but not until after the Tiger had finished the tiger heart meat he was on. If he made a single mistake, the Everlasting Tiger would brutally rip apart Su Yun.

Before he almost used up all the spirit qi in his body to maintain his lead, he finishing placing his last piece of meat and threw the last bottle. Then he turned and fled.

Here, it was already the outskirts of Everlasting Tiger's territory, and if other tigers were trespassing, it would have absolutely

attacked. Usually tigers would quit before they reached other territories, but today was different.

During his past Flower Valley training, Su Yun discovered a classical recipe called: “Viscous Spirit Beast Medicine.”

Black wolf blood could be used as a drug. It would shortly enhance combat ability but the user would become extremely hungry and aggressive.

The recipe was very effective, but it had few uses. On the contrary, today, it did a great favor for Su Yun.

The wolf blood mixed with tiger’s toxin must be equal, thereby causing starvation and eagerness to fight. When each piece was eaten, the aroma would lure it to the next piece. The process was very important.

After Su Yun’s last bottle was thrown, the roars was perhaps too close for comfort. The Everlasting Tiger was closer than it should have been.

Nonetheless, after Su Yun threw the bottle into the air, Everlasting Tiger was much more enticed by the tiger heart meat. It would not even care about Su Yun at the moment even if it could sense Su Yun’s presence.

They were delicious!

As soon as the Everlasting Tiger saw another piece of meat, it would accelerate its pace, as more liquid accumulated in its bloody mouth.

As this Everlasting Tiger neared the piece of meat, another ferocious roar came from the vegetation. Another tiger had come out directly walking towards the Everlasting Tiger.

The two tigers immediately began to engage in a death match.

On one end was a tiger that was angry of another tiger that trespassed its territory. On the other end was a Everlasting Tiger

fighting for food, drugged with wolf blood and armed with poison. The two began to crazily fight each other. Claws were flying through the air, the radius of a few hundred meters had become the battleground.

Meanwhile, Su Yun was hiding very far away, quietly waiting.

For safety's sake, he was very far away. He could not see the fight and only judged by the deafening bursts of roars and claws slashing.

This fight was fought until dusk, the ground shook, poison gas shrouded the fight, and the powerful clashes scared away any creatures that were too close.

After four hours, the roar and sounds of battle began to gradually weaken.

In the battle of two tigers, there was heavy injury, but under the mixing of black wolf blood and the Everlasting Tiger's poison effect, the result was obvious. The Everlasting Tiger died.

Su Yun, who had been hiding nearby, waited for a few hours. After it was getting dark, the toxin had finished evaporating. He rushed out of his hiding place and ran towards the fighting grounds.

The earth itself was glowing green of tiger blood, but in the open, was a absolutely battered dead tiger, its eyes were pulled open, covered in bite and claw marks, with blood still flowing out.

Su Yun hastily removed a prepared bottle, and rushed to fill it with tiger blood. He filled bottle after bottle. The bottle of tiger blood had great medicinal value, it was a "fine high-end blood red" material, worth five hundred Spirit coins. The bladder of the tiger was worth at least one thousand Spirit coins, because it had nourishing properties. It could increase a cultivators speed of cultivation. Furthermore, the spiritual core of the tiger was the most coveted part of them all. Although it could only be used once.

If swallowed, it could directly increase a person's cultivation stage. The price was at least four thousand spirit coins.

After completely harvesting the remains of the tiger, he carefully wrapped his harvest in special cloths, so they would not be spoiled.

After finishing up, Su Yun did not directly leave. Instead, he walked towards the den of the dead tiger.

Chapter 6 - Limitless Sword Arts

Cultivators had a total of 10 realms. Starting from: Spirit Novice Disciple, Spirit Intermediate Disciple, Spirit Core Disciple, Spirit Soul Disciple, Spirit Star Disciple, Spirit Master, Sky Spirit Master, Spirit Emperor, Spirit Sage and Spirit Immortal.

Evidently, the Spirit novice disciples was respectful towards anyone of the existence of the ten realms. For a Spirit Emperor, he would only need to give respect to the five realms above his. However, for the realms after the fairy realm, it was unknown, because no one had ever witnessed someone of that might.

Su Yun's body had a extremely rare disease, which many people determined was incurable. However, Su Yun knows that Spirit Tiger blood combined with a special herb inside the Spirit Tiger's den would be the easiest way to begin curing his disease.

After arriving at the dead Everlasting Tiger's den, Su Yun brought out an antidote for fast consumption. Then, he went inside...

There were scattered bones of spirit beasts inside the den, but that was not worrisome. The trouble was the noxious fumes still left inside the depths of the den.

Although the noxious fumes was not concentrated, the depths of the den were shrouded in it.

Every time Su Yun became dizzy from breathing in the noxious fumes, he would drink the antidote that he brought. Then, his head would clear up immediately.

After cautiously walking deeper into the den, he finally arrived at the edge of the den.

Before, when he was looking for an Everlasting Tiger, he specifically picked a male tiger, so there would be no cubs inside the den. Otherwise, Su Yun would have a difficult decision to

make.

A pile of large white spirit beast bones entered Su Yun's line of site. Situated in the middle of the pile of bones was an enchanting moss green flower.

Fierce White Flower!

This was no ordinary herb, because it only grew in the conditions of a spirit tiger den. To grow, the flower would need bones of spirit beasts and the noxious fumes the Everlasting Tiger emitted out. The current market value of the flower was at least three thousand spirit coins each!

After Su Yun found the flowers, he was overjoyed. He quickly stepped past the bones, pushed aside the bones and then carefully harvested the Fierce White Flower.

The Fierce White Flower was very enchanting. It was like a white lily that was overflowing with a succulent scent, but sweet scent was poisonous, and shouldn't be breathed in.

Of course, the Fierce White Flower could not be taken directly as medicine, as that would mean certain death.

It was absolutely necessary to use tiger blood to wash the toxins residing in the flower before ingesting it. Otherwise, the flower was just another deadly herb.

Inside the den, it was shrouded in noxious fumes, so it was not a good place to ingest the medicine. Su Yun turned around and headed to leave the den.

“Huh?”

Just then, something in the corner of the tiger den by the white bones caught Su Yun's eye.

There was a skeleton that looked like it had died a long time ago. Its clothes and possessions were all corroded. The bones were dry and its foot was even broken. But what caught Su Yun's attention

was the parchment in the skeleton's hand.

Its cause of death was not necessarily the Everlasting Tiger.

Su Yun quickly went to the skeleton to remove the parchment.

As he opened the parchment, he was surprised to find a strange inscription written on it.

The parchment was processed, and the strange inscription still looked shiny and magical, even after it had been worn out a bit.

“What is this?”

Su Yun looked right and left on the parchment.

The inscription on the parchment was unrecognizable, he had never seen it before.

Some of the patterns looked like dragon technique inscriptions, while others looked like demon technique inscriptions...

After scanning it for a few minutes, Su Yun still had no clue.

Never mind, I do not want to think about it. I will not dwell on this matter like life and death. Maybe I could ask some people in the main city to determine the origins.

In Su Yun's mind, the parchment could probably make a nice profit as he quickly left the den.

After he found a quiet place, he took out the Fierce White Flower.

After the Fierce White Flower was harvested, it had to be used in one hour. Otherwise, the flower would wither away and disappear.

There was no more delay.

From top to bottom, the Fierce White Flower was washed.

The blood dried up as it seeped into the flower.

Then, he could ingest it.

The Fierce White Flower entered his stomach. Immediately, Su Yun sat down cross-legged, as the flower was being digested within

minutes. The Fierce White Flower began to cure him of the disease that plagued his body.

His heart pace quickened.

After suffering for so long, it had finally ended.

As the flower was working, his abdomen began to heat up: growing hotter and hotter. It felt like someone from another planet came to light firewood in his stomach area. (Tl: just began to feel scorching hot)

This did not stop as the temperature steadily escalated for Su Yun. It began to feel like it was burning crazily.

Su Yun felt his whole body was being roasted and was very uncomfortable.

The medicine's initial effect?

He shut his eyes, gritted his teeth as he endured the pain as large beads of sweat dripped down his cheeks.

He had never known the true effects of the Fierce White Flower. He only heard the recounts of people that had used it before.

To find an expert that used the Fierce White Flower on a patient was too difficult.

Nonetheless, the prescription should work, so Su Yun endured the heat.

There was only one easy cure for his condition: this flower. There was no other choice.

He did not just want to be an inferior existence of only a sixth stage cultivator.

He did not want to achieve nothing again.

He did not want to be muddle headed again.

He did not want to be looked down upon again.

He did not want to lack the power to protect anyone, especially

those that are important to him.

Boom!

Something in his body seemed to have exploded. Su Yun's skin had become very red, like red hot iron in a blacksmith's workshop.

Although he was still uncomfortable, he felt something was released from his body.

A familiar feeling caused him to feel joy and excitement!

Good!

Very Good!

Soon after the explosion, his body began to return to his original state. His original state was extremely skilled at sensing spirit qi.

It was this state that he had now.

Su Yun's heart was in ecstasy as the effect of the flower continued as it was ingested.

But.

The mysterious power of spirit qi sense did not stop. The phenomenal growth continued past his former self.

What was going on?

Su Yun did not know. Yet, he endured tenaciously, while his body felt like a large stove, scorching hot and making him uncomfortable.

His breathing began to become difficult and everything in his body was not in his control anymore.

What was wrong?

Su Yun suddenly opened his eyes, took deep breaths, but the strange symptoms on his body did not stop, instead, they intensified.

This medicine's effect seemed to be controlling his body. The

effect was quickly spreading through his body. Su Yun's body began to feel like a time bomb, as long as the heat would reach a certain level, he felt that he would explode.

Wow.

Just then, an odd noise sounded.

Then, the scorching feeling suddenly disappeared and the White Fierce Flower decomposed completely. The medicine previous effect did not leave a trace on Su Yun's body, which seemed to replace his inner body with cool breezes.

Su Yun opened his eyes. In his heart, he was still surprised.

It ended just like that?

He casually closed his eyes and began to feel the spirit qi that returned to his body.

However, he was shocked by the result.

From feeling the spirit qi of his body, he was able to evaluate the direct effect on his talent from the medicine.

Ordinary people would feel only about 1% of their spirit qi, while people of beginner cultivation could feel about 3%. If one felt five percent, that person was usually considered as a genius. For example, Qing Er achieved at least that level to be considered as a genius.

This time, Su Yun's spirit qi had doubled. Before, when his spiritual force was overwhelmingly strong, people near his age who practiced would not be a match for him.

But now.

After Su Yun's shocking find, his own mysterious spirit qi rating....it was actually many times stronger than when Su Yun was at his peak...

Shocked...he now had two times more talent than before?

Two Times!

“If he was still in Su Family, he would be considered a peerless genius that appeared once in a millennium!” Su Yun laments.

He did not expect that in addition to curing his illness, he would increase his talent.

“Genius? Could this be considered a genius? What a joke! You have never saw a true genius! My Sword God Sect minimum requirements was this...your ability is not that impressive.”

Just then, a hoarse voice said, as the sound emerged in Su Yun’s mind.

Su Yun face stiffened, and looked left and right, but did not find anyone.

“Who said that?” Su Yun asked.

“Boy, don’t try to find me, I’m in the !”

The sound once again came.

“Limitless Sword?”

Su Yun pondered for a bit, then suddenly, he thought of something. He quickly took out the piece of parchment he had.

The paper inscription suddenly emitted burst of bright gold light and the top of the demon beast pattern began to rearrange and restructure.

Some of the beast patterns began to disassemble into a hilt and some of the demon patterns decomposed into a blade. This magical scene was mysterious, yet amazing.

The process blinded him, the Seven Unique Shape Swords Pattern were created.

He stared and stared at the seven swords, but he could not move.

Looking at the swords, he saw a sickle like sword, like a lion’s body, some dazzling in brilliance, like moons and stars that were

wrapped, an immense, imposing, figure of a hovering dragon...

At first glance, a person who was here would feel like he was in the middle of the universe and that person would find it difficult to pull away.

In this world, everything was dominated by the sword and mysterious spirit qi.

Almost instantaneously, Su Yun's heart left him and he lost himself.

How sacred was this majestic sight?

Su Yun was shivering throughout his body, trying to withdraw the magical parchment.

Looking back at his past life's experience, this was the first time he experience a scene like this, so he could not help but ask: "Is this it?"

"Did I not say it? !"

The sound originated from inside the parchment.

Chapter 7 - The Seven Limitless Swords

“? Who are you? What is this parchment?”

Su Yun’s mind was in chaos.

“Me? Hahahaha, boy, it’s been a long time since anyone asked that question! I am the Limitless Sword Master! Just asking, how did you get this ?” The hoarse voice laughed as he asked this question.

Limitless Sword Master? Su Yun was suspicious, but said: “ In an Everlasting Tiger’s den!”

“Everlasting Tiger?” The voice asked with doubt.

“Yes!”

“Boy, you cannot fool me! is a supreme sword skill, comparable to precious artifacts, something that a plethora of people would die for! This is something that exists in the hands of a peerless master, why would it be in a little Everlasting Tiger’s den?”

“The Everlasting Tiger’s den had countless bodies, one which contained the parchment. But after looking at the skeleton, I found it was intact. There were no bite marks. Possibly, the man was already dead and the Everlasting Tiger dragged it into its den as food. However, the cultivation rank was too high and the Everlasting Tiger could not harm the corpse. Therefore, the tiger probably just gave up.”

After the old man heard this, he suddenly laughed: “So this was what happened...so be it...boy, consider yourself lucky! This treasure was unattainable without strength, but you were basically handed it for free! You are destined!”

“Destined?”

“Yes!” The old man said: “My Limitless Sword Arts was powerful since the ancient times, a peerless sword skill, considered as

heavenly sword-play techniques, one could rely on an one meter sword to slash through the heavens! If you are able to learn this method and the dormant me was called out naturally, then we are destined. You have seen the seven swords, where each sword represented one sword meaning of within each body of the sword. All contained the base of the Sword Arts. I'm guessing, that corpse could not summon me, and continued to figure out the parchment. Then the person caught on fire from forcibly trying."

"Caught on fire? What? Is it that cannot be learned by just anyone who cultivates?"

"But I was dormant, the Sword Arts were incomplete, without the important parts, how would you actually practice the techniques?"

"Why is it like that?"

"Basically, I do not want evil cultivators to take this legendary technique. Without my approval, one can never practice this particular sword arts!"

"Then you recognized me?"

"You have not passed the test! Since I'm old, I could pick anyone mistakingly."

"....." Su Yun was silent, but could not help but ask: "What is your test?"

The old man laughed: "There were a dozen talented prodigies trying to get this sword art, but failed on my test. Some of their spiritual sense was higher than double the normal, all could be considered as a rare genius, but after they failed, they lost their talent, falling to mediocrity from a genius! So? Do you still want to accept my challenge to practice ?"

After hearing the old man's words, Su Yun had a moment of silence.

There was a great deal of risk to this trial, but if Su Yun just

practiced by himself, would he have enough strength to prevent Qing Er's marriage? Would he be able to resist the Su Family influence?

Although he had many ideas for cultivation, he may not be able to solve everything with his experience of traveling throughout the continent for ten years.

"Is Limitless Sword Arts powerful?" Su Yun asked, after maintaining a long silence.

"For the four bottom-tiered swords, the person can be rated as a sword master. To be able train one sword, it can be used to defend against a hundreds enemies. Actually, to defend themselves, the cultivators of this technique can make hundreds of blades fly through the air, attacking everything. To practice two swords, it can be used to defend against a thousand enemies, for three swords, it can be used to defend against ten thousand enemies. For four swords, you can use spirit sword techniques, thereby doubling your power."

"To practice the two middle tiered swords, the person can be rated as sword saint, to practice one sword, the person control ten thousand swords, based on how much spirit qi the person have, he could control numerous swords. After mastering two swords, the person can create sword stars, however many stars in the sky, the person can create the same number of star swords."

"For absolute mastery, it requires mastery of the top tiered sword, it is called sword god. Once mastered, the person has endless swords, is able to kill anything, and completely dominates the world. If you became a sword god, what will happen to the world? Every creature would submit to you." Then the old man smiled and said: "But nowadays, very few people are able to train to four swords, other than my master. The strongest one was only able to train in the third sword of the four swords, but could defend against a thousand swords. While for the pair of swords, is not even a legend in my Limitless Sword Arts."

“Is it difficult to practice? Is it possible for me?” Su Yun frowned.

“These are supreme sword arts, it is normal for them to be difficult to practice, but you know, even if you only mastered first sword, you are able to travel unhindered under the heavens and look down upon experts around the world. It is difficult for double fists to resist four hands. Four hands can only hold four swords, don’t even say a hundred swords, if your enemy can use a hundred flying swords, what will be the outcome?”

The elder’s words evoked thousands of thoughts in Su Yun’s head. In Su Yun’s head, there were thousands of swords in the grand scene killing ten thousand experts all controlled by Su Yun. His whole body was covered with blood, but he did not need to lift a finger.

Indeed, the martial arts of the world, offered many endless possibilities. He had never heard of anyone controlling ten thousand flying swords, but these masters were scarce, very scarce. Most of these experts do not bother with the outside world, but for this type of strength to exist, even the ten million soldiers... have never heard of this.

Three years later, I may not be able to bring down the Profound Sky Sect or stop the events of the Su Family. I will have to try to learn the “.”

Su Yun clenched his fists and said: “ How can I start to learn the ?”

“If you manage to pass the test, you can learn it. For decades, the Sword God Sect head has wandered the land to look for people that would be suitable candidates. However, he did not find any, while it has drawn villains and murderers to learn the “Limitless Sword Arts.” I remain as the guardian of the Limitless Sword Arts. This parchment is the scroll of the “Limitless Sword Arts.”

“I see, but...you are the head, who was persecuted by the villains to this state...you should practice the “Limitless Sword Arts,”

right? You have a celestial body, why are you in this state?”

“Well, long story! In fact, I could have easily wiped out my ambushers, but...well, it is not worth mentioning! But this old man promise you, even if you reach to control only one sword, that will be enough. Boy, you are destined to meet me, I ask you, are you willing to accept my challenge to learn “Limitless Sword Arts.”

This is an opportunity.

However, everything relies on that the elder’s words are true. Su Yun did not know if the words were true or false, although he is very eager to practice. He knew nothing of the man, so he might even be harmed if he is not careful.

Su Yun hesitated.

“Are you afraid?” The elder asked.

“I cannot just brush off my fears.” Su Yun answered.

“Hahaha, good, good. I did not think this would happen. You might suffer a major loss if you understood the magnitude of the !” Laughed the old man, but after a moment, his face became serious and said: “ But, only once, if you miss it, you can never come back! You are worried that I would lie to you, harm you, but you understand that if you do decide to leave, I will give up. However, you will miss this opportunity! So....is this your decision? You accept the challenge? Or not?”

Su Yun took a deep breath, hesitation left his heart.

In the past, to gain strength, Su Yun used many dangerous methods, such as the devil techniques, why should he be afraid now?

“When do we start?” Su Yun asked.

“Oh! You accept?” The elder was surprised, but continued: “You will not ask what is the test about?”

“Since the decision is to learn the technique, I’m going all in. The

content is not important, even if the test is hard, what do I have to lose?”

“Hahahahaha..” the Elder laughed, then continued: “ Good. Good. Good.

A straightforward personality, you really are fit to learn the sword arts! Your personality is not bad, but I’m afraid you might still have obsession in your heart! If you have obsession, you will be persistent, so you will not give up. After a millennium, I finally have a candidate! I hope you do pass the test!”

After the sound died down, the parchment suddenly burst into red flames, becoming extremely hot.

“The Sword Arts are placed on the ground.”

The elder said.

Su Yun acted casually.

While looking at the burning parchment, a golden round door suddenly appeared in front of Su Yun.

“To study , it is necessary to go through this challenge. Only after obtaining the object, can you truly practice the .”

“To truly practice the . What do you mean?”

“To truly use the power of the , when I taught the at my time, I did not understand the roots of the sword secrets among them, until it was too late. So go for the sword hilt!”

After hearing these words, Su Yun was suddenly aware of the sword hilts on the swords, but why was the sword hilt hidden in another realm?

“This is another realm, and the sword is on the fourth floor, quickly come!”

The elder said.

Su Yun gazed at the golden round door and stepped inside.

Chapter 8 - I Am Strong Enough

Challenge's first floor: Badlands.

Here, it was very hazy, it had an extremely dark sky. There were no moons or stars, the land was completely silent, with no traces of any other creatures.

Su Yun stepped forward as he marched on the cold earth.

“Oh? You’ve never heard of Sword God Sect?”

“I have never read many books and travelled the world, but I have never heard of the Sword God Sect. I think that very few people in the military continent even know about it.”

After entering the badlands, he carefully observed his surrounding while he continued to converse with the elder.

The elder continued: “The Sword God Sect should have survived the generations, but was deteriorating. There is only a head, only a disciple, a master, a disciple, a master and etc. I may have caused the catastrophe of the Sword God Sect after I was ambushed, which caused the sect to lose the head of the school. This might be why the Sword God’s reputation dissipated into nothingness now.”

“Do you remember when were you persecuted?”

“Martial God Year seventy-eight!”

“Now are the days of Martial Sky years! Your time was a full thousand years ago!” Su Yun was surprised of the elder’s words.

The elder sighed with sorrow.

Boom! Boom!

A loud sound was heard!

Su Yun was very nervous as he heard the sound! He looked everywhere, only to see a sword fall from the sky, which directly inserted into the ground in front of him.

This sword was a hundred meters tall and ten meters wide. The blade was not beautiful, instead, it emitted an oppressive aura that penetrated through the surround area.

Su Yun heart beated faster. He did not have time to think. Suddenly, the blade began to overflow like a released dam, a scourge-like atmosphere that began to submerge, squeeze and devastate him.

Bang!

The earth under Su Yun immediately gave way to the pressure from his foot. He almost had to kneel to withstand the pressure.

But he clenched his teeth, abruptly grabbing the sword despite the sudden pressure.

“This is the first part of the trial! If you want to give up, please tell me as soon as possible, do not overestimate yourself, because even if you barely fail, it will not hurt only your life, but it will wreck you talent. So you have to be careful!”

The elder’s voice sounded in Su Yun’s mind.

However, in Su Yun’s mind, was there another choice?

Su Yun was doing his best to resist the sword pressure, trying to prevent it from overwhelming himself.

More ground cracked and the surrounding stone began to crumble into pieces.

Su Yun’s face began to be covered with sweat and had a tense look.

“Ah?”

Suddenly, a trace of doubt passed his mind.

Why did the rock shatter, why did the earth crack, but it did not affect me?

His cultivation was not high, but how could he withstand such

pressure, without a wound on his body? The elder said that this test will not hurt his life, but will impair talent.

Impair talent?

Does that mean that this was a spiritual attack?

Su Yun had suspected this was the case in his heart.

To compete with a spiritual attack, then he should be able to use a meditative technique to help him tolerate the sword pressure.

Then, Su Yun took a deep breath, closed his eyes and began to meditate using the techniques in his memories.

Sure enough, with a mental technique, it became much easier to tolerate the sword's pressure. The sword pressure disappeared from his body soon after.

Crack. Crack. Shatter!

At that moment, the sword fragmented into numerous pieces into the dark sky and began to dissipate.

"Huh? Is that all?"

The elder said in a surprised voice: "This layer is composed of the spirit of the ancestors, if your spirit was not strong enough, you would have never made it past this test!"

"This proves that my spirit is strong is strong enough."

"Don't overestimate yourself! Quickly talk, kid, what method did you use?"

The elder seemed to be very interested.

"A spiritual technique, called: ."

"Using spiritual techniques? I'm not saying this is not allowed, but these spiritual techniques will not keep you safe forever! No strong spirit is unable to withstand just spiritual techniques. Ah....you're not that simple, kid."

Second Layer: Glacial Lands.

There was snow everywhere. It was like cold places such as the Arctic or Antarctic.

Su Yun stepped forward, to visit the numerous stands of sword-like shaped icicles in front of him. Suddenly, there was a loud sound of a strong gust. A gust of ice shards!

Su Yun was shivering, and clenching his teeth to withstand the cold. The cold chilled to the bone, even his blood almost seemed to freeze.

“The second layer is different from the test of the first layer, you should pay attention!”

“The elder’s voice sounded again.

Indeed, it was different. This was not a spirit attack, since Su Yun’s had already seen that his hands were purple and his feet were frozen. The effect of the environment was already working on his body.

There was no trick to this. It was to test willpower and tenacity!

With his mind set, Su Yun clenched his teeth, endured all the pain, and withstood the screaming gusts of the ice shards.

Initially, the ice storm was like a breeze, it was only cold, but it was not a big deal.

But as time went on, the more powerful the ice storm became. It began to become more terrifying, it began to blow crazily, like a huge hand pushing against Su Yun.

Su Yun stabilized his stance, he countered force with force, and his spiritual inner core remained at peace. He would not fall back one step.

The ice storm strengthened once again.

This time, it was not just simply pushing, but it had become dangerous, like countless beast claws, ripping Su Yun to pieces!

“Ahhhhhhhhhh!”

Su Yun's roar seemed to support him. His body was covered with wounds and it seemed like he reached his limit. However, he had no intention to retreat.

“Good! Enough perseverance! You must hold on! If you do not pass through this test, you will not be allowed to learn my sword arts! Don't do it for me, do it for yourself! You must hold on!”

The elder shouted.

Although the elder had experienced a dozen genius, they did not amaze him like Su Yun. From the first time the elder saw Su Yun, it seemed that the Limitless Sword Arts would finally reappear in this continent. He did not want to destroy that chance by his own hands. Su Yun was even more eager than the elder to pass the test.

The ice storm once again strengthened.

But at this moment, Su Yun had long surpassed his limit.

He barely held out in his mind. There was only one thought left in his mind.

To bare past this!

He abandoned all distractions to desperately support himself.

Eventually, the ice storm could not blow back him even half a step. It stopped.

Everything once again returned to silence.

“Congratulations kid! You successfully passed the second trial!”

The elder cried out in joy.

“I will succeed.”

Su Yun exhaled, his voice was weak, but his tone was firm.

Su Yun knew he was weak. He couldn't do a lot, but if he decided to do it. He will fight to do it. To put it bluntly, he was overconfident, but to him, this meant he was committed, he would not give up!

The elder nodded in agreement and said no more.

A Yellow door appeared. Su Yun went in and arrived at the third layer.

The third layer: Scarlet Lava Lake.

There was silence. It was not cold, but extremely hot.

There was magma everywhere, bubbling hot gas seemed to burst out randomly. It looked like the land could roast people alive.

But, this place was special.

Only ten meters away from Su Yun was a red hot sword. It was stuck inside the magma, but there was no path.

The sword was surrounded by lava, the blade was displaying a scorching fire around it, like a dragon wrapping around the sword.

Ten meters behind the sword, there was the door leading to the fourth test. Standing in front of the door, there was a white haired young man.

“You want to learn Limitless Sword Arts by passing this trial?”

The young man shouted.

“Who are you?” Su Yun questioned.

“This is the Limitless Sword ancestral Legacy! Behind him, lies the treasure!”

The elder said excitedly.

“If you want the Limitless Sword Arts, you will have to complete the third level of the test: to remove the “Red Sun Sword.” Then you will have to win against me on the fourth floor. I’ll see you on the fourth floor!”

Then, the image of the man disappeared.

After Su Yun heard this, he frowned.

The place he was currently at was not more than ten meters

away, but it was difficult to jump across. The sword handle was in the middle, so it was going to be very difficult to land.

There was no foothold, what could he do?

“This is the third layer, the test is no longer about endurance, toughness, but to test whether the sword and mind can be one and whether your eyes are sharp enough. This is tricky. In conclusion, with the sword, you must overcome all. Even if you are given soldiers, once you fall into magma, you will only be able to rely on your sword. Once you fall into magma, your talent will be damaged and you will fail this test. What? Do you intend to continue?”

The elder said.

However, Su Yun remained silent.

He stared at the plug in the magma: “Red Sun Sword,” he focused on it more and more. Like a serpent about to attack, he kept a close eye on his prey.

Throwing away his hesitation, Su Yun made his move and actually leaped to step onto the “Red Sun Sword” in one jump.

“You’re too impatient! You have to carefully observe the magma! This will definitely cause you to fail, alas!” The elder sighed in disappointment of Su Yun’s actions.

As expected.

After Su Yun made his move, the bubbling magma suddenly set off bursts of hot plasma waves, hitting Su Yun.

However, the wave’s height was not tall enough and Su Yun jumped higher in the air.

The plasma wave did not touch him, but there was no hope in the elder.

It was much different for Su Yun. The elder’s jump was much higher and it seemed that the elder could easily pass this test.

But the result was contrary to the expectations of the elder.

After looking at Su Yun falling from high up in the air, he did not slam into the magma, instead, he suddenly stopped a few feet above the magma.

The elder was astonished by the result of Su Yun's action.

Su Yun had actually stepped on the Red Sun Sword's hilt!

"huh? Really well done kid! But you have to pull out the sword, so what will you do? If you pull it out, you will not have a place to step and you will die!"

Nonetheless, Su Yun was breathless. He stabilized his body, stood on the hilt and stared at the fourth door. Suddenly, he took a deep breath, the spirit qi converged in his feet and legs. Then he jumped to leap towards the fourth door in one go.

While doing this, he spinned 360 degrees and grabbed the Red Sun Sword. He pulled it out quickly and flew towards the fourth door.

Poof! Boom!

Su Yun crashed directly into the ground. He looked embarrassed, but he successfully crossed the border.

The elder heart burst in surprise. He would have never thought about the unique method Su Yun used to pass the third test.

The fourth layer: Burial Grounds of Swords.

There were broken swords littered everywhere.

They were stuck in the ground: tilted, dark and lifeless.

But among these, a white-haired young man stood.

The young man was eight feet tall, was very handsome and the sword on his back exuded black and white gas, extremely magical.

This was the sword of Limitless Sword Art of ancestor Cannian.

Cannian walked towards Su Yun and emitted sword pressure, flooding Su Yun.

“How will I defeat this ancestor in this realm?” Su Yun was pressured in his heart.

“No, as long as he recognizes you as a suitable candidate, but you have to use all your strength. With the Red Sun Sword, you must try to beat him!”

“A sword fight?”

Su Yun frowned.

Both the ancestor’s ability and weapon probably surpassed Su Yun’s.

However, Su Yun understood that fighting was the only option.

Su Yun breathed slower and then proudly stepped up to fight the ancestor.

Just for this test, the virtual ancestor of this realm would not be overly powerful that he would be able to completely suppress Su Yun.

I have to go all out and maybe I will pass the test.

After making up his mind, Su Yun suddenly accelerated his pace, with the Red Sun Sword In his hands, he fed spirit qi into the sword.

Whoosh!

An extremely simple hacking move flew forward with the power of the spirit energy Su Yun pour inside. The sword was like whistling wind and the contained the momentum of a charging boar.

But not even a second had passed!

The sword ancestor’s just vanished.

In vain?

Su Yun heart fell, quickly turned around and retreated, but was surprised to find the sword ancestor suddenly appear beside him.

The sword ancestor took one step forward, raising a hand and cut straight towards Su Yun with his sword

The sword was as fast as wind, but also contained a rich amount of spiritual force.

But the sword, force, motion, angle, etc. was actually identical with Su Yun.

This was simply an imitation of his attack!

Su Yun was caught off guard, and the sword cut into his left shoulder. He rushed back as some blood dripped from his shoulder.

“The ancestor will not use his own master abilities, instead, he will use your own attack moves to defeat you! There is no trick to this test! To win, you must be able to beat yourself!”

The elder’s voice emerged.

“If you get hit by three sword strikes, you will fail. Figure something out, do not fail only at the last minute!” The elder shouted again, with an impatient voice.

But at the moment, Su Yun too busy to take the elder’s words into consideration.

Su Yun no longer chose to attack, but to retreat.

Since they imitate his attacks, should if he does not attack, the ancestor will imitate it also?

Su Yun thought.

Just then, the ancestor suddenly raised his hands and the entire atmosphere began to tremble. The scene of aura the ancestor began to demonstrate was grand.

“Boy, do not attempt to retreat and delay time, because once you give up attacking, the ancestor will execute his own move from the Limitless Sword Arts. If he manages to execute it, you will not be able to escape and will lose for sure!”

The elder saw through Su Yun's actions very quickly.

Su Yun heart tightened for a few minutes, then quickly pushed his worries away. Suddenly, he made a move, and once again rushed in to attack the ancestor head-on.

As the ancestor was almost hit by the Su Yun's attack, he disappeared again and once again appeared in a favorable position to repeat Su Yun's attack.

But this time, Su Yun suddenly move sideways, and swung his blade directly at the ancestor, piercing the virtual image.

Shua!

** The sword broke.

"What?" The elder was surprised.

"The ancestor will always disappear in the forthcoming attack and appear to mimic the moves and attacks. He will always imitate the real attack, so this is my only chance to attack, but how will I find an opportunity? Very simple, I will intentionally make a flaw and when he imitates, I will launch attacks against this flaw to hit him!"

After Su Yun sword pierced the virtual image, he said seriously.

He may not have overcome ancestor if the ancestor used its own full power, but he could overcome himself.

"Good! Good! Haha, very good boy, the old man was really destined to meet you! It is really lucky you found its weakness so fast! Really great!"

The elder almost applauded.

This time, the virtual image of the ancestor stood still. It did not attack, but just stood in front of Su Yun and the elder.

"Although you have no sword at all, you use wisdom while wielding a sword. You are able to keep calm, cool and tough. This is rare, so you are fit to learn the Limitless Sword Arts. You're done

with my test young man!”

Then, the virtual image dissipated, and a slender gray and white sword hilt dropped on the ground.

Su Yun quickly walked towards it and picked it up.

“Haha, good! Great! Su Yun boy, you continue to surprise me again and again. You are recognized by the sword ancestor! So you’re the new head of the Sword God Sect! The revitalization of the Sword God Sect befalls on your shoulders!” The elder said while laughing with immense joy.

“I only said that I will learn the Limitless Sword Arts, but did not say that I would revitalize the Sword God Sect. Senior, I’m afraid that I cannot accomplish it.”

Su Yun softly said while he placed the sword hilt on his body.

“I know you have things you want to accomplish, but this task... worth mentioning, in the future we’ll talk about it.” The elder did not seem anxious. He laughed again and did not speak again.

“I have removed the sword hilt, then what is this virtual environment for? What is its use?”

“Of course, the virtual environment is to test for the sword hilt. When you decide to choose a new head, you can choose to give the sword hilt to anyone person. I went through the same test. I did not understand the meaning of this before, but now I seem to understand.”

“What?” Su Yun asked.

“Do not forget this.” The elder answered.

“Do not forget this?” Su Yun was confused.

“Yes, do not forget this, because this virtual environment is fundamental for Limitless Sword Arts, if I did not come here, how could I find the sword hilt before?”

“So....what will senior do nowadays?” Su Yun asked.

“I had a premature death! To kill my assassins, I met my end early! But it was worth it, I live ten thousand years as a monster! Everything that I wanted to enjoy, I enjoyed.”

“Uh....ten thousand years...” Su Yun was taken aback: “That sword ancestor, where is he now?”

“I do not know, it is said he died from mainland demons?”

“Continental demons?” Su Yun look slightly changed, but did not probe further.

Su Yun saw the surrounds suddenly twist and distort. Then he reappeared in the Tiger Plains. Everything was still the same as it was before.

“Congratulations, you have passed the test, now you can practice the techniques, and now everything is displayed in Limitless Sword Arts! As long as you persevere, you will be successful!”

“Well boy, I want to sleep now! I’m just a soul, since I hardly ever conversed for so long, I used up a lot of spirit qi. I’m still frail and if I continue, I might disappear permanently! Goodbye kid!”

The elder said.

After Su Yun heard this, his emotions stirred.

Ah, yes. If it is a spirit, the person will consume spirit qi and once all the spirit qi is used up, it might risk fading away.

However, in order to be able to give Su Yun a chance to obtain the Limitless Sword Arts, the elder used up a lot of energy.

No matter what, Su Yun was very grateful in his heart towards the elder.

Immediately, he placed the hilt on the ground and kneeled three times.

“Thank you senior for your careful guidance. Please allow me to pay my respects.”

The elder was a bit surprised, but after a moment, he comfortably added: “ Good. Good. Good. I did not think after after I stopped using the sword, I would finally get something in return.....hahaha!!!!”

Chapter 9 - The Crescent Moon Fruit

The Limitless Sword Arts was composed of amazing swordplay techniques, able to dominate ten million ordinary swordsmen.

However, even the first sword form of the first sword techniques were not easy to practice.

To master the first sword form, the swordplay must be accurate, smooth, and quick. Su Yun would need to refine his swordplay before he mastered his first goal: the first sword form.

The Sword hilt was powerful beyond imagination, which would cause amazement from anyone who could recognize the sword hilt's abilities.

This sword hilt was not ordinary, it was a space sword hilt.

Within the sword hilt, there was: 180 000 novice swords, 150 000 refined swords, 2995 origin swords, and 5 godswords.

If one was able to control all the swords inside the space hilt, the person would be able to easily dominate the world and become a peerless sword god.

However, none of these swords were regular swords. To train with any of the swords, the person would have become one with each of the sword, for each sword was different. Su Yun would only begin to practice the first form of the four sword forms, before returning back to the continent.

After returning to his black spirit stallion, finding it still resting by the tree.

Su Yun fed the black spirit stallion some more fodder. After resting for half an hour, he rode the spirit stallion out of the plains.

After returning to the main roads, Su Yun became much more comfortable, because he was familiar with travelling by these roads. Even if he left the Su Family, he would be able to survive

because of his vast knowledge of medicine and unparalleled survival techniques.

But he had no intention to leave the Su Family.

It was not only because Qing Er was still part of the Su Family, but the Su Family influence and power could not be underestimated. Furthermore the training conditions the Su Family provided was still exceptional compared to other places in the continent.

Su Yun followed the routine of feeding his spirit stallion, taking a few minutes to rest and then back on the trail. He was able to ride like the wind.

Su Yun's pack was filled with materials from the Everlasting Tiger's den. If the materials were discovered by the Su Family, it would cause a lot of attention to be focused on Su Yun.

The Everlasting Tiger was not a beast that anyone could win against. With Su Yun's poor abilities, how could he obtain the body parts of an Everlasting Tiger?

Therefore, he intentionally made a detour, so that he would avoid his home. Instead, he went to a small town in the outskirts of the Su Family's domain: Mirror Lake Town.

The Mirror Lake Town was a famous town of plenty. With its scenic landscapes, it was near the Su Family and Immortal Sword Sect Schools, so it was not affected by demonic beasts. Many people came here to play and relax, so it was very lively.

The mayor of the town was elected by the people, which was common in the military continent. Nonetheless, there were many towns that were not elected, but these towns were under the jurisdiction of other forces and sects, so that they would not be annexed by outside forces.

The Mirror Lake Town was dependent on the Immortal Sword Sect Faction located in the town. Each year, every household

would have to pay tax money to the Immortal Sword Sect, but the sect was not selfish. The tax money was not high, but it was necessary. Whenever the Mirror Lake Town was in danger, the Immortal Sword Sect would help to eliminate the threats, in the hearts of the townspeople, the Immortal Sword Sect was a saint and deserved the tax money. Sometimes, the Immortal Sword Sect would send some disciples with money to buy goods or food, but the townspeople never charged them.

The black stallion pulled into town, and Su Yun went directly to the town center, to the biggest auction place.

Mirror Lake Town was very developed, it had many famous special forces stationed inside the mainland's, the continent's most famous weapon shop "Hundred Martial Weaponry," the largest pharmaceutical chain "Flower Heart Valley Medicine Store," and the largest auction center "Sky Sun Auction." This was Su Yun's destination. The policy is that it keeps every guest's information strictly confidential, no matter how precious the guests' belonging are.

It was dangerous, the Everlasting Tiger body parts were extraordinary, once it caught attention, there would be trouble.

The Sky Sun Auction was in the center of Mirror Lake Town, a prime location with a constant stream of people, where many young disciples of Immortal Sword Sect resided.

The Sky Sun Auction had a small store. Inside, there was a counter had a female attendant was steadily waiting there.

Su Yun walked towards the receptionist that had been waiting here since early morning.

"What can I help you with?"

The sweet smiling staff asked.

Su Yun began to take the body parts of the Everlasting Tiger out and placed them over the counter.

“Spirit core level tiger products: one heart, a pair of eyes, four sets of claws, one tiger skin...

The service staff was patiently counting and did not seem surprised at all.

She was just doing her job. Although in terms of absolute strength, the Everlasting Tiger was way too powerful for Su Yun. Nonetheless, it was not the first time she saw these, but she was a little surprised of Su Yun's strength in her heart. It was very difficult to get Everlasting Tiger parts...

“Are you ready to add these items directly to the auction to see if it sells or sell it immediately for a lower price? The service personnel asked sweetly.

“Convert it now to spirit coins!”

Su Yun, who was now penniless, was in urgent need for money, so he had no time to waste.

“No problem, please wait.”

The service personnel took out a price list for the materials and intently searched the columns for Tiger Plains. After finding the page that the Everlasting Tigers were, she began calculating the prices to calculate the spirit coins Su Yun would get.

Soon after, the calculation was finished.

“You get a total of nine thousand four hundred and sixteen spirit coins, is this price satisfactory?” The service personnel asked.

“Yes, I believe that the Auction might get ten thousand, but I got no time! So be it.” Su Yun answered.

“Good, wait for a moment. Let me get your money.”

Afterwards, the service personnel took out a spirit currency card and handed it to Su Yun. Su Yun checked it and found exactly nine thousand four hundred and sixteen spirit coins.

He instantly became rich and with a light attitude and he began

to leave the small room.

But as he was preparing to leave, the large pavilion connected to the small one he was in erupted in loud noise. This attracted the attention of Su Yun.

There was a catalogue of the tasks in the Auction, it could be seen in the central hall in the main pavilion. The catalogue was exceedingly long.

There were many spirit tasks on the catalogue.

Many people in the Sky Sun Auction House were not there to buy items. They were here to just give tasks to obtain materials. This was extremely common and all the tasks was listed in this catalogue.

Su Yun made a random sweep of the tasks available with his eyes. Suddenly, his eyes lit up as a familiar name caught his eye.

“Crescent Moon Fruit?”

This was a way to enhance cultivation that worked. It was located in Crescent Valley, but it was very rare. It was also extremely dangerous in the valley. Many spirit experts strangely disappeared inside the valley after they entered. It was reported they all died from powerful spirit beasts’ mouths.

This item was a very high level, worth up to sixty thousand spirit coins. It was almost enough to live an ordinary life comfortably.

Although the reward was high, no one dared to accomplish it. The number of people that completed this task currently was still zero.

Su Yun hesitated for a moment, his mind was thinking, but then he went towards the door.

The personnel looked at the young man’s movements and her eyes bulged.

“Boy do you want to die? The task price may be high, but it is

very dangerous! The money is not worth your life.” The personnel warned.

“Hey! You probably do not know about Crescent Valley, right? I will tell you! Last month, a few guys equipped with spirit equipment went to the Crescent Valley for a treasure hunt. They were spirit intermediate disciples. They never came back! I’m guessing most of them are dead inside!”

Many people beside Su Yun sneered at him.

But it was useless, Su Yun paid the fifty spirit coin deposit, accepted the mission and left the building.

Chapter 10 - The Lost Treasures

The rebirth was still too sudden, and Su Yun did not remember too much about this mission. However, he still needed to customize his plan.

Currently, he still needed to enhance his strength.

Furthermore, the Crescent Moon Fruit area in the Crescent Valley was not easy to get to. It was reported, that even though it can greatly increase cultivation, it also had almost no defects. Even novice disciples could easily digest it.

The Crescent Moon Fruit was amazing, but it was not readily available. This was because the mysterious Crescent Valley was very dangerous. Countless people entered the Crescent Valley only to never return.

Su Yun did not know what happened to them, but he was not unfamiliar with Crescent Valley. He even knew the actual place where the Crescent Moon Fruit grew.

“As long as I took care of the guardian beasts there, I will be able to easily obtain the fruit. With the fruit, I will be able to increase my cultivation stages or even jump to the next realm. It would be a great help!”

Su Yun said, thought for a moment, then continued walking toward the side of a shop.

“Shopkeeper, give me two bottles of “Gu Beast Skin Powder.” Su Yun talked directly to the shopkeeper. The shopkeeper responded: “Respected customer, I will immediately get them for you!” The shopkeeper shouted loudly and went to prepare the goods.

The Gu Beast Skin Powder was from high level beasts, most of the beasts were stronger than stage one spirit tigers and even stage two spirit beasts. Therefore, these were very valuable in Mirror Lake Town, so few were sold. Mostly, these were sold to the

disciples of the Immortal Sword Sect.

Of course, the high level spirit beast materials, which were sky high, could only yield a little grinded powder from their skin. Su Yun had to pay two thousand spirit coins.

“One bottle of mass spirit powder, three boxes of fast healing ointment, a stealth talisman, a bottle of camouflage powder and a low level spatial ring.”

Su Yun shouted the items he needed one by one. The treasurer was soon ready, and was paid. Su Yun was left with only three thousand three hundred and fifty-four spirit coins.

These items could easily be found in the Sky Sun Auction House, but a small shop was more cost effective for low level items.

After stuffing the three items in his spatial ring, he jumped up on the saddle of his black stallion and rode into the Crescent Valley.

Mirror Lake Town was pretty far away from the Crescent Valley Lake. The spirit stallion ride lasted about half a day to reach the destination.

Of course, the most important treasure of the Crescent Valley was not the Crescent Moon Fruit, it was the majestic treasure: “Heavenly Crystal.”

“Heavenly Crystal” was something that many people did not know about, but the rumors of the treasures were very fierce.

Although Su Yun’s main goal was to find some Crescent Moon Fruit, if he could find the “Sky Hand’s” trail and obtain it. Then this adventure would bring countless benefits.

Rumors of the “Heavenly Crystal” were very little. It’s grade was unknown. If this thing was close to what it was said to be, then Su Family’s painstaking search would be justified. However, they searched for several days and never found anything, even the cultivators nearly died.

A day and a half later.

Su Yun smoothly travelled to the valley's mouth.

Inside the valley, there was lush vegetation and sounds of birds and animals.

Su Yun dismounted, removed the camouflage powder, spread it evenly on his clothes and proudly entered.

The camouflage powder prevented Su Yun's scent from traveling through the valley, allowing him to avoid many spirit beasts. Of course, the powder's effect on high level beasts would not be really obvious.

Su Yun walked along the route near the water.

Following the path of the Crescent Valley, he soon stopped at a five forked path. He chose the far right one and continued forth to an open area.

The open area had a lot of vegetation. Yet directly in the middle of this, there was a giant tree, with a height of nearly twenty meters, with flourishing branches, and fiery red leaves. If one was looking from a distance, if there was wind blowing, it would look like a fire was burning.

On top of the tree, a fist-sized fruit was hanging.

It was the Crescent Moon Fruit.

There was only one fruit on the tree. Once it was picked, the tree would wither in a few days and a hundred more years would be required to harvest another fruit.

However, retrieving the Crescent Moon Fruit was not easy. This was because a "Jade Fire Beast" was usually around the Crescent Moon Fruit Tree.

The "Jade Fire Beast" also wanted to devour the ripe fruit, which would allow it to advance into a higher order of beasts: "Jade Fire Lord." To obtain the Crescent Moon Fruit, you would probably

have to have spirit strength matching the “Jade Fire Beast,” but this was not usually the case, so many people were eaten by the Jade Fire Beast.

Su Yun’s eyes locked onto the Crescent Moon Fruit. He immediately took the Gu Beast Skin Powder and threw it into the air.

After the powder into the air, it was quickly spread by the wind.

A few seconds later.

Roar!

A menacing roar pierced the silence. The ground began to shake as heavily trampling sounds moved away from Su Yun’s area. Many weaker spirit beasts fled the area. A fierce beast shadow was seen moving away from the area.

Like all living things, the Jade Fire Beasts had many natural enemies. However, the spirit beast used to make the Gu Beast Skin Powder was one of the Jade Fire Beast’s main predators, one of the creatures it feared.

“The Jade Fire Beast left!” Although it fled quickly from fear, once the Gu Beast Skin Powder dissipated, the Jade Fire Beast would quickly return. Time was running out, Su Yun did not hesitate, he quickly climbed the tree and carefully picked the Crescent Moon Fruit.

The aroma of the Crescent Moon Fruit was evident, it exuded a succulent fragrance, making Su Yun swallow his saliva in anticipation. Nonetheless, he jumped down from the tree and quickly left.

Within an hour of being picked, the Crescent Moon Fruit would give the most benefits.

Su Yun quickly found a safe place and took a large bite.

After it was eaten, Su Yun’s chest began to heat up immediately,

as if a fire ignited in his chest.

Immediately, he sat down cross-legged and began to meditate. Throughout his whole body, a mysterious spiritual atmosphere suddenly emerged.

Su Yun shook and quickly verified what had occurred. He was surprised to find his own spiritual level power actually jumped a stage!

The power of human muscles came from the blood vessels connected to the spirit core. The spirit core determined how fast was spirit qi recovery. At stage six cultivation, most cultivators had only a rating of forty for spirit core power, but Su Yun had a spirit core power of one hundred and ten.

He directly went to the seventh stage cultivation and was not far from the peak.

Su Yun was ecstatic.

The excitement he had in his heart was unprecedented.

“Finally, I have reached the seventh stage! I finally entered the the seventh stage...”

He muttered as his whole body was trembling with excitement.

After years of dreaming, he finally realized today.

Unfortunately, there was only one Crescent Moon Fruit, otherwise he would eat the fruit over and over again.

Soon after, Su Yun decided to go to the next Crescent Moon Tree. Once again, Su Yun spread the Gu Beast Skin Powder into the air, got another fruit for completing the task he accepted. Su Yun wanted to get more fruits, but he only had memory of three different places. Unfortunately, the third place was too dangerous and too difficult to obtain the fruit.

After obtaining the second fruit, he was in no hurry to leave. Instead, he continued deeper into Crescent Valley.

Next up, finding “Heavenly Crystal.”

Roar!!!

Just then, a muffled roar came from in front of Su Yun....

Chapter 11 - Secrets of the Crescent Valley

Su Yun's face paled, glanced in front of him and saw that not far from him emerged a purple horned "Steel Armored Leopard."

The Steel Armored Leopard: A spirit beast of the intermediate level, stage one. It was extremely agile, astounding defense, and if one did not know its weakness, a cultivator of the novice level would have no way to harm this spirit beast.

Su Yun heart raced a bit, but he did not retreat. Instead, he pulled out his rusted sword.

Nonetheless, the difference in strength was still four stages.

Although Su Yun was very familiar with the Steel Armored Leopard, but it was only in books and classes. He still had no real combat experience, even in his past life, he did not fight many spirit beasts.

In front of him, the roads joined together to form a dead end.

He secretly looked around, after thinking for a moment, he suddenly moved!

He turned around and fled.

Roar!

However, once the Steel Armored Leopard found its prey, it would never let it get away. It immediately caught up with Su Yun. It was as fast as the wind and instantly shortened the distance between it and Su Yun.

Su Yun only ran a few steps. Then he jumped using both legs onto the side and jumped past the leopard, climbed up the side of a cliff, quickly went up five meters. With a quick glance, his hands latched on the protruding rocks of the cliff, and stayed up in the air.

The Steel Armored Leopard leaped as high as it could, but only

reached a height of four meters before it fell back to the ground.

Roar!

The Steel Armored Leopard was circling around Su Yun. One could see the unwillingness in its eyes. It was waiting for Su Yun and gave Su Yun an intense glare.

While its body was sturdy, it still had one disadvantage. Its body was still very heavy, so although it could travel very fast on the ground, it was difficult for it to jump very high.

However, the Steel Armored Leopard did not seem to give up.

Then it began to slowly back away, while glaring at Su Yun carefully. It growled as its hind legs tensed up, ready to jump again.

Looking at the situation, the Steel Armored Leopard was prepared to go all out to capture Su Yun. Its idea seemed to have a running start to leap up and rip Su Yun off the cliff.

The time was in the essence.

Su Yun stared at the sprinting Steel Armored Leopard. His body tensed and gripped his rusted sword tightly. He narrowed his eyes to focus on the Steel Armored Leopard's forehead.

There, on the forehead was a slit, that had a dark yellow color, slightly different from the armor that covered his skin. It was the Steel Armored Leopard Achilles heel, a hole in its defence.

During the sprint, the Steel Armored Leopard will be focused on getting speed and keeping its mouth closed.

When the height is reached, the Steel Armored Leopard will open its mouth.

Su Yun must take action during this situation, right before the Steel Armored Leopard can attack!

His eyes began to focus, not giving an ounce of slacking.

There was only one chance.

Just as the Steel Armored Leopard leaped into the air, Su Yun decided to make his move. The Steel Armored Leopard did not open its mouth yet. Su Yun let go of the cliff and clasp the rusted sword, he directed a vicious stab towards the weakness of the Steel Armored Leopard.

“Ahhhhhh!!!”

Su Yun shouted, from the momentum. He infused all his spirit qi in the rusty sword.

Puchi!

The Rusted Sword was piercing!

Roar!

The Steel Armored Leopard immediately issued a painful roar. After its attack was interrupted, its entire body began to fall from the sky.

With the momentum, the rusted sword had actually pierced through the brain of the spirit beast.

The Steel Armored Leopard was not going to live.

But.

A spirit beast of the first stage in the intermediate level was still stronger than the novice realm Su Yun was in. Right after they landed, the Steel Armored Leopard struggled on its feet and used its fierce claws to slash at Su Yun.

Su Yun was startled and hastily pushed the leopard back with his rusted sword.

However, Su Yun was a step too late. His chest was slashed by the claws and a few drops of blood dripped through.

Then, the Steel Armored Leopard was driven back by Su Yun, it decided it did not want to continue the fight and fled with all its

might.

Although Su Yun wanted to give a chase, he was not as fast as the leopard, so he gave up.

Although basically killed the Steel Armored Leopard, he did not get off cheap. He still got injured and did not have any spoils from it.

In the end, he did not have enough combat experience.

He took out a box of quick healing paste and applied it on his chest. The wounds soon began to mend themselves and the blood stop flowing out.

After straightening himself a bit, he got up and continued forward.

During the walk through the path he was on, he met a lot of powerful spirit beasts. He fled each time, only to find more spirit beasts.

His only emergency item for preserving his life was the stealth talismans. However, he could only use it during the ten days and it only lasted for 10 seconds. Then the talisman would be useless.

Therefore, he carefully trekked through the valley for two days and still did not find the main “Sky hands” trail. His fast healing paste supply was becoming dangerously low.

Under the pressure, Su Yun had thoughts of retreating.

Seeing the the hazy fog of Crescent Valley, Su Yun sighed and began to turn around.

Suddenly.

Burst of footsteps came from the valley.

He was slightly surprised, but focused his ears to listen for the moment.

Yes, there were footsteps, but also sounds that vaguely sounded

like laughter.

This place has people?

Su Yun was curious. He stealthily sneaked behind a rock and carefully hid from view.

Su Yun could hear the conversation, because he was not that far away. He examined their cultivation levels and they did not appear to be experts. They were either all Spirit Novice or Spirit Intermediate disciples.

As the footsteps went closer to Su Yun, he slowly peeked his head over the rock.

He saw a group dressed in black clothes and yellow armor. A huge man with a sword in hand emerged from the ravine in front of the rock that Su Yun was behind.

These people were all spirit soldiers in the early stages of their realm. They were well equipped, each carrying a weapon that had powerful spirit qi, which in their hands could cause fatal damage when used with spiritual force.

“Ha ha ha, I did not expect the trap to actually catch some prey. let’s see if I managed to capture any female spirit cultivators. If there is one, I will get first pick! Alright?”

A strong and hearty cultivator laughed.

“Eldest brother has spoken, so how can we disagree? You pick first!”

“He he, if there is a pure white faced male spirit cultivator, do not challenge me!” A skinny, sunken eyed cultivator licked his chapped lips as he laughed.

“Fuck you! We only had a taste, how about you pick slowly. Anyways, leader should take charge, how about we just toss a coin for it!”

“It’s been a long time since we had prey, let’s give them a painful

death!”

“Move aside, do not let these guys escape from the trap!”

The eldest cultivator shouted and the crowd quickly accelerated.

Prey? Trap?

Su Yun was curious.

Where did these guys come from?

The Crescent Valley actually has people? This ghostly place, where even spirit intermediate disciples were scared to enter.

Nonetheless, these guys might know where the “Heavenly Crystal” is.

Su Yun thought about it for a moment and then quietly followed.

These people seemed to be very familiar with the area. They easily avoided the spirit beasts inside the valley. They soon quickly arrived at the Central Valley.

In the center of the valley, there was a large black hemisphere of energy covering the open area. It seemed like a huge hood that covered a part of the central valley.

Su Yun was hidden at the side and analyzing the situation.

He saw the cultivators went up to the black hemisphere. He stood in front and chanted a few spells and a small crack appear. The cultivator grinned and went inside.

In the black hemisphere, a group of about twenty young men and woman were trapped in a smaller black hemisphere.

Everyone was wearing a uniform was a red uniform with a red cross symbol. Everyone was equipped with a jade token and a sword.

These were Immortal Sword Sect disciples!

Chapter 12 - The Wicked Disciples

These Immortal Sword Sect disciples, under the effect of the black energy that covered the disciples with hazy gas, slowly weakened them. The spirit qi that the disciples had became more and more weak. They tried to break free from the black energy dome, but they found out that they were just trapped in there.

“Haha, how is there so many people? I did not think, ah, I did not expect that we would actually catch some fish!”

The eldest disciple eyes shown with greed as he examined every disciple from the Immortal Sword Sect. He finally stopped at the sight of several female disciples who were very pretty. As he looked at the graceful figures of the female disciples, his mouth dripped with saliva.

“So much prey! Master will reward us for sure! Ha ha, we won big!”

“Ah! It’s a great harvest!”

The group of black armored men happily exclaimed.

Seeing the threatening behavior of the people that just came, the cross-legged disciples got up from the floor and equipped their swords. Everyone stood up and stared at the black armored cultivators with alertness.

“Who are you guys?”

The senior Immortal Sword Sect disciple asked.

“It does not matter,” the black armored eldest disciple laughed: “I’ll give you some advice, as long as you do not resist, you will survive. If you do, you might not live to see tomorrow!”

“Do you know who we are?”

The black armored eldest disciple questioned: “Who?”

“We are from the Immortal Sword Sect. The head sent us on a

mission to obtain the Crescent Moon Fruit. If you dare touch us, you will certainly be killed by the Spirit Sage of our Immortal Sword Sect!” (TL: if you forgot, sage is the 9th realm, 2nd highest known to us right now) Not waiting for the senior disciple to begin speaking, a disciple near the senior arrogantly said.

But right at the next moment, a black tiger blade instantly shot towards the young disciple and instantly cut him in half.

Slash!

The disciple died!

A fountain of blood poured out from the two halves of the body.

“Ahhhhhhh!”

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples panicked.

“Fellow disciple Lu!”

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples complexions paled. The females were affected even more, eyes opened wide from shock.

“You!” The senior Immortal Sword Sect disciple was greatly startled and immediately glared at the viscous looking people.

“Immortal Sword Sect, so what?” The black armored leader sneers: “We of Demon Religion Sect are not afraid of your sect! Obediently follow us, since the black dome has already absorbed most of your spirit qi. Your strength is at most only at the fifth stage of the novice realm. If you resist, you will be cut down instantly!”

The Immortal Sword Sect senior disciple face color changed, since nobody did not think that the extremely dangerous Crescent Valley would have such a wicked sect. It was atrocious!

“The Demon Religion? Is it....were those who came before looking for the Crescent fruit were all executed or captured by you?” A female disciple suddenly asked.

“Ha ha ha ha, yes! Our head practices the , which requires

sacrifices of those who have spirit cultivation. Therefore, we also released rumours of “Heavenly Crystal, ” which attracted numerous people here for a treasure hunt! The Crescent Moon Fruit is enticing, but only to those who have low cultivation levels. The Heavenly Crystal will attract spiritual cultivators of higher ranks! Because of this, the head of our sect have been progressing quickly from the Ultimate Devil Fiend Arts. Soon he will be a figure that will dominate the continent, ha ha ha ...”

The black armored leader laughed, he already began to have thoughts of drinking will beauties that he captured today.

“So the Heavenly Crystal is a scam! It was just bait!”

“Scam? No no no. This was not a hoax, we do have Heavenly Crystal in the Demon Religion Sect, but it is in the hands of our head. Why do we have to be afraid of the Immortal Sword Sect? Not to mention, even if we killed you, the Immortal Sword Sect would think that the spiritual beasts have killed you.No one will think of the Demon Religion Sect! You guys have no hope, go with us and you will be allowed to live. If you do not come, then you will be cut down right here!”

The black armored leader of the group was wickedly grinning as he spoke.

However, the Immortal Sword Sect understood, even if it was hopeless they must not surrender. Even if they complied, the Demon Religion would have to silence them to ensure that their presence was kept a secret.

“You bastards! Damn bastards!”

“Let’s fight them! Even if we die, we will fight!”

“Then, let’s fight them!”

The young female and male disciples did not surrender and everyone began shouting.

The Demon Religion Group frowned.

If the other group refused to cooperate, there will be little trouble. After all, they were only at stage five of spirit novice realm.

“Seems like you do not know when there is a great offer in front of you!”

The black armored leader lifted his tiger blade and slashed through the air as a warning.

Senior Mu of Immortal Sword Sect seeing this, could not bear it.

“Fight!”

Right after he uttered these words, he dashed towards the black armored leader and clashed swords with him.

“Kill!”

Senior Mu was being overpowered, his spiritual force was overwhelmed and the enemy's spiritual force burst through his defences. Senior Mu could not support the Spiritual Force in his sword. Senior Mu was forcefully sent back as one of his arms were cut off.

Senior Mu was weakened by the black dome, how could his strength compare to his opponent?

“Senior Mu!”

The other disciples prepared to charged forward and aimed their swords at the black armored leader.

“Anyone who dares challenge me will be punished!”

The black armored leader brutally roared.

Everyone was shocked to their wits. After seeing the hot-blooded youth, the revolt in the hearts of the Sword Sect immediately died down. They still had a fierce fire in their eyes, but they were unwilling to retaliate against the Demon Religion group.

There were many powerful disciples here, but under the black

dome's effect, the Immortal Sword Sect disciples were under a disadvantage. They were now only slightly higher than the average stage of cultivation, how could they resist these professionals?

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples began to feel despair. A lot of people did not know whether to follow or resist.

Crack!

Just then, a sound came from near the outer black dome.

Very loud.

Everyone turned to look at the source of the sound.

They saw a plain cultivator, carrying a sword hilt step out from the woods.

Su Yun's eyes carefully observed the black armored leader, and quietly walked towards the black dome.

The young man gave a very SOLEMN performance.

No surprise, no sorrow and no joy.

He seemed to have only one goal.

He was flanking the Demon Religion group!

"I am a spiritual cultivator!"

"Oh, more prey? Low strength too, ha!"

"One more is one more! Pretty good, right?"

The black armored leader laughed loudly, then shouted: "Lackies, go bring him to the Immortal Sword Sect disciples. Also, take care of the Immortal Sword Sect disciples! If he or them resist....just kill them!"

"Yes"

Then, seven members of the Demon Religion Group attacked.

"You....you....do not come near me!"

A trembling female disciples said as she looked at the black

armored disciples moved closer.

“Fucking bitch! You want to flee? I will make sure you die!”

The black armored leader grabbed a female disciple and evilly smiled.

“Let her go!”

A male disciple roared as he attacked.

However, right at the next second, the black armored leader kicked the disciple to the ground. The disciple struggled to get up and coughed up blood.

“A group of useless cultivators dare resist us? This black dome allows us to use our full strength while you guys are greatly weakened. It was designed by the head, it is stupid to think you could beat us right now!”

The black armored leader said disdainfully. Then he pulled the female disciple clumsily out of the smaller black dome.

It was chaos.

The other lackies confronted Su Yun.

“Hey brat! Quickly come here or uncle will kill you!”

A lackey equipped with a large hammer while shouting directly at Su Yun.

Chapter 13 - I am called Sword God

Su Yun turned a deaf ear to the lackies' shouts. Instead, he accelerated his pace and closed in on the south side of the black dome.

“How dare you ignore uncle, are you tired of living? I will now cut off your legs!”

The lackey was furious. He summoned up his spirit qi and rushed towards Su Yun. He was fast and angry.

Su Yun's pace abruptly stopped and took a deep breath. Then he lifted his hands and thrust his rusted sword towards the outer black dome.

As the sword came in contact with the outer black dome, countless spirit energy ripples through the dome.

Then, an amazing scene emerged.

After gazing at the rusted sword, it actually managed to pierce through the outer black dome.

Then, the entire outer and inner dome fragmented. The absorbed spirit qi poured out, like a ruptured tank.

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples were flabbergasted as they watched the scene.

The spiritual force was immediately absorbed back into the Immortal Sword Sect disciples and they regained their former strength.

“What?”

The blacked armored leader eyes opened wide and his heart filled with panic.

The situation has completely changed!

“This...what....what is this?”

“The black dome....is now broken!”

“Boy! Who are you?”

The black armored senior screamed.

This black dome although was not perfect, but it was not magic. It was a spirit array technique, so it should not have been this easy to break.

Cang Yu was still stunned of the black dome's demise. For this mission, although he did not know much about the spirit array technique, even if it was a low level technique, the head of the sect had set it up.

“Kill! Kill him for me! Lackeys, kill him!”

The black armored leader was consumed by rage as he roared.

But right at the next second, he was surrounded by Immortal Sword Sect disciples.

The black armored leader was shocked and quickly tried to retreat. After rolling away to dodge the incoming sword strikes, he began to see countless Immortal Sword Sect disciples moving to assault him.

The black dome took many of the Immortal Sword Sect spirit qi and lowered them many stages. However, now that the dome was destroyed, and the disciples regained most of their former spirit qi, what was there to fear with over twenty different disciples?

“Kill the gang of thieves! Take revenge for brother Lu and Yu Mu!”

A disciple of the Immortal Sword Sect shouted.

“Kill!”

Everyone shouted.

The black armored leader face paled as he saw the situation completely change. He quickly shouted: “Withdraw!”

The wicked group hurried to flee, but did not go far, before the disciples of the Immortal Sword Sect caught up.

Except for the black armored leader, every other member of wicked group was decapitated.

The situation had completely reversed!

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples escorted back the black armored leader.

“Bring him back and sacrifice him for fellow Lu!”

“Let him kneel in front of brother Lu’s corpse!”

“Cut off his head!”

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples clamored.

The black armored leader was now utterly terrified to the point that a he smelled of urine now. He begged for mercy, but it had no effect.

The black armored leader had humiliated the Immortal Sword disciples, so why would he have mercy?

A disciple raised his sword and the tip pointed at the black armored leader’s neck. He was ready to decapitate the black armored leader.

“Let us not hurry to kill this guy. Killing him now would be useless!”

The nearby Su Yun analyzing the situation, decided to speak up.

The people focused on the Su Yun.

After the Immortal Sword Sect disciples heard this, they looked at Su Yun and decided to stop their actions for now.

“I thank you senior. If senior did not manage to get rid of the black dome, I am afraid that everyone here would have already died to the Demon Religion Sect!”

Many of the Immortal Sword disciples came over to thank Su

Yun.

“Do not mention it. it is a small matter. Everyone would have done the same. I heard your plight and I happened to pass by. How could I not help you guys?”

Su Yun said.

A saint.

The words made many of the disciples hearts warm. Many of the disciples now had a very good impression of Su Yun.

“What a chivalrous heart! I need to make you my role model!”

“Do not call me that, for I have still not entered the spirit intermediate realm yet! Just call me Sword God!” Su Yun lied.

“Still haven’t entered the spirit intermediate realm?” Everyone was taken aback.

With only a cultivation of spirit novice realm, he still dared to travel alone in the Crescent Valley. Isn’t this just courting death?

However, after observing Su Yun easily breaking the black dome, Su Yun was not normal. No one here would dare to look down on him.

“Why? Why should we just not kill him? They are murderer!” Before the elder disciple of the Immortal could speak, a female disciples interrupted as she looked at Su Yun.

“Yes, he should be hacked into piece!”

“A thousand piece! This bastard, we do not even know how many people he murdered!”

The disciples clamored. They were filled with resentment for the black armored leader.

The black armored leader trembled as he stayed kneeling on the ground.

Su Yun nodded: “ You say you guys want revenge, but if just kill

him, you will cut off all leads. The Demon Religion Sect is hidden in the Crescent Valley. Without him, how would you guys find it? Leave him alive, so after you notify your Immortal Sword Sect, you can obtain revenge for your comrades. We cannot let this Demon Religion Sect to continue to exist in this world! We have to cut off all its roots!”

“Brother is right, we should immediately notify the elders in our faction of what happened today!”

“Let’s quickly leave the Crescent Valley and return to our sect now!”

“Brother Mu also needs treatment! Let’s hurry back!”

“Move Move!”

Disciples yelled. They made their decision.

They did not want to stay in this haunting place for one more moment.

After Su Yun heard this, he quickly said: “Wait!”

“Brother, what do you need?” Disciple Mu asked.

“If you leave now, we would be exposed?”

“Exposed?”

“Yes!” Su Yun nodded and continued: “ These dead bunch of thieves will be found out later. Once the head inspects the area, I’m afraid that by the time the Immortal Sword Sect elders arrive back, the Demon Religion Sect will have already left the Crescent Valley! Once they leave, they threaten the entire continent!”

After his remark, everyone began to think.

“What brother said was right! Brothers and sisters, we cannot just go!”

Just then, the female disciple with reddened cheeks from before glanced at Su Yun. She agreed with what he said.

“But if we don’t go, how can we wipe out the Demon Religion Sect?”

“We cannot accomplish this!”

“Since big brother thought about this, he must have a plan, right?”

“A Plan?” In fact it is very simple. Some disciples just need to blend in with the Demon Religion Sect and infiltrate it. Then they can destroy it within! The rest can return back to the sect.”

“Blend in with the Demon Religion Sect?”

Everyone was shocked: “Is this not just courting death?”

“We will not die!”

Su Yun glanced at the senior disciples of the Immortal Sword Sect and was surprised to find he raised his eyes. A few of the disciples lined with the wounded brother and some others made the other line.

“Mu brother, I heard that you guys have sword techniques called “Sword Shadow,” which with the help of applying spiritual force on the surface of the body, it will act as camouflage! Right?”

Brother Mu was shocked: “No one is supposed to know about this technique outside of Immortal Sword Sect. How did you get this knowledge?”

“Ha ha, I have friends in the Immortal Sword Sect!” Su Yun laughed as he thought of his past.

After brother Mu heard this, his concern disappeared. Then he said: “We are Immortal Sword Disciples, so we naturally learn Sword Shadow.”

“Very good.” Su Yun nodded. Then he continued: “We will use this techniques to disguise ourselves and teach the Demon Religion Sect a lesson!”

“These poor skills will be easily discovered by their leader!

Impossible! Impossible!” Brother Mu shook his head hastily.

“These evildoers, although they might be stronger than me, but they are only at spirit intermediate realm. They should be taught a lesson. We will mix in with the masters, so we won’t be seen through! Brother Mu, rest assured!”

“But....”

“Brother Mu, do you forget the principles of the Immortal Sword Sect? This is for the benefit of the common people! It will benefit the people! Furthermore, once we successfully destroy the Demon Religion Sect, there will be many rewards waiting inside. There must be many powerful techniques and only fear is holding us back! You want fame, but are afraid to go out in the world!”

Su Yun said.

Hearing this, brother Mu relented.

Common people? What benefits for the common people? He did not care. He cares about the opportunities for himself and the practitioners. He cared about the sect.

This was an opportunity, an opportunity that every practitioner cherished, even if there are risks.

“Fine. I will agree with this method!”

Finally, brother Mu had made his decision.

Su Yun nodded his head: “You inform your people, since you are injured. Except for me, select seven other people to come with me and teach the head of the Demon Religion Sect a lesson! Bring the leader to lead us there!”

“The murderer should be killed!” Brother Mu said as his eyes filled with distrust. As he remembered the excruciating pain in his arm, his eyes passed over to the enemy with killing intent.

“But not now!”

After Su Yun finished, he began to walk towards the black

armored leader.

Chapter 14 - A Genuine Righteous Individual

The black armored leader of Spirit intermediate realm spirit qi was sealed. Su Yun began to drag him aside.

“Do you want to live?”

“I want! I beg you, please spare my life!” The black armored leader grabbed the rope binding him and whined.

“I can allow you to live, but...”

“I am willing to lead the way. I will lead you to the Demon Religion Sect!”

The black armored leader did not wait for Su Yun to finish and tried to guess the meaning of the words.

But right at the next second, Su Yun gave him a quick kick.

While Su Yun was stepping on the black armored leader, he whispered: “Lead us! This is what you have to do, but you also have to answer me honestly for what I am about to ask.”

“Please....Please ask..” The face of the black armored leader anxiously shouted without any hesitation.

After Su Yun heard this, he whispered: “Heavenly Crystal...is in whose hands?”

“Heav....Heavenly Crystal?”

“Yes! The Heavenly Crystal is in whose hands?!” Su Yun hissed as he pulled out his rusted blade against the black armored leader’s forehead.

The black armored leader was terrified. He fumbled on his next words.

“It...it...it...is...in the hands of the headmaster...”

“The headmaster has it?” Su Yun asked.

“Yes....”

“When is it out of his sight?”

“This...this...I do not know.”

Pierce!

The rusted sword pierced into the black armored leader's forehead a little.

It started to bleed. The pain was obvious.

The black armored leader dared not to move. Once he moved, he would get stabbed and could only cry out in pain. The Immortal Sword Sect disciples were confused of what was happening “You really do not know?” Su Yun asked one more time.

“Little one....I really do not know, uncle, I beg you to spare me....”

The black armored leader cried out. He was close to fainting.

Suddenly, the black armored leader had a thought and quickly said: “I know. I think that sometimes the leader may not wear it at that time. For sure he does not wear...”

“When?” Su Yun asked.

“At...when he is with his wife!”

“Oh? That will be night, right?”

“Not necessarily...the headmaster and his wife.....usually in the morning...”

“A good atmosphere at that time!”

Su Yun thought for a moment, then put away his sword and turned towards the Immortal Sword Sect disciples.

“What did you try to force out of him?” Senior Mu suspiciously asked.

“I asked about some rules of his murderous Demon Religion Sect. Sneaking into the gang of thieves with some knowledge will further prevent from anyone exposing us!” Su Yun laughed.

“Big brother is very careful!”

The female disciples called Mu Cheng laughed.

“Well, everybody. Take the clothes from the individuals that died. We will need them to camouflage ourselves to infiltrate the Demon Religion Sect. Everyone else who is not coming, please return to the Immortal Sword Sect and notify them! Oh, yes, they should be prepared, tell them to prepare “Ultimate Pole Technique.” Although this technique may not play a big role in the morning raid, be sure to make them prepare this technique in the morning, so it will be easy to kill the wicked headmaster of the Demon Religion Sect. This will increase the chance of winning greatly!”

“Huh? How do you know that?”

“The culprit here said it.”

The senior disciple Mu glanced at the black armored leader lying on the floor and nodded his head: “understood!”

“Well, let’s split up!”

“Are you coming with us fellow sword god?”

“Of course, this is a crime, so it my duty! How can I just ignore this?”

“Big Brother is righteous!”

Everyone exclaimed.

“.....”

Following the road out of Crescent Valley would take the Immortal Sword Sect disciples two days on spirit stallion. The Immortal Sword Sect relied on themselves, so they walked here. Therefore, even if they had powerful sword and movement techniques, it would take some time to return to the Immortal Sword Sect. Nonetheless, after they notified the headmaster, he would be able to arrive instantly. Therefore, everyone just stayed

here for a moment before leaving.

Surprisingly, senior Mu decided to stay.

According to him, everyone of the Demon Religion Sect had done many irreversible wicked deeds. He still was suspicious that Su Yun would give up and just return say he exterminated everyone. Therefore, it would be more satisfying to watch and see what happens.

However everyone knew, senior Mu just wanted some action during this raid. It was a great opportunity for martial contribution and promotion to elite disciples. With his arm cut off, maybe he would be allowed for promotion if he contributed something?

After the other left, there were only: Jiang Long, Bai Xiao Fei, Zhang Da Qiang, Li Xin Jian, Liu Rong Hua, Senior Mu and Cheng Mu.

These were all inner sect disciples who were strong and had courage.

Although this time was a chance of getting many rewards, but they still had to be careful of their lives. No one wanted to go first, since there were only going to be a few people. After they prepared the shadow sword technique, they were ready.

Su Yun greeted the crowd and then lead the black armored leader with the group towards the Demon Religion Sect.

“Everyone be careful. Keep a careful eye on this guy! He is very crafty and he is familiar with here. We cannot let him escape! Otherwise, our lives will be on the line!”

Senior Mu spoke weakly.

“Understood!” Jiang Long and Bai Xia Fei nodded as they were near Senior Mu.

“Senior Mu, are you alright?” The female disciple Mu Cheng

asked worryingly.

“I am fine. As long as I can survive this day then the Demon Religion will be wiped out!”

Senior struggled to say.

Upon seeing this, the others remained silent.

This was life or death. If they managed to succeed, these Immortal Sword disciples would reap great benefits, gain fame and fortune. However, if they died all was lost. Therefore, everyone remained very cautious.

Soon, the black armored leader lead the crowd through a hazy fog area. As they walked through the Crescent Valley’s unique marshes, they finally came to the depths of the Crescent Valley.

The Demon Religious Sect.

“Dear uncle, this is the Demon Religious Sect.” The black armored leader terrifyingly said.

Everyone looked ahead.

The city was very impressive, deep in the valley. There was a large imposing building at the center and it was surrounded by a wide variety of other buildings. It was a magnificent sight.

However, it was still a sect. There was a formation around the entire sect and it was evident that it was enchanted. If something were to happen, the disciples inside would be immediately alerted.

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples were all surprised.

“It looks like the Demon Religion Sect is not as simple as it seems.”

“But compared to our Immortal Sword Sect, it is still far worse!”

Bai Xiao Fei disdainfully said.

“Black armored leader said that if we do not return within a day, we will arouse suspicion, so we better hurry up!”

Senior Mu spoke up.

Everyone nodded and prepared to enter.

“Wait a moment!”

Then, suddenly, Su Yun shouted.

“Everyone raised their eyebrows and ask: “What?”

Su Yun suddenly pulled out his rusted sword and quickly stabbed through the black armored leader’s heart.

The black armored leader was completely caught off guard and instantly died as the sword pierced through his heart. He fell twitching on the ground.

Everyone was stunned as their heart was caught off guard, but they soon recovered.

Everyone understood Su Yun’s actions.

If they let the black armored leader come with them, they could easily be exposed.

But they still did not feel bad for the black armored leader. There were already seven Immortal Sword Sect disciples and Su Yun. The group of thieves only had eight people, so if they brought more people, Demon Religion Sect would become suspicious. It seemed the Su Yun never intended to let the black armored leader live.

After the black armored leader died, Su Yun allowed everyone to put on the clothe of the people of the Demon Religion Sect. Then, they made sure to use the shadow sword technique for camouflage. Finally, Su Yun lead them into the Demon Religion Sect...

Chapter 15 - Are you going to block me?

The Inner Demon Religion Hunting Halls.

“Hey, I said, how did you guys come back empty-handed? Where is the prey?”

A huge one-eyed sturdy guy clutching a bottle of wine while looking at the shaking “black armored leader,” loudly asked.

“Those bastards resisted to the bitter end. They would rather die than come with us. Their side had more people, so we could not afford to hold back. In the end, they had to be exterminated.”

The “black armored leader” Said as he sighed.

“All slaughtered?” The one-eyed man asked while he disdainfully looked at the “black armored leader’s” eyes with disdain: “No wonder the injuries you guys received were not light. However, you failed to even capture one person. You guys are trash!”

“What are you fucking saying?” The “black armored leader” (TL: going to just use Su Yun, since it is too much of a hassle and confusing to writing out black armored leader) angrily said.

“What? You want to fight me?”

The one-eyed man’s voice rose an octave as he stared down at Su Yun.

Su Yun glanced at the man’s appearance and then quickly turned and left.

“Just a pathetic coward!” The one-eyed man said as he smiled.

Because of the injuries he “suffered,” Su Yun specially requested to have a rest for two days. This will allow him to recuperate from his wounds in the cultivation room. Thankfully, it was approved.

The Immortal Sword disciples must have already informed of the event to the elders. Therefore, Su Yun was very content right now. Since it was the recuperation room, then it was naturally safe. He

could just wait for the reinforcements.

Nonetheless, Su Yun could not afford to just wait.

During the second morning he went to the cultivation room. Then he went towards the headmaster's area.

The Demon Religion Sect taught thousands of disciples and like other sects, they were very strict. Only those close to the headmaster could get close to him. Su Yun would of course not be allowed.

“Black Stone Wolf? What are you doing here?” A fourth stage spirit soul disciple (Tl: 4th realm, 3 realms more than Su Yun) guard frowned as he went to intercept Su Yun.

“I have something important to discuss with headmaster. I beg you to inform him!”

“Something important?” The guard looked alert. “What is important? Pass it to me so I can inform the headmaster!”

“The sect is at stake, so I must personally inform headmaster. Quickly move out of the way! If you delay this and the leader blames you, you dare take the risk?” Su Yun asked seriously.

“You...” The guard's face flickered with traces of anger, because how could his junior speak like this to him?

His heart was furious and extremely unhappy. He shouted: “The headmaster does not have time for you! Get out!”

“Fine!” Su Yun replied.

Su Yun could not help but sneer: “When the situation becomes serious and the sect is threatened. Do not blame me for informing him that you did not let me give him crucial information.”

Then Su Yun just turned and walked away.

After the guard heard this, one with a pale face, hesitated and then shouted: “Wait!”

Su Yun stopped: “ What?”

The guard looked nervous and said: “The headmaster is busy, so if you go in... I’m afraid that the headmaster would become furious!”

Su Yun only shook his head and said: “You do not have to worry about these things, for the headmaster will not get angry. However, if the headmaster become upset, I will take all the blame!”

After hearing this, the guard pondered for a moment, then nodded: “Just go then!”

Su Yun confidently walked forward.

The headmaster’s cultivation place gave a powerful aura. Firstly, to enter the area, there was a paved silver path decorated with emeralds. There were three large formation patterns that one had to cross to enter the Spirit Lake. This was the only way to arrive at the cultivation room of the headmaster, which was basically a palace.

The Demon Religion Sect was really rich. After committing countless murders over the past years, they managed to plunder a massive amount of treasure. Since the Demon Religion disciples just took all of their victims treasures, the sect was filled with all kinds of riches.

Nonetheless, the temptation of the Crescent Moon Fruit and Heavenly Crystal still attracted countless disciples to rush into the valley.

Su Yun did not actually go near the cultivation field, but he decided to observe the surrounding area.

If he went too near to the cultivation field, he feared that he would be detected by the headmaster. To increase his chance of staying hidden, Su Yun covered his body with more camouflage powder.

After a stick of incense.

Su Yun quickly left the headmaster's cultivation area.

When he approached the guard, Su Yun did not forget to stop.

"On headmaster's order, you shall not mention this meeting to anyone, or you will be eliminated. Understand?"

Seeing the serious expression on Su Yun, the guard nodded his head: "I understand."

"Very good!"

Su Yun patted the guard's shoulder and turned to leave.

After leaving the headmaster's area, his mission still did not end.

This was necessary to allow his plan to move forward. As long as he got results as planned, he will not get wet. (Tl: there won't be problems)

As he remained disguised, Su Yun wandered throughout the sect, even if many places were restricted. He spent the other half of the day, and almost finished exploring the entire sect.

At dusk, he returned to black armored leader's residence and waited inside.

This shabby room was filled with a strange stinky smell, but Su Yun did not really care. As he jumped onto the bed, he began to cultivate the spirit qi inside his body to speed up his progression.

Then, using the sword, he began to practice a sword technique.

The basic sword technique was built on drawing out the inner spirit qi from deep inside the body. Then, it would be released to form spirit sword Qi. Although, it was very weak in its primitive state.

Although it was the , it was still not easy to practice.

Any four of the swords would require a huge amount of spirit qi to break through.

For the first sword, once the stage was broken through, the person would be able to control a hundred swords to fly.

To break through the sword arts, one would need to obtain profound insights in spirit sword Qi.

Spirit Qi, was very powerful if used properly. To control it properly, the spiritual links inside the body must be honed and be allowed to connect to one's inner core area for spirit qi. To convert the spirit qi to spirit sword Qi would be the most crucial.

Su Yun raised his hands, directing the spirit qi of his body, so that it converged on his palm.

His spirit qi began to pour out, gathering into his palm and formed into a bright blue ball. It was mesmerizing to watch.

Su Yun was stunned by the sight as he stared at the Spirit sphere he formed from his spirit qi. Then he tried to manipulate it.

While gradually twisting the ball, and after a moment, he managed to separate it into different wisps.

Then the wisps began to transform into a thin layer of film that lightly covered Su Yun's palm.

However, the coverage was not uniform, since in some places it was more and some it was less.

The reason for this was Su Yun's cultivation realm was not really high enough for this type of manipulation.

Although Su Yun had the memories, learning capability and the ability, he was still only at novice realm six stage cultivation. He still needed to practice hard.

Su Yun did not sleep that night and practiced until next morning.

At dawn, he stopped practicing, so that he could fetch some food. He ate a lot to recuperate and glanced outside of his window. Then he quickly left.

After about half an hour later.

There was a knock on the door.

“Black Stone Wolf! Black Stone Wolf, are you there?”

Disguised as the Demon Religion Sect, disciple Zhang Da Jiang was outside of the door.

After calculating the time, Su Yun was afraid those disciples who returned to Immortal Sword Sect would rush here immediately after they were informed of the matter.

All the disguised disciples stayed in brother Mu’s room. They just waited for the arrival of the experts to collaborate to destroy the Demon Religion Sect.

Zhang Da Jiang and his comrades wanted to notify Su Yun, but after knocking on the door for a long time, there was no reaction.

Zhang Da Jiang was frantic.

Did something happen to Sword God?

“Noisy noisy noisy. Why so noisy? Black Stone Wolf already left early in the morning, so why are you knocking on the door? Can’t you allow me to just sleep?”

Just then, the room next to the other congregation exploded in uproar.

“Gone?!”

After Zhang Da Jiang heard this, he immediately froze up.

At that moment, a light sound of a sword was rippling across the sky. After, the sound travelled and went straight to the skies of the Demon Religion Sect.

“I never thought that deep of the Crescent Valley was in possession of such a harmful sect! Good! Good! Today, I, Hurricane Blade will punish you!”

The sound rippling through the air came from four different sources.

“The four Immortal Sword Sect Elders!” Zhang Da Jiang stared blankly...

Chapter 16 - The Heavenly Crystal

Zhang Da Jiang dashed into his fellow disciples room and shouted: “The four Hurricane Elders! Brothers, it’s the four Hurricane Elders!”

As the four Hurricane elders descended, a loud sound of swords seemed to filled the sky.

The silent Demon Religion Sect exploded in activity. All of the sect equipped their weapons and clumsily left their practice areas in an extremely embarrassed manner.

As one gazed upon the sky, there were nearly a hundred people on soaring swords.

These people were all richly dressed in elaborate armor, with sword qi wrapping around their entire bodies. They proudly overlooked the valley like a fairy.

The light shined on them and made them appear awe-inspiring to the disciples down below.

The Demon Religion Sect became terrified.

“There is a situation!”

“Quick, activate the enchantment!”

“Alert! Get ready to meet the enemy!”

“Alert the headmaster!”

People of the Demon Religion Sect began yell frantically.

Hidden in the shadows, Su Yun gazed the sky and silently whispered: “Is this the power of Sword Arts?”

“Those Sword Arts and the Limitless Sword Arts are worlds apart. These techniques only require the transmission of sword qi around the body to produce the soaring swords. They only mastered the tip of the sword arts. This is their so-called sword

arts. Compared to Limitless Sword Arts, their techniques are nothing but child's play!"

After Su Yun heard this in his mind, he remained silent and turned to leave.

Soon, the Demon Religion Sect began to activate a variety of enchantments. A large number of powerful light wrapped around the buildings of the Demon Religion Sect.

"Hmph, insignificant bugs!"

In the sky, a man with long white hair fluttering in the wind sneered. Then, his hand began to be wrapped by sword qi and slashed towards the spirit formation surrounding the buildings.

Crash! Boom!

With only a bare-handed attack, he sent a gigantic crescent sword qi into the formation.

The extreme sword qi, like a machete went straight towards the formation. Instantly, the formation shattered and the crescent sword qi kept on going. Finally, it smashed into the ground and formed a large crater...

True Power!

Everyone who saw this event only had those two words in their minds.

This move caused the morale of the Demon Religion Sect to plummet drastically.

At that moment.

Within the Demon Religion headmaster area.

"Horrible! A big problem! Headmaster, there is a big problem!"

A figured rushed inside the headmaster main room in panic.

Inside, a male and female could only stop their current lovemaking and look at the man that just charged in.

An extremely overweight individual with an oversized head and large ears turned to face the man. A beautiful young woman climbed off his body.

Both were naked, but they turned to face the individual that just rushed in. They did not really seem shy and only the young female covered herself up with some bed sheets.

“Magnificent sword master!”

The Demon Religion Sect headmaster frowned and looked at the pale individual to ask: “Why are you so terrified?”

“Headmaster, outside...outside...there are countless experts...you...you have to look! The situation outside is hopeless!”

The man sweated bullets as he said this. The panic was evident in his eyes.

“Useless! With only a few experts, what are you so afraid of? Quickly round up everyone and prepare to engage the enemy! Let’s see who is so bold enough to dare come here to fight my sect!”

The headmaster disdainfully sneered and put on his clothes. He headed directly towards the commotion near the practice grounds.

The messenger just lowered his head and remained in the room.

Only after the headmaster left, he raised his head.

The panic stricken face he had was immediately wiped away from his face.

With his quick eyes, he quickly began to inspect the headmaster’s room.

This room was not much better than the main halls of the palace. Nonetheless, it was still covered with brilliant golden paint, powerful columns and a large bed, which was nearly five meters wide.

At the moment, the headmaster’s wife Zheng Mei remained on top of the bed, and speculated the actions of the young messenger.

“Little boy, you are really handsome, are you new to the sect?” The headmaster’s wife lightly chuckled, exposing her white thighs making temptation inevitable.

however, the man did not even seem to hear her words. He went directly to the table beside the bed, but only seemed to be looking for something.

Ignored!

Her naked body was ignored!

The headmaster’s wife suddenly became angry.

However, this man quickly opened and closed the drawers and removed one item from the treasures he found. It was a small treasure box containing the Heavenly Crystal. After quickly analyzing the contents, he quickly turned to flee.

As the headmaster’s wife saw the item, she froze for a moment. Then, with a loud voice:” How dare you remove my husband’s “Heavenly Crystal!” Are you tired of living?”

She never thought that this man would be so bold. To steal this treasure in front of her face.

Immediately, she disregarded her pride and ripped the bed sheets. She jumped off the bed without any clothes and threw a punch towards the man.

Her punch was infused with a rich amount of spiritual power, with the power of two steel thorns, stabbing into his body.

As her fist closed in on Su Yun, he quickly removed a parchment from his spatial ring and blocked the punch from the female leader using the parchment as a shield.

A parchment?

The headmaster’s wife was shocked.

Not waiting for the headmaster’s wife shock response, a bright light emitted from the parchment. Then a hazy image of a pair of

old palms extended out of the parchment and collided with the headmaster's wife's palm strike.

Boom!

Fourth Palm Strike.

A resounding noise emitted.

A myriad of sword-like spirit strikes instantly spread through the headmaster's wife entire body. Her entire body was soon filled with wounds...

Puchi...(TL:sound of slashes, if you got a better one, tell me...)

The headmaster's wife just dropped to the ground and coughed up blood. A large amount of sword wounds began to appear all over her body. It was difficult for her to even get up.

Because she saw the disciple's weak cultivation realm, she had underestimated him resulting in her suffering major wounds and a loss.

"I did not think that the elders only amounted to this much!"

Su Yun remained calm and without even glancing at the headmaster's wife, he turned to leave. Utilizing all his spirit qi to the limit, he crashed out of the side of the window and jumped out. He quickly left.

And now, it was time to practice outside.

"Immortal Sword Sect? I never bothered with you guys! Why do you want to come here and harass me?"

The pale faced Demon Religion Sect Headmaster looked up in the sky and shouted.

"You vile person! By relying on the Crescent Valley, you have committed all kinds of vile acts and have become a scourge of the world! The Immortal Sword Sect has determined that this sect must be eradicated from the face of the world! Today, I have found out the vile acts you have done, how can I allow this sect to exist?"

An elder of the Four Hurricane Elders coldly said.

“Bah!” The headmaster spat and quickly laughed out loud: “What justice do you have to eradicate the Demon Religion Sect? You are a hypocrite. Do not think that I don’t know, that you just want to steal my “Heavenly Crystal!”

The Hurricane Elders faces slightly frowned, but soon returned normal.

Then one elder decided that this was enough negotiations and loudly shouted: “ Kill everyone, do not allow anyone to escape!”

“Yes Sir!”

The elite faction of the Immortal Sword Sect responded and began to take action.

“Ha ha ha ha, come! Come! This headmaster is not afraid of you! Just in time for me to use: Ultimate Devil Fiend Art! Become sacrifices for me! Die for me!”

The headmaster laughed.

But this laughing only lasted a moment, before his face suddenly stiffened.

He seemed to feel something was off and he turned and quickly rushed back to his palace.

After arriving at his room, he was surprised to find his wife lying on the floor coughing up blood and the treasure box inside the drawer that held the Heavenly Crystal had disappeared...

Chapter 17 - Fighting and Fleeing

The Heavenly Crystal had disappeared. In a fit of rage, the headmaster grabbed his wife's hair and roared: "What happened! Where is my Heavenly Crystal!!!"

"Idiot...that messenger....was a fake...he was just preparing to take advantage of you and stole the Heavenly Crystal..."

The weak headmaster's wife responded.

"How is this possible? He was only a Spirit novice disciple! Are you trying to deceive me? The headmaster could not believe what his wife was saying.

His wife's realm was higher than Su Yun's by many levels, how could she mistaken Su Yun's true cultivation level? Although his wife was not almighty, but she should be easily able to overpower a spirit novice disciple. What's more, a man came to his room just to deceive him? How dare he!

His wife remained silent.

"Trash!"

The furious headmaster just slammed his wife on the ground.

As he stood back up, he analyzed the room. His eyes settled on the broken window.

"You won't be able to get far!"

As soon as the headmaster said this, he turned to Su Yun's direction.

However, just then, countless spirit sword surrounded him and the sounds of swords shrieks filled the room.

"Let's see where you can run?"

One man with one sword singlehandedly slaughtered his way to the room.

The shrieking sword sounds soon filled the entire room.

“Damn!”

The headmaster eyes became red as he stared at the elder.

Without the Heavenly Crystal, it would be very difficult to deal with a Hurricane Elder.

“Despicable! You even dared to steal my Heavenly Crystal! You are downright shameless!” The headmaster coldly shouted.

“Stolen?”

The Hurricane Elder eyebrows creased.

“Fine! Fine! It doesn’t matter if I don’t have the Heavenly Crystal, I will let you experience the power of Ultimate Devil Fiend Arts!”

After he finished speaking, the headmaster went up towards the Hurricane elder.

At this time, outbursts erupted from the Immortal Sword Sect disciples.

“Dragon Elder arrived! Awesome!”

“The Demon Religion Sect will be eradicated today!”

The voices continued. All of them were ecstatic.

.....

At the moment, in another place in Crescent Valley.

A panting Su Yun was quickly fleeing.

“Ha ha ha ha, this is really the Heavenly Crystal! It is really the Heavenly Crystal! Boy, you just won big! Ha ha ha ha....”

The sword elder bursted into delightful laughter.

“This one time, I have to give thanks to you for your help!”

Su Yun slowly breath as he fled down the path.

“I just helped a little! The most important thing was that you were courageous enough, you were focused in your heart! Otherwise, you would have never accomplished this!” The Sword Elder laughed.

“I was just really really lucky!”

Su Yun began to slow down to take a break.

“With the arrival of the Immortal Sect elders and disciples, they completely forced the Demon Religion Sect to focus on them. All the attention was on the confrontation and with the sword stealth skill, I easily managed to get away.”

“What if you did not get away?”

“Then I would not be able to obtain the Heavenly Crystal. If he could see through my disguise, then I will immediately flee. Outside, with the help of the Immortal Sword Sect Elders, they can protect me and allow me to escape!”

“Then how do you know that the Demon Religion Sect Headmaster would go check out the situation, rather than immediately attack you?”

“This is just my analysis of the Demon Religion Sect Headmaster !”

“Analysis?”

“Yes! A simple analysis of the Demon Religion Sect headmaster! If the headmaster is truly evil, then he will have habits. One of those habits would be to fight and run! If the Heavenly Crystal is outside, it would release a powerful aura. The Hurricane Elders would feel the aura for sure. What do you think the Hurricane Elders would do? Well, if they could they would take it, but if the headmaster had it, it would be different. The headmaster will first assess the situation. If he can kill the Hurricane Elders, he will save the Heavenly Crystal. If the Hurricane Elders are just too powerful, then he will directly consume the Heavenly Crystal!”

“The Heavenly Crystal emits a majestic aura, which is capable of dominating many other treasure auras, therefore the wicked headmaster will probably choose to put it in a box to conceal it... Boy, if he did not place it inside, but kept it with him, what would you do?” The Sword Elder asked.

“Then it is just fate. With the sword fight between the Hurricane Elders and Demon Religion Sect’s headmaster, I would not be able to compete for the Heavenly Crystal. Even if a fluke occurred and I succeeded, I’m afraid that I will be chased by disciples from the Immortal Sword Sect and Demon Religion Sect right away.”

“Then why did you even need the Immortal Sword Set Elites for?”

“If they did not come, how would I even get the opportunity to obtain this treasure? Not to mention, they will probably eradicate the Demon Religion Sect. After they succeed, no one of the Demon Religion Sect will be out to kill me.”

“I never thought that the world-famous Immortal Sword Sect Elders would be used by a kid like you!”

“I’m not using them, it is just an intersection of interests. They want to destroy the Demon Religion Sect and I want to obtain the Heavenly Crystal. We both win.”

“If your plan did not work, what would you do? A mistake could have costed your life, you know?”

“The plan involved a lot of luck, but even if there is just a one percent chance, I would still give this a try!”

The Sword elder was surprised: “ You are too courageous, is the Heavenly Crystal even worth your life?”

“If I did not finish this, alive or dead, there would be no difference, but... I do not have much time left.” Su Yun eyes contracted and gazed into the beyond.

The Sword Elder silently understood what Su Yun meant.

The sword elder's voice was still weak from exhaustion of spirit qi.

Although the sword elder only stayed outside for a short while, he felt the effects greatly.

“Boy, I cannot stay out anymore, take time to learn the and take care of yourself!” The Sword Elder said as he vanished.

“Senior, take care!”

After Su Yun finished, he continued to flee.

However, at this time, a voice emitted from the parchment: “Shit! A powerful person is coming! Be careful! Be careful!”

“Powerful?”

Su Yun was slightly stunned.

He could only then hear the loud crisp sounds coming closer.

“You despicable person, how dare you just enter the Immortal Sword Sect's excursion! Beg forgiveness and kneel, otherwise I will turn you to ashes!”

The shout came and a cloaked richly dressed Immortal Sword Sect disciple appeared in the sky above Su Yun.

So fast!

Su Yun was scared to his bones.

This guy was one of the so-called Immortal Sword Elders.

How could his power overcome this guy's might?

The Immortal Sword Sect sent someone? Did you say Heavenly Crystal? Shameless! Is this how they repay me?

Su Yun was furious.

Escape? It was completely useless, even with his speed of spirit novice realm, how could he compare to the expert in front of him?

Does the Immortal Sword Sect really want the Heavenly Crystal?

His opponent just stayed in the sky and grinded his teeth. He just stood and stared at the hands holding the treasure box.

Suddenly, an idea came to the Immortal Sword Elder's mind.

“Since you managed to escaped so fast...let me see how good is your power!”

Su Yun just frowned and suddenly opened the box...

“Boy, you...what are you going to do? The Immortal Sword Sect asked in shock.

“Since I can not escape, why not fight back?”

Su Yun's voice was filled with regret and killing intent, but he made his final decision....

Hope you enjoy????

Chapter 18 - A Spirit Novice's Counter-attack

In the vast sky above, light was shining on the opponent with fluttering white hair standing on top of a slender white sword.

The man was actually a female! Furthermore, she was extremely beautiful. She had a slim stature and ink-like hair that flowed like a waterfall. Her features were exquisite, to almost perfection. She had piercing phoenix like eyes, soft lips, flawless white cheeks and seemed like a crystal jade. She had a fairy-like holiness emitting from here, like a true noble. If a person could not witness this site, any person would just say this woman never existed.

Like a fresh pale flower and dimming from the sun and the moon every few minutes.

Stunning!

Whoever looked upon this goddess, you would be consumed with lust and your heart and soul would be taken away.

Meanwhile, Su Yun took a deep breath.

Kacha.

The treasure box containing the Heavenly Crystal was opened.

The amazing atmosphere of the Heavenly proliferated out like a fire-like blooming lotus.

The wind was blowing Su Yun's robes as he cancelled the sword stealth effect on his body. He stopped using his stealth powder. Then, the surrounding spirit qi began to encircle him, covering him like a cocoon.

The female immortal seeing the surrounding aura began to cover Su Yun, instantly scolded from the heavens: "Stop immediately! Otherwise, I will kill you!"

However, Su Yun just turned a deaf ear to her shouts.

The exquisite box began to lose its luster as a dark stone suddenly bursted into bright colorful lights.

The overpowering aura these stones emitted were overflowing, causing Su Yun to become breathless. He could not but step back a few times. As the box was shaking in his hands, he felt that the box could just fly away into the sky...

He calmed his nerves, clenched his teeth endure the surrounding aura wrapping around him.

“Sword Elder, how do I use this?” Su Yun asked through his teeth.

“Implant it on your chest.”

Su Yun did not hesitate to grab the Heavenly Crystal.

Once the Heavenly Crystal was in his hands, it felt as it had become a creature.

It was violently thrashing, flailing about, like it wanted to escape from Su Yun’s grasp.

He clenched around it with his full force to make sure it could not flee away.

Then!

Slip...

The Heavenly Crystal disappeared...

Ahhhh!!!!

At the instant that the Heavenly Crystal touched his chest, it began to rapidly melt like ice. Su Yun maintained consciousness and kept his eyes open.

Then, in an instant...

A dark light rose from Su Yun’s chest into the sky.

It was a grand and magnificent scene, like the sun rising up at dawn. Completely shocking.

Su Yun was surrounded by rubble levitating around him that seemed to emit an aura of power. The ground beneath his feet was rendered charcoal black.

Seeing this, the dignified fairy-like woman just murmured: "Impossible, even if it is just a portion of the Heavenly Crystal, it contains the power of supreme gods. I did not know that the power it containing was this amazing."

Su Yun was overflowing with sweat on his face, because this time, he was under a lot of pressure.

From the power of the Heavenly Crystal, his spirit qi broke through many stages. The Heavenly Crystal remained on his chest as the energy continuously poured out of it. The spirit qi seemed to be endless!

His bones, blood vessels, organs, etc. were all enveloped with a mysterious golden gas.

Both of his eyes turned golden, as the Heavenly Crystal on his chest released the spirit qi. It seemed that his body began to accumulate unlimited power.

He had been instantly reborn! He shed his cocoon and turned into a butterfly.

Power!

Su Yun could clearly feel the spirit qi coursing through him.

Just like a man who ate well and slept well.

Agility, Strength, Aura, Spirit sense and spirit qi proficiency increased to an unprecedented height. His spiritual manipulation capabilities had become monstrous.

An air surge came over and blew the immortal goddess back a little.

“The Heavenly Crystal really is a precious item, but you, a weak person actually had to use it! However, how can you overcome an immortal? Your poor cultivation cannot resist my great strength! just give up and surrender it!”

The immortal did not dare wait. After she finished, the white snow surrounding her began to turn into a sword and suddenly flew towards Su Yun.

Just as the sword arrived, Su Yun dived to dodge as hair stood up on his body.

Su Yun stared at the white light and remained speechless.

Still stunned, he lifted his rusty sword and with his body covered in spirit qi, and thrust his sword to the incoming attack.

Countless spirit qi energy surged into his sword as he clashed with the blade.

Clang!!!

A rusted sword was actually up against the white sword of an Immortal.

The swords collided.

Even though the rusted sword was immersed with spirit qi and became very tough, it still lost to the white sword and instantly disintegrated into a powder. However, the white sword still kept going and went straight to Su Yun.

Bang!

The white sword of the immortal goddess actually lost its fierce overbearing sword qi, as it trembled crazily, but she was forced step back from the force of the collision.

Su Yun's heart became cold after he saw this. As Spirit energy enveloped his hand, he rushed towards the immortal goddess. He was unarmed, but he still rushed forward to deliver a strike aiming for the immortal goddess's head.

If this strike hit, then the immortal would surely die with her head cracked open.

However, the immortal was frightening fast. When the fist was about to touch her body, she just disappeared.

She re-emerged behind Su Yun.

Bang!

He instantly used his palm strike, smashing the ground and shaking the surrounding mountains. Rocks flew everywhere. The spirit qi that the fists transmitted to the ground was like the power of a waterfall smashing to the ground.

“You are so reckless!”

Seeing Su Yun’s actions, the immortal goddess was furious. Her hands gripped the white sword and whizzed through the air to stab Su Yun.

It was like white lightning!

Puchi.

The sword pierced through Su Yun.

Blood splattered...

Countless Spirit Sword slashes slowly appeared on Su Yun.

But...

The mysterious spirit qi that was wrapped around Su Yun instantly blocked the incoming spirit sword slashes.

And!

Su Yun did not even feel any pain.

Then, Su Yun abruptly turned and using the deep mysterious spiritual power, he slashed the white sword away from the immortal and his fist landed a blow to the immortal goddess’ shoulder.

Bang!

The immortal goddess was caught off guard and her shoulder took a blow, then again and again until she began to cough up blood!

Su Yun took a deep breath and glanced at his chest wound. He saw that the flesh was broken through, but it was evidently quickly repairing itself.

“The almighty power of Spirit immortals bestowed upon me...no wonder cultivators are addicted to cultivations, the spirit qi of immortals are awe-inspiring.” Su Yun said.

“It appears I have underestimated the power of the Heavenly Crystal!”

As the fairy hissed these words, he eyes narrowed and she began to look serious. With the white sword in her hands, and one eye shut, she violently cursed.

“Sword for my heart, rise spirit qi, I sacrifice the blood of an immortal, Ultimate Sky Arts...”

With the words uttered, the surrounding winds of the area suddenly picked up.

The sky darkened and rubble began to rise up.

A white whirlwind began to wrap around the white sword, as if the wind was attracted to it...

“Not good!”

Suddenly, Sword eldered warned.

Su Yun expression paled as he heard the warning from Sword elder.

“New Variant Sword Arts?”

Su Yun whispered.

The entire Crescent Valley seem to emit sword aura, as if her

Spirit Sword Qi had formed an absolute field. The valley had become her sword domain.

The numerous spirit beasts of the valley immediately prostrated themselves to surrender against this indomitable power. The beast did not even think of resisting such power.

“Boy, make haste! This is pure Sword Qi. If I was alive, it would be only a pathetic trick. However, you’re only a spirit novice disciple, you cannot withstand the power of this move. Quickly escape! Leave!” The sword elder roared nervously.

However, Su Yun remained still: “How wide is this Sword Qi spreading, this Sword Qi is surrounding everywhere, I do not think I can escape.”

The Sword Elder thought he heard wrong, he was stunned: “Do you want to give up?”

“Of course not!”

Su Yun replied.

Suddenly, he did not leave, but was headed in a different direction, he rushed towards the immortal.

“Boy, what are you doing?” The Sword Elder urgently asked.

“To die!”

Seeing that the man was not escaping, but actually rushing towards her, the immortal smiled. Then he sword qi enveloped her white sword again and was sent chopping down towards Su Yun.

Boom! Boom!

Every slash had enough power to form deep cracks on the ground.

This was the true power of Spirit immortals.

With this technique, she seemed to have enough power to split the entire Earth!

As the Sword Qi kept slamming down and covering the whole sky, the Sword Qi was making Su Yun tense his body, his skin, veins, and so forth. He was really uncomfortable.

“You’re finished boy! Finished! You were too arrogant and all will be lost!” The Sword Elder said: “You are just too arrogant!”

However, the Sword Elder was surprised that with a few strides, Su Yun actually instantly appeared in front of the immortal. Not waiting for her reaction, he extended one of his finger and released a bitter jab into the arm of the immortal.

The gentle one finger, actually produced a mysterious effect....

“Well...”

The Immortal just shivered again and again. With the white sword still in her hands and the white gas surrounding the valley, she suddenly spit a mouthful of blood from her lips. The Sword Qi strike that was moving towards Su Yun suddenly disappeared.

“What?”

The Sword Elder was completely dumbfounded.

Chapter 19 - Sixty Thousand Spirit Coins

The massive Sword Qi that emitted the overpowering aura just disappeared without a trace.

In the surrounding area, the Sword Qi that was overflowing before had dissipated. Everything just disappeared, as if it never happened.....

“How can this be?”

The Immortal goddess was shocked and surprised: “ You...you actually broke my New Variant Sword Arts. Just who are you?”

But right at the next second, her stomach ate a punch and her whole body took a step back.

Su Yun did not give an opportunity for her to recover, if you had an advantage, you must win!

The immortal was extremely annoyed and ignored the obvious effects of the Heavenly Herb on her opponent. She was thinking about how despicable Su Yun was. Immediately, with a hand flick, she clenched the white sword and exerted all her strength.

The sword aura swept over the valley again as the Sword Qi began to fill the valley.

Su Yun remained indifferent and no fear was shown. He already knew the outcome of this useless attempt.

Just then, a series of shrill whistling swords began to move towards their location.

A blue-robed elder had arrived.

He glanced at the situation and saw the conflict. He saw the Immortal on the ground and Su Yun holding a sword.

It was the Hurricane Elder!

It appeared that he had defeated the headmaster!

Without the Heavenly Crystal, the Demon Religion Sect headmaster was easily dealt with.

Su Yun's heart went cold. He now had to face the Immortal and the Hurricane Elder. Even with the help of the Heavenly Crystal, how could he win this?

I must retreat!

He made up his mind, turned around and quickly fled.

“You want to flee? It is not that easy!”

The Hurricane Elder picked up his speed and quickly followed after Su Yun with his Sword Qi shrieking.

With the treasure within his grasp, the Hurricane Elder was viciously sending Spirit Sword Qi at Su Yun. Suddenly, with a sharp turn, Su Yun turned towards the Hurricane Elder. His body was wrapped with powerful spirit qi from the Heavenly Crystal.

As the Spirit Sword Qi strikes hit his body, Su Yun just ignored them. Then, he directly aimed at the Hurricane Elder's forehead with his fist.

Thunk!

The Hurricane Elder never expected that Su Yun would turn back and attack him, it was too late to dodged. He immediately ate the fist and was sent tumbling backwards. He was slammed against a tree and couldn't stop shaking.

The Hurricane Elder was heavily injured.

After Su Yun saw this, he remained calm.

The strength of the Hurricane Elder, how could he not avoid a simple palm strike?!

Su Yun was just afraid...although he managed to defeat the leader, he was still heavily injured.

Nonetheless, this was an opportunity!

Su Yun eyed the downed elder and leapt with the intent to kill. He reversed his original path and didn't escape, actually....he rushed towards the Hurricane Elder.

“He wants to kill him!”

Far away, the immortal goddess saw Su Yun's intention and called out. Her heart trembled, because she did not expect that Su Yun was actually this audacious! The immortal goddess immediately rushed over with the intention to recklessly push this person away from the elder.

However, Su Yun did not evade, after all, there was still a difference in distance. There was no time for the immortal goddess to aid this elder. He could just crush the Hurricane Elder's head and dodge the immortal goddess. The key was just not to get hurt, with the power of the Heavenly Crystal, as long as he was not fatally injured, he could not die.

Suddenly, his chest became hot and instantly the extremely abundant power that leaked like a balloon began to quickly dissipated.

“Not good, the effects of the Heavenly Crystal is coming to an end!”

The Sword Elder exclaimed loudly.

“The effect is disappearing?” Su Yun asked.

“You can use the Heavenly Crystal and it is very powerful. However, since your cultivation is bad, it will not last long! It cannot last long!”

After Su Yun heard this, his face paled.

Right now, with the power of the Heavenly Crystal he could kill the Hurricane Elder, but to kill without it? Did he even have to ability to compete against the immortal goddess? If the effects of the Heavenly Crystal disappeared, he would die!

As Su Yun's mind quickly assessed the situation in lightning speed, he immediately made a decision.

Su Yun suddenly turned again and switched the direction of his killing intent. This time, he headed towards the immortal goddess.

The immortal goddess eyes widened in surprise and hesitated to take action. She stopped in her tracks because she did not know how she would defend herself.

Then, in the next second, Su Yun seized the opportunity and quickly closed in, turned and fled...

The immortal goddess's raised her eyebrows.

Despite this, she did not give chase. Instead, she went towards the Hurricane Elder and took two medicine pills and gave it to the injured Hurricane Elder.

The Hurricane Elder swallowed the pills and his complexion improved a lot.

"Why did you not chase him?" The Hurricane Elder asked as he slowly got up, glancing at the direction of Su Yun's path.

"When he ingested the Heavenly Crystal, it was too troublesome to deal with him. We have to wait for the effects of the Heavenly Crystal to dissipate before we have a chance!"

"Are you able to find him?"

"Yes."

The immortal goddess extended her hands in the light and between her fingers, one could see an extremely piece of fine hair...

.....

Meanwhile, with the last reserves of the Heavenly Crystal exhausted, Su Yun fainted in the wilderness.

After Su Yun regained consciousness, he felt that he did not even have half of his original strength.

He immediately removed food from his spatial ring and ravenously consumed until he was full. He took a full day to recover.

The Heavenly Crystal was very exhausting and one would have to cultivate for fifty days to recover the spirit qi before he could advance to the next realm. Even if it took a hundred days, it would not be surprising. This was the cost of using the Heavenly Crystal.

Relating to the Heavenly Crystal, Su Yun did not fully understand its properties. He only knew that it was a priceless ancient treasure.

He sat cross-legged on a flat stone and opened the treasure box. He took the Heavenly Crystal and carefully inspected it.

The Heavenly Crystal had lost its luster. It was originally a dark color, but now it had become grey. It did not emit any smell and the energy inside seemed to have been all used up.

Su Yun could not afford to waste all the days recovering, since he need to accomplish his objectives.

He had obtained the Heavenly Crystal, so his objective was achieved. Although this trip took much longer than necessary, he still had a big harvest.

After finding the nearest town, he purchased another stallion and rushed towards the town of Mirror Lake.

He directly went to Sky Sun Auction House. Here, it was still packed with huge crowds. Business was hustling and bustling.

Su Yun took a deep breath when it was his turn to submit his task. He opened his spatial ring and rummaged through it to find the Crescent Moon Fruit task. He then submitted the task.

“Please give me the task cards.”

The receptionist Li Fei lazily called out.

The task card was handed over and the Crescent Moon Fruit was

given.

After the receptionist Li Fei saw the fruit, his loose face was suddenly startled.

In the ten years that the receptionist worked for the Sky Sun Auction House, he had seen the Crescent Moon Fruit once. The dark and fire-like body was unforgettable.

“This...this is?”

Li Fei took the fruit, stared at it and suddenly snatched Su Yun by the collar and stared.

“You...you actually managed to obtain the Crescent Moon Fruit?”

After Li Fei checked the task cards, he almost shouted the contents out loud.

“Please just give me the reward.”

“I....good...good..very good...”

Li Fei suddenly cheered and nodded. He then proceeded to get the reward.

But as he left to get the reward, his eyes were still full of disbelief.

Li Fei was no cultivator, but in Sky Sun Auction House, there were many spirit cultivators. He felt that Su Yun’s level was not very high.

Then how could he obtain the Crescent Moon Fruit?

This man is so strange, does he have a helper?

Li Fei was puzzled.

After approximately a few minutes, the spirit currency card was filled with sixty thousand spirit coins and was handed to Su Yun.

Su Yun confirmed the amount.

Correct!

Then he ran towards the trading area and began to select

materials from a huge pile.

“Cultivation medicine pellets: divine flower pellet, red sky pellet, crystal jade pellet, holy heart pellet...”

“Forging body drugs: healing body paste, divine dragon drug, defying body powder...”

“One Core Body Strengthening Practice Manual.”

“One nature furnace crystal.”

“I need many alchemy materials.”

“I also need these cultivation ingredients...”

Before the window, Su Yun asked for many ingredients. While a list of the materials was being created. The personnel completing the orders inside were extremely busy. They were constantly looking at the records to find the materials. Many other staff members went inside to help out.

The Sky Sun Auction House resources were vast and many of the goods could not be bought elsewhere.

Nonetheless, with Su Yun ordering so much ingredients that were relatively rare, the people behind looked dumbfounded.

“How does a Spirit Novice disciple has so much money?”

The people behind conversed with each other quietly.

Half an hour later, only two thousand spirit coins were left from the original sixty thousand spirit coins. The spatial ring was now stuffed full of ingredients. Everything was ready. Su Yun quickly left the Sky Sun Auction House. He mounted on the stallion and rode home at full speed to the Su Family’s territory.

Chapter 20 - Mighty Young Master

Even before his rebirth, Su Yun did not manage to have a high cultivation level, but in order to determine why his cultivation progress stagnated, he scoured the continents, conversed with many people and experienced a lot. He especially talked with cultivators of the Demon Continent to search for devil techniques that he could use. Therefore, he was more open to ideas and opinions, making him much more mature than most people.

Su Yun returned home two days later to finish some matters. Since the stable owner's stallion disappeared, he could only request that he compensate the owner with his horse that he bought from Mirror Lake Town. Luckily, since the stallion was able-bodied and had well developed limbs the stable owner was naturally very satisfied and did not even ask Su Yun for more compensation for the expired contract of borrowing the stallion that disappeared.

After the matters were dealt with, Su Yun turned back to the direction of his cabin in the woods.

"In another month, there would be a tournament being held within the family. I heard that every major family has already prepared for it. You need to practice hard. Do you think you can achieve a high rank in the tournament? Are you sure you don't want to wait three more years?"

At the rural streets, a considerable middle-aged woman crossed her hands, facing a young man as she scolded.

The man bowed in silence as the woman's remarks became more and more fierce.

"Son, you don't have to care what this young woman says to you. Look at everyone else's children, not one is low cultivation? I heard that as long as you get into the top two hundred ranking for the tournament, father will be proud! If you stay at home, never

going to the military field for practice, never cultivating and keep going on like this, will you ever amount to anything?”

“Mother, getting into the top two hundred rankings is much easier said than done, alright? In every single bout in this tournament, very few guys in our little Sect can get in. I heard last time, only twelve people managed to get into the tournaments and once you get in, you are competing against 7000 cultivators. Do you really think that your son can stand out amongst all these people? Let alone standing out for family in this tournament, I am looking for death if I participate! This is useless!”

The young man said with a bitter face.

After the middle-aged woman heard this, she suddenly angrily roared: “Son, you don’t want to participate in this tournament? This is your only chance, the only chance our family has, so how can you say such things? Look at the neighbor’s son next door, he practiced hard every day in the martial arts field. I heard that he already broke through seventh stage of spirit novice realm and may even break through eighth stage soon! Look at you, still at only sixth stage of spirit novice realm! You....why are you so disappointing?”

After talking for awhile, the mother began to cry.

“Mother, it is not the same. Wang Shu saved money in the early years and managed to buy some spirit medicine for cultivating. Using these types of medicine, he managed to progress quickly. Look at me, have you ever given me anything for cultivating? I am already at the peak of sixth stage cultivation realm, but my progress has stagnated no matter how hard I practice....oh mother, don’t think about spirit cultivators anymore. I think that manuscript writing at home is already good enough...”

After the middle-aged woman heard this, she cried even more fiercely.

Su Yun slowed down his pace after he heard these words. He

could not help that he felt some mixed feelings in his heart.

In this world, spiritual talent was indeed extremely important, but it is also essential that external conditions are optimal. Especially during for the key times such as the early cultivation periods or breakthroughs, which required cultivation pellets, various techniques and so forth.

“The Tri-annual Tournament of the Su Family?”

Su Yun whispered.

In the Su Family, once an outer sect disciple before the age of twenty breaks through Spirit Intermediate Realm (Tl: 2nd realm, after novice), they will have to qualifications to enter the inner sect. If one would not be able to enter within twenty years of age....usually it would become too difficult in the future to progress, so people would just give up. The reason: even if they practice hard, their progress would stagnate, so it would be futile to even attempt to achieve a high cultivation level.

This requires a strength test, where once the strength results comes out and it meets the standard, you can enter the inner sect.

However, there is one more method, and that is the Tri-annual Su Family Tournament.”

Entry range: Inner Sect and outer sect.

No limit for the number of participants in the competition.

Competition Rewards: substantial reward for ranked members' families, cultivation pellets, and techniques. For exceptional performance, the Su Family will provide a teacher for training the practitioner for three years. This is the most rewarding, since there are many people who are not in a large sects or families, they will have to rely on books for their cultivation path. This trial and error method will lead to a lot of mistakes. However, with a trained professional at your side, the progress will increase exponentially. Therefore, the tournament will be highly

competitive.

Additional Bonus Reward for Outer Sect disciples: Qualified to enter the inner sect of the Su Family.

Although this was simple, it was a priceless reward for anyone of the outer sect of the Su Family.

After Su Yun read this, he turned around and headed to the direction of the registration point for the tournament.

As he approached the tournament registration, there were a crowd of people: men and women gathered here. However, all were lightly dressed, with no magic weapons and appeared ordinary.

The person in charge of the registration was from the inner sect of the Su Family, because there were few experts that had the time to do registration. Therefore, they had someone of the inner sect. They had to give a chance for the cultivators of the outer sect, otherwise, there would be riots.

“Name!”

The clerk in charge of the registration shouted, without even looking up.

“Li feng.”

“Realm.”

“It is....it is novice realm...six stage.”

The simple and honest man embarrassed said.

The people behind him flashed a hint of disdain on their faces.

The clerk did not pay attention, but other disciples from the outer sect gave snickers disdainfully. Li feng was angry in his heart, but they had higher cultivation than him, so he could only leave in silence and swallow his words.

The clerk continued in his manner through the line of people

until it was Su Yun's turn.

“First name.”

“Su Yun.”

“Su Yun?”

The clerk raised his head and looked at the young man in front of him.

Su Yun lightly analyzed the clerk in front of him and suddenly he recognized the familiar face.

“Su Da Hai, you are the inner sect clerk for the tournament?” Su Yun suddenly asked.

“Oh, Young master Su, I still remember you! It is an honor to meet you!” The Su inner sect disciple sneered as he got up.

Su Da Hai was about five or six years older than Su Yun and had been in charge of the warehouse. His home was extravagant and during the inventory counting, many grain supplies were not found. Everyone knew that Su Da Hai embezzled, but because of the backing of Su Gui Mu, no one could do anything.

However, the original Su Gui Mu that Su Yun knew always hated Su Yun. This was because as Su Yun investigated the reason for Su Gui Mu's massive wealth, Su Yun uncovered and exposed some secrets. These secrets were spread so quickly, that even Su Gui Mu could not keep the situation under control.

Su Da Hai was the unlucky one, and when Su Gui Mu's business with him was exposed, he lost everything. He was punished by forced to stay outside in the scorching sun and blowing wind for a few days.

“I did not expect, that the dignified Young Su master will actually participate in this competition...but, you were driven away from your home. Do you even have the guts to sign up? What? After you ate outside in the slums, did you finally miss the benefits of the

inner sect of the Su Family?”

Su Da Hai shouted this, deliberately letting everyone hear that was within four yards. Although Su Yun was kicked out of the Su Family inner sect, which was common knowledge to everyone in the inner sect and outer sect of the Su Family, but few people have seen Su Yun. After Su Da Hai called out, many people began to understand and whispering began to ring at the back.

“So he is Su Yun.”

“He is just trash of the Su Family?”

“With excellent conditions when he was born, and he only achieved seventh stage of the spirit novice realm. What qualifications does he have? I’m afraid that before he is twenty years old and he might still not be able to step into the Spirit intermediate realm! Such a waste.”

“He is nothing but rubbish, which had a good upbringing. If I was in the inner sect and enjoyed superior martial arts field, cultivation pellets and training, I’m certain that I would have broken through the spirit intermediate realm!”

“The main part is, we are not worse than those of the inner sect, but our birthplace cannot compare!”

A myriad of contemptuous voices of mockery rang in the crowd.

It seemed that even people outside the Su Family despised Su Yun. Su Da Hai’s mouth split in a proud smile.

Boy, I want you to just leave the Su Family altogether! Su Da Hai thought.

“I can still apply, right?”

Ironically, Su Yun just continued as if he heard nothing.

“Of course!”

Seeing Su Yun remain calm, Su Da Hai just chuckled. He immediately sat back in his position.

“What? The “dignified young Su master” even had to sign up for the tournament? I guess you swallowed your humiliation. That is to say, you are not even in the Su Family anymore. Are you going to go back?”

Just when the conversation between Su Da Hai and Su Yun ended , a clear and bright voice was heard.

Chapter 21 - Su Dong Fang

Su Yun turned around to see a handsome disciple walking towards him. The disciple was a handsome playboy with a straight posture.

This disciple had white robes, a calm temperament and an intoxicating smile on his mouth. He was surrounded by female disciples from the outer sect, who were constantly blushing as they looked at the him.

As Su Yun saw the incoming disciple, his heart was filled with suspicion.

The Su Family was vast, so Su Yun did not know everyone. This young man coming towards him, he had never seen him before.

“Who are you?” Su Yun asked.

Su Dahai quickly stood up and face Su Yun as he spoke: “You are just worthless, this is the son of the grand elder of the Main House of the Su Family, Su Dong Fang, make sure you remember this!”

After saying this, the Su Dahai immediately rushed in front of the approaching young man and apologetically smiled: “Su Dong Fang, why have you come here?”

Su Dong Fang did not respond to Su Dahai’s words, but instead inspected Su Yun. Then, he only shook his head: “ Only seven stage novice realm, even with the inner sect, he could not amount to much.”

“Finish the registration!” Su Yun turned away and directed Su Dahai. He just ignored Su Dong Fang. It seems that Su Yun wasn’t interested in Su Dong Fang at all.

Su Dahai looked at Su Yun, and anxiously shouted: “Su Yun, correct your attitude, be careful or you will lose your life.”

“I am signing up right now. Then I will leave. My time is very

valuable, so please hurry up and finish this. Even if I'm not anxious, there are many anxious people behind me. If you continue bullshitting, I will complain to the outer sect's elder that you were slowing the process down."

Su Yun said in a clear voice.

"You..." Su Dahai face paled quickly, hesitating a few times and looked at Su Dong Fang.

Su Dong Fang didn't really care, and glanced at Su Dahai, nodded and smiled: "At least he has a sense of humor."

"Su Dong Fang did you come here for something?"

As Su Yun looked over Su Dahai finishing the registration papers, he asked.

"Oh, it isn't a big deal. Today, I just wanted to tell you something!"

"What then?"

"I heard you are still pestering little sister Qing Er?"

Su Dong Fang smiled as he asked this.

"Pestered?" Su Yun stiffened as his brow furrowed.

Su Dong Fang's smile remained on his face as he continued: "Your parents doted on Qing Er and Qing Er remembered the love. After your parents left, she always regarded you as the young master, even if your cultivation realm was poor and kicked out from your home. She was gifted, even promoted to the main house and she still treated you with passion. However, I know this is not her intention: no one is willing to serve the weak, no one is willing to waste time on your unmotivated self. Do you understand?"

"No one is willing? Do you think that Qing Er are doing these things out of gratitude and is just forcing herself?" Su Yun's heart ached with pain as he lightly whispered.

"It is not?" Su Dong Fang laugh: "When are you going to let her

free?”

Su Yun stayed silent.

Indeed, he did not understand Qing Er, he had no clue why Qing Er cared about him so much.

Just paying him back for the gratitude?

If this was the case, if she voiced her concerns, then the time she has helped me is enough...

If not though...then what is she doing this for?

“Therefore, I came to find you today.”

“You want me to cut off ties with Qing Er?”

“Something like that.”

“Let me think about this.”

“It appears we all think this, but no one was this blunt. I believe you will not easily agree, since after cutting off ties with Qing Er, you would lose your protection. If you keep relations with Qing Er, you can live a peaceful life at home in the Su Family.” Su Dong Fang laughed loudly.

Previously, Su Yun offended many people, so he had to face the repercussions. In fact, many people did not resist with Qing Er entering the main house of the Su Family, but everyone knows Qing Er spent a lot of time taking care of Su Yun. Nobody truly cared, since it did not really affect them.

“So, what do you want?” Su Yun asked as he raised his eyebrows.

“Well, I want to make a bet with you.”

After Su Dong Fang said this, he waved and suddenly a tall young man came from behind him. The young man was about twenty three or four, Fauxhawk hair, fierce eyes like a wolf, bulging muscles and an impressive scar crossed his right eye vertically.

After the young man saw Su Yun, the aura of the spirit

intermediate disciple compared to Su Yun, was more than double. It was a tyrannical difference.

“This is my brother from the inner sect of the Su Family, called Su Kuang and he will participate in this tournament. I heard you like to gamble, so how about I bet with you? If you can beat my brother in a match, then I will give you fifty thousand spirit coins. Should you lose to my brother in a match, then I want you to cut off ties with Qing Er and have nothing to do with her anymore, alright?”

“What if I refuse?”

“You only need one more complaint before you are fully kicked out of the Su Family. I am just looking at this from Qing Er’s point of view. If I did not do so, I would not be this impatient with you cutting ties with Qing Er.”

Su Dong Fang said.

He was the son of a grand elder of the Su Family, which was not an actual position of power, but he held the power to expel anyone in the Su Family he thought was unworthy with a breath.

“Fine! I accept.”

Su Yun took the finished registration papers from Su Dahai and said this one sentence.

After these words were uttered out, Su Dahai suddenly stood up in shock. Not only him, even many people took a step back. A lot of people were rubbing their ears, thinking they heard wrong.

“Are you sure? Do you really accept?” Su Dong Fang asked with a serious look.

The way Su Yun calmly agreed even surprised Su Dong Fang.

“Yes.”

Su Yun began to turn and walk away.

“You did not even ask about the circumstances if you cannot

meet my brother in this tournament?”

“If I cannot not meet you brother, since you setted up this bet, then you will arrange everything.”

When Su Yun said this, he left the registration square completely.

After Su Dong Fang heard this, the charming smile remained on his face for a few more minutes. Then his eyes narrowed.

“It appears that Su Yun is actually a much more mature person than I had originally thought.”

“However, his strength is just too weak, with only a seventh stage novice realm, only average for the contestants.”

As Su Kuang stood beside Su Dong Fang, said. Su Kuang seemed to be tense and ready to launch a powerful attack as strong as a tiger any time.

“You cannot say this, because although you are strong, this cannot be taken lightly. No matter what kind of opponent you face, you must use one hundred and twenty percent of you strength! Even if it is just little Su Yun, you can never underestimate him, you understand? I want victory, if you cannot give it to me, then you are worthless! I have no use for trash!”

“Yes, sir!” Su Kuang said under his breath.

Chapter 22 - The Thirst for Power

After returning back to his little cabin in the woods, he closed the door.

About Su Dong Fang's bet, he really does not have any idea.

After all, his objective was not to bother Qing Er. What he wanted was that within three years, he could sneak Qing Er away from the Su Family, so she did not make the same mistakes in his previous life.

However, Su Yun was not willing to just give up the bet in the tournament.

If he managed to return to the inner sect of the Su Family, he would regain many benefits for cultivating. The situation for the outer sect of the Su Family was abysmal, there was basically nothing here.

Nonetheless, using different methods to enhance a cultivator's level too quickly was certainly not beneficial in the long run.

Su Yun began to remove items from his spatial ring. He took out the "Spring Crystal Furnace" that he bought from the auction. He placed it in the middle of the cabin and moved the table away. Then, he began arranging the materials from his spatial ring and drew an array around the Spring Crystal Furnace.

After it was finished, he began to carefully place the alchemy ingredients inside the Spring Crystal Furnace.

After that, he lay down on the floor and took out a small bag of phosphorous powder and carefully spreading it around the Spring Crystal Furnace and inside the array surrounding the furnace.

The array.

There will be gaps between the strokes drawn on the floor. Since it is inevitable that the lines written on the floor could not be

perfect.

As the lines were revised, the magical effects of the array will be strengthened. It requires only the basic skills to master assembling an array. Nonetheless, the patterns in the array play a decisive part, which if some of the lines are too large, the array would not enhance the power of the furnace. However, when the lines are perfectly assembled for the array, the large array's power will not only multiply, but it can also give further benefits.

Plainly, this array was just for enhancing the power of items or people.

Even if it was just the outline, completing it was no simple task. Even an Array Masters cannot perfectly assemble the patterns in large array formations. Even for ninth level Array Masters, completely assembling the formations were unheard of.

Arrays Masters was an extremely popular career in the mainland, because with the various formation techniques, one could produce countless items. For cultivating spirit power, the formation techniques that Array Masters could create were essential. Therefore, many Sects invited powerful Array Masters to assist them in refining spirit power. Since the requirements of the cultivation level for Array Masters were very low, Su Yun spend a short time studying the techniques of Array Masters, so it would help him financially. Although he was not extremely adept at Formations, but for basic and tactical formations, he was very skilled. Su Yun was especially skilled in assembling the formations and he was a seventh stage Array Master in his past life.

For assembling the formations, they required a grain-like substance that contained "Spiritual Energy," which made it extremely expensive. The little pouch containing the Golden Bird Phosphorus Powder that contained "spiritual energy" cost about ten thousand spirit coins.

After a long time of assembling, the formation for the "Black

Spirit Fire Core” was completed.

Su Yun immediately activated the formation.

Crash.

Suddenly, smoke erupted from the furnace, the Spirit Crystal Furnace was soon shrouded in light streams as the formation around it began to activate. The entire shabby cabin in the woods was soon bursting with colorful lights inside. It was really beautiful.

The alchemy ingredients would take seven nights before they were ready and could be taken out of the furnace. Therefore, no time could not be wasted while waiting.

Su Yun began to take out the cultivation pellets he bought and began to cultivate.

With the aid of decent cultivation materials, his cultivation naturally increased by leaps and bounds. After eliminating the illness, his wish to truly begin cultivating was fulfilled. He was like one of those people who were extremely thirsty and had just found a sweet spring water. He began to crazily cultivate and did not take any time to rest.

Su Yun meditated in the cabin during the day, ingesting and cultivating the cultivation pellets he purchased. Afterwards, Su Yun would go to the fields around his cabin and practice the basic of swordsmanship.

Today, his spiritual sense surpassed one hundred and ten. Furthermore, his seventh stage cultivation progressed very quickly. With a talent to practice twice as fast as ordinary people, he could speed through cultivation techniques. However, he did not dare forget his foundation, because although he had a wealth of knowledge inside his head, his body could not keep up. Therefore, he had to lay a solid foundation to obtain long lasting benefits.

Ever since then, the outer sect disciples would see the infamous young master Su Yun on the fields surrounding his home practicing sword techniques over and over again that they did not even recognize. Therefore, most disciples just ignored him.

Right now, it was most important for Su Yun to practice the meaning of the way of the sword.

As long as one managed to create the first sword, one could begin practicing the First form of the Limitless Sword Arts. Then he could begin to use the legendary sword hilt.

After practicing the past few days hard, he found that his body had changed. The constant meditation and exercising formed a thin layer of spiritual aura around his body, covering his blood vessels and internal organs.

His body had began to strengthen.

This was the bottleneck for the breakthrough of the seventh stage of spirit novice realm. it was a sign that he was close to the eighth stage.

Su Yun was overjoyed, his spiritual sense had increased to one hundred and ninety now. His ability to recover spiritual power was increased further.

Nonetheless, he did not dare relax. He began to focus on practicing harder and his body continued to strengthen as well as his soul's spirit aura.

Ten days later, the first batch of the alchemy medicine came out of the Spring Crystal Furnace.

The intoxicating aroma even aroused Su Yun's heart.

After deactivating the furnace, he pulled out the six different color Bead from inside the furnace.

Divine Five Life Bead.

Grand Meridian Activation Bead.

Live Flame Bead.

Scarlet Heart Bead.

Violet Marrow Bead.

Divine Spirit Ink Bead.

Only the elite disciples of various sects could even hope to understand the production of these extremely rare medicine.

But to truly understand the production of these priceless medicine, they would have to mingle with elites of the elites.

Divine Five Life Bead.

To obtain the benefits of the beads, one would have to ingest this to be able to absorb the benefits of the other beads created.

The Divine Five Life Bead must be thoroughly cultivated, so that the effects did not dissipate.

Grand Meridian Activation Bead opened the veins, which allowed creation of higher amounts of spiritual aura.

The Live Flame Bead further enhanced the blood vessels by stretching them allowing higher blood flow, which was particularly important.

The Scarlet Heart helped calm the mind and body down, to cultivate the beads effectively.

The Violet Marrow Bead enhanced the body physically and increased the space in the body for absorption.

Finally, the Divine Spirit Ink Bead was the most important of the six. The Divine Spirit Ink Bead played the finishing touches. It not only increased the soul, which allowed him to absorb more spirit power, but it also enhanced the strength of his blood, bones, tendons and internal organs. Furthermore, it elevated the effects of the previous five beads.

Su Yun removed the Spring Crystal Furnace from the formation.

As he finished preparing to remove more alchemy items from his spatial ring, he changed the array of the “Black Spirit Fire Core.”

After two hours of preparation, he managed to change the Black Spirit Fire Core array into the “Divine Spirit Meditation Array.”

Next, he assembled the formation.

Then he sat back down and began to ingest the beads.

Digestion.

After digesting the Divine Five Life Bead, effects began to occur in Su Yun’s body.

Just sitting like this, seven days had passed.

After seven days, Su Yun inspected his body.

The spirit power inside his body had become a constant stream and was very abundant. His spiritual sense now had exceeded two hundred, to two hundred and thirty. This was very alarming, since only at tenth stage cultivation level would one have so high of a spiritual sense.

His bone structure had been especially affected, as it had become much more robust after the digestion. Su Yun appeared to have been reborn, his eyes now bright and piercing, solid bones inside and lean muscled body. His appearance was completely different from his sickly appearance before.

However, the amount ingested was not enough.

After finishing digestion, the body returned to equilibrium.

As Su Yun exercised more, the remaining medicine in his body would be digested and incorporated into his body.

This just required exercise. As it turns out, Su Yun just had to practice physical techniques to reap the optimal benefits.

With the days left, Su Yun immersed himself in practicing and cultivation.

As for different battle tactics, he deliberately did not try to learn, because he was short on time. One could not practice different battle tactics in so short of a timespan. During the competition, it will be up to his physique and spirit power to compete.

A month can be a long or short time. Su Yun still had two thousand spirit coins, so Su Yun did not have to work. Instead, he immersed himself in practicing his body around the clock and never took a break.

For people that are really hungry, they are willing to do anything to obtain food. Yet, the thirst for power, but being incapable to change, when given the chance, the person will practice like mad.

Soon, the Tournament of the Su Family for the inner and outer sect would officially begin...

Chapter 23 - Tournament Selection

At noon, the next day.

The sun was high up in the sky.

Su Yun had cleaned up the formation he created and moved the Spring Crystal Furnace back inside his spatial ring. He put on some clean clothes and headed out the door.

Along the bronze roadway, one could see many family households and their disciples walking together.

These young disciples of the outer sect were dressed cleanly; many of their swords were either being gripped in their hands or in their respective hilts. Everyone seemed excited.

The parents had told their children that the rankings were not important. But who could believe them? Everyone could understand its importance and would fight with everything they had in the tournament.

Because parents could not enter, people were beginning to gather outside of the square. The tournament square was only open to those disciples of the Su Family.

“I must not miss my opportunity this time. My talent is poor and I will certainly not break through intermediate spirit realm before twenty years old. Therefore, I pray that I can reach the top two hundred ranking! I won’t ask for any more, I just want to qualify into the ranking list.”

“I do not want to fail my the ancestors. That is why I must be allowed to join the inner sect.”

“I am seeking a good place. Please god!”

In the square, many people were praying in groups for good fortune.

Su Yun’s eyes began to sweep through the square. As he did he

saw that many people with luxurious clothing were seated outside the stage. Each of these young men and women were equipped with a magical weapon.

These people were the inner disciples that would be participating in the tournament.

They numbered about a hundred people. Although this could be considered few in number, ever since the beginning, these disciples would be guaranteed to fill the top two hundred ranks of the tournament.

The greatest fear of the outer sect disciples was to encounter an inner sect disciple in the tournament, because they would almost surely lose.

“Huh? Look, isn’t that Su Yun!?”

“What did he come here for? Is...is he also going to participate in the tournament?”

“No way, right? He actually has the guts to participate in this tournament? Wasn’t he kicked out of the inner sect and left in the outer sect?”

“What is this guy thinking of doing? He is so shameless.”

Several male and female disciples were whispering with each other. There was surprise, confusion, contempt and disregard in the eyes that were gazing at Su Yun.

However, the disciples began to turn away. Although Su Yun’s appearance gave some topic to discuss, they were not really interested in Su Yun. After all, the most important thing was to pay attention to the tournament.

“Big brother Su!”

Just then, a clear and sharp voice sounded near Su Yun’s ear.

Su Yun turned around and gazed in the direction of the call.

He was surprised to find a young man and woman trotting

towards him from the plaza.

The young man and a woman were dressed in plain clothes; But despite this, they were pretty good-looking. Especially the female, with soft skin the color of wheat, dark, ink-black hair that was braided into a ponytail, and a pair of vivid dark eyes. A fair-skinned female that could only be considered a remarkable beauty.

As Su Yun saw the two people, his heart was startled.

“Xin Yue and Xing Yang?”

These two disciples were from the outer sect of the Su Family, and they were brother and sister. In the past, their parents had died, and they became orphans. Su Yun happened to meet them at the time and decided to help them by providing them shelter, since at the time, he was still in the inner sect.

That day, the brother and sisters were very lucky to receive some tasks to work at the inner sect, instead of having to suffering, alone, in the outer sect. Unlike the outer sect, the families in the inner sect were not poor, and even though they did not have it easy, they were well paid.

However, their luck did not last. Later, Xin Yue lost a precious spirit hairpin from the the treasury, which was said to be a treasure that belonged to one of the female elders. Although an investigation was held to find the culprit of this matter, when they could not determine the culprit, the maidservants of the Su Family blamed Xin Yue. This terrified Xin Yue and made the chief steward furious. Xing Yang tried to beg for forgiveness, but to no avail. When all seemed lost, Su Yun appeared and asked the chief steward to dismiss the charges. At this time, Su Yun had only lost his talent for three years, and many people believed he just needed time to regain his ability. Because of this, the chief steward dismissed the charges to avoid offending him.

In fact, Su Yun was just helping on the whim, since he was in a good mood at the time. He had just came to cultivate his spirit

power at the time and was now even happier that he managed to regain some of his ability. The two siblings were forever grateful to Su Yun. So when they saw him pass the main hall, they decided to say a few words to him.

After the time of the incident, his talent never recovered, so it was futile. However, the kindness he had shown them was never forgotten.

Su Yun remembered that after he was kicked out of the inner sect, he had not even worked. He only relied on Qing Er's measly allowance to keep him alive but even her money was limited. When he did not have enough money to eat, Xin Yue and Xing Yang helped him get some food for free.

After he completely cut ties off from the Su Family, he never saw the two again.

Seeing that the cute girl had become beautiful, and the bright boy had become handsome, his heart was thrown into ripples.

People that knew to repay favors, were people that was worthy of being called a friend in Su Yun's heart.

The girl, Xin Yue, eagerly ran over and stopped right in front of Su Yun. She gazed at Su Yun with her black eyes and inspected Su Yun from top to bottom. Then a brilliant smile appeared, "Brother Su Yun, are you okay? We were really worried!"

"Ah? About what?"

"Obviously about the matter of you leaving your home...well... the thing is, that you went outside to accomplish a task and disappeared for a month. You had just come back yesterday, so I went back to see you. However, the door was locked, and when I knocked on the door no one answered either. Nevertheless, now that I see brother Su Yun is alive and well, so I am relieved!" Xin Yue laughed.

"You worried that I had an accident," Su Yun asked.

Xin Yue hesitated, not knowing how to answer.

“Yes, big brother Su Yun. Although saying this is uncomfortable, we were still really worried about you.”

The other tall dark-skinned boy, Xing Yang, came over and said with a slightly rough voice.

Xing Yang’s voice was very rough, and coupled with his tall dark-skinned figure and thick muscles, it emitted an aura of machoness.

Xin Yue was afraid of mentioning that Su Yun had been kicked out of the inner sect, for the fear of making Su Yun uncomfortable. However, her brother just blurted out the words that came from his head.

Xin Yue was angered to the point that steam was forming around her.

Su Yun just smiled. “That small matter? Ha ha, no big deal, so you don’t have to worry about it.”

After Xin Yue saw this, she immediately decided to change the subject. “Brother Su Yun, do you also intend to participate in the tournament?”

“Correct.”

“But you...you are only spirit novice realm six stage, right?” Xin Yue asked this cautiously.

“Ah, yes. Big brother Su Yun, with only sixth stage cultivation, if you participate in the tournament, you can only get beaten! I think that you should just go home and abandon this tournament!”

Xing Yang blurted out what was on his mind.

“Fool, what are you talking about?”

Xin Yue could not control herself and gave Xing Yang a kick in the knee.

Xing Yang immediately felt the pain all over his knee and quickly

rubbed it. He took a moment to collect himself and apologized, “Big brother Su Yun-I did not mean it, I mean, that...uh...I...”

Su Yun understood Xing Yang’s intentions were good. Therefore, Su Yun was not angry and admittedly said, “I am not six stage spirit novice stage anymore.”

“Not spirit cultivation six stage anymore?” Both the brother and sister stared each other and blinked. They could feel the spirit energy that Su Yun had.

Su Yun was deliberately concealing his spirit aura.

After the two felt his actual aura, they were suddenly startled.

“A solid aura of the spirit novice realm.” Xing Yang was speechless.

“Big brother Su Yun, you...you finally managed to make a breakthrough?” Xin Yue cried, as if she had broken through herself.

“Look at this. It seems that the aura is even more than the seventh stage of the spirit novice rank, I’m amazed...that you seemed to have managed to break through the eighth stage of the spirit novice realm! Great, big brother Su Yun, your talent is finally restored!”

Watching the two sibling smile at his success, his heart could not help but warm up.

Perhaps with the exception of Qing Er, in this world, there was nobody else really care about him.

“With eighth stage cultivation, we can all strive to get into the top two hundred rankings. Then we can enter the inner sect of the Su Family! Elder brother Su Yun, you have the opportunity to regain your former glory!”

Su Yun chuckled.

“Do not worry, we’ll be able to get into the top two hundred

rankings for sure.” Just then, Xin Yang pumped up his fist and vowed that they would get into the rankings.

“I hope we do not encounter the inner sect disciples of the Su family!” Xin Yue closed her eyes and prayed silently.

Peng! Peng!(Tl: bell sounds in chinese)

At this time, the bells was sounding from the central square.

Everyone’s eyes turned to look at the centre field of the tournament.

Lastly, don’t forget our sponsor who sponsored this chapter and the next one, John of Alabama!

Chapter 24 - Who is Second? Who is First?

Everyone began to move towards the central field.

The inner sect disciples all began to stand up from the seating area.

Suddenly, a large green-blue light erupted from the square. Then, in the light, bricks began to form a giant, centralized stone square rapidly. In a few moments, with little effort, it seemed that the tournament stone arena had been created.

There were close to three hundred individual disciples crowded around the front desk for the tournament.

After all, nearly ten thousand disciples were participating in this tournament. It would take quite some time to screen out the disciples within three days, so half of the players would have a duel at the same time.

“Everyone, please back away from the front desk by five meters.”

At this moment, a man who was in charge of maintaining order stood up and, with his muscular figure, tried to organize the crowd. His face was covered.

As the outer sect disciples began to straighten themselves out, the inner sect elders began to slowly come out. The front desk area area soon became an open space.

“Next, we have your fellow soldiers from within the Inner Sect of the Su Family.”

“There is the grand elder of the Inner Sect, Elder Su Bai.”

“Welcome...”

The person chanted each name over and over again. Then, another group of people who were dressed luxuriously came from the corner of the square.

These were the elites of the family who were accompanying Elder

Shi Long out.

They had an arrogant aura around them, and as they sat themselves down, they began to eat some spirit fruits provided for them. They were leisurely watching the event as servants waited for their every need. They were really comfortable.

Strength determines status, and status determines treatment.

After the elites arrived on the scene, the man's face was already red from shouting the announcement. Nevertheless, he still wasn't done.

The announcer glanced at the organizer.

After confirming, the announcer's voice spread throughout the whole plaza.

"It is now noon. Time for the Su Family Tournament to be underway! All of the participating disciples' events are numbered, so let the Su Family Tournament officially begin!"

After he finished, the bell rang three more times before it stopping completely.

The square began to fill up, and the disciples began to line up to obtain their numbers for their coming matches.

After obtaining a ticket, you would be able to find the corresponding number on the board to the front. Then you could rest or prepare at the side for your matchup.

At the front desk, the tickets were randomly selected from a bucket for the two sections of the tournament. The contraption that created the ticket released spiritual gas and the disciples would hold the matched-up number to the next station to tell them the number.

Su Yun obtained his ticket and glanced at it: 998.

"First Round!"

"At the 1st Front desk, the first matchup: 1795 vs. 821!"

“Ha! it turns out that I was only against a six stage spirit novice realm. How droll!”

Punch. Kick. Slam. (TL *bop hehe)

“Ah!” Screamed the contestant.

Dong!

“The first matchup: contestant 1795 wins.”

“At the 2nd Front desk, the first matchup: 417 vs. 2777!”

“At the 3rd Front desk, the first matchup: 5129 vs. 3783!”

“At the 4th Front desk...”

As this went on, the disciples waiting for their matchups were doing some warm-up exercises outside of the front desks. They intensely stared at the front desk, for once it was their turn, the ticket number would turn crimson.

Xin Yue and Xing Yan hit the jackpot, and their matchups were during the first round of matchups. They began to walk towards the stage, with Su Yun gazing at them.

Su Yun looked over at the two disciples in front of him, as they displayed their skills, it was evident that the two of them were vastly experienced. Within a few minutes, their matches were concluded.

In the outer sect, Xin Yue and Xing Yang practiced hard in their cultivations. They had grown up without parents and suffered from bullying, so they were obsessed with cultivating to become strong and obtain a chance for a better life. This tri-annual competition was their chance to get that. Even though 8th stage cultivation was not considered very powerful, in the outer sect, it could already be considered outstanding.

As the winning disciple came down from the stage, the surrounding disciples gazed at him with worship in their eyes. The disciple walked towards Su Yun.

“Big brother Su Yun, how was that? Wasn’t I powerful?”

Xin Yue said while grinning.

Su Yun just nodded and smiled.

“There are many competitors in this tournament. I’m afraid that big brother Su Yun might not pass through. You must make it!” Xing Yang said hoarsely.

“We can work together.”

“Alright!”

The three conversed.

At this time, the crowd roared again in response to a commotion.

Su Yun followed to the source of the noise only to find a well-dressed disciple walking towards him.

This well dressed disciple was tall and sturdy. He had a high nose, deep eyes, and a sharp gaze. He even appeared to have a good aura. However, the opposite was true, as, in truth, he bullied a lot of the outer sect disciples.

“It’s Su Nan Ye!”

Xin Yue called out.

“Who is Su Nan Ye,” Su Yun asked blankly.

“Big brother Su Yun, you do not even know who SuNan Ye is? Even normal disciples know about him!” Xing yang was surprised, but continued, “He could be considered the as the second ranked genius of the outer sect!”

“The second-ranked genius?”

“Yeah, I heard that the top ranked is Su Qing,” Xing Yang replied.

However, at the next moment, a surge of fierce, overbearing spirit aura came towards him.

Xing Yang's face changed as his whole body suddenly trembled. He began to have difficulties breathing and kneeled down in agony.

Su Yun scowled as he saw this. He grabbed Xing Yang's robes and pulled him back up.

Xing Yang was freed from the spiritual aura.

He was panting and sweating profusely, and instantly, he fell back down on the floor and kept on panting.

With eighth stage spirit novice realm cultivation, Xing Yang was already forced to this sorry state. The person in front of them was at least ten stage spirit novice realm.

"Brother, are you okay," Xin Yue anxiously asked, as she quickly propped Xing Yang up.

"I'm...I'm fine..." Xing Yang gasped hoarsely.

Not waiting for him to stand up, the young man stepped in front of them.

Su Nan Ye was still exerting his oppressive aura against Xing Yang.

Xing Yang was slightly stunned.

"You said...who was the second ranked genius of the outer sect? Who...was the first," SuNan Ye asked with emotionless eyes as he coldly gazed at Xing Yang. It looked as if he could devour Xing Yang's life, right there and then.

"What...what first? What second...?" Xing Yang was still confused.

The next second, he saw a huge fist headed to his chest.

The fierce, overbearing spiritual power was covering the fist, allowing it to produce amazing explosive power, which could rip through flesh.

No one expected a sudden attack from Su Nan Ye, including Su Yun...

But in an instant, a hand suddenly sprang up and, as fast as lightning, it seized the fist. It was stopped...

“Huh?”

Su Nan Ye’s face was shocked, he was really surprised.

However, as he saw the master of the hand loosen his wrist; he quickly recovered his composure.

Lightning fast, incredible reaction.

The others couldn’t even react at all.

“My friend has a very honest nature and talked about the affairs of the outer sect rudely. If this had offended you, I hope you do not take this personally.” Su Yun said.

“Who are you?”

Su Nan Ye eyes narrowed as he whispered these words.

“Huh? Isn’t it the trash, Su Yun?”

“You actually dare to challenge the boss, and you desire to live? The trash that was kicked out of the family actually has the face to come back?”

“You’re not aiming to return to the inner sect, right? No matter. Even if you enter the tournament to return to the inner sect, the inner sect will not want you! Save yourself some time and just leave! You will not be able to enter the inner sect, because you are just trash!”

The goons behind Su Nan Ye articulated their criticisms. Since they were standing behind the commotion, they did not see Su Yun’s lightning fast reactions. They did not see his strength.

Su Nan Ye was surprised, “ You are Su Yun?”

Su Yun remained silent.

“The rumour seems a bit false.”

“The rumor that everyone talks about. Do you believe it?”

“I do not care,” Su Nan Ye continued, “This is not the end of this. I will prove who is the top-ranked disciple of the outer sect and who is the second ranked! It is not convenient to stay here, just wait until you compete with me! I will let you understand my real strength!”

After he finished, Su Nan Ye turned and left.

Only then, did the group of people disperse.

Chapter 25 - An Overnight Reversal

Xing Yang was baffled.

“Big brother Su Yun, why is he doing this? I did him no wrong... yet...yet why is he looking for trouble?”

“What did you do wrong? You are a complete fool!”Xin Yue angrily said, “Su Nan Ye’s cultivation is high, so he is more sensitive to the criticisms than an average disciple. With his short temper and his personality he will never accepted that Qian ge was better than him. He must have heard the words that you uttered. How can he not be angry? Fortunately, big brother Su Yun helped you apologize this time. Otherwise, the consequences would have certainly been more serious!”

After Xin Yue finished, she glanced at Su Yun with a face full of gratitude. As for what had happened between Su Yun and Su Nan Ye earlier,, she also stood behind and did not witness anything abnormal. She just thought that Su Yun’s apology was just accepted by Su Nan Ye, because he had been in the inner sect before. If it wasn’t for this why would Su Nan Ye have left so easily?

However, Xing Yang remained dumbfounded, because even he, who had been standing in front, did not notice the lightning fast events that had just occurred.

“Xing Yang, outside of your home, you can say many things. However, you cannot just blabber anything you want. The elites of this tournaments have very high cultivation, and they usually are tolerant to petty conversations. Nonetheless, if you really manage to anger their heart, you could be doomed. Su Nan Ye has a spirit novice cultivation of stage ten, so you could not even be considered as an opponent. I hope his next opponent does not fight him, otherwise, their chances of entering the inner sect would disappear,” Su Yun said carefully.

Xing Yang and Xin Yue nodded their heads in agreement.

“Come on, let’s strive to enter the inner sect.” Seeing the two becoming a little nervous, Su Yun decided to comfort them.

Wow!

At this point, Su Yun’s hands suddenly lit up, and the crimson glow illuminated him.

“Big brother Su Yun, it’s your turn!”

Xin Yue was ecstatic.

“Ah!” Su Yun nodded and turned his eyes away and headed to leave.

“You can do it!” The Yue and Yang siblings encouraged.(TL 加油!)
“Just give me a moment!”

One light response floated back.

...

Dong!

“Number: 807 contestant is done Number: 998 contestant vs. number: 173 contestant.”

The judge called out loudly.

Soon after, the two figures arrived at the front desk.

“Look. Look. Isn’t that Su Yun?”

“Su Yun? The trash that was kicked out from the inner sect?”

“That’s him!”

“Who is his lucky opponent? To actually meet this type of person? It isn’t really a fight anymore, right?”

“Oh! Why did I not encounter this person in my match? The previous matches made me waste a lot of spirit power and took a lot of physical effort. I do not even know if I can take my opponent in the next round!”

“Just resign yourself to fate!”

Eighty-seven disciples on the sidelines were conversing loudly with each other.

Because of Su Yun’s appearance, the audience area was crowded with people.

“This is really my lucky day. I did not expect to encounter a trash like you in my first duel! Good! Very Good! Very Good! Ha ha ha...”

On the opposite side of the arena, a yellow robed man was staring at his opponent. Then, he suddenly laughed ecstatically.

Su Yun: “

“Hey, you can’t even win against your own mother, so your mother should just beg to eat shit then!” (TL note: Chinese Yomama jokes truly have a way with words, basically means f*** you, lol) The disciples cried with laughter, as they nodded in approval.

“If I really can’t win, I will eat shit in public,” Su Yun’s opponent, Su Da, replied with his chapped lips. Then Su Da laughed, “Then I will not try too hard. hey, Su Yun, since you are my first opponent, I will certainly treat you well!”

Dong!

Then, a crisp bell sound rang in the air and everyone waited for the judge’s announcement.

“The eighty-seventh match officially starts now!”

After he uttered these words, Su Yun’s opponent immediately began walking up to Su Yun while shaking his head back and forth. He had no defensive stance and did not even use his spirit power much.

Su Yun’s opponent did not even acknowledge him and only gazed at Su Yun in contempt.

It appeared that Su Yun’s opponent thought the victory was

already in his grasp!

However, just then, Su Yun made his move.

His strides were amazingly fast!

His might moved him forward.

Like a lightning strike, the a strong spirit aura covering his entire body was just waiting to explode out. He rushed towards his opponent like a torrent. As he flew in his opponents direction, his fists were soon covered with a whirlwind of spirit power.

“Huh?”

Su Da was stunned and could not even react as Su Yun rushed in front of him.

With just a step and a firm stance, Su Yun’s fist roared out towards him with violent force.

Boom!

Su Da’s chest was hit square on, and his body was suddenly sent flying out. He hit the edge of the isolation barrier of the front desk, rolling a few times before he landed. He remained motionless and even seemed to have lost consciousness.

Dong!

“Contestant number 998 is the winner of the eighty-seventh match,” shouted the judge.

Huh!!!

All the audience gasped.

The arena was filled with many disciples with both eyes opened wide. Many rubbed their eyes, because they thought that what they saw was just wrong.

“I....there is no problem with my eyes, right? Su Yun...actually won? Furthermore...he only used one strike?”

“This...this is not possible, his opponent must be just too weak.”

“That disciple’s cultivation was seventh stage, and he was too weak? So the seventh stage disciple could not even withstand one strike from a sixth stage disciple?”

“Will....will Su Da have to eat shit...he led himself to his own demise....”

The onlookers were all stunned as they looked at each other.

Su Yun just patted the dust off and stepped off from the arena.

The crowd automatically broke apart and gave him a small path. There was no criticism and no shouting. There was not even any whispers...

Su Yun went back to the tournament square.

Xing Yang was in a match, so only Xin Yue was still there.

“Big brother Su Yun! I saw it all, holy shit!” Xin Yue laughed, “You really have become strong! Wow!”

“My opponent just took me too lightly,” Su Yun laughed.

The outcome of the first match was unexpected. No one had expected Su Yun to win, since many thought he was still at sixth stage cultivation and took him too lightly. To underestimate an enemy was taboo, and it gave Su Yun a huge advantage.

Soon, the second round of matches began.

In the thirty-seventh front desk.

In the other matches, a small amount of people were gathered, ranging from a dozen to a few dozen; but surprisingly, this desk had around a hundred gathered gathered it.

Su Yun’s match was at the 37th arena, and he strode towards it.

Not surprisingly, a roar sounded again from the crowd as they saw Su Yun.

“Boss, seems like they didn’t even fight! There was no battle at all!”

“Do not say that, this kid can hear you. I’m only afraid how his cultivation improved. Is it from before he left the inner sect or something else? Just allow me to take it easy,” A young bare chested man shouted.

The disciples who let out sounds of disdain quieted down.

Su Yun gazed over at the bald disciple and observed his appearance.

This disciple was called Dong Mu, and he was a boss of a minor force of the outer sect. He was involved in many events, so he had high prestige, which also meant that many disciples knew about him.

Su Yun looked at the opponent, since it was already in the tickets. Indeed, there was no mistake, Dong Mu really managed to win against Su Hei.

At a spirit novice realm of 8th stage cultivation, coupled with a well-toned body and fierce, young eyes, which seemed to have experienced many battles, his strength was very dominating. It was said that Dong Mu took part in many conflicts. Therefore, it was not surprising that Su Hei was this person’s lackey.

In his previous two matches, Su Hei had already beat his opponents really badly. This tournament is his chance to enter the inner sect.

This disciple could not be compared to Su Da, for Su Hei was stronger than him by several cultivation levels.

A match of two disciples.

The young bald disciple Dong Mu just chuckled, “Clean up this crap!”

“Yes, elder brother Dong Mu!”

Su Hei glared at Su Yun.

Dong!

After the bell rang, Su Hei immediately leapt towards Su Yun. He was covered with spirit power and his overbearing aura was enveloping Su Yun.

Chapter 26 - No Mercy in Battle

Whoosh!

Su Hei suddenly shortened the distance with a few strides, as he quickly advanced to Su Yun's position. In an instant, his aura increased, as he released his spirit power. The punch was aimed straight for Su Yun's chest.

With this strike, even if it could not kill Su Yun right away, with the massive amount of spirit power infused into the fist, if Su Yun did not try to block, he would have a high chance of becoming mortally wounded. Furthermore, even if it was blocked, because of the spirit power infused within the fist, Su Yun could become heavily injured.

How very ruthless!

This strike was only meant to kill or heavily injure.

However.

Just as the fist neared its target...

Bam!

Su Yun's palm firmly seized the terrible iron-fist strike, as if it was just a breeze of light wind.

The strike's power immediately dispersed, and smoke rippled from the clash...

“What!?” (Tl: More like: Dafuq. Editor's note: WTFNANI?!?!)

Dong Mu almost jumped up in the air, as both his eyes opened wide. Looking at the strange situation in the arena, his face couldn't help but be plastered with a flabbergasted expression.

The disciple, Su Yun, that was kicked out of the inner sect of the Su Family, had actually caught the mighty iron-fist strike so easily with one hand. Su Hei had definitely infused a lot of spirit power into his fist!

“Su Hei, did you not eat your lunch?” Dong Mu shouted stiffly.

The crowd remained silent.

Su Hei had the same look of flabbergast as well. He could not believe the scene in front of him.

Only after looking at the situation carefully, did he recover himself. It must have been a trick. He could not imagine that Su Yun would be a hard opponent to deal with.

Moreover, with his boss and fellow disciples watching in the audience, how could he afford to lose?

Su Hei took a deep breath, and his face hardened up, becoming serious. He covered his entire body with spiritual aura again and jumped forward. He lifted his legs to deliver a fierce kick straight through Su Yun.

Despite this speed, in the next second, an even faster kick had struck Su Hei's abdomen.

Bang!

Su Hei's entire body was flung across to the edge of the arena and crashed on the edge of the ring. He clutched his stomach and trembled in pain.

However, with resolute determination, he managed to quickly stand up again.

There was no clamor in the audience, no critics. They remained absolutely silent.

They were not fools. Just then, Su Yun's fast kick allowed them to understand what was really happening...

According to the rumors, Su Yun was just trash. But that wasn't really the case. He wasn't weak at all.

“He truly is not so simple,” Dong Mu said.

Su Yun began to step forward towards Su Hei.

Su Yun's eyes were not the indifferent eyes from the beginning of the match, but ones from which emerged a terrifying killing intent.

Su Hei looked up at Su Yun, saw that the sword, and began to realize the utter terror of an impending death. His forehead began to feel numb, and his heart began to pound quickly in fear.

Whoosh!

A foot suddenly kicked straight at Su Hei and went straight for the head without any sense of mercy.

Bang!

Again, Su Hei was sent flying through the air. The spiritual aura that covered his head began to break. Su Hei rolled a few times on the arena before he had stopped. Then, his body remained still. It was unknown if he was dead or alive.

However, Su Yun still did not stop there.

He continued towards Su Hei, step by step. The spiritual aura that surrounded him was slowly rising up, thickening, sharpening, encompassing, and oppressing the entire space within the arena. In an instant, it had covered his body entirely.

“Match thirty-seven, stop immediately!” The judge understood something was wrong and quickly called out.

“Su Yun! What are you doing? This is a tournament...do you really want to murder him?” Dong Mu stood up, leapt into the arena, and called him out.

“Su Yun! You have obviously won, why do you still need to fight?”

“Stop immediately,” Dong Mu growled.

The four other judges of the match raised their eyebrows.

The judges began to rush towards Su Yun to restrain him.

After Su Yun saw this, he stopped.

If the judge was indifferent to this match, Su Yun would have still been indifferent and easily killed Su Hei on the spot.

He did not even have any hatred or grudges towards Su Hei.

The only reason he acted in such a way was because Su Hei had the intent to kill during his first charge.

Since Su Hei intended to take his life, so why should Su Yun be polite?

However, this was the end of the match. Furthermore, in order to enter the inner sect of the Su Family and continue his plan, he would have to comply with the current competition rules.

The judge anxiously rushed towards Su Hei's side and lifted his head. After the situation was reviewed, they came to the conclusion that even if the spirit aura was very weak now, the brain was just in shock, so Su Hei had fainted. Su Hei did not die, and the judge immediately asked Dong Mu to take him to treatment.

"You honor, he cheated! He actually wanted to kill Su Hei! He broke the rules!" After Dong Mu saw the judges indifferent attitude towards the result of the match, but he wanted Su Yun to be punished. Therefore, he was not content and shouted out his emotions.

"In the arena, fist's have no eyes, and as long as Su Yun did not kill the opponent, there is no punishment. This is the rules." The judge said coldly.

Dong Mu hesitantly continued, ' But...just then he...'

"Are you just a sore loser?!! practice is king. The contestants are not the audience members, so this matter has nothing to do with the Su Family."

After the judge finished, he ignored Dong Mu's rebuttals and

continued to organize the next match.

Dong Mu just stood there dumbly, and Su Yun stepped off the platform. After he came to, Dong Mu shot a fierce glare at Su Yun, as he stormed off with his lackeys.

The disciples around Su Yun no longer had contempt in their eyes. Many disciples were even fearful of Su Yun now.

With just these two matches, the disciples now had a new impression of him.

Perhaps, the title of trash no longer fit him.

In the corner of the tournament, several luxuriously dressed people were spectating the scene.

“It appears that he has some skill,” The leader of the group said.

“Bah! That is all he is capable of.” The people beside him scoffed with faces full of disdain.

“I’ve already arranged everything. so if he survives his next few matches and meets you in a match, you better not be incomponent!”

“Master, why are you so worried that I will lose?”

“Do I look worried?”

“Yes!”

“We shall see!” The master smiled and turned to leave.

Su Yun went back to find Xing Yang and Xin Yue was. He saw the pale face of Xing Yang sitting at the meeting area.

With a glance at Xing Yang, Su Yun noticed that his body was riddled with scars, and he had many bruises on his face. Xin Yue was applying medicine to Xing Yang’s wounds.

“What happened,” Su Yun asked.

“We just met a bastard,” Xing Yang hoarsely said with a depressed face. With the wounds on his face, it pained Su Yun to

see him this way.

“An inner sect disciple?”

“No, it was that Su Nanye.”

Not waiting for Xing Yang to continue, Xin Yue spitefully cursed, “My brother was matched up against him. Even though Xing Yang lost over ten times, Su Nanye just did not relent. He actually continued and intensified his attack on my brother. Now my brother is really injured! That Su Nanye really is despicable!”

“You already met him in just three matches,” Su Yun frowned.

“Ugh!!!”

“Damn, I only got a little lazy, and I lost! I...I really am useless,” Xing Yang bemoaned as he clasped his head and he grounded his teeth.

He had practiced so hard and only achieved this result. How could Xing Yang possibly accept this?

“Su Nanye is pretty strong and has had no shortage of cultivation medicine. Furthermore, he is wearing armor, so it is not your fault that you couldn’t take him. These things just happen, and your only choice is to work harder in the future,” Su Yun consoled.

Xin Yue nodded and Xing Yang sighed heavily.

Flash.... (Tl: light sound, idk)

Suddenly, the tickets in Su Yun and Xin Yue emitted bright light...

After three days, the tournament had already eliminated many disciples. Most of the trash students of the outer sect were cut. The majority of the disciples that remained were the elites or inner sect disciples.

Su Yun easily went through to the second round, contrary to everyone’s expectations. Since Xin Yue did not face anyone really strong, she also passed unharmed to the next round. They were

allowed to rest for one day, and then, the matches would resume.

Over half of the outer sect disciples were removed from the tournament, so the chances of facing any of the inner sect disciples increased greatly.

Most of the disciples in the outer sect would just forfeit, if they met an inner sect disciple.

Xing Yang went home to recuperate from his injury. Xin Yue and Su Yun were at the square , waiting. They were waiting for the next set of matches to be displayed on the board.

Flash... (Tl: light sound, idk, if anybody has any suggestions, please comment)

Just then, the ticket in Su Yun's hands lit up.

Xin Yue said, “ Su Yun, I'm going to the audience to cheer for you!”

“Okay!” Su Yun nodded.

The duo went their separate ways. Xin Yue went to the audience to find a place to cheer for Su Yun. Meanwhile, Su Yun stepped up onto the first arena.

The opponent did not come out yet. Su Yun calmly waited. There were a lot of onlookers gathered for this match. Nearly a hundred.

When Su Yun's figure appeared in fellow disciples line of sight, they began to gather around his match, as if waiting for another amazing performance.

Many people could not believe that Su Yun would have a winning streak. Therefore, more and more people came to the match. Seeing was believing.

Just then, commotion suddenly erupted out from the side of the arena.

Su Yun and Xin Yue looked towards the sound of the commotion and saw Su Nanye was walking towards this arena.

Xin Yue's face suddenly paled and with very pale lips, lightly said, "Could it be...that big brother Su Yun's opponent is really him?"

Chapter 27 - Eating Raw Marble

Su Nanye remained expressionless as he stepped into the arena. He stood in front of Su Yun.

The audience for this match increased even more.

Even though he was in the outer sect, Su Nanye could be considered as a major contestant. Therefore, many disciples paid attention to his matters.

“I never thought that this little rascal Su Yun would have any strength to him! However, since he is fighting against this young master, I think that Su Yun’s luck has already run out!”

“You can’t say that. Su Yun did not fully use his strength in his previous matches, so he should be able to fight against Su Nanye for a bit!”

“Oh, can he? If he can beat Su Nanye, I will eat a chunk of marble in public!”

“You’re on! Just remember, you said it!”

“When a nobleman makes a remark, it will be difficult even for a 4-horses carriage to catch up!” (Tl: it is a proverb, but basically: since you uttered those words, you must honor those words!)
“Alright!”

The audience whispered.

Xin Yue’s complexion remained extremely pale. Her eyes were full of concern.

She never thought that Su Yun, like Xing Yang, would be so unlucky as to also encounter a thornbush like Su Nanye.

“What will happen? Is big brother Su Yun going to be alright? Or...or maybe it is better for him to just give up.”

Xin Yue anxiously walked around in circles, not knowing what to do...she desperately wanted convey to Su Yun that he should just

give up the tournament, but...

The arena was already closed off.

The audience began to quiet down. and their attention shifted towards the ring.

In three more breaths, the two will begin fighting.

The surrounding area remained silent. There was a tense atmosphere.

Su Nanye narrowed his eyes as he glared at Su Yun.

“Awfully unexpected, isn’t it?” Su Nanye began to speak.

“It seems that you pulled a few strings.” Su Yun did not think that this match was coincidental. Within thousands of events, both Su Yun and Xing Yang were matched up with Su Nanye, so there was obviously something happening behind the scenes.

“Although the regulations do not allow authorized exchange of tickets, with a very serious punishment as a warning, it always is very difficult to monitor the affairs of the disciples. That is to say that tickets can not be replaced, but there are usually disciples willing to pay to buy some tickets. After all, people will only recognize your face and not your ticket number.” Su Yun continued.

Su Nanye glared coldly at Su Yun.

But after hearing his speech, Su Yun just remained silent.

“From before, I figure that little guy (Tl: referring to Xing Yang) should now understand what real strength is. Now, I will also let you and everyone else understand, that compared to Qian Ge, I am by far the number one disciple of the outer sect,” Su Nanye whispered as he had already begun to change into his fighting stance.

“Then, why did you not arrange a direct confrontation with Qian Ge,” Su Yun suddenly asked.

Su Nanye frowned but said nothing.

As Su Yun saw this, he laughed, “Even you know that you are no match against Qian Ge, why do you still insist that you are the number one disciple in the outer sect?”

“Shut up!” Su Nanye was furious with Su Yun’s words. His eyes became red, but he remained silent. Instead, he immediately charged forward.

No one could use weapons during this battle. Therefore, it was basically a fist and spirit power clash. Su Nanye did not hold back, utilizing both his hands as he quickly struck ten times. The spiritual energy burst forth, like an incoming tsunami, rolling towards Su Yun.

Su Nanye’s speed was very high, but he also had great strength. He was even near Su Yun’s own strength. So as the spiritual energy came closer, it pressured Su Yun’s entire body.

If he was an ordinary person, he would have had no way to cope with the spiritual energy of the opponent in front of him. They would just have move on to find another opponent after he had been swiftly beaten. If one encountered Su Nanye, they would also need a method to counter the spiritual energy strike.

Su Yun remained indifferent, kept his posture and then stepped a few steps back to avoid the spiritual energy strike.

It seemed that Su Nanye automatically used a powerful punch.

He was obviously different from the previous disciples. He was faster, stronger and more sinister.

He had no mercy!

Once he began, his strikes were already lethal from square one.

Su Yun hastily readied himself.

Whoosh!

A fist flew past his head, and the flow, coming the wind from the

strike infused with spirit power, whirred in everyone's ears.

Nonetheless, this single punch was not that simple.

Su Nanye was certainly an elite in the outer sect. He was skilled in offense and defense.

Su Nanye turned with a few steps and suddenly appeared behind Su Yun. His own fist quickly countered, but was parried once again, even though it had been aimed at Su Yun's back. The spiritual energy was controlled again, as it was infused into the fist, converging into it. This concealed strike astonishingly managed to penetrate the spiritual aura around Su Yun's body, but it was still avoided.

The audiences' eyes widened, because they were not able to catch Su Nanye's figure; his speed lacked no bounds.

Yet, Su Yun was not any worse off. He agilely dodged the incoming strikes and extended his right foot, in an attempt to trip Su Nanye and disrupt Su Nanye's pace.

Despite this trick, Su Nanye's eyes gave a magnificent shine, as it seemed that he had been waiting for this moment.

After seeing Su Nanye suddenly stop his onslaught, he immediately received a follow-up from Su Nanye, who was stomping down both his left and right foot directly on Su Yun's right leg. Infused with spirit power, the momentum pressed against Su Yun's leg, like a mountain coming down. It was impossible to block.

The audience immediately sucked in a breath from the change of events.

"Careful, big brother Su Yun," Xin Yue cried anxiously.

Just then, Su Yun also unleashed the spiritual aura around his body, countering Su Nanye's strikes.

The scene right now made one word enter the minds of everyone

who were watching.

Death!

Su Nanye was a tenth stage novice spirit realm disciple. How could an average disciple's body, protected with spiritual aura, hope to compare? Wasn't he just courting death. If not, what was he aiming for?

However, at the current moment, what choice did Su Yun have in the matter.

For this time, he was forced to take Su Nanye's strike head on.

Su Nanye was indeed very experienced. Excelling at both offense and defense, he had been calculating the actions of his opponent, and as a result, Su Nanye managed to control the entire fight!

"It seems that Su Nanye's ability was not that of an average outer sect disciple. Few can fight like this. I'm just afraid, that in the next bouts, he will still remain in control."

The audience below shook their heads.

Many disciples sighed.

Suddenly.

Bang!

A mild explosion occurred.

They were just able to witness the clash of spiritual energy that had created the explosion. It was instantly followed by a figure being flung out of the smoke and hitting the barrier of the arena, only to fall heavily to the ground.

The disciples held their breath and looked closely.

Is it Su Yun?

No! It was actually Su Nanye that was flung out.

After the audience saw this, they were absolutely stunned.

They saw Su Nanye struggling to get up, with his entire body laced with heavy injuries. Not waiting for Su Nanye to stop shaking, Su Yun moved forward.

Two heavy fists flew forward, infused with spirit power, and viscously hit Su Nanye's body like a hammer.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...

Su Nanye's body shook from the incoming strikes. The spiritual aura surrounding his body was easily broken through. He was being beaten to the point that he could not counter at all.

However, after a couple of powerful strikes, Su Nanye's body had more than a dozen wounds. On his body, his body armor caved in, while his nose was bruised horribly.

Su Nanye struggled to maintain his composure utilizing his fists to counter, but right after Su Yun let out a few punches, his resistance instantly became futile. Su Yun did not desire to negotiate anything. Not allowing Su Nanye to avoid or escape, he relentlessly kept on his assault.

Dang!

"Winner: Contestant 998," The judge shouted.

The masses of disciples in the audience remained completely silent.

Everyone's eyes were bulging out of their sockets, as they looked at each other, completely confounded by the result of the match.

The spirit novice realm of tenth stage cultivation disciple, Su Nanye had also lost....furthermore this was utter defeat.

Then what is the cultivation stage of Su Yun?

Is it possible...

That it is Spirit Intermediate Realm? (Tl: realm after tenth stage novice = intermediate) The people thinking about this immediately trembled with their bodies.

“How is Su Yun...how is Su Yun this powerful?”

Xin Yue felt that she could not wrap her head around what had happened. Even though she witnessed Su Yun’s past matches, even knowing that Su Yun cultivation stage rose, she still never expected Su Yun to have become so powerful. To even beat one of the top disciples of the outer sect, Su Nanye. Furthermore...even after eating some punches, there was still no visible injuries.

Su Yun jumped off the arena and exhaled. He felt that adrenaline was still pumping, so he was unable to calm down.

Although on the surface, Su Yun easily defeated Su Nanye, but in reality, it was just a lucky outcome. Su Nanye’s agility surpassed Su Yun, but Su Nanye was still very arrogant and decided to compete with Su Yun in spirit power.

Using the five cultivation medicine pellets and Crescent Moon Fruit, Su Yun had deep and immeasurable spirit power within his body. When Su Nanye tried to compete with spirit power, Su Yun had been able to seize the opportunity and achieved victory.

If Su Nanye used only his agility to launch quick attacks, it would not have been this easy for Su Yun.

Su Nanye was sent away for treatment.

The crowd gradually dispersed.

“Hey, everyone, don’t go!”

A disciple shouted, trying to hold up some disciples from leaving, while he was chuckling.

“Where is the disciple that said that he would eat raw marble?”

A few people chuckled.

The disciple that spoke these words face turned green as he saw the marble rock.

There were a lot of people that noticed Su Yun’s strong opponent. In this crowd, even the top disciple of the outer sect was

here, Qian Ge.

“Strength is good, but Su Nanye was simple-minded. Even though he had the strength, I did not expect him to be defeated so badly,” the tall and handsome Qian Ge laughed.

“Is Su Nanye worth anything? It does not mean anything to defeat him, I can use a finger to kill him,” snorted a long haired and tender face male disciple next to him.

“You cannot say that. You must never underestimate anyone, especially if you do not know him.” Qian Ge said.

“En...” The disciple nodded.

At the public square. Su Yun was resting for a moment. He was currently sitting cross-legged and calming his nerves.

It would take a while for him to recover fully.

Xin Yue prepared a fresh cup of water and handed it to Su Yun.

Su Yun got up and drank it all with a few breaths.

As Xin Yue raised her head as she laughed.

After a moment.

Both of the tickets for the next round lit up.

“Come on! Xin Yue, if you win this, we will be able to enter the top five hundred ranks. Afterwards, if we win the next round, we will enter the top two hundred rankings. At that time, you and I will be able to enter the inner sect,” Su Yun spoke to Xin Yue.

Xin Yue nodded as a trace of determination emerged on her delicate face.

The two went to their respective matches.

Soon, Su Yun found the arena for his match.

In the arena, there was still a crowd of people, but they seemed to not number many. This time there were only a few people. However, these people could strike fear into the hearts of anyone.

For they were all inner sect disciples.

Su Yun's heart was startled.

Could it be...

Chapter 28 - The Disparity in Strength

Su Yun looked at the arena.

Just as expected.

On the stage stood a luxuriously dressed inner sect disciple. The disciple's body was equipped with many magical jewelries, such as gold trimmed emerald ring, faint glowing bucklers, etc. Compared to the outer sect disciples' shabby appearances, this guy was like an emperor.

"Another outer sect disciple, Tian Yuan, your luck is too good, right?"

In the arena sidelines, an audience member who had a bald head, equipped with a sword, blew a whistle and smiled as he said this.

"Each and every one of you guys are bastards! Basically, you guys use no energy, yet I have to compete with inner sect disciples. This is not fair! It's so freaking unfair!" A young female disciple angrily shouted from the audience.

"This is what the heavens decree, so we can't have any say in this!"

These male and female disciple continued to argue with each other.

Over time, the female disciple's anger just kept on rising.

Su Yun just bit his lower lip, kept his head down and walked toward the arena while watching the scene caused by the inner sect disciples. It even seemed like the atmosphere of a family.

Keeping reserved, would not move mountains.

Spirit Intermediate Realm.

This was not comparable to the a cultivation of eighth stage spirit novice realm. Su Yun was afraid that even two Su Nan Ye could not beat this inner sect disciple's opponent.

Su Yun's own cultivation had not past the eighth stage novice realm. Although with the help of the five cultivation medicine, his spirit power and aura were greatly increased, it could not fully close the gap caused by the cultivation stages.

Su Yun must go all out.

As Su Yun secretly thought this, he stepped onto the arena.

Two disciples were now standing on the stage.

“Get Set!” The judge called out.

After Su Yun heard this, he immediately changed into his fighting stance.

The spirit power within his body began to circulate...

This movement caused the opponent and the audience to raise their eyebrows.

“Why do you not just admit defeat?” Tian Yuan said with dissatisfaction.

“I’m not thinking about that?” Su Yun replied.

“Ah!” Tian Yuan laughed.

Generally, when they met with outer sect disciples, the outer sect disciples just surrendered immediately. However, some disciples would decide to fight, which not only showed courage, but it also demonstrated that they were not afraid of the strength of their opponents.

This was an extremely shameful thing! (Tl: surrendering immediately, courage to fight = good) “You really don’t understand the vastness of the heavens!”

Tian Yuan grunted, and then directly sprung into action. With his front foot, he stomped the ground utilizing the spirit power within his body and propelled himself forward. He flew over the ground and charged straight in front of Su Yun.

The amount of spirit power used was shocking.

This thick spirit power and aura was aimed to kill the opponent.

A spirit novice realm disciple versus a spirit intermediate disciple!

How large the strength gap between the two realms would be?

Meanwhile, Su Yun did not have the slightest hesitation.

Su Yun focused, his eyes suddenly deepened and his spiritual eyes suddenly activated. Every ounce of spirit power erupted forth and even overshadowed Tian Yuan's aura.

"Huh?" Tian Yuan lifted his head only to see Su Yun suddenly coming with a ridiculously fast strike.

He gave up defending and dodging the strike. Instead, he poured more spirit power into his aura, making him like a great locomotive about to crash with his opponent...

Boom!

Spirit power exploded out from the clash.

The disciples were only shaken a bit, but did not step back.

Tian Yuan simply did not think that Su Yun would be this desperate. Tian Yuan was surprised, so he did not have enough time to dodge, and was hit squarely from another strike.

Bang!

Tian Yuan's body was sent flying.

But...

As Tian Yuan's body was sent flying, Su Yun suddenly stretched out his hand to grab Tian Yuan's neck and used his infused arm strength to brutally slam Tian Yuan straight from the air to the ground.

Immediately afterwards, Su Yun sent an infused punch straight into the dazed stomach of Tian Yuan.

After Tian Yuan took the punch, he complexion suddenly paled and trembled from pain.

Just one punch! Although the strength of the punch was ordinary, it hit Tian Yuan's weak point, causing a massive amount of pain.

The audience was completely stunned.

Most disciples never had intention to truly kill, but this disciple went so far.

Those disciples of the outer sect could only take the criticisms of the inner sect disciples because they were well aware of the difference between them.

Tian Yuan's spirit aura covered his entire body, as he had to use spirit power to heal his body. However, even the spirit power was leaking out from his body because of the injuries.

After completing the strike, the spirit energy was draining out to the ground, basically one fifth of the energy was lost. Su Yun managed to strike right into Tian Yuan's lower stomach, which was in fact, where almost of the spirit power was stored. Since the core area was injured, it caused massive fluctuations and led to Tian Yuan to have internal injuries.

Therefore, Su Yun exploded forth with all his energy, and advanced up close to strike Tian Yuan. He was only afraid that Tian Yuan had the same idea.

First, he had wanted to catch his opponent off guard.

Second, he had wanted to directly assault the core of the spirit power, since once the core was damaged, the spirit power would begin to disperse. During the assault, the general audience would not have understood what truly happened.

"This person...who is he," A aged woman near the arena whispered.

“Unclear.” The man beside her shook his head.

“Is the top disciple of the outer sect not Qian Ge? Where did this ruthless fellow come from?”

The audience once again began to pay attention to Su Yun.

Yet, Tian Yuan did not want to be defeated again. He unleashed his power again, suddenly roared and bright rings appeared around his body as he used his fist. He charged forward, aiming for Su Yun’s neck.

A divine skill! (Tl: 5th from the bottom rank)

In fact, Su Yun could also have learned divine skills, but there had not been enough time. He only learnt few earth skills (Tl: 3rd from bottom rank) , so how could he practice divine skills? He only knew basic sword fighting skills, basic strikes and basic agility skills.

Martial skills is not the only the deciding factor, because there are many tactics for fighting cultivators. Although it is not fairly known, the spirit essence of a disciple was a weakness.

Tian Yuan waited for Su Yun to have an opening and suddenly jumped. Instantly clenched his fists, he struck against Su Yun and an explosion erupted in the empty air.

The attack obviously missed Su Yun, but Su Yun was still caught in the explosion. He was blown away from the blast and fell fiercely on the ground, breathing very heavily.

“Vapor Burst! Good execution,” A disciple in the audience commented.

Tian Yuan grimaced as his heart filled with scorching anger.

He quickly charged again. Approaching Su Yun, he lifted his arms, steadied his breath and struck. The vapor shot ahead was aimed at Su Yun’s chest.

Taking this hit would not kill a disciple, but obtaining injuries

were inevitable.

Slowly, the spirit strikes from the palm travelled through the air, moving erratically and zigzagging to its target. The power in this skill seemed immense, as it seemed that with one strike, it could split mountains, crush gold and easily dominate an opponent.

“It’s over!”

Tian Yuan as his palm descended near Su Yun’s chest.

At this critical moment, Suyen suddenly swung his right hand to slap away the incoming strike away.

“Ha ha, you want your right hand to be destroyed? Fine, I’ll do just that!” Tian Yuan laughed out loud and gazed at Su Yun’s incoming right hand.

Tian Yuan was confident that he had infused enough spirit power into his strike that it was enough to destroy any part of Su Yun’s body if it hit.

The fist and palm collided.

The two spirit auras generated from the strike entwined the two disciples. They both refused to back down from the shockwave and focused on overwhelming each other. Suddenly, the spirit auras cancelled out and the auras dispersed. Nobody knew who won.

This was truly beyond Tian Yuan’s expectations for the power infused in Su Yun’s palm, for it was extremely profound and deep. It was not the power of an ordinary disciple in the eighth stage of spirit novice realm cultivation.

However, he was not worried.

When two disciples fought, their spirit power would be consumed...

Naturally, the disciple with higher cultivation would win! Suddenly, Tian Yuan saw his opponent’s mouth smile in a large arc.

Why is he laughing at this?

Tian Yuan's heart was startled.

Just then, his opponent suddenly extended his palm in a strike, unexpectedly he opened his hand and rapidly grabbed Tian Yuan's middle and forefinger with his palm.

After grabbing hold of them, Tian Yuan's spirit power immediately began seeping to Su Yun's palm like wisps of art. Moreover, this weakened the muscles that were currently being strengthened by Tian Yuan's spirit power and further weakened his entire body...

Excruciating pain was being transmitted from his nerves to his heart.

Bang!

The transferring energy at the palm exploded.

Both men took were pushed back.

Su Yun crashed into the barrier. His body was trembling and a little trail of blood oozed from the corner of his mouth.

Yet, Tian Yuan was furiously slammed backwards. His body was shaking erratically. Then with a 'plop,' he coughed out blood and fell to the ground, unconscious.

Silence.

All around, crows and peacocks made not a sound. (Tl: idiom meaning absolute silence)

Chapter 29 - The Surprising Victory

Was it even possible?

An outer sect disciple had actually beaten an inner sect disciple... furthermore he was able to do it so quickly?

If the audience had not personally witnessed it for themselves, nobody would have believed it.

“Contestant 9...co-contestant 998 is the winner!”

The judge was also shocked and had to take a moment before he could announce the result.

After the judge’s announcement, the stunned audience woke up from a trance.

“Tian Yuan, he...he fought a weak brat from the outer sect, yet what happened? This...this isn’t possible,” A female disciple shouted.

“Did you guys not clearly see what happened? As they were struggling during the fight, suddenly, Su Yun changed his hand movements. He managed to change the direction of his opponent’s spiritual aura output with a mysterious method. “

“What?!? Just by changing his hand movements in this battle followed by a cheap strike to finish his opponent after he had created such an opportunity. Is this man bold or just stupidly daring? Impossible! Absolutely impossible!”

“You are all just looking down on this person! This disciple isn’t so simple. Although I do not know with what method he use enabling him to overpower Tian Yuan, his strength...I’m afraid might be much stronger than what we currently think he is!”

“A mere eighth stage spirit novice disciple overpowered a first stage intermediate realm disciple...wow, how is this possible?”

“Within the realm of higher stage fighting, it is very difficult to

say. The fact that this disciple actually managed to overcome three cultivation stages higher than him...this is truly frightening!”

“I’m just afraid that this battle will remain etched into Tian Yuan’s heart for life.”

Off to the side of the arena, several of the inner sect disciples within the audience sighed and shook their heads. The audience members were still cheering endlessly and it would be awhile before the next match began on the arena*. Su Yun’s injured opponent was taken to the Regional Medical Tent of the Su Family to accept his treatment.

As quickly as the match finished, the news of Su Yun beating an inner sect disciple spread like wildfire, instantly reaching across the entire tournament square.

The contestants immediately became interested by the juicy news.

“What? Su Yun actually beat an inner sect disciple? How is this possible?”

“Don’t screw with me!”

“That trash with only a cultivation of sixth stage spirit novice realm? Do not joke like this, cause it isn’t funny.”

“The rumors this time around are really getting too outrageous.”

At first, many disciples did not believe the news. However, after looking at the competition results, one by one they became all completely petrified in shock.

Within the competition’s border.

“Powerful!”

Qian Ge exclaimed in shock and then lowered his voice.

“Senior is definitely more powerful than him!”

Beside Qian Ge stood a young juvenile.

“Not necessarily! If it was me, I don’t think I could even accomplish this kind of feat!”

“What, beating that inner sect disciple? Senior most definitely would have the strength!”

“Yes, but I am currently at Spirit intermediate realm cultivation, while he was only eighth stage spirit novice realm! If I have to fight him, I cannot earnestly treat him like he is only an eighth stage novice realm disciple!”

“What can he do to senior?”

“Well, he seems to be sneaky and ruthless.”

After the juvenile heard him, he only shook his head. He simply could not understand senior’s reasoning.

Qian Ge remained calm and explained with a smile, “Before Su Yun ate the other side’s spirit infused punch, he had already set up a trap. Therefore, when his opponent rushed towards him, he purposefully thrust his palm out in such a way as to disrupt his opponent’s spirit power. It was actually all part of his plan!”

“His plan?”

“Right. It had to be this way, since Su Yun was already aware of his opponent’s strength. When one utilizes spirit power to infuse one’s own strikes, there is excessive strain on the body. In particular the stress on meridians that run through the hand is a quite high. If the spirit power infused is not enough or is too weak, a “spirit explosion” could theoretically take place. Therefore, it seems that Su Yun intended to gamble everything on this singular occurrence. When he suddenly changed his movements, with his fast hand movements, he created a “sword” from the spirit power, infused it into his palm, and clashed with his opponent! That was why his hand was heavily injured.”

“So he cut his opponent’s meridians?”

“Right! There was just a little force in the strike’s spirit power,

but it is exceptionally sharp. As it severed the meridians of the palm, the circulating spirit power was thrown into chaos. Therefore, his opponent, was doomed to lose!”

“Eh? So powerful!”

“Is it really only powerful?” Qian Ge shook his head and continued, “This man was not only extremely cautious and devious, but his knowledge concerning his opponent’s meridians was first class. If he lacked any of these qualities, he would not be able to sever any of the meridians. It is this combination of traits that I’m really afraid of!”

“So it is that.”

“Strength does not rely solely on cultivation, but also intelligence as well. A powerful man is bold and crafty, but is never ignorant.”

“I will remember the teachings of senior,” The long haired tender juvenile seriously promised.

After this round was over, everyone who was left had officially entered the top two hundred in rankings. Now for Su Yun, entering the inner sect was a sure thing.

The two hundred disciples entered the designated rest area. Su Yun was also welcomed and headed to the rest area.

Before he managed to get far, a large crowd of outer sect disciples flooded over.

Eyes of worship and respect were thrown at him.

“We greet the powerful Senior Su Yun. With your power only being eighth stage spirit novice realm, you managed to defeat a spirit intermediate realm disciple. Please tell us... how did you do it?”

“Too impressive. Senior Su Yun, did you know, a few elders in the inner sect were asking for your name just a few moments ago!”

“Senior Su Yun, can I become your disciple?”

“Senior Su Yun, are you looking for a spirit cultivation partner?”

“Senior Su Yun, I love you!” (EN: Kyaaaaaa >O<)

....

The people’s constant pestering continued, like a swarm of bees. Su Yun was unable to cope with the attention and quickly got up to avoid the commotion.

After waiting for a short period of time, the match of Xin Yue ended.

This brave girl was covered with a myriad of scars, and her expression was extremely downcast.

After Su Yun asked what happened he was truly able to understand. Originally, Xin Yue had also been paired up against a female inner sect disciple named Xiao Xue. After just a few minutes, the fight ended in Xin Yue’s defeat.

Su Yun could only say a few words in consolation. After all, it was her first time participating in a tournament, so setbacks were to be expected. There would surely be other opportunities in the future.

It was great that Xin Yue’s character was optimistic. After she a while, she completely recovered herself.

After witnessing Su Yun beating an inner sect disciple, Xin Yue was shocked for a long time. Afterwards, Xin Yue dragged Su Yun back to her house, while she went out to the market to buy some good food. She called Xin Yang who was still recuperating and the three of them celebrated.

To beat an inner sect disciple... it was obvious that Su Yun had managed to enter the top two hundred ranks. The siblings Yue and Yang did not expect Su Yun’s strength to be so dominating.

Ever since Su Yun’s rebirth, he had not drunk any wine. Furthermore Xing Yang was still injured. Nonetheless, the three

people ate and celebrated happily.

The next day, the tournament resumed.

Su Yun arrived early to the tournament square.

Contrary to everyone's initial expectations, today's tournament square was crowded.

The audience was completely filled. Even the amount of inner sect disciples attending could not be called few. Not only that, a few elders even made appearances, such as Shi Long. He had personally come to watch today's matches.

This was a match of two hundred contestants, and only fifty would pass.

In addition, this was to select the best of the inner sect disciples of the tournament.

For whoever can win this competition, and enter the top fifty, would earn very generous rewards from the inner sect. These people would surely lead a promising and brilliant life.

Therefore, whether it was inner sect or outer sect disciples, everyone took this very seriously.

However, the amount of outer sect disciples in the top two hundred were very scarce. Including Su Yun, it only amounted to sixteen people. He was becoming afraid that those that could enter the top fifty rankings were even scarcer.

The arenas were shrunk to fifty, and the contestant were separated into two batches.

Su Yun was sitting in the resting area for a moment, when his ticket suddenly lit up.

Fifth arena.

Contestant 998 Vs. Contestant 17.

After Su Yun arrived at the fifth arena, he proudly strode

towards the stage.

“Su Kuang! Su Kuang!”

“Su Kuang, good luck!”

“Su Kuang! I love you! Good luck, you must win this!”

At this time, a tsunami-like waves of cries rang out.

After Su Yun heard this, his complexion immediately darkened. He gave a sidelong glance and could see a person within the flanking square pavilion seat. Su Dong Fang was smiling and looking at Su Yun.

Finally matched up against Su Kuang?

Su Yun bowed his head in thought. Then, he quietly step onto the stage...

Chapter 30 - The Hidden Devil Technique, One Move to Kill

“My My, this is really beyond my expectations. I never thought that you could have survived until now. Perhaps the rumors were wrong, since you don’t seem like a trash,” the handsome Su Dong Fang gently said. As he looked at the pathetic man stranded on stage, he lazily narrowed his eyes and smiled.

“No, the rumor is surely right.”

Just then, an arrogant and rough voice rang throughout the staging area.

People turned to see the source of the voice only to find a fierce looking man smiling. It was Su Kuang, who was viciously glaring at Su Yun. As he arrived at the arena, he stepped up onto the stage. His posture straightened and steadied himself; the spirit aura surrounding his body looked as if it would burst out. It was mighty and domineering.

The mountain of pressure was aimed at the front!

Just then, every member of the audience near Su Kuang uttered their complaints of the aura.

He is like a tiger; No, like a giant; what person in their right mind would want him as an enemy? Because of his lofty status, an average person could simply not afford to offend him.

“Su Kuang! Su Kuang! Win! Win!”

“That inner sect disciple known as Su Kuang... it’s been said that ever since he was born, he had terrifying strength unparalleled to even beasts.”

“Looking at this situation...Su Yun is in a bad situation.”

“Even though this guy still managed to win a couple rounds, by just comparing his strength to Su Kuang’s, he is far too weak!”

“You can’t say all of that. Luck was a part of it, but to come this far, strength is certainly required. Nonetheless, seeing him against Su Kuang, it is, at best, unknown if he can win.”

Everyone in the audience was whispering amongst and discussing with one another. However, it was clear that the majority supported the prediction that Su Kuang would win this match.

“Su Kuang looks great setting such a pace,” Qian Ge said as he looked at the two opponents.

“This seems to be a technique within the inner sect called ‘Tiger Step’: used to enhance the practitioner’s power during movement from utilizing spirit power to activate the technique,” said the long haired juvenile beside Qian Ge.

“Really? Then, since Su Yun is within the area of the technique, isn’t he at a disadvantage now? Ah, but let’s wait and see if he has other techniques in this match.”

At the northwest corner of the arena.

“Su Yun this kid, he actually dared to come here! It seems that he what he said before was true, since a spirit novice sixth stage disciple could have never beaten an inner sect disciple otherwise. However, did he not say...that he was a secret weapon that the master arranged? Why would he participate in this tournament? If he wanted to enter the inner sect, why couldn’t he just ask his master?”

Su Gui Mu was completely puzzled.

“Maybe it is to stop the gossip about him, so if he entered the inner sect, no one would dare say anything about him anymore,” A junior disciple behind him suggested.

“So it is like this?” Su Guimu felt that he could not wrap his head around this at all.

“Boss, if we encounter Su Yun in the future, let’s just speak to him politely. This little guy will become pretty powerful in the

future unlike us.”

“Good idea.”

Bang!

The bell sounded.

The conversations near the arena quietened, and everyone’s attention shifted towards the center of the arena.

At this time, the judge yelled out, “Get ready!”

The two opponents on the stage glared at each other.

Su Yun intently gazed at his opponent. Meanwhile, Su Kuang changed into his fighting stance, ready to begin his assault.

The judge glanced around the arena. As he did some sweat dropped involuntarily from his cheeks. He carefully held his breath before yelling out, “Begin!”

The announcement was made! A fierce and predatory atmosphere descended and began to shroud the entire arena. Suddenly, Su Kuang roared and came rushing towards Su Yun like he was his prey.

He did not hold back.

Su Yun lowered his gaze and posture. He managed to dodge the attack. However, he did not counterattack.

After Su Kuang failed in his first attempt, he immediately took advantage of the spirit aura that was pressuring Su Yun and renewed his assault in order to try to lower Su Yun’s chances of evading his attacks.

On Su Kuang’s hand, blades of spirit power extended from his fingers. Su Kuang quickly spread his hands and sent the spirit claws towards Su Yun’s spirit aura around his body.

“External Spirit Power Essence Release!”

Someone in the audience shouted.

This was actually very difficult to accomplish, even for inner sect disciples. It required deep understanding of spirit power as well as the ability to proficiently manipulate it. If one had those requirements, they might be able to accomplish this once they reached spirit intermediate realm.

The audience only witnessed Su Yun dodging hastily. Since he dodged hurriedly, a piece of clothing on Su Yun had a big hole cut into it. Fortunately, this strike missed and did not injure his body.

Again, Su Kuang saw an opportunity. He immediately renewed his assault, not allowing Su Yun any time to react. Once again, he extended his hands and sent the spirit claws flying through the air straight into Su Yun.

Nonetheless, Su Yun seemed well prepared. He kicked one foot out into Su Kuang's arms while the other aimed for Su Kuang's head.

Despite this, Su Kuang did not even panic. Instead, a trace of happiness started to form on his face.

He did not dodge as the necklace hung on his neck suddenly burst into yellow light, which covered his head and formed a mask.

Bang!

The foot collided with the forehead.

Su Yun felt that his kick just collided with solid metal, but Su Kuang did not feel the slightest hit.

"He actually decided to use armaments."

"This method is really too shameless," said Xin Yue, since she could not tolerate the situation.

In the tournament, there was no rule that prevented the use of armaments, but not everyone had armaments.

However, if one took a close look at Su Kuang's arms and down to his legs, they would have been startled. After the armament was

used, a dominating strength was fiercely pressuring the surroundings.

Su Yun was thrown to the edge of the arena from Su Kuang's block. He hit the barrier and fell to the ground. Even though he was still unsteady, Su Kuang launched his techniques yet again.

A thunderous roar shook the arena causing many of the audience members to cover their ears. Many felt really miserable from hearing the sound.

However, even though the sound was painful to bear, the surrounding audience was soon shocked even more.

This sound only came from extremely powerful spirit techniques.

Since even the sound of the spirit technique was deafening, then what was the actual level of the spirit technique?

The protective barrier of the arena cut off most of the spiritual aura and atmosphere being projected. Therefore, the audience were never directly in any danger. However, it was different for Su Yun who was on the arena. One could not guard against a sonic wave, so he was still unsteady. After eating this strike, he actually felt disoriented and his legs were not stable.

"A good shot!"

Someone shouted as they understood the situation.

"Slaughter this little brat that does not know the immensity of heaven and earth!"

"Go boss Su Kuang!"

The shouts were coming in constantly.

Even Su Dong Fang was smiling. Then, he glanced at Su Kuang and nodded.

Any regular person could discern that the Spirit aura Su Kuang was projecting was pressuring Su Yun in the arena. How could Su Yun just wait to be bombarded by Su Kuang's assaults? Yet, when

he fought head on, Su Kuang easily countered him and broke through his defence. Then he would just launch another sonic wave.

This kind of attack came off as very mysterious. It was apparent to the audience that Su Kuang's combat experience was one level higher than Su Yun's.

"It seems the outcome of the match is set!"

The handsome Qian Ge shook his head, "I still look forward to what Su Yun will do now!"

"Senior, there will be a chance," The long-haired juvenile beside said.

Su Kuang did not let up. He took every opening that Su Yun gave and attacked in quick succession. With spirit claws on his hands, he actually aimed from Su Yun's heart.

This person was aiming to ruthlessly murder him.

The audience held their breath and stared intently at the battle.

The judge at the arena, however, did not conclude the match, because Su Yun was still standing.

But everyone understood Su Kuang's intentions.

Su Dong Fang liked Qing Er, but Su Yun was a thorn. Not only did Su Kuang want to use this match to get rid of Su Yun, he also wanted to curry favor with Su Dong Fang.

Fist had no eyes. Even though the Su Family had some protective measure in place, it did not mean that there were no incidents in the tournament. Not being able to account for all of them was an inevitability.

Su Kuang understood that killing Su Yun would not cause a commotion. Su Dong Fang would not only help him, but he would also reward him.

Therefore, he dared to use lethal moves to kill!

Nevertheless...

Just as he was near Su Yun, his whole body shook, and he became so unstable that he couldn't even stand. Suddenly, his body was a statue.

At the same time, a pair of ruthless eyes with deep killing intent gazed into Su Kuang.

Those eyes were deep, sinister and as dark as a black hole.

Traditionally, a person's blood was the medium used to activate devil techniques. However, one did not necessarily require patterns to be drawn with the blood. All that was needed was for markings to be inscribed into one's soul.

In this case, many things can be said to be completely different.

In a split second, a chill went through Su Kuang's body from head to toe. His blood even seemed to solidify itself.

He stood still, only to see Su Yun suddenly raising his fist, exhausting all his strength in his body. Su Kuang suddenly felt that his neck was violently being crushed. Then the hands wrapped around his head. They were infused with spirit power, the very sight of which was suffocating.

Powerful!

Domineering!

Sinister!

Cold!

The hand was stunning peerless.

Su Yun's previous poor performance was all for this one moment to execute his devil technique.

All of the previous pathetic performance was merely meant to execute this one lethal move!

Gotcha!

This person never counted me as the “alpha predator!”

Sukaung shivered, and his heart trembled.

He wanted to escape, but it was already too late.

The fist had already been closed, and the vigorous force of the spirit power from the devil technique was finally utilized.

Su Dong Fang sensed that something was wrong and his face immediately paled. He quickly stood up and yelled, “Su Yun, how dare you!”

But as the while he was shouting...

Bang!

An explosion. The clenched fist of Su Yun was touching the air around what used to be Su Kuang’s head. It had burst open. Su Kuang’s whole head had been crushed. Brains and blood splashed all over the ground.

In an instant...

The entire tournament grounds went dead silent. Everything seemed to be covered with dust.

A headless body was still maintaining its fighting stance in front of Su Yun on the stadium...

Chapter 31 - Su Family's Punishment

The iron-like fist seemed to be covered with a juicy-textured substance, colored red and white...

The entire surrounding area was deathly silent.

It was difficult for anyone to make any expressions, as everyone's facial muscles seemed to be frozen in place. All that remained were extremely exaggerated emotions of shock...

Whether they were in the inner or outer sect, the sight of the match stupefied them. They could not react at all.

An accidental murder? This kind of thing had occurred in the tournaments before, but this time it was a head strike...which was extremely rare.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Just then, a few rings of the bell sounded.

Subsequently, the arena of this match was lit up by a red light as a large number of guards from the inner sect marched towards the arena.

These guards were all outstanding inner sect disciples, and every one of them was wearing high quality armor and weapons from the host family. About twenty-five people rushed to the arena. As they approached, they began to surround the entire arena. The audience around the arena began to quickly disperse.

“Contestant 998, Su Yun, has committed serious violations!!!”

The judge shouted loudly.

The silence of the crowd began to boil away.

Many people's face were now filled with dismay, surprise and doubt.

Many of the people far away from the match had yet to

comprehend the full extent of what had happened during the match.

“Who...who committed violations?” A young man asked the female companion beside him.

“It seems....it seems to be Su Yun?” The female companion responded.

After the other disciples heard the commotion, they rushed towards the front of the stadium to see what was happening.

However, the disciples quickly saw the corpse of Su Kuang still standing. As the disciples gazed at the sight, they only saw that it was only a headless corpse covered with scattered blood and crushed bone.

“Whaaa.....”

Many of the female disciples that came to look instantly vomited.

Suddenly, the entire square became a chaotic mess.

“What seems to be the problem?” Just then, an elder said as he rose up from his seat.

Subsequently, a high-pitched voice called out, “The elder has arrived!”

As the crowd saw the elder arrive, they immediately made a path. Afterwards, the other elders that had been sitting in the elder audience area began to walk alongside the first elder towards the stadium.

Su Shilong face darkened as he arrived at the stage and glanced around him. Then he asked, “What happened?”

“Esteemed elder, contestant Su Yun fought against Su Kuang in a fierce battle. Su Yun carelessly killed Su Kuang!”

“Su Kuang was killed?”

As Su Shilong asked this, he raised his eyes to glance at Su Yun

who still had a calm demeanor as he stood on the stage. Su Yun appeared to be unaware of the waves he just created.

Just then, a large group of people were walking over to their location. Leading the group was Su Dong Fang.

Just looking at the darkened face, a face full of bitterness, Su Dong Fang shouted, “Elder Shilong, please take the appropriate actions! Su Kuang was my nephew, yet now, in this tournament, he was brutally murdered by Su Yun. Please bring justice to this and avenge my nephew!”

“Elder, please bring justice to avenge Su Kuang!” Su Dong Fang shouted again.

Su Dong Fang was one of the sons of the main elders of the Su Family. Although he directly did not have much power, he did have the backing of one of the main elders. Only with aid like this, would he dare to act like this.

Su Shilong acknowledged Su Dong Fang’s outburst and said, “Rest assured disciple Dong Fang, you will obtain your justice!”

After finishing, Su Shilong turned around, coldly gazed at Su Yun, and said, “Bring him down!”

“Yes! Elder!”

The guards immediately began to take action.

“Stop!”

At this time, Xin Yue could not help but cry out.

“Which person asked us to stop,” Su Shilong angrily asked.

“Elder, it was a disciple from the outer sect called Xin Yue!”

Xin Yue stepped in front of the crowd and with a determined and serious faced, she continued “Elder, it was inevitable that there would be accidental injuries caused in the match. Fist have no eyes. You can not blame brother Su Yun for the death of Su Kuang!”

“Accidental killing?” Su Shilong said coldly, “How can this killing be considered as accidental?”

“Why not? The judge was here, there were thousands of disciples around that witnessed the match. They saw every moment and the incident. During a fierce battle, who can easily stop the match? If elder took brother Su Yun today, wouldn’t it mean that you were ignoring the rules of the tournament?”

Xin Yue said with a unfaltering gaze.

Everyone couldn’t help but admire this female disciple’s courage. Xin Yue was speaking in a clear voice, and the speech was directed to an elder of the inner sect.

Su Shilong’s face became ugly, but the tournament rules were set by the patriarch. Under such a large crowd, would he dare just disregard them?

He glanced at Su Dong Fang and thought for a moment. Then he asked the judge, “According to the rules, for manslaughter in the tournament, is there any punishment?”

“Immediate disqualification, the loss tournament ranking and possible ten year ban to participate in inner or outer sect matches of the Su Family.” Obviously, the judge did not understand the current situation and just gave the direct instructions according to the tournament rules.

“So light,” Su Dong Fang asked.

“These were the rules set by the patriarch,” The judge answered.

After Su Shilong heard this, his face changed.

After the judge said this, then this matter could not be easily settled. If he publicly ignored the rules and the patriarch heard about this, then he would be doomed.

He could not afford to offend the patriarch. Not to mention the patriarch, this matter was better settled by the main house.

Aftering contemplating, he turned his head and with a face full of grief, as he said, “My nephew, your uncle can understand your emotions, but the death is done. You can only endure!” After finishing, he just waved his hand, “ Make a burial for Su Kuang and send some reparation money to his family.”

“Elder, Su Kuang had no family, his master has always been Su Dong Fang.”

“Uh...then for the time being, just make a burial.”

“Yes, elder.”

“In addition, immediately disqualify Su Yun and abolish all his rewards from this tournament. Immediately sent him back to the outer sect!”

Su Shilong shouted angrily.

“Yes, elder!”

The guards that were surrounding Su Yun immediately took action and directed Su Yun to leave.

Su Yun did not say anything, jumped off the stadium and walked directly towards the exit.

As he passed Su Dong Fang, he was blocked.

“This matter will not be settled this easily.”

Su Dong Fang calmly said. The charming smile was gone without a trace.

“It seems that I won. The bet that was set should still be in effect right?” Su Yun asked.

“Of course!” Su Dong Fang coldly said.

Su Yun nodded and directly headed towards the exit.

However, after walking for a few steps, he suddenly stopped for a moment and turned around. Then he loudly said, “Still good, still good...”

“Still good?” Su Dong Fang was puzzled.

“Hmm, fortunately, it was not you that I was matched up against.”

As Su Yun said this, the entire audience became silent.

When Su Dong Fang heard this he face immediately darkened and became ugly.

This ***** naked threat, how could he not recognize this...

“Su Yun? Su Yun? This name, where have I heard of this before?” Su Shilong seemed to have remembered and asked, “This Su Yun was the Su Yun that was expelled from the inner sect of the Su Family?”

“Esteemed elder, that is correct.”

“Wasn’t his cultivation speed extremely slow? For eight years, he could not reach seventh stage cultivation? Now, somehow he managed to enter the top 50 in rankings?”

“This guy probably just got lucky and made a breakthrough!” Since the person next to him could not understand exactly what had happened, so he just made something up.

“Really?” Su Shilong frowned as he thought about it. Then he just shook his head and turned to leave.

“I never thought that Su Yun could be this vicious. He actually killed Su Kuang on accident!” The distant long-haired juvenile still had not recovered from the shock as he said this with a bewildered look on his face.

“He did not make a mistake. He deliberately killing Su Kuang,” Qian Ge responded.

“Intentionally kill Su Kuang?” The long haired juvenile was shocked even more, “Senior, why did Su Yun decide to kill Su Kuang?”

“This, I do not know,” Qian Ge said as he shook his head. Then

he continued, “This man is unfathomable, so we must be careful if we meet him later.”

“Yes...senior.”

Meanwhile, located at the other end was Su Gui Mu. He was already so scared that he could hardly stand up straight; his legs felt like noodles.

“Sweet merciful heavens! This guy was actually so daring as to actually commit murder during a tournament.”

“In the future...in the future, I will never mess with this guy again. This guy is completely nuts, completely insane!”

“The patriarch of the house sheltered him. He can indiscriminately kill anyone, boss...we...we should really be careful when we meet this guy again.”

A group of disciples near Su Gui Mu stammered uselessly amongst themselves.

With just this battle, Su Yun had really shocked the inner and outer sects. His fame spread quickly, and the outer sect disciples worshiped and feared him.

Chapter 32 - Inside the World of the Everlasting Sword Sheath

Although he had defeated Su Kuang, he still lost the qualification to enter the inner sect. This was a deviation from his original plan.

Nonetheless, Su Yun did not regret this. He could easily adapt his plans, but he would never change his principles.

Since the opposing side had intended to kill him, as Su Yun saw it, it was necessary to eliminate the threat in the same way.

Although he was trying to avoid using devil techniques, the knowledge of them was already ingrained into his bones. Even though he was reborn, it would be hard if not impossible to change that fact.

“Forget it. So what if we can’t just enter the inner sect quickly. It doesn’t matter.”

As Su Yun said this, the Yue Yang siblings quickly followed him. They tried to comfort him endlessly until Su Yun was smiling again. Then they stopped.

It wasn’t until they seemed sure that Su Yun didn’t have any problems about the resulting circumstances that they took their leave.

After Yue Yang siblings left, Su Yun did not waste any time. After calculating the time, he determined that the side effects of the Heavenly Crystal would still require ten or more days of cultivating. After making sure that he had the everlasting sword hilt, he went back to the old shopkeeper to buy another stallion. He immediately stormed out of Su Family’s territory and headed towards Mirror Lake Town.

Because he still had two thousand three hundred and fifty-four spirit coins on him, he purchased some travelling supplies and a light

new sword. Then, Su Yun headed towards the outskirts of the borders of the town.

Whether it was the Su Family, White Family or even Immortal Sword Sect, they were all considered a small part of the Sky Martial Continent.

There were only a few provinces in Sky Martial Continent. Even the provinces within the continent, powers such as the Su Family and the Immortal Sword Sect, were only just individual forces among the many different powers in the continent.

This resulted in the borders of provinces, such as the outskirts of this town, being outside the jurisdiction of any major powers. And in these sparsely populated regions, spirit beasts commonly ran rampant.

Along the outskirts of the border, there was a desolate lake. In the middle of the lake, there was a small little island.

The island was eerie, so nobody ever came to it.

Su Yun gazed at the desolate lake and could see the dark ripples slamming to the sides of the lake from the middle of the lake.

As he saw the ripples, he jumped into the lake, directly towards the center of the ripples. As he dived into the lake, he could not see anything.

However, he used his hands to explore the lake and grabbed a black object, which seemed like a strange ghost monster.

Hua la, Hua la...(Tl: sound of waves)

As the creature was grabbed by Su Yun, it started to struggle, causing ripples in the lake.

At the same time, Su Yun suddenly broke through the surface of the water and began to chant some strange words.

After the monster heard this, it surprisingly stopped struggling.

It paused. Suddenly, with a strange urgency, it dragged Su Yun

towards the island at the middle of the lake.

It happened to be that the words that Su Yun had spoken during the chant were not just part of some random chant. The words were actually from the official language of most spirit beasts in the continent.

The spirit beasts in the continent were mysterious, since most people would never go to the outskirts of the Sky Martial Continent. The official spirit beast language was recognized by all spirit beasts across the continent. Therefore, Su Yun just made a simple request to the black spirit beast tortoise to bring him to the island. Since the black spirit beast tortoise understood the spirit beast language, and witnessed that Su Yun could speak in it, it decided that Su Yun was similar to devil disciples, it would comply with the request.

After arriving at the island, Su Yun did not dare venture into the center of the island. Instead, he stayed at the shore of the island and unpacked the materials he bought from Mirror Lake town. Then he began to draw a mysterious formation on the ground.

....

Meanwhile, within the Immortal Sword Sect.

Inside the center of a crystal jade palace sat a pure white-skinned beauty with long hair flowing like ink and a face shrouded by a veil. She was sitting in front of a grand, round mirror and closing her eyes.

The beauty's long eyebrows wrinkled, and her mood seemed to be very solemn. She raised her index finger and thumb pinching an extremely fine hair. Then she began to manipulate her spirit power, and the thin hair strand was immediately enveloped by the spirit power. The hair began to shine brightly with a white light.

Hua!!! (Tl: light shining sound)

Immediately afterwards, the grand round mirror in front of the

beauty began to flicker with deep blue light. A large number of lines were forming on the mirror and began to create a mysterious pattern.

If one looked carefully, they would find that this pattern actually represented a map of this region!

However, the beauty then flicked her finger and the thin strand of hair immediately crashed into the grand round mirror.

Right after, a bright beam of light went up and pierced through the skies. The pattern on the grand mirror began to blur. Suddenly, the pattern wasn't clear anymore.

“Who are you looking for?”

A hoarse voice emerged from her side.

Her eyes quickly turned to the source of the sound, an aged woman wearing red clothes and carrying a sword.

“Grand elder of the Immortal Sword Sect!” The beauty saluted. Every moment was graceful.

“Third elder does not need to be polite!” The grand elder glanced at the mirror, “Is this your famous ‘Ten Thousand Mile Tracking Technique?’”

“Yes.” The dragon female immortal nodded, “Once the mirror is powered with spirit power, it can easily track any target within ten thousand miles.”

“Who are you trying to catch?”

“Of course it is that thief that took the Heavenly Crystal!” The dragon female immortal angrily shouted.

“Oh? He has something belonging to you?” The grand elder asked.

“In the battle that occurred, I was not prepared. Using some mysterious techniques, he managed to seriously injure the hurricane elder. Since I got a strand of hair, I decided to give up

the chase. Otherwise, how could someone of his cultivation level really escape me?” The dragon female immortal responded.

The grand elder nodded, “Those that met with the culprit all said that he was wearing a disguise. Even I do not know his true face. The only ones that saw him were you and the hurricane elder. However, the Hurricane elder is sidelined with heavy injuries, so we can only rely on you to catch the culprit. The Heavenly Crystal is very important for our sect, so I hope that you can quickly bring it back. I heard some news that a group is trying to obtain the Heavenly Crystal, so before they manage to find the culprit, you must quickly obtain the Heavenly Crystal.”

“Grand elder, please rest assured.”

Ding!

At this time, the grand mirror sounded emitted a clear note. Then, the hazy mist on the mirror began to gradually clear up and a dot suddenly appeared on the map.

The two females turned around and looked at the location of the dot.

.....

Pui chi.

Wielding his new sword, Su Yun was currently face to face with a ninth ranked spirit novice realm spirit beast: “bloodthirsty hound.” Su Yun exhaled and then suddenly stomped at the ground to propel himself forward.

As the bloodthirsty hound was slashed open, Su Yun took the spirit beast core. The spirit beast core could be ingested and it would increase one’s cultivation. The core was usually hidden inside the body of powerful spirit beasts.

Only spirit beast monsters had spirit beast cores, and spirit beast cores could only be used instantly after they were obtained.

This was also why the spirit beasts were widespread across the continent. They did not need to cultivate but only needed to ingest countless spirit beast cores to become stronger.

Compared to cultivation, the effects of ingesting spirit cores were insanely fast.

However, this method was accompanied by grave danger. One mistake could lead the cultivators to become the prey of the powerful spirit beasts.

Beneath Su Yun's feet was very simple formation: "Guiding Beast Array." This array was adjustable and released an aroma that would attract, at max, spirit novice stage ten spirit beasts.

Due to the climate and environment, there were countless varieties of spirit beasts roaming around the island. Therefore, the formation could attract many spirit beasts to come, which Su Yun could kill, ingest the spirit beast core, and increase his cultivation. In this manner, his cultivation would increase much faster without spending a vast amount of time to cultivation. However, the downside was that it was just too dangerous.

Time was running out, so it did not matter that it was dangerous.

After ingesting another spirit beast core, Su Yun activated the array again to attract another spirit beast.

If the array was strong, the attracted beasts would be strong. If the array activation was weak, it would attract weak and strong spirit beasts.

If Su Yun attracted a little too many spirit beasts, he could quickly deactivate the array and sneak into the lake to hide. He would just wait by the shore for the spirit beasts to leave.

In one day, he managed to obtain ten spirit beast cores to ingest. However, Su Yun had many dangerous encounters. He was physically and psychologically drained, since this method was pure madness.

To overcome the spirit beasts, Su Yun endured by using his head and abilities to stay alive.

Nonetheless, he also trained in the Limitless Sword Arts. He tried to learn the first meaning of the sword, but it was not easy. After two days of practice, he only managed to gain a small insight on the route he should take.

Every time the sword aura was used, it would require a massive amount of spirit power. This was life-threatening, so he could only safely practice it when no beasts were around. The meaning of the sword relied on Su Yun understanding it by himself.

It wasn't until the sixth day that Su Yun was able to completely release the sword aura.

However, the sword aura was very weak. It could not even hurt his enemy. As he kept releasing it, it only made his sword a bit brighter each time.

This was because techniques such as sword aura, they would always be very difficult to learn.

However, the sword aura was generated, and it gave Su Yun the necessary qualifications to begin practice the .

Su Yun could not wait and immediately began to practice the sword arts.

However, the first sword form of , was not something that one could learn overnight. To control and manipulate the sword aura on his regular sword was no ordinary matter.

“It seems that before practicing, I must use that object. With that object, my cultivation and practice speed would advance by leap and bounds,” Su Yun thought.

However, currently, a reliable weapon was also important. In his hands, the new sword, which he had bought earlier, was already damaged. Compared to martial weapons, it was useless. In the Sky Military Continent, the equipment was divided into different

grades.

The vast majority of the equipment were divided into: white grade, green grade, purple grade, spirit grade, core grade, star grade, sky grade, sage grade, immortal grade and god grade. Every grade had three divisions. For those that were high grade would be all considered as treasures , and the competition for those items would be very fierce.

After he thought for a moment, he took out Everlasting Sword Hilt. He willed it to open and jumped inside.

Whoosh!

The sound of a sword passed through his ears. Then, the scene had completely changed. The dangerous predicament that he was in before at the island was transformed into an avenue shrouded by a misty white fog.

The avenue seemed to be suspended in the sky. One could not see the end of it, but at the front was a huge palace.

As he gazed at the palace, he saw that white jade covered both sides, making a majestic scene.

Chapter 33 - First Sword: Engraved Dragon Blade

“What is going on?”

The sword elder’s voice came from the , “Who activated the everlasting sword sheath?”

“It’s me,” said Su Yun.

“You?”

The sword elder remembered. He was completely startled as he said, “Kid, your cultivation is not even at spirit intermediate realm, yet you dare venture inside the sword sheath? Are you trying to court death?”

“I’ve been practicing with my sword aura!” Su Yun said.

“Huh? You can form sword aura? How can that be? How long has it even been?”

The sword elder was being stunned again and again without end. He could not believe what Su Yun had just said.

Su Yun could only raise his sword and activate his spirit power. Sure enough, a sword aura began to cover the entire length of the sword.

As the white sword aura enveloped the sword, it began to slowly make the sword seem unquestionably powerful.

Upon seeing this, the sword elder became stiff as a statue.

After a moment, he asked, “What do you plan to do?”

“I’ve come to take a high quality new sword.”

“What are you trying to accomplish?”

“Of course it is for killing someone!”

“Killing someone....”

The sword elder remained silent. Then he just sighed and continued, “Well, since you are taking a sword, I will teach you something good. Pay close attention to the avenue of swords.”

What avenue of swords?

Su Yun looked towards the white road in front of him and noticed that the supposed fences on either side, surrounding the white avenue were actually made of many lustrous swords that were emitting a divine power.

Every single sword was a hundred percent evenly spaced, each seeming to contain dominating divine power from the natural sword aura they were emitting.

“On the avenue are just ordinary swords, but inside the palace is the master sword. The five godswords are also located there... however, you should not be delusioned, to control the master sword is something that you can’t do right now! Since you require a sword for killing, the first white sword that you see in front of you will be your current goal. Relax, even though it is an ordinary white sword here, it is comparable to a million of your trash sword that you are currently holding.”

“How can I take control of it?”

“You just need to pick it up!” The sword elder responded.

Just pick it up?

Both of Su Yun’s eyes turned and stared at the right hilt of the sharp sword in front of him.

This thin lustrous sword was light blue in color, had a slightly long hilt, and was engraved on its blade with a coiling dragon. It did not disappoint when he looked at it.

“Engraved Dragon Blade? It is a good name!”

Su Yun looked at the name floating above the sword as he said loudly. Then his hand reached for the hilt of the sword.

“Hey, kid wait! It’s the left sword that should be easier!” The sword elder hastily said as he remembered something.

However, Su Yun’s hand had already touched the sword.

He gave a heavy pull.

Kacha!

A light note rang through the air.

The sword elder nearly had a heart attack again.

Su Yun’s face was in intense concentration. He was waiting for something to happen.

Yet...

The engraved dragon blade had no reaction.

After four breaths, it remained as tranquil as calm sea: no ripple, no waves...

“Does this mean that I now control it?” Su Yun asked, somewhat dazed.

“Not yet, every single of these sword has a blade spirit and their personalities varies. The way that every single sword recognizes its master is different. This sword...should have a distinct event to recognize its master! I rarely see this sword...hmmm, I can’t seem to remember anything about it. It seems that it really has been a long time.” The sword elder said after pondering a while.

Hum!!!!

Suddenly, a domineering roar was emitted out from the sword. It was soon followed by the sword flying out of Su Yun’s hands and flying up into the sky. Then it suddenly transformed into a dragon and shot straight towards Su Yun.

The dragon opened its mouth. It seemed that no one could do anything against this dragon.

A complete transformation!

“What happened? It should have been just an ordinary sword, so why is there such a majestic sword spirit inside? How is this possible? This is impossible!”

The sword elder growled, for he could not comprehend how there was such a powerful sword spirit in this blade.

Seeing the massive domineering dragon, any ordinary person would have already just given up because of the sheer terror.

After he saw the dragon, Su Yun analyzed the situation. Although he body could not fully react, he still managed to dive down with his stiff body, in an attempt to try to dodge the incoming blast.

But the avenue was narrow, and both sides were walled off. Farther down the path, the avenue ended, and there was only the abyss. Where could he escape to?

The grand dragon circled in the air, but as it turned around it sent one explosion near Su Yun’s body.

Nevertheless, Su Yun’s body did not experience pain right away. But in an instant, a piercing pain struck his head and he soon fell unconscious. He awoke inside a mysterious void space.

Si la! (some sounds inside a vacuum or void space)

The surrounding was pitch black. Su Yun was completely confounded on where he was at the moment. He could only see that from the dark clouds in front of him, the serpent-like dragon was emerging.

It was not the world inside the everlasting sword sheath. It seemed more like.....the world inside the engraved dragon blade.

The grand dragon coiled around the clouds and then stopped for a moment. Then, it opened his mouth and roared at Su Yun.

The roar seemed to have a mournful tone, as the sound struck right into the heart.

Currently, Su Yun’s heart was beating erratically. He was in pain,

especially his spirit, which was crumbling under the pressure of the dragon's roar.

Su Yun clenched his teeth and endured with his will. He did not relax in the slightest, for he knew that once he relaxed, his mind would collapse. Afterwards, he would likely become insane as the dragon's roar could just enter his mind unhindered.

The dragon's roar continued. It seemed to be endless, making Su Yun becoming very desperate.

“Endure! Endure! Kid, this seems to be the blade's test to determine if you are worthy to be considered as its master! If you are unable to conquer the first sword in your path, how would you manage to control the entire ten million divine swords found in the everlasting sword sheath?” The sword elder said.

“Who said I cannot endure?”

Both of Su Yun's eyes became red, massive amount of sweat permeated out of his body. Nonetheless, he did not move for half an hour, remaining standing in front of the grand dragon. Su Yun was like a mountain, despite the dragon's roar, Su Yun did not wobble in the slightest.

Excruciating pain!

Despair!

Helplessness!

A myriad of emotions emerged.

Su Yun just concentrated on surviving, he was too stubborn to give up now.

Finally, the grand dragon's roar slowly became weaker.

As Su Yun heard the grand dragon's roar gradually dissipate, the surrounding black void also gradually disappeared.

The world shifted back. Su Yun quickly looked around and confirmed that he was back to the real world. He was back on the

central island.

His whole body was sweating profusely and his spirit power was still very weak.

However!

In front of him was a slender light blue blade had been plunged into the ground.

The Engraved Dragon Blade!

It was a green level weapon.(Tl: 2nd rank spirit weapon, original weapon was just an ordinary weapon) Contained inside it was a sword spirit with powerful killing potential.

“Good! Ha ha, kid, you have successfully managed to conquer an ordinary sword! This is really great! Ha ha...” The sword elder celebrated loudly.

Su Yun took a deep breath and then pulled up the sword. At the instant that his hand touched the hilt of the sword, he felt that his mind calmed and his spirit power increase. Some of his spirit power also recovered.

“It turns out that this blade was designed to killing enemies equipped with spirit weapons. How strong my spirit power is will determine the strength of the blade.”

Su Yun carefully examined his blade and sighed in his heart.

“Do not be depressed, the sword sheath still has countless divine swords waiting for you to take! On how many swords can you take out...will depend on your own efforts!” The sword elder said.

“I understand, but first I must increase my current strength.” Su Yun said.

Without power, how could he even control other spirit swords?

Obtaining this blade was laborious enough. How difficult would it be for him to obtain the other swords?

After thinking about this, Su Yun's eyes became filled with firm determination. He equipped the engraved dragon blade and went straight into the heart of the central island.

“What are you trying to do?” The sword elder asked.

“I just got to do some preparatory work.” As Su Yun said this, he jumped into the forest.

He released his sword aura, and it enveloped the engraved dragon blade. The aura only remained in the air for a moment. If this was intended to be used to kill someone, it would still be not enough.

In the central area of the island, there was a mountain range controlled by spirit beasts. The spirit beasts residing in the mountain range were just too many to count.

Su Yun did not dare to venture too deeply and only explored the borders of the mountain range. He tried to avoid most of the spirit beasts and was just searching for some ingredients.

Magic Mist Flower: Born only where spirit beasts reside. It could release a great amount of highly toxic gas to attack any organisms that approached it.

Split Magic Stone: It could assimilate anything near its spirit power. Only spirit beast that had this ability could use it to transform.

Heavenly Devil Tree Branches: Exceptional material used for making array canvases.

Su Yun focused on searching slowly. He moved quietly and was careful with every step.

The sword elder could only look confused at the scene. He had lived for a long time, yet he could not understand the actions of young Su Yun. He was still confounded on why Su Yun was at a dangerous location looking for materials.

“What a strange little guy.” The sword elder muttered.

Then he returned into the scroll.

After two days, experiencing many piercing pains, he finally obtained all the ingredients that he required. Carrying the ingredients that he obtained from the mountain range, Su Yun immediately left this place.

He headed southwest to Gu Jue Xin School.

Chapter 34 - Borrowing and Taking

Gu Jue Xin School, a school with history that went back thousands of years in the martial arts world. Every single disciple within the school that cultivated spiritual power followed the way of the king. In other words, it was an extremely tyrannical path. By this nature, they were famously fierce and unforgiving. Even the attribute of their spirit power was special: “Scarlet Sun Power.” This type of spirit power was extremely powerful. It could be used to ignite anything, making the disciples seem like deities of flame, which could manipulate their flames in all directions. This type of power caused true terror in the hearts of many.

Every single disciple’s spirit power was different. The Gu Jue Xin School’s cultivation methods were concerning. With many of the disciples being excessively violent, the school incurred the hatred of many other sects and schools. The disciples of the Gu Jue Xin School often bullied the surrounding disciples from nearby sect, so their reputation had become the worst in the entire region.

For this exact reason, every time the Gu Jue Xin School made rounds to recruit disciples, the amount of disciples that joined became fewer and fewer. In addition to the grudges and hatred from other sect and schools, the school was under a lot of pressure. Their influence became smaller and smaller.

However, even though the Gu Jue Xin School was suffering, there was still many cultivators that stayed because the school still had one very precious treasure, which people would drool over.

The unyielding Core.

Rumour had it, that if someone was able to obtain this and use it to cultivate, the person’s talent would jump by leap and bounds. The person’s practice speed would also increase by thousands of miles. Therefore, every disciple that cultivated would dream of obtain this treasure.

However, this was only in the hands of the headmaster. People could only look and not touch.

Today, at the front gate of the Gu Jue Xin School, there were two lines of people. These teams were all assigned to the bottom of the mountains. They were not from Gu Jue Xin School.

While walking the middle, was only a dozen men and women consisting in the team.

These disciples were each equipped with a sword, dressed in battle armor and every single disciple's chest was imprinted with a golden sword pattern, making them very imposing.

The Immortal Sword Sect disciples!

The Gu Jue Xin School was not that bad, but compared to the Immortal Sword Sect, they were a minor sorcerers in the presence of a great ones. (Tl: idiom: meaning paled in significance)

These groups were composed of only elite and exceptional disciples. Leading up front, was a handsome young man equipped with a white sword. Beside him was a female disciple wearing a thin veil.

The female had long silky hair as dark as black ink. She had a light and graceful posture and seemed to be a delicate flower. Anyone would feel she seemed to be a delicate lotus.

Beside her, the young man also had very fierce eyes and extremely handsome looks. His hands was grasped on his sword, a smile was on his face and he proudly stepped forward.

“Yan Shan, you are the most pampered disciple a major elder, but also my important partner. Therefore, today I am bringing you to experience the world a little so you can open your eyes. In a few moments, you will see the headmaster of the Gu Jue Xin School. You must not be confused. You must maintain a dignified appearance. In front of my Immortal Sword Sect, this school is nothing much!”

The young man said earnestly to the veiled female disciple.

“We shall carefully follow elder’s order!” Bai Yan Shan said. Her voice really sounded like the drips of spring water, making people feel truly carefree and relaxed.

“Ha ha, Yan Fan, you do not have to be so polite. Do not look at me as an elder, I am not that old. I am called Xiao Shen Ming. You can just call me Shen Ming!” The young man from the Immortal Sword Sect did not portray any strictness. He felt free and relaxed. However, his eyes were gazing over the body of Yan Fan.

“Yan Fan does not dare.” Bai Yan Shan lightly said.

Shen Ming just laughed a bit, but did not continue.

The young master continued forward and arrived directly in front of the gate of Gu Jue Xin School.

At the gate, three elders of the Gu Jue Xin School were waiting.

“Welcome young elder of the Immortal Sword Sect! This is really an honor for you to grace us with your presence! Please excuse us for not coming to directly meet you before. Forgive us! Forgive us!”

The three elders of the Gu Jue Xin School apologized profusely while bowing their heads.

“Elders, no need to be so polite!” The young elder said as he cupped his hands in respect. He smiled and then said: “Today, the major elders of the Immortal Sword Sect sent me to complete a mission. We would like to borrow an object from the Gu Jue Xin School, but we did not know if the patriarch of the Gu Jue Xin School was still here. If he is here, I would like to meet with the elder face to face.”

After the three elders heard these words, their face became very ugly.

Wasn’t this person’s way of talking just the same as treating everyone as truly beneath him? Complete arrogance! Basically, he

was saying: you three elders aren't even qualified to talk to me, so bring your patriarch out to talk to me.

Since the Immortal Sword Sect disciples were always treated with respect whenever they were completing their own matters, they almost never gave face to minor figures.

The disciples that were behind the three elders became absolutely furious. However, the high stage cultivation elders quietly determined a compromise to quell the anger that was building up in their disciples.

“Ha ha, young elder, please come in! Come inside and the patriarch will be waiting in the main Hall for you. Please just come in!”

The three elders kept their polite appearance and laughed.

Xiao Shen Ming remained calm and rudely laughed as he stepped into the grounds.

“Simply too arrogant!”

“Is the Immortal Sword Sect going to cause trouble in the Gu Jue Xin School?”

“Nonetheless, the Gu Jue Xin School has just never been the equal of the Immortal Sword Sect.”

The disciples in the Gu Jue Xin School whispered.

Then, Xiao Shen Ming led the disciples of the Immortal Sword Sect into Gu Jue Xin School's main hall. Currently, the patriarch and his subordinates were seated on the throne.

“May I present to you, the patriarch of the Gu Jue Xin School, Tie Zhang Men!”

Xiao Shen Ming leaded at the front and his subordinates just followed. This time, he was neither servile or overbearing.

“Immortal Sword Sect sent one of its talent young elder to come here, but did not seek to let me know. Why do you suppose that

is?”

Tie Zhang Men indifferently asked.

His voice was deep and heavy. Anyone who listened to him would have a feeling of pressure, shortness of breath and dizziness. If ordinary people listened to him, they would just collapse to their knees.

“Just a minor issue, and I am looking for the Gu Jue Xin School full cooperation!”

“Cooperation with what?” Tie Zhang Men face frowned.

“Right!” Xiao Shen Ming said and continued, “I came from the orders of my sect’s major elders. I have come to borrow the Everlasting Stone, which I hope that the Gu Jue Xin School will not refuse!”

After the words were said, the hall became completely silent. One couldn’t even hear the sound of people breathing.

The patriarch was wearing a gold and jade robe, had a long white beard and face as fierce of a tiger. He was stunned for awhile, but then asked: “Xiao Shen Ming, I am not sure if I heard the words correctly about borrowing some object...you really want to borrow the Everlasting Stone?”

“There is no mistake in my words. I also hope that the patriarch will not refuse.” Xiao Shen Ming indifferently responded.

“Your major elders just ordered for you to borrow the treasure. Did they not say anything else?”

The grand elder of the Gu Jue Xin School sitting at the right side of Tie Zhang Men said. His voice was heavy. He was clearly not satisfied with Xiao Shen Ming’s answer.

“Nothing else!” Xiao Shen Ming shouted in a high octave tone then he continued, “The major elders only said this one sentence. As for anything else, there was nothing!”

“That is to say, you are just going to take the treasure for nothing?” The anger in the elders’ eyes began to ignite.

“You guys are hesitating?” Xiao Shen Ming raised his voice coldly.

“You...”

The grand elder suddenly stood up and was about to attack.

“Zhen Shan!”

Suddenly, Tie Zhang Men raised his voice to stop the grand elder’s action.

The grand elder was stunned, as he looked with surprise at Tie Zhang Men shaking his head.

“Hmph!” The grand elder calmed his anger and walked back to his seat and sat down.

As Xiao Shen Ming saw this, his smile became more rich. In his eyes, he achieved something that he should be a hundred percent proud of.

Tie Zhen Men gazed at Xiao Shen Ming, thought for a moment, and said, “The Gu Jue Xin School only has one Everlasting Stone. Therefore, it is not easily lent out to others. It is true that the Gu Jue Xin School cannot be compared to the Immortal Sword Sect. However, this doesn’t mean that you can just ignore me and just borrow the treasure for nothing. Can you borrow the treasure? Yes! Nevertheless, it depends on your group’s strength.”

“What? Tie Zhang Men, you want to challenge me to a match?” Xiao Shen Ming just shook his head, “Although Xiao Shen is arrogant, but based on strength, I cannot even be a possible opponent to patriarch Tie Zhang Men. If Tie Zhang Men wants to have a battle with Xiao Shen, no need for the battle, I will surrender right now, because I have no chance of winning!”

“You do not need to beat me. If you can defeat the elder Zhen

Shan, then you will be allowed to borrow the Everlasting Stone!" Tie Zhang Men said.

He said this because he did not want to offend the Immortal Sword Sect. This was a method to save face for both sects. With the battle, the young master had to accept or refuse the challenge. The other party had no choice, and it was advantageous for the Gu Jue Xin School.

Although, on the surface, the Immortal Sword Sect was borrowing, it was no different from taking. Nonetheless, for giving face, he still had to make some compromises.

Then, Xiao Shen Ming's face flashed a trace of disdain while he was smiling.

He glanced at the grand elder, and sneered. His eyes were filled with disdain, "The grand elder is not my opponent, I think...how about not dueling between us!"

"Damn! You..." After Zhen Shan heard this, his anger almost exploded.

Xiao Shen Ming did not pay attention to the elder's remark. He directly said, "Today, I came along with another person. I have with me the disciple of the grand elder of the Immortal Sword Sect, Yan Fan. Yan Fan is very talented and earned the praise of the grand elder. However, she has few achievements, as such, you are free to find another disciple to fight a battle with her. If she wins, then we will borrow the Everlasting Stone. If she loses, then we will leave immediately and never ask the Gu Jue Xin School for another request again, how about it?"

After he said this, the female disciple with a veil over her head stepped forward. She was slightly shaking while holding the sword. Behind her, Xiao Shen Ming was presenting her with his hand. Then he gazed at Tie Zhang Men waiting for a response.

Tie Zhang Men's eyebrows frowned, but he did not say anything.

The grand elder immediately groaned out loud, “You really dare to send this person as the opponent?”

“On if there is anyone, in a battle you will understand. Whether your disciples are elites or talented, everything will be determined if they have a battle!”

Xiao Shen Ming said completely unperturbed.

Chapter 35 - The Forbidden Technique, Becoming the Devil

Faced with the arrogant and aggressive attitude of the Immortal Sword Sect Elder, how could the Gu Xie Xin School possibly endure?

“Fine!”

Zhen Shan immediately stood up and shouted, “You’re the one who said this, so don’t even think about going back on your word this time.”

“this promise has already ridden away and not even a carriage of four horses can hope to catch up!” (Tl: same idiom: he will keep his promise)

After saying this, Zhen Shan held his iron gaze towards the direction of Tie Zhang Men.

It was all about reputation, and it had come to a point where he could not refuse; so Tie Zhang Men hardened his heart and gently nodded.

“Since young elder decided to have a match set up, I cannot decline. Zhen Shan!” Tie Zhang Men said.

“Patriarch!” Zhen Shan immediately stood up.

“Come get a disciple out.”

After Zhen Shan heard this, his brow tightened, “Why should we agree to do this battle?”

“Stop your blathering and just quickly go,” Tie Zhang Men shouted.

Zhen Shan looked at the female disciple beside Xiao Shen Ming and hesitated for a moment. Then, he motioned to the side of the hall to summon a disciple down.

As soon as he called, a tall and thin male disciple, elegantly dressed in a light robe, quickly arrived at the grounds.

The male disciple had no weapons, but his hands were equipped with a pair of gauntlets. He had an extremely glass-like build, which, in turn, made him seem very fragile. However, his body held an atmosphere of great power.

After arriving at the main hall, he cupped his fists in respect and bowed in respect.

“Disciple Lin Jue pays respects to Patriarch Zhang Men and to the Grand Elder and Second Elder.”

“Hm.”

Tie Zhang Men’s tense face finally showed a hint of a smile. Then, he said, “These are the guests from the Immortal Sword Sect who came to discuss important matters to me. However, they were also sent to learn skills and gain experience. Therefore, disciple, you must utilize all your years of training to demonstrate your skills and communicate it to them... carefully.”

“Yes, patriarch! I understand,” Lin Jue cried out.

“Remember! You are representing the Gu Xie Xin School!”

“I will honor patriarch’s command completely,” Lin Jue boomed and turned in the direction of Xiao Shen Ming to analyze his opponent.

“Is there a problem?” Xiao Shen Ming said with a huge grin on his face as he was looking at Bai Yan Shan.

Bai Yan Shan did not speak, he just stepped forward.

“Please,” called Lin Jue.

“Please,” returned Bai Yan Shan.

The two disciples went outside from the main hall. They arrived at the Gu Xie Xin School’s open field behind the main gate.

The patriarch and two elders both quickly followed. As they arrived, more and more disciples of the Gu Xie Xin School gathered around the open field. They were excited about the battle they were going to witness...

Meanwhile, at another open field at the bottom of a mountain.

An enormous array of blood with a diameter of over ten meters appeared.

The blood array was extremely complicated. There were actually hundreds of images of beasts painted on top of the array. It gave a strange and eerie atmosphere. The array was a grand structure in the grounds.

At the end of the large array, there is a figure dressed in black clothes and equipped with a blade. He was holding a beast heart, which he was constantly squeezing in his hand. The blood was leaking out from the heart and dripping onto the ground. As the blood dripped down, it began to complete the painted symbols of the grand array.

Finally, the last stroke of the array was finished.

Phew!

Su Yun caught his breath. This technique was part of the “Lunar Devil Technique,” which required a massive amount of blood from powerful beasts.

For the sake of completing this, he brought clothes of swordsman to disguise himself. If they remembered his face, the future would bring a lot of trouble.

Everything was ready. He had already placed the materials that he collected before at each corners of the “Blood Sky Array.” He knew that only after placing everything in its correct location, would he be able to activate it.

After he carefully placed the materials in their respective places, he began the most complex and difficult part.

Filling the array.

This process exhausted Su Yun. Fortunately, Su Yun was familiar with this array so he managed to finish it after lots of hard work.

Shortly after, he took out the Heavenly Crystal and started to wait quietly.

The massive array began to emit the aura of blood, becoming more and more thick.

“Okay....what a powerful blood aura, kid...what are you using the array for?”

Once again, the sword elder within the was awakened from his slumber. He suddenly asked Su Yun since he felt a little fear of what was happening.

“Demon technique rank 8: Demonic Blood Array!” Su Yun responded.

“Demon...demon technique...you...you haven’t even reached spirit intermediate realm yet, so how...how would you even know about demon techniques? You...who are you really? Kid...what are you really trying to do?” The sword elder asked panically.

“Calm down Sword Elder, I am me, just Su Yun!”

Su Yun took a deep breath and focused on the Heavenly Crystal. As he looked at the dark crystal, it suddenly flashed with a bright light. Then, the crystal quickly turned black again.

“The time has come.” Su Yun said.

“You...what are you trying to do?” The sword elder asked.

“Extract it!”

After Su Yun said this, the Heavenly Crystal began to spin and hovered above the massive blood array. Then, the Demonic Blood Array began to activate.

Hua! ! ! (Tl: bright light sound, do leave a comment if you know

something better)

As the light dimmed and the winds from the spin crystal lessened, the blood red lines of blood of the array began to rapidly rise of the ground and swirled around the Heavenly Crystal. Wave after waves of blood came up.

The Heavenly Crystal became scarlet red again.

“Demon...a Demon Technique...” The Sword Elder said.

The Sword Elder has experienced a lot when he travelled around the demon continent. The devil technique that was demonstrated just now, it certainly was not as simple as it looked.

As Su Yun held the scarlet red Heavenly Crystal, he directly placed it on his chest yet again.

Shuaaa!!!

Suddenly a sinister sound emerged. The crystal was burning Su Yun’s body as it was activated.

The Heavenly Crystal was rapidly integrating with his chest and veined patterns began to generate. However, it was unlike the golden color that occurred during the event in Crescent Valley. This time, the Heavenly Crystal was actually emitting a sinister blood-red color.

“This spirit aura...Amazing! Very powerful! Kid! You are crazy! What are you even trying to do? Are you going to destroy the Gu Xie Xin School?”

The Sword Elder practically shivered as he voiced his concerns.

Su Yun clenched his teeth. Both of his eyes were now blood red and an inscription of a blood lotus appeared on his forehead. His entire body was covered with a faint red mist, emitting a chilling aura. He seemed as if he was the devil.

“Elder.” Su Yun exhaled deeply. The sound that he spoke was similar to the devil.

“Kid, you...”

“The Gu Xie Xin School may be a minor sect, but there are numerous elites within it. This time, I am aiming to battle with the patriarch, so if I cannot use the full power of the Heavenly Crystal, I would never be able to succeed. Therefore, I used a rank 8 demon technique: Demonic Blood Array, which allowed me to re-use the power of the Heavenly Crystal. Furthermore, I do not know if the Immortal Sword Sect is still actively searching for me, so I will risk using this. Nonetheless, I want to tell you, Sword Elder, this is how I do things...I leave nothing to chance.”

“You...are you not scared of becoming a demon?” The Sword Elder frighteningly asked.

“Becoming a demon?” Su Yun pondered a bit. After a while, his mouth raised into a smile.

“Long ago, I did become a demon...” Su Yun admitted.

After the Sword Elder heard this, he remained silent for a long time. Then he spoke.

“Your heart is obsessed.”

“With no obsession, I would perhaps not be standing here today.”

The Sword Elder could not understand his words and would never understand these words.

“That being the case, it is fine.” The Sword Elder said.

Su Yun nodded: “Elder, you are using a lot of soul power. You should just quickly return to the scroll.”

“Be careful.” After saying this, the Sword Elder quickly returned back to the scroll.

Su Yun took another deep breath. Then, he took out a metal mask from his spatial ring that he prepared beforehand. He covered his face and took out the engraved dragon blade from his

everlasting sword sheath.

He stabbed it straight into the ground.

Violent spirit sword energy was released out of the engraved dragon blade and crashed into the blood array. The energy just disappeared into the Demonic Blood Array.

Suddenly, a blood mist flew into the air and rushed to the blade. It began to circle around the blade.

First Sword Form: Ten Million Godswords.

Roar!!!

An earth shattering roar shook the entire mountain near the Gu Xie Xin School.

Chapter 36 - A Few Steps Below

Keng Qiang! Boom! Boom! Boom! (sounds of fighting)

Sounds were echoing throughout the open field in front of Gu Xie Xin School's main gate.

The distinct clang of steel weapons could be heard by anyone in the area, and the ground was shaking from the dull but heavy explosions caused by the clashes.

Two figures were embroiled with each other in a fierce battle. There was a mix between sword and martial arts, but it was hard to distinguish them.

The disciples of the Gu Xie Xin school that were standing around the field were continuously cheering at the intense spectacle caused by the two exceptional practitioners.

Finally...

Clang!

A resounding sound rang through the air. In an instant, the entire ground shook as the sword aura descended and exhibited massive martial pressure. In response to the sudden change of events, Lin Jue's expression became tense. Both of his knees buckled and he had almost collapsed from the sheer pressure caused by the sword aura. Yet, when one looked at the white, veiled female disciple, one would never think that she would be dropping from the sky like a fierce thorn. (tl: drop from sky: idiom, meaning appear unexpectedly)

Like a goddess, her beautiful figure left the disciples of Gu Xie Xin School mesmerized.

Lin Jue only had one pair of metal gloves, but they couldn't withstand the pressure of this sword aura at all. He could not move, and it was clear he wouldn't be even be able to to dodge the incoming strike.

Lin Jue only stared with both of his eyes, as he saw the incoming stab from her sword. His face was stricken with panic.

Then, right at the last moment, the sword twirled around, and Bai Yan Shan suddenly changed her sword attack. She gracefully spun around, raised her leg and sent a kick straight towards Lin Jue's chest.

Bang!

This talented disciple of the Gu Xie Xin School was absolutely defeated. He crashed pathetically to the borders of the field.

“Senior Lin Jue!” The disciples around the field exclaimed.

The patriarch's expression also became very ugly. His cold heart became very regretful, and his eyes became filled with endless amounts of fury.

But he could only gaze angrily into space as both Bai Yan Shan's feet landed gracefully back on the ground. Her beautiful face had remained calm the entire time, and with a quick motion, her sword was back in her sheath.

She took a few steps forward, gently saluted and politely announced, “Thank you for the battle.”

Lin Jue could only grind his teeth and furiously glare at Bai Yan Shan. He disdainfully sucked in a breath and then cupped his fists. He turned to face the patriarch Tie Zhan Men and knelt down while saying,, “This disciple has failed you. Patriarch, please deliver the punishment!”

“We actually trusted you to succeed, yet with your pathetic ability, you only succeeded in being completely beaten to the ground by the Immortal Sword Sect's disciple! You have basically sealed the fate of the school! You...you piece of trash!”

Suddenly, Tie Zhang Men coldly ordered, “Come, bring him down from there, get up!”

“Yes, patriarch!” The elite disciples around the field quickly sprung into action.

“Patriarch Zhan Men, this...this isn’t very appropriate, right?” Elder Chang Lao asked, then continued, “Patriarch Zhan Men, Lie Jue is your heir. He has only been training for a few years, so his spirit cultivation is only in the early stages. Winning and losing is a commonplace in the martial world, so please rethink your decision. This...this...”

“He not only made the Gu Xie Xin School lose a lot of face but also cost us the most valuable treasure of our Gu Xie Xin School. You still want me to spare him? Bring him down!” Patriarch Tie roared.

“Yes!” The elite disciples no longer hesitated, quickly restrained Lin Jue and brought him down in front of the patriarch.

Despite the incoming punishment, Lin Jue did not resist at all; though he still held a dejected expression evident on his face.

Xiao Shen Ming calmly surveyed the situation in his eyes and could not help himself from chuckling loudly, “Tie Zhang Men, I have remained true to my words and allowed the battle to take the place. Nevertheless, the result of the battle is evident, so please, Tie Zhang Men, patriarch of the esteemed Gu Xie Xin School, remain true to your words. Bring out the Everlasting Stone. You mustn’t go back on the agreement!”

Tie Zhang Men remained silent. With so many disciples witnessing this event, how could he just hand the Gu Xie Xin School’s most valuable treasure as if nothing was wrong?

The second he handed it over, what would all the disciples think of his school?

However, if he did not surrender his treasure, he would be offending the Immortal Sword Sect, and they would have a reason to attack the Gu Xie Xin School. If that occurred, not to mention the

Everlasting Stone, he was afraid that the entire Gu Xie Xin School would be destroyed. As the patriarch, he was just trying to weigh the pros and cons.

“Patriarch Tie Zhan Men, are you actually going back on your promise?”

“Elder Xiao, you are pressing this matter too urgently; but this is an important matter, so can we discuss the terms?” Elder Zhang Lao decided it would be best to try and tactfully delay the situation.

Nonetheless, it was obviously useless.

As soon as Xiao Shen Ming heard this, he spoke up.

“To be honest everyone, this battle against the Gu Xie Xin School, was just an order from one of my elders of the Immortal Sword Sect. They only wanted to give Bai Yan Shan some experience. However, I respected the Gu Xie Xin School’s terms and risked my entire mission in betting the Everlasting Stone. If you do not give me any respect, I’m afraid that these tactics from elder Zhang Lao is just making this worse.”

These words could only be perceived as a threat to those of the Gu Xin School.

The anger within Patriarch Tie Zhang Men’s eyes was quickly growing more intense.

With so many disciples as witnesses, this elder had still dared to utter those words. This Xiao Shen Ming was intentionally putting him in a bad position.

Tie Zhang Men’s cultivation was indeed very high, so he was just giving face to the Immortal Sword Sect, but his patience was beginning to run out. So far, he had done nothing. But when he could not take this humiliation any longer, his terrifying aura quickly exploded.

He quickly gazed at elder Zhang Lao beside him. He was also unable to tolerate such humiliation, but could only lower his head

and ponder on what to do.

Apparently, making him publicly surrender was not possible. The reason was simple. Xiao Shen Ming was not at the level to justify his treatment. Even after he gave out the Everlasting Stone in any agreement, the Gu Xie Xin School future would be doomed.

At this point, the female disciple who was covering herself with a veil quickly came forward. After a few steps into the light, she respectfully saluted.

“Tie Zhang Men, Yan Shan has a few words she wants to say. I urgently request that you listen to what I have to say, Tie Zhang Men.”

“Speak!” Tie Zhang Men coldly said.

“Tie Zhang Men.” Bai Yan Shan said in a clear and melodic voice, as she paused and glanced around the field. Soon after, her cherry lips continued.

“Today, the continent is peaceful. However, that is only on the surface. There is a crisis hidden below, especially in this region. West of central Min country, south of the Swallowing Sky Sect, all had witnesses of massive influx of demonic beasts. These regions are places where not a blade of grass grows, where not a life form has ever been able to habitate. However, there are countless demonic beasts appearing, and the Immortal Sword Sect has determined the origin. These demonic beasts are seeds that have originated from the Demon Continent and they are seeds that need to be exterminated.”

“Demon Continent?” Everyone was shocked.

“How is that even possible?”

“My god, have the demonic beasts of the Demon continent finally begun to stir?” The surrounding disciples all began to panic.

As Bai Yan Shan saw this, she immediately continued, “Therefore, my sect wants to quickly prepare as soon as as

possible. To be honest, Tie Zhang Men, Yan Shan has a special physique, which is only something that occurs once every hundred years. Therefore, I will be very effective against the evil demonic beasts, if I carefully cultivate in my sect. This is the reason that I came to borrow the treasure of the Gu Xie Xin School. It is actually for the Sky Martial Continent, but I hope that Tie Zhang Men will not hold any grudges about this matter. For this end, Yan Shan needs to borrow the Everlasting Stone from the Gu Xue Xin School. Yan Shan will vow that she will utilize it fully to cultivate and will personally compensate Gu Xie Xin School afterwards!”

After she said this, she once again saluted respectfully. It wasn't an artificial or conspicuous routine, just a natural action.

Speech, action, even the voice were all natural and clean, and everyone was influenced by her.

Upon witnessing the speech, the disciples all raised their eyes and looked at patriarch Tie Zhang Men. They were all expecting something.

Tie Zhang Men was stunned for a bit. Then he whispered, as he uttered a few words.

“This disciple...is extraordinary, ah.”

Elder Chang Lao only sighed and shook his head.

“If she said it like this, she can be considered to be truly clever. She not only gave me a few steps to save face, but she also made me unable to refuse her request. Otherwise, my Gu Xie Xin School would have not only offend the Immortal Sword Sect, but it would have risked being cast aside by the other major factions. But as it is now, they had even sent their genius disciple. What she said were words that seemed as righteousness as any that inspire reverence. (Tl: idiom meaning: power to make people follow her) Xiao Shen Ming had just needed lower it down a notch.”

“Patriarch...” Elder Zhang Lao asked as he awaited his decision.

He only saw Tie Zhang Men fiercely took a breath and heavily nodded his head.

As Bai Yan Shan saw this, her face flashed with a small smile.

However, no one witnessed the small smile...

Tie Zhang Men took a deep breath, glanced around and made his decision. He shouted: "For the sake of the SKy Military Continent's security and prosperity, this patriarch...trusts you with the Everlasting Stone..."

Roar!!!!

Just as Tie Zhang Men was about to announce that Gu Xie Xin School would loan the Everlasting Stone to the Immortal Sword Sect, a shrill and terrifying roar passed like a tsunami into the sect. The sound waves shook the entire mountain.

Then, the a mysterious spirit gas burst into the sky, and the air began to fill with the heavy stench of blood.

As one looked up into the air to see a person on a flying sword. This person was wearing full black attire and was surrounded by an deathly and blood atmosphere. On his face was an iron mask, and his hand was clasping a slender sword. He then flew and went straight to his target. It was clear that he wanted to kill Tie Zhang Men.

As Su Yun activated his sword technique, his demonic aura descended upon the grounds, and everyone in the area just remained utterly stunned.

Chapter 37 - Battle of Gu Xie Mountain

“Who goes there!?” Tie Zhang Men shouted.

“Take out the Everlasting Stone and I’ll let you live!” The iron masked black robed blademaster shouted. A terrifying aura was wrapped around his blade, oozing killing intent.

The baleful aura was like a violent storm descending upon the school!

“Another person who desires the Everlasting Stone! Well, let’s see if you actually have the ability to take it!”

Tie Zhang Men stomped on the ground with both his legs, which caused the ground to tremble for a moment. Immediately, he waved both of his fists, and his entire body ignited in fierce, godlike flames that shot straight into the sky.

The surrounding elders were all pushed back a few steps, not daring to stay near the patriarch’s flames.

Nonetheless, the black blademaster just remained in the air. Tie Zhang Man immediately unleashed both of his fists and sent forth a fearsome strike towards the blademaster.

Each of his fists were covered with a blazing aura shaped like a cheetah, which seemed to fly straight towards the blademaster.

As the blazing cheetahs went through the air, their speed alone was enough to quickly make one’s hair stand on end. Not only was it was violently fast, and the scorching temperature was completely burning everything in sight.

However, the blademaster did not appear to panic at all. He raised his blade, and with just a simple slash, easily split the incoming blazing cheetahs in two fragments.

Soon after, the pressure of the blade quickly descended. The endless pressure that the blademaster was exerting had

astonishingly engulfed the entire mountain. Then he made his move.

Tie Zhang Men anxiously gazed at the blademaster and took a breath as he raised both his arms to face the incoming blade strike.

As the blade and fists clashed, it caused an explosion that sent out powerful and terrifying energy waves. The ground just shattered. The entire Gu Xie Mountain shook and the demonic beasts living on the mountain prostrated themselves on the ground, all of their bodies trembling in deference.

The surrounding disciples were easily pushed back, and most even found it difficult to stand. Even the face of the female disciple, Bai Yan Shan had turned a deathly shade of white. Both her eyes were now focused on the newly arrived cultivator. “Who is this person? Does he actually dare to forcibly take the Everlasting Stone?”

Directly following the oppressive sword strike, Xiao Zheng Ming had quickly activated his spirit power and martial aura and went near Bai Yan Shan to help her stand. When he arrived at her side, he asked concerningly, “Yan Shan, are you okay?”

Bai Yan Shan shook her head, “Eleventh elder, Yan Shan is unharmed. Nonetheless, we must take the Everlasting Stone back with us. Even though this person is an expert, we cannot just leave empty handed...”

“Rest assured, with me, Xiao Zheng Ming here, how can he be so rash? Yan Shan, you should quickly lead the other disciples carefully out of these mountains, so you guys won’t be injured.”

Then, Xiao Zheng Ming lightly snorted, with a fast hand movement, a fine and slender whip-like sword appeared.

Despite the words he had said to Bai Yan Shan, he waited for the opponent to make a move. It was apparent to him that the opponent just condensed and formed sword aura. In an instant,

the clear-blue sky suddenly became covered with a massive amount of bloody spirit blades that were all formed from this sword aura. These spirit swords could be guided to anywhere, and it was clear that at any given moment these spirit swords could pierce through the sky.

The bloody atmosphere filled the air, and killing intent engulfed everything under the sky. Then, in an instant, the temperature of the surrounding area dropped by a third.

Xiao Zheng Ming was considered as an expert, but when had he ever witnessed a scene of blood spirit swords flying through the air? At that point, his complexion quickly changed, and he immediately felt the urge to flee the battlefield.

“Is this Imperial Sword Arts?” Bai Yan Shan and the surrounding Immortal Sword Sect disciples just remained completely dumbfounded.

Yet, it seemed to be Imperial Sword Arts. Otherwise, how could any use this many spirit blades at the same time? But when could Imperial Sword Arts so easily control every sword’s movement?

Sou Sou Sou Sou...

The blood spirit swords were chaotic. Then they flew straight towards Xiao Zheng Ming, who quickly activated his sword aura to defend against the incoming strike. As he prepared himself, he realized that he had become very uncomfortable.

Xiao Zheng Min’s complexion paled as he strengthened his grip around his sword. A thin layer of white sword aura wrapped around the entire blade and extended around his body. The sword aura was powerful.

The blood spirit swords were like a blade tornado, with ten thousand blades simultaneously attacking, these swords could rip through any sword aura defence. Nonetheless, their use were cut short as they clashed with a body in the air. They clashed with the

opponent endlessly.

Xiao Zheng Ming was completely enveloped by the blood spirit swords. He was basically on his last legs.

“This person’s strength is godly. Who the hell is this guy and how is he able to use this many blades!?”

Bai Yan Shan’s eyes were full of passion.

Originally, she just a regular disciple. Ever since she was born, she always aimed for the pinnacle of spirit cultivation. She always revered the powerful, so she had thought that the Immortal Sword Sect was the place of the most powerful people. The patriarch of the Immortal Sword Sect was one of the supreme experts. He was at the pinnacle of his power who taught the elders. Yet, she never would have thought that was an existence that could completely overpower elder Xiao Zheng Ming. The elder couldn’t even retaliate, even though this battle was extremely important...

He was still just bombarding Xiao Zheng Blade with the blade tornado.

His real target was actually the Gu Xie Xin patriarch, Tie Zhang Men!!

Who??

Just who was this guy!

Bai Yan Shan intently glared at the person as her heart was frantically pondering.

Yet, no one was able to give her an answer.

At the moment, Tie Zhang Men was truly upset. The person that had just arrived not only possessed enormous strength, but also used unknown techniques!

Especially the mysterious spiritual aura that the blademaster was emitting; although it was not noble and profound, there was clearly a violent and chaotic property in the aura. Most techniques

that used spiritual aura were calm and tranquil like Tie Zhang Men's spiritual aura. His spirit aura was a calm but violent entity.

However, the opponent's spirit aura was actually a type of technique that was used to eliminate cultivators. Once his opponent initiated the battle, Tie Zhang Men would have to be reckless, because he would not hesitate to kill a thousand people, even if only eight hundred are guilty. (Tl: idiom: better to be safe than sorry, basically.)

Scarlet red flames blazed into the sky. A huge pillar of flames was created, and Tie Zhang Men was trapped in the middle of it. The entire Gu Xie Xin School seemed to have been thrown into a stove, for the temperature began to rise sharply inside the school. Most of the disciples were forced to retreat back. Even the elders were finding it hard to resist the flames. The elders were curious of battle as they gazed at the huge pillar of flames, but they did not dare go too close to it.

However, at the center of the Gu Xie Xin School, a large number of elite disciples still dared to go towards it. As they surrounded the battle, they seemed to be waiting for an opportunity to strike.

The flames erupted and continued to blaze for ten breaths before it ceased. After it ended, a person who was adorned with an armor of flames stepped out from the smoke. Tie Zhang Men's skin was completely flaming red.

He raised his eyes and gazed at the blademaster in the air. He quickly walked towards the blademaster with his eyes filled with endless fury.

"I do not know who are you, but the aura you emit is dark and evil; therefore you must have come from the demon continent! Vagrant, quickly surrender without a fight or I will make sure you become a dead man!"

"Good!"

After Tie Zhang Men finished speaking, he rose up into the air and equipped a sword. Walking in line (Tl: idiom:basically meaning following an order), the blademaster actually used the same move as the battle that just occurred with Bai Yan Shan defeating Lin Jue with “Heavenly Aerial Strike.” The blademaster flew straight for the kill.

“Ha ha ha ha, you think that I am actually the same of the incompetent trash, Lin Jue? To actually injure me, you are simply looking to die! Blademaster, I will let you witness the most powerful spirit techniques of the Gu Xie Xin School! Blaze of Heavenly Wrath!”

After he finished, Tie Zhang Man roared one last time. His entire body blazed with a three meter tall flame. Then, a dominating black spirit aura began to envelop his entire body as the flame was igniting. The endless flames were so massive and oppressive, that the blazing sun up in the sky unexpectedly seemed afraid to come out during this raging inferno and even dimmed to some degree.

The flames transformed into a dragon, which soared forth.

It would determine everything with one strike. At a distance, the blademaster just gazed at the Gu Xie Xin School on the mountain to see a long and massive blazing dragon rushing towards him in the sky.

Many disciples were stupefied.

It was as if a miracle had descended.

Nonetheless.

The blademaster did not use his engraved dragon blade to face Tie Zhang Men. In a split second, he reached out with his hand and grabbed the incoming horizontal strike of Tie Zhang Men. Then this person flew straight towards Tie Zhang Men.

“Huh?”

Tie Zhang Men was startled.

However, in an instant, the entire sky suddenly darkened, everything around Tie Zhang Men began to turn into darkness. From the surrounding areas, many dark clouds began gathering. Then, among the clouds, a ferocious and massive legendary storm dragon, whose length was many tens of meters descended.

Roar!!!

The massive roar of the legendary storm dragon echoed through the mountains.

Tie Zhang Men hastily retreated and carefully gazed at the legendary storm dragon, but did not show any fear. The earth shattering roar that erupted was a spirit attack, aimed at the mind.

The surrounding dark world began to dissipate, the dark clouds disappeared and the legendary storm dragon vanished. Everything was restored back.

However...

Puchi puchi puchi puchi.

The sound of blades puncturing a body.

Tie Zhang Men entire body shivered a few times.

His eyes suddenly widened.

He lowered his head to gaze at his body. He was surprised to discover a myriad of blood blades had instantly ran through his chest.

These are ..blood blades?

Tie Zhang Men blanked.

How can this be? If any of the blades had killing intent, I should have been able to sense it, so how...did this happen?

He turned his head around and saw Xiao Zheng Ming was practically standing only a few meters away from him. At the moment, he was holding up his whip-like blade, which was

currently pierced through him...

“You...”

Tie Zhang Men barely managed to whisper these words because he was heavily injured.

“I...I did not intentionally do that. These blades were actually aiming for me, so I do not know why did they suddenly tried to kill you...”

Xiao Zheng Ming scratched the back of his head as he said embarrassingly.

“You...You...”

Tie Zhang Men still wanted to say something. However, in a split second, a figure appeared in front of him and a piercing cold blade flashed at his head. He was beheaded in an instant. Then the person stretched out his hand and quickly pulled off the necklace around Tie Zhang Men’s neck.

The jade-like stone, which had been so quickly snatched away, was actually the Everlasting Stone!

Chapter 38 - The Sky Shrouding Sword

“Patriarch!!!!”

The nearby elders and elite disciples of the Gu Xie School all screamed out. Regardless of the current situation, one by one they all rushed over.

At this time, they only saw the blood blades flying out of Tie Zhang Men's body and began levitating around iron masked blademaster, who was now fleeing out of the mountains.

The ten thousand blood blades surrounding the fleeing blademaster was really a majestic sight.

The elders and disciples that were the most loyal to the Gu Xie Xin School just stood there. None tried to chase the blademaster.

“Truly sinister! Eleventh elder, you have been used!” Bai Yan Shan exclaimed.

“I...I have been used?” Xiao Zheng Ming asked, startled.

“Right from the start, this person included you in the plan. If you remember, as you pulled out your sword, the blood blades that all flew here weren't really aimed for disposing you. Even if you weren't in the battle at the start, the blood blades compelled you to take action. Since all the blood blades were actually controlled by the blademaster, he exploited that Tie Zhang Men was near you as the blood blades flew over for the kill. Using the sudden moment that you arrived, he managed to kill Tie Zhang Men! !” Bai Yan Shan said.

Xiao Zheng Ming pondered for a moment and suddenly his expression drastically changed as he finally understood what he did.

“My sword technique...can produce astonishing sword aura, yet this person actually used my blade technique's aura as a cover for his attack on Tie Zhang Men. As soon as his blood blades' auras

were hid, the blood blades ruthlessly pierced Tie Zhang Men near me. Right after Tie Zhang Men suffered the massive assault, when I attracted Tie Zhang Men's attention, he made his final move!"

"Not bad! It seems that he was confident he could kill him, so Tie Zhang Men was never really his opponent. Right after, he quickly retreated. Not letting the disciples of Gu Xie Xin to act! If that was the case, how could that person succeed! This was all actually part of his plan! This person is very ruthless! The moment this person took action, he never gave the Gu Xie Xin disciples any chance to help!"

"In the end, who is this guy?" Xiao Zheng Men asked with a pale expression.

"It doesn't matter who is this person! We must get revenge for Tie Zhang Men! Kill, we must capture this person !!" Yuan Zhen Shan angrily roared.

"Kill !!" All the furious Gu Xie Xin disciples also roared.

However, at this moment, a snow white streak was soaring through the sky, rushing straight here.

"Gu Xie Xin disciples do not panic, help has already arrived to dispose of that person!"

After this was said, a sword aura streaked through the vast sky above. It's speed was comparable to the iron masked blademaster.

"Elder Shi Long!"

A delightful sound came out from all the Immortal Sect disciples.

One after another, the Immortal Sword Sect male disciples rose up a little higher, as they gazed up into the sky and gazed at the white streak that was already distant.

Furthermore, the female disciples of the Immortal Sword Sect eyes were full of worship.

Looking over the horizon, the disciples only saw the white streak

in the sky, chasing the black blademaster and his blood blades.

The male disciples' eyes could not look away, while females became both jealous and envious, for how could the world given birth to such a beautiful person.

Xiao Zheng Ming was even stupidly stunned for a moment, until he was woken up by Bai Yan Shan beside him. After he recovered his sense, he looked over at Bai Yan Shan, but Bai Yan Shan was no longer paying attention to him.

She was only gazing at the elder beautiful Shi Long's distant figure, which soon reached the blademaster.

"Sword God! Just wait until you are captured, otherwise you will never feel the pain of the people you have killed!"

"Sword God?"

In the iron mask...was really Su Yun who was stunned for a moment, but managed to quickly recover.

When he was in the Moon Crescent Valley, his fake introduction to the Immortal Sword Sect disciples was that they should recognize him as Sword God, since he did not want to associate himself with his real name.

However, how could she find him here? Did she follow the Heavenly Crystal's aura? However, wasn't the original aura of the Heavenly Crystal already been replaced by demonic beasts' blood?

"Sword God? He was actually Sword God?"

Bai Yan Shan began to nod after she heard this. A smile suddenly formed on her mouth.

"Is this the same person that used the Immortal Sword Sect to steal the Heavenly Crystal?" Xiao Zheng Ming asked.

"**ten out of ten, it should be him!"

"Actually, having said that, will he still have the Heavenly Crystal?"

“I don’t know! Nonetheless, looking at what just happened: his terrifying aura, which caused hearts to shudder, especially those blood blades...were those all from the powers of the Heavenly Crystal?”

Bai Yan Shan looked up into the sky, with her blazing glare: “Sword God, although I do not know who you are, I’m sure I’m going to beat you someday! I will become stronger than you!”

The veiled female disciple clenched her fists as she whispered these words to herself silently.

The immortal goddess flying palm strike came, but this time Su Yun chose not to flee anymore and turned around.

Su Yun was floating in the air accompanied by his blood red soaring blades. As all the blood blades were gathering around him, his aura became extremely bone chilling.

“The thick scent of blood...you’re really a cultivator of the demon continent?”

After the immortal goddess said this, her white sword was already swirling with sword aura from top to bottom. Then, she swung her sword aura strike, sending a energy blast straight to Su Yun.

Shou shou shou shou...

As the energy rushed through the sky, the blood blades began to move. They quickly arranged themselves in layer by layer and managed to formed a shield. The shield easily blocked the sword qi strike.

The immortal goddess’ eyebrows creased, but since the spirit power dispersed, she rushed forward. With a slick wrist movement of her white sword, ten thousand sword images surged towards Su Yun.

The sword images was like a beast opening its mouth, ready to swallow Su Yun.

However, the blood red eyes behind the iron mask did not have the slightest hint of panic. He only quickly retreated, flicked his left hand and used his own sword arts. Immediately after his wave, a massive surge of spirit power erupted out from his fingertips.

They were just like spirits, which wrapped around the soaring blood blades. It created a matchless cage composed of blood blades, allowing not one drop to leak out.

Suddenly, all of the blood blades bursted from their formation. These blades created an image of a ferocious beast ready to swallow the immortal goddess.

“This person has no moves of his own. He can only imitate someone else’s moves!” Xiao Zheng Ming shouted as he witnessed the current battle.

“The important part is spirit power, the techniques are not really that important.”

The immortal goddess quickly retreated, but against the tornado of blood blades, she simply had no place to hide.

Under this crisis, the immortal goddess remembered that she still had one of her life-saving treasures: “Thunder God Artifact.”

Boom! Boom!

Suddenly, the sky darkened, and five lightning bolts shot down. The immortal goddess became surrounded by a lightning cage. As the blood blades clashed with the cage, the blades easily became eroded from the lightning. Immediately, Su Yun’s body trembled, with a bang, his iron mask was broken in half.

“Hmm.”

For Bai Yan Shan who was carefully witnessing the battle from below, she saw his exposed face. Her heart shivered: “This person...somehow I feel that he is really familiar, maybe I saw him from somewhere?”

“You saw him before?” Xiao Zheng Ming smiled: “I see that his face is rather ordinary, so he is probably from a regular background. Regular faces, everyone has them.”

Bai Yan Shan did not speak.

In the sky, as the iron masked blademaster understood that he could use his blood blades to kill the immortal goddess, he immediately put away his blood blades and fled.

“Don’t flee!” The immortal goddess yelled.

Her sword spun like a drill and sent a sword qi strike soaring through the air aiming straight for the iron masked blademaster.

Despite this, the blademaster did not dodge, but instead used his blood blades to block the strike.

After taking the immortal goddess’ sword qi strike head-on, the blood blades began to crack. Moreover, the blades began to shake and the spirit aura around the blades became much weaker.

How does his blood blades continue to lose spirit aura?

The immortal goddess wondered endlessly: is this person..like the day where he utilized the Heavenly Crystal, where once he loses his powers, he will show his true colors?

Most likely!

After pondering for a bit, the immortal goddess endlessly attacked, she began to frantically send sword qi strikes.

The sharp sword qi strikes rained down as the assault continued on the iron masked blademaster. The blood blades were nearly all gathered around him and blocking the sword qi strikes. As the clash was occurring, a lot of sparks flew and blood fell.

However, the blood blades were gradually chipping. Their surface was almost entirely out of spirit power and the blademaster did not inject more spirit power. It seemed that he was at the end of his rope.

“It looks like it really the effect of the Heavenly Crystal! Good! That being the case, let this goddess kill you and take the Heavenly Crystal!”

As the immortal goddess’ eyes oozed with killing intent, she swung the sword in her hands.

An empty shudder caused a massive windstorm and a myriad of vegetation and creatures on the ground were easily blown away.

Her sword aura exploded forth, igniting like a mighty flame that sprang into the air.

The sword aura covered the entire area, like a mountain with no top, in the presence of these people, they really seemed to be like tiny grains of sand.

With this one sword, it could really crush any person to fine powder, causing the person to be extinguished from existence.

Yet, just before the last breath of the technique was completed...

The iron masked blademaker’s whole body suddenly overflowed with a bone chilling devil spirit aura.

This aura was deep and overbearing. As if it was being restrained for a prolonged period of time, it was utterly berserk and possessed pure wrath.

It desired to explode.

It desired to kill.

It desired destruction.

It desired endless silence.

The aura was as cold as a knife that was soon surrounding the area!

Devil spirit aura?

The immortal goddess’ expression changed and her face paled: “Oh, this person has actually been charging. He was waiting for me

to get close before making his move. He is really despicable !!!”

She quickly retreated. As she finally made some distance from him, she was surprised to find that the iron masked blademaster suddenly turned around. The slender engraved dragon blade was unknowingly a sinister scarlet red hue now. The blade was now several feet long. The blademaster just slashed the blade down at the immortal goddess.

Sky Shrouding Sword Technique!

Compared to the immortal goddess’ previous sword qi strikes, this sword aura was infinitely more frightening and dreadful.

Chapter 39 - Simply Not Giving Up

The gigantic scarlet blood blade seemed to have been given life through the technique. As the blood aura descended upon the area, it seemed as if a legendary dragon was coming down with a tidal wave of blood.

Cold!

Cruel!

Death!

Numerous negative elements pervaded the area around the Immortal Goddess and began to erode at her state of mind. It made her feel complete despair.

“Why are the effects of using the Heavenly Crystal during this time so powerful?!” The Immortal Goddess paled as she suddenly retreated.

No, under these current conditions, I will only get myself wounded! I can only retreat for the time being!

The Immortal Goddess did not dare to go all out against the blade of blood, and she activated one of her divine skills to flee. In the time it took to breath, she was already far away.

Yet still the massive blood blade pierced through the air behind her...

Boom! Boom!

A sonic wave exploded filling the sky and shaking the mountains. It seemed like the end of the world had come early.

The massive blood blade continued to slice through three peaks of the Gu Xie mountain range before it stopped. With just one swing, the entire Gu Xie mountain range had its tops leveled flat.

After he had completed his move, the iron-masked blademaster soared and accelerated quickly to his limit, fleeing the scene.

The massive bloodblade dissipated and the dense stench of blood in the air around the disciples began to disappear. The Immortal Goddess surveyed the situation from a distance and was surprised to find that the blademaster had disappeared without a trace.

How ruthless! Unexpectedly, engaging in direct combat with this blademaster would have been like risking being sliced in half from his profound techniques! Looking at his current actions, although he could not slash me, he could still push me back easily.

Fear lingered in Immortal Goddess' heard. However, after waiting for a moment, while she was still standing on her white sword, she decided to drop down to the grounds of the school.

Although her current actions were rude and unreasonable, the disciples of Gu Xie Xin School did not dare try to approach her. They could only watch anxiously the current situation from a distance.

The confusion caused by the clash gradually disappeared as the disciples began to come to their senses. The Immortal Sword Sect disciples formed a formation and faced respectfully towards the descending elder.

The elder landed.

“Greetings Elder Long!”

All the Immortal Sword Sect disciples ha saluted stilishly and respectfully.

“Elder Long, what matter caused you to personally come here?”

Xiao Zheng Ming was also very respectful. A smile was evident on his face as he stared at the Immortal Goddess. He could not take his eyes away from her beauty. Even if Bai Yan Shan was standing near her, it is obvious that he would not even bat an eyelid in the formers direction.

“I am tracking the person that took the Heavenly Crystal from us. After I found him, I immediately rushed over. Despite this, I

did not expect that I would let him escape!” Elder Long said lightly, but her eyes shown unwillingness.

“This person is looking down on the Immortal Sword Sect, so it is obvious that we must take action!” Xiao Zheng Ming said with a bitter look: “I will return and report it immediately to the headmaster. I will ask him to publish wanted posters to apprehend this man!”

“Oh, repeatedly offended you?” Elder Long knitted her eyebrows: “What else has he done?”

“The Everlasting Stone!” Not waiting for Xiao Zheng Ming to answer, Bai Yan Shan yelled out.

“The Everlasting Stone? Is...”

“He killed Tie Zhang Men and took the Everlasting Stone!”

Elder Long remained silent for a moment.

“This person seems to exhibit a mysterious spirit aura and atmosphere of evil and blood, which correlates to the demon disciples of the Demon Continent. Elder, we must take care of this!”

“Yes, I agree!”

Elder Long nodded and said, “Elder Xiao!”

“What does Elder Long require!” Xiao Zheng Ming quickly responded in turn.

“You must immediately return to the sect and report this matter to the headmaster, so he can dispatch a group of elite cultivators to conclude this matter. Then when we scour this area, even if we encounter the demon cultivator, we will immediately cut him down! We will not let him go this easily!”

“Yes Elder Long!”

“Yan Shan.”

“Elder, Yan Shan is here.” Bai Yan Shan gently responded.

“You are a disciple of the grand elder. This one time that you went outside the sect, you encountered a problem but luckily remained unharmed. Consider yourself fortunate! You led the disciples here to Gu Xie Xin School to accomplish a beneficial goal. Return to the sect now that it is concluded!”

“Elder Long, what are you going to do then?”

“Me?” Elder Long replied, “Naturally, I will continue to chase this so-called Sword God!”

“Chase?” Bai Yan Shan whispered with her lower lip. Then she immediately said, “The culprit managed to obtain the Heavenly Crystal and the Everlasting Stone. He is really cunning. I’m afraid that afraid he tries to hide, elder...how will you even find him?”

As elder Long stood upon her white sword, she quickly waved her hand. A round, crystal-clear mirror suddenly appeared in her hands.

The disciples around her were immediately entranced by the object.

“Spirit Core Ranked: ‘Ten Thousand Miles Tracking Technique, which can easily trace any presence of this world; but before it can be activated, the technique has to be casted once. From then on, it will continue to track the presence. Although it will only be able to mark the approximate location. However, for my purposes this is enough.; not to mention the apprehension of this “Sword God”, we will obtain the Heavenly Crystal and the Everlasting Stone! Therefore, both of you shall quickly return, so you can deliver my message!”

After Elder Long finished, she waved her hand and the round mirror disappeared.

After Bai Yan Shan heard this, she was unable to speak.

With such a technique, Elder Que Jian Long could find anything.

The elder left the everyone behind as she flew off into the horizon. Shortly after, another person followed.

The surrounding people just looked at the elders actions.

They saw Elder Long lower herself to pick up a few pieces of iron on the ground.

This was what broke off from the blademaster's iron mask. It was now just fallen debris.

Elder Long glared at the broken iron mask as he eyes swept the horizon with determination.

.....

Bang!

A shaking figured suddenly crashed to the ground.

It was soon followed by the sounds of heavy breathing.

After a moment, this fallen figure steadily rose up.

“Careles! Truly Careless!” The Sword Elder shouted.

Su Yun could only continue panting.

“Kid, are you alright?” The Sword Elder could feel that the Demonic Blood aura surrounding Su Yun's body beginning to dissipate. Afterwards, he immediately came out and asked about Su Yun's condition.

“For now, I'm fine!”

Su Yun weakly smiled, “I never thought ‘Demonic Blood Array’ utilized with Heavenly Crystal would actually have such an amazing effect. My sword aura is at first level, which is fairly weak. Fundamentally, it is just utterly useless in combat. However, with the effect of the Heavenly Crystal, my sword aura's level soared and almost reached Spirit Soul Realm Level! (Tl: 4th level, Su Yun is still at first level currently)

“Impossible!” After Su Yun finished, the Sword Elder

immediately shouted. “You are only peak spirit novice realm, how can this crystal’s effect be so high?”

“Senior, think about what you just said.” Su Yun shook his head and continued, “If it was ordinary effects of the crystal, I would have certainly not reached Spirit Soul cultivation level. I’m afraid that I would not even be able to battle the Immortal Goddess. But the “Demonic Blood Array” is different. This array uses countless materials to build it, and is one of the highest level of devil techniques that I know of. It is capable of directly affecting the crystal, allowing me to utilize the very essence of the crystal.”

“Essence of the crystal?” The Sword Elder said. Then he hurriedly asked, “What are they?”

“It is just my strength influencing the magic power!”

“Magic power?”

“Right! Magic! The Demonic Blood Array is able to increase my spirit aura’s power rapidly by transforming it into a devil spirit aura. The devil spirit aura is just a mutation of regular spirit aura. This technique is an exclusive one from the evil spirit abilities of the cultivators from the Demon Continent. This devil technique is capable of thoroughly releasing a person’s latent energy and power. As long as the cultivator’s body can sustain it, the cultivator could also release all his power and exhaust all his residual energy. Although my cultivation level is not high, with Demonic Blood Array added effects, I was able to thoroughly unleash the whole of my strength. Coupled with the added effects of the Heavenly Crystal, my body strength increased to the point where I had the ability to employ the first form of the Limitless Sword Arts: Worldly Sword Form. Therefore, I managed to control thousands of blood blades into the battle, but I was still incapable of bringing the true power of the sword arts due to my lack of skill. Therefore, I am ashamed...”

Su Yun was steadily walking forward while trying to maintain his

balance on the road.

The Sword Elder listened intently, and then asked, “How do you know the devil techniques of the Demon Continent so well?”

“Reading books...Chronicles of Sky Military Continent!”

“Get Lost! Chronicles of Sky Military Continent?! Do you take this sword elder for an idiot?”

“.....”

Chapter 40 - Spirit Lord Qi

Su Yun had memories of his past life, but he did not know if he should reveal this information to the sword elder. Nonetheless, the sword elder did not try to press the issue much further and instead expressed concern. “Kid, Devil techniques can clash with a thousand different techniques, but there is high recoil. This array techniques is so powerful...yet, could there be no serious side effects on you body at all?”

“Of course there are side effects.” Su Yun continued, “After using this array, for the next ten days, I cannot use the slightest amount of spirit power, especially any type of cultivating method. This array could be called a desperate technique, only to be used as a last resort. Once the effects of the array has ended, the spirit power within the body will go down the drain. It will be hard to even find traces of it during the ten days, and the user will basically just become an ordinary person. In the demon continent, this array is extremely well known, so once you use this array, the opponent will probably just stall, wait for you to turn into a normal person, then take action and behead you! I only dared to use this array here because the cultivators of Sky Martial Continent do not know about it. If it weren’t for the effects, I would probably not risk using this method, since I would have lost if they come with an army looking for me!”

“Nonetheless, the power of spirit intermediate realm disciples, in the demon continent are basically all devils...that is really scary.” Sword Elder said.

Su Yun smiled and remained silent. He removed the piece of jade from the necklace and said, “With this Everlasting Stone, which can even increase ordinary people’s power by ten times, I will be able to increase my latent-talent by multiple times over. It will drastically accelerate my cultivation speed, and with it, jumping thousands of leagues will soon not be difficult.”

“The Everlasting Stone, Everlasting Stone...” The sword elder said and took another breath, “Kid, you given me far too many surprises; even though you are obviously a spirit novice realm, you managed to behead the patriarch of the Gu Xie Xin School. You even went head to head against the elders of the Immortal Sword Sect...obviously you shouldn’t even be able to fight them, yet...”

“They were left with no chance to beat me.” Su Yun smiled as he finished the sword elder’s thought. “In actuality, it is all thanks to the Heavenly Crystal. If I didn’t have this Heavenly Crystal, then I would just be a useless person. It could even be said that I would indeed be just a baby!”

“Ah...” The sword elder could not think of any words to speak. Then he asked, “What will you prepare for next?”

“Since we cannot practice sword arts within the next ten days, naturally I will prepare to use the item that I just obtained. With this Everlasting Stone, I should be able to step into spirit novice ninth stage in one swoop.”

“This is not difficult for you.” The sword elder said. Then after thinking for a bit, he asked, “Little Su Yun, have you determined which route will you take for the spirit aura? Scarlet Star Aura? Maybe Frigid Aqua Aura? Or will you take the difficult and peerless path of True Divine Aura?”

Scarlet Star Aura had the properties of fire. Frigid Aqua Aura had the properties of water, while True Divine Aura had properties of earth. On the other hand, Fiend aura required the practice of devil arts. Swift Wind Aura was used mostly by sword wielders. There were many more thousand types of aura, each of them were different.

“For sword wielders, naturally I will strive to practice “swift wind aura!””

“Swift Wind Aura...” The sword elder shook his head, “It is very common type of spirit aura, since almost all cultivators that use

swords walk on that path. Although it is very suitable for sword wielders, I am the Limitless Sword God Master. Naturally, I will have much more powerful techniques for spirit auras. Are you interested?”

After Su Yun heard, he immediately brightened and quickly said, “Please enlighten me with your knowledge!”

“Ha ha ha ha, I knew that you would be enthusiastic to learn it. Kid, your desire for power is not weak, otherwise you would not have risked your life countless of times to obtain your treasures! Alright! You must learn carefully what I’m about to teach you of the “Limitless Sword Arts.” I will pass on everything to you, for this sword elder is not stingy! If you can take the hardships of practicing, I believe that you will be able to completely master the first sword of the “Limitless Sword Arts!”

Su Yun became overjoyed.

“However, before that, you will have to collect some materials for you to cleanse yourself. Especially your meridians, for this particular sword arts are really dangerous. If you do not cleanse your meridians, then during the practice, when you activate your spirit aura or power, your body will just explode!”

“Please enlighten me with your vast knowledge!”

“Some of the materials can be bought, but the price is very expensive, while others will not be readily available. However, most of them should be circulating in the markets, you just got to wait for the stockpile to rise....but before that, you will have to prepare a massive amount of money!”

“Money?” Su Yun shook his head as he said this.

“You do not have any?”

“No, I mean it should not be a problem.”

“....”

Every single disciple who trained in the Limitless Sword Arts must complete the unique method of cleansing their meridians to train in the “Spirit Lord Aura.”

The material list was placed in front of Su Yun. As a rough estimate, he would need to spend more than two hundred thousand spirit coins.

Other than stealing money, the sword elder was afraid that there was no other way to obtain the money.

After utilizing “Demonic Blood Array,” Su Yun was no different than any regular civilian. Without spirit aura or power, how could he obtain two hundred thousand spirit coins?

He still had around a thousand spirit coins on him. If he purchased some materials and then used his Spring Crystal Furnace, he could sell some cultivation pellets in the marketplace...although it could earn quite a bit, it could not be a permanent solution for this matter.

Right now, spirit alchemists were very powerful. Although they could not make godly medicines, they could quickly process the ingredients of powerful cultivation pellets in a short span of time. They could even extrapolate the heat required to refine the ingredients. Then he would be able to just copy it and start to sell them, but it would not be very easy.

Since it has come to this, there can only be one solution.

Su Yun raised his eyebrows as he pondered a few moments. Then, he turned and proudly marched west.

It was the well-known districts of the valley: “Connecting Secrets District” and “Jade Swan District.” It was called Broken Rush City and was located about a hundred miles west from beyond a paradise in the valley. It was in the middle of the two districts.

In the scenery around the city, there were singing birds, fragrant flowers, verdant mountains, and rushing waters. It seemed as if

the spirit of a hero was safeguarding the place.

“Blossom Heart Valley” lies here, it was a majestic and beautiful place.

Blossom Heart Valley Central Pharmacy, a compassionate and fair pharmacy. Throughout the Sky Military Continent, it was famous for its practices.

Blossom Heart Valley true disciples used handed down techniques. They were skilled at making needles. They distributed medicine and herbs to relieve and cure the public’s suffering. They even had the methods to revive people from near death. (Tl: idiom, just means profound medical techniques) Many poor people went to Blossom Heart Valley Pharmacy to ask for their doctors. Most of their illnesses were resolved.

Blossom Heart Valley was not in the least bit weaker than the major faction known as Immortal Sword Sect. However, they did not exhibit the Immortal Sword Sect’s arrogance or dominating demeanor. Instead, when people travelled to the Blossom Heart Valley to seek medicine, the disciples never asked for the person’s origin. They did not discriminate against the poor and treated everyone with respect. Even towards common civilians, the disciples exhibit compassion and helped them with their illnesses.

For this reason, although compared to the combat power of the Immortal Sword Sect, it was weaker, it nevertheless held an influence that was equally as imposing as that of the Immortal Sword Sect.

As Su Yun arrived at Broken Rush City, he replaced his broken mask with a new one from his spatial ring. Then he replaced his black blademaster clothes with simple grey robes and headed towards the city.

Since Blossom Heart Valley’s Broken Rush City main industry was medicine, there were shops along the streets selling medicine and cultivation pellets. The long column of pharmacies lined both

sides of the street. Many bungalows had chimneys smoking, since there were alchemy rooms inside for working.

Su Yun came to the market center, hoping to find a common herb shop. After finding one, he stepped into the line.

Right at this moment, not far from the skies above Broken Rush City, a white streak flew over.

As it neared Broken Rush City, the white streaked stopped. It was the beautiful immortal goddess, and with graceful movements, she lightly stepped off her white sword. Her whole body was covered with a snow white veil blowing in the wind.

She took the round, magic mirror and glanced at the dot on the mirror.

She was surprised to find the dot was huge and it was pointing directly between the Entwining Secrets District and Jade Swan District. This was the place.

“Is the Limitless Sword God really here?”

The dragon immortal goddess whispered as she carefully checked the dot on her mirror.

After pondering for a moment, her sword began to descend and she floated down into Broken Rush City.

Chapter 41 - Grass

As the immortal goddess neared the city, she lifted her veil aside, revealing some dimples on her delicate face.

The peerless beauty's allure attracted the eyes of many people wherever she went. Her beauty shook many people to their core.

However, this beauty had no desire to attract the gazes of countless souls lost in awe, so she quickly left the crowded area and covered her face with a veil again.

Nonetheless, the effect was miniscule. As a slim woman, and even with a veil, her graceful movements were enough to depict her as a peerless beauty. It was especially true as her starry eyes still shone visibly to the point where they would leave lasting effects on the souls of onlookers.

When she entered into Broken Rush City, both sides of the street to either side of her were filled with sounds of laughter and music. Quite a few men were shocked silly and as still as statues, carefully gazing at the peerless beauty that was walking through.

Concealed with a veil, her faintly discernible face still matched her beautiful body. Many men couldn't even concentrate on anything after glancing at her.

The immortal goddess only coldly humphed, and a small amount of her spirit aura rippled through the streets. One by one the people on both sides of the streets was awakened by the spirit aura. They became terrified as they felt the sheer power of the aura that was leaked out. Many of the men quickly averted their gazes.

This woman was not someone one should want to trifle with.

Instantly, everyone understood this in their hearts.

However, the deterrence was only temporary. After a few moments, many people's eyes once again began to glance over at immortal goddess. The immortal goddess could only knit her

eyebrows as she increased her pace to her destination.

However, after traversing for a while through a huge city such as Broken Rush she began to doubt. How could she find Sword God in such a huge crowd? If Sword God was now wearing a disguise, then how would she even know if she encountered the Sword God?

As the immortal goddess walked through two blocks, she still found nothing. In the end, she could only wander around in hopes of finding the person she was looking for.

After a few more days, her strength would return to her, then her “Ten Thousand Miles Tracking Technique” could once again be displayed. Once activated, it would be able to accurately determine Sword God’s location, so no matter how good his disguise would be at that time, she would be able to pinpoint him. Then she would be able to easily single him out from the crowd.

Right now, she only needed to prevent him from leaving.

The Immortal Goddess took out her round mirror and quickly glanced at it.

Still here.

“Sword God! This time, this deity will not let you leave!” She whispered under her breath.

After a moment, she took out some medicine bottles from her spatial ring and was preparing to drink some. Utilizing the medicine, her recovery speed would increase dramatically. Then she would be able to use her divine techniques again. But just as she was about to ingest the medicine, she stopped.

“These medicine bottles of the Immortal Sword Sect are very effective, but a product of Blossom Heart Valley: “Nine Leaf Grass” is very helpful in allowing one to absorb the effects of the medicine. The efficiency of the medicine would skyrocket...Nine Leaf Grass? Let’s go looking for some purchase some and see how it works!”

Afterwards, she stopped pondering, turned around and walked towards the center of Broken Rush City, the prosperous central herbal exchange area.

“Exquisite Red Autumn Spider Silk! Discounted and for sale!”

“Ice Toad Eggs for eight thousand spirit coins! Do miss this amazing opportunity!”

“Fresh cultivation pellets! Want to increase your cultivation, just buy some!”

....

Inside and outside of the exchange area, there were cries everywhere. All types of rare and valuable medicine and cultivation materials were being sold here.

Broken Rush City’s elite disciples helped maintain order, so at Blossom Heart Valley, no one dared create any chaos. Anyone could complete business transactions without any worries of any robbery or inconveniences.

“Nine Leaf Grass! Pick up your Nine Leaf Grass here! In the entire Broken Rush City, this is only one place to get it! Quickly come and take a look!”

Just then, a loud cry came from the entrance of the exchange area as a door slid open.

Nine Leaf Grass? It will be very beneficial.

Many people quickly gathered around and looked up.

As the incoming crowd began to see that the auction prices were reaching the hundred thousand spirit coins mark, many people just quickly left while shaking their head.

Upon seeing the scene, the seller of the Nine Leaf Grass could only shake his head. However, he could only continue to shout.

“I want this Nine Leaf Grass!”

Just then, a cold voice broke out from the crowd.

The grass selling person became very happy and quickly turned. He was surprised to find a beauty dressed in white, covered with a veil, which blurred her flawless face. Her graceful movements was seducing every man while she walked towards him.

What a beautiful female!

The grass seller was stupefied for a moment, before he awakened. His heart could not relax.

“Hey! Girl, you are really smart. This Nine Leaf Grass, I just found it. I quickly harvested it and rushed here to sell it. You have come just in time,” The man exclaimed as he placed the grass on a small platform that said, “Here, the Nine Leaf Grass.” The female just glanced at the product on the platform.

Nonetheless, the female remained expressionless and coldly said, “Enough with the chatter, how much is it?”

Wow! Had he just encountered a rich noble?

The grass seller was rejoicing and with a glance, he quickly articulated his price, “one hundred and twenty thousand spirit coins!”

“Fine, deal!”

The female said directly without even blinking.

After the grass seller said this, he almost couldn't stay standing. Then he quickly nodded, “Well...go ahead, girl, how about we finalize the deal?”

“Alright!”

The female nodded.

“He he he he, you...just you wait!” The grass seller secretly laughed under his breath.

“Please hurry this up.” The female hurriedly urged.

“Really ignorant!” At this time, a nearby shout sounded.

The woman’s eyebrow rose as she was surprised to find a man dressed in yellow robes, who was glancing at the transaction and just shaking his head as he walked away.

“Stop!”

As the female said this, she flashed instantaneously and appeared in front of the man.

The male could only say, “What? How?”

The female just coldly asked, “Who do you find ignorant?”

Su Yun brows twisted and faced the female in front of him. Then he lightly said, “you.”

“You...” The female tensed and her eyes began to fill with fury.

However, after looked at the massive people around her, she did not initiate the attack. Instead, she just took a deep breath and said, “Why am I ignorant?”

After Su Yun heard this, he turned and pointed at the grass seller who was still holding the Nine Leaf Grass. Then he said, “This is just fake Nine Leaf Grass. You bought some without looking or asking any questions. If this is not ignorance, what is?”

“Ah! Fellow brother, how can you talk like this? How is my Nine Leaf Grass fake in your eyes? You...what do you mean?”

The grass seller suddenly became anxious, but he did not dispute it directly. After a moment of squirming he directly face the woman and said, “Girl, do not listen to that man. He does not understand herbs. My Nine Leaf Grass is authentic, not fake! You still want to buy it, right? Fine, if you don’t have one hundred and twenty thousand, it can be one hundred and ten thousand spirit coins!”

“One hundred and ten thousand spirit coins?” After the sudden price cut, the female hesitated.

As Su Yun saw this, he just shook his head. He quickly turned to leave.

However, in a manner of seconds, the female grabbed and pulled his arm towards her direction.

“What?” Su Yun lightly asked.

The female froze for a moment and then was awoken by an electric shock that was transferred from her hand.

“What else do you want?” Su Yun disdainfully asked.

The female took a deep breath, a ripple formed in her eyes as she said, “Since you say that is fake, how about for senior...help senior a bit and identify the right herb that I should buy?”

“Are you an idiot? You still want to buy a fake one?” Su Yun could not help, but laugh.

“You...” The female suppressed her anger as her body began to tense up.

Nonetheless, she did not say anything. The grass seller beside them was furious.

Suddenly, the grass seller cried out, “Quickly come brat and judge to see if this Nine Leaf Grass is a fake. Come judge and give me your reason!”

As the shout sounded through the area, a lot of passersby gathered around to see the commotion. Even the person in charge, Zhang Zhi Yuan, came after he heard about the commotion at the auction center.

“What’s going on?”

Zhang Zhi Yuan asked as he led a pair of Broken Rush City elite guards.

“Your honor, you came at just the right time!”

As the grass seller saw the overseer coming over, he quickly

rushed past and took Zhang Zhi Yuan's arm. Then he pointed at Su Yun and shouted, "You honor, I am innocent, yet this man is accusing me of selling fake Nine Leaf Grass. He is framing me, so I'm asking if overseer can help me resolve this!"

In Broken Rush City, selling fake Nine Leaf Grass is an extremely serious crime. According to the Broken Rush City's laws, it would lead to at least three years in prison; and after they were freed, that person would be banished from Broken Rush City forever.

Why was this grass seller not fleeing? Instead, he was shouting and creating a big commotion. Wasn't he afraid of being publicly exposed?

Su Yun began to have a headache. He casually said one sentence without much thought and it gave him so much trouble.

Zhang Zhi Yuan glanced at Su Yun and also the white female beside him. When he saw the peerless beauty at her prime, he could not help but admire her for a moment as he remained astounded.

After a deep breath, Zhang Zhi Yuan said, "Give me the Nine Leaf Grass for me to examine! Should I find that it is fake, you will be arrested and receive capital punishment!"

"Fine..." The grass seller rolled his eyes and said without the slightest hesitation. He handed over the Nine Leaf Grass and humbly said, "Overseer, please examine it! If I was a king, I would be willing to bet my entire fortune that this grass is real. I guarantee that it is real!"

Zhang Zhi Yuan took the herbs and quickly activated his spirit aura which began to cover the grass. Then, he widened his eyes and carefully analyzed the effects of the turquoise Nine Leaf Grass.

The audience held their breath as they stared at Zhang Zhi Yuan. No one dared to speak.

The grass seller was sweating profusely and constantly wiping

the sweat dripping down his cheek.

After nearly half an hour.

“It is real!”

As Zhang Zhi Yuan said this...

“Oh!” The grass seller became relieved and laughed again and again. Then he pointed at Su Yun and clamored, “How was I lying before? You said the the Nine Leaf Grass was fake! Freaking bastard, you tried to frame me! You almost ruined my business!”

After saying this, he turned around and shouted to Zhang Zhi Yuan, “Senior, please deliver justice for me. This person tried to frame me, so please deal with him accordingly.”

“Wild speculations cannot be said carelessly in Broken Rush City. If every person was shouting rumors, how would everyone’s business continue?” Zhang Zhi Yuan nodded and then waved, “Take him away! Framing someone is also a crime!”

“Yes, sir!”

Both of the guards immediately took action.

As the female saw the situation unfolding, she decided not to take action. As she gazed at Su Yun, she was not surprised to find a panic look on his face.

“Wait!”

Finally, the silent Su Yun decided to speak.

Everyone shifted their attention to him.

“Do you still want to argue?” The grass seller said.

“Argue?” Su Yun smiled, “How can one argue with the truth? However, even after saying this, in a place with so many people, is there really no one who can correctly identify Nine Leaf Grass?”

Chapter 42 - Do you admit you are an idiot?

After Su Yun uttered his words, Zhang Zhi Yuan's face became very ugly.

“Young man. Listening to you, it seems that you have a very thorough understanding of the Nine Leaf Grass, yes? That's fine, just talk about some of the properties of the Nine Leaf Grass, so we can determine its value! In here, there are many herb experts, especially in Blossom Heart Valley. Be careful what of you say, otherwise, don't expect anyone to forgive you!”

After Su Yun heard this, he suddenly understood why the grass seller actually evaded arrest.

The fake spirit grass was beyond the level of ordinary people to identify. It had even be difficult for Zhang Zhi Yuan to correctly identify it.

Nevertheless, Su Yun did not hesitate to speak as he gazed at the audience, “Nine leaf Grass, grows in a very dense spiritual place and takes about thirty years to sprout, fifty years to grow and then it takes another sixty more years before it is ready to be harvested. After all of that it can finally be considered Nine Leaf Grass. It has nine leaves, and every single leaf has magical properties. However, the fifth leaf would normally have a simple leaf design on the back, while the ninth leaf would have a knife design on the back. These are the natural markings of the grass when it grows. Any other markings are artificially painted on. This is how you can validate the authenticity of the spirit grass. The Nine Leaf Grass greatest value is not in the effects of the leaves, but lies in its rhizome(Tl: underground stem) where magical energy is stored. After the Nine Leaf Grass's rhizome is digested, the energy will be transferred to the human body for a period of time. During that time, when the cultivator ingests any type of medicine, the process will be quickened and will result in the maximum effects that medicine can provide! Nine Leaf Grass uses are not to scoff at, and it is

difficult to grow. A conservative estimate of only hundred thousand spirit coins, which this person advertised for about one hundred and twenty thousand spirit coins, must be a crook. He is just bullying others who know nothing about it!”

After he said, many of the audience members began to nod. The things said were basics, but only those who were trained the craft would be able remember. This proved that the person was not just talking nonsense.

After Zhang Zhi Yuan heard this, his anger subsided a little. He brought the Nine Leaf Grass towards Su Yun and asked, “Then, tell me. Why is Nine Leaf Grass just an imitation?”

“The reason is very simple.” Su Yun did not even glance at the grass, but continued, “It’s because, on the back of the grass leaf, there is no leaf pattern and knife pattern.”

“None?”

Zhang Zhi Yuan was stunned, but hastily opened the fifth and ninth grass leaf. With a closer inspection, he shouted, “There are obviously right there!”

“With real leaf markings, the venations will cover throughout the entire leaf, but this one’s does not. It is just a copy or imitation. It was deliberately injected with spirit power. If you look carefully, you can see that it does not follow the natural venations of a Nine Leaf Grass! Therefore, it is a fake!”

After Zhang Zhi Yuan heard this, he quickly looked again.

Just as expected, the things that Su Yun said was correct. The top of the leaf was very complex and simply did not follow the venations on the leaf.

“Nonsense! He is just spouting nonsense, this thing about following the venations of the leaves, nobody has ever heard of it. These is only his words! This man is absolutely just spouting nonsense!” The grass seller anxiously shouted as he began to panic.

The audience began to converse with each other, but currently who really knew about validating the spirit grass with venations? Was every herb expert in the audience going to remain silent?

However, at this point, the crowd gave way to a group of people in white attire who wore the symbols of the medical school. It was led by a white haired elder with a slender beard at the front.

“Well said, little guy! This strain of Nine Leaf Grass is indeed a fake!”

With a simple remark, everyone was in uproar.

“This is the renowned Grand Ghost Master of Blossom Heart Valley!”

“Is this the person known as Ghost Hand, the distinguished Grand Ghost Master, too?”

“Yes he is! A while ago, I had the privilege of meeting him in Blossom Heart Valley, so I know this is for sure that person!”

“Grand Ghost Master has revival techniques and is extremely skilled and has massive amount of medical knowledge. He absolutely cannot be wrong!”

Everyone around the Ghost Master was in awe....

Zhang Zhi Yuan immediately walked towards the elder and gave a salute, “Greetings, Grand Ghost Master.”

“No need Overseer Zhang. A rotten person was found selling fake cultivation ingredients. After seeing this happen, it is certainly a special event!” The Grand Ghost Master laughed.

“Master laughed!” Said Zhang Zhi Yuan.

Then he smiled and turned around. He quickly waved, “Grand Ghost Master has determined the Nine Leaf Grass is fake. Those who dare try to break the city’s laws on selling fake ingredients only give the entire city a bad name. You have violated our district’s rules! Therefore, you will have to accept the

consequences!!”

“This...this...” The grass seller completely broke down in panic.

“Guards, quickly arrest this fraud! Bring this criminal to justice!” Zhang Zhi Yuan cried out.

“Yes! Overseer!” The guards immediately answered.

The grass seller’s face instantly became as white as paper. While trembling, he knelt down and hastily shouted, “Your honor, ah, overseer, ah, please...this small bug will never do this again!”

However, no one showed him any mercy. The guards relentlessly picked him up and brought him away.

No matter how he struggled, he could not escape.

The commotion of the Nine Leaf Grass finally ended.

“Wow!”

The audience around Su Yun immediately burst into cheers.

As Su Yun saw this, he did not utter a word. Then he turned towards the group of experts and quickly walked past them and vanished.

The Ghost Master and Zhang Zhi Yuan conversed a bit and then looked at the surrounding for Su Yun. However, it seemed Su Yun had already vanished.

“Teacher, what are you looking for?” A disciple of the Blossom Heart Valley Medical School asked.

“I was just looking for the young man!”

The Ghost Master, Gui Mo Jue quietly responded: “This Nine Leaf Grass is priceless. Therefore many people have never seen it before, so the number of people who can create descriptions of Nine Leaf Grass are extremely rare. The veins that mark the venations are recorded only in the Blossom Heart Valley records of secret validation techniques, so why does this man know...he must

have a vast amount of knowledge on cultivation ingredients!”

“That high? This man is so young, so how high could his expertise even be?” The male disciple asked with disdain.

“You cannot judge a person based solely on appearances. You have to remember that an expert does not necessarily have to be an elderly person.” Gui Mo Jue shook his head and turned to leave.

The disciples behind him only looked at each other and quickly followed after him.

Right now, Su Yun was quickly leaving the exchange area. He was keeping a rapid pace to the outskirts of Broken Rush City.

“Stop!”

At this time, a cold shout sounded through the air.

Then, before he could utter a word, a white figure suddenly appeared in front of him.

Su Yun quickly analyzed her and found it was actually the female that was trying to purchase the fake Nine Leaf Grass.

“Oh? Do you admit you are an idiot?” Su Yun smiled as he said this.

“Truly bold!”

The female became furious. However, she managed to calm her anger and coldly continued, “If you had evil intentions, don’t blame me if I react. I may even cut you down!”

“Who are you? Such an aura, such powerful spirit power?” Su Yun as he analyzed her.

“I am...” As the female began to say her name, she closed her mouth. Then she continued, “You do not need to know who I am. Just understand that you should not provoke me!”

“Alright, then I will not provoke you, okay?” Su Yun shook his head and quickly moved on.

However, the female flashed over in the next moment. It was instant and her previous silhouette disappeared.

“I say, little girl, you didn’t fall for me right?” Su Yun said with an annoyed expression.

No matter how good his patience was, it was beginning to wear thin after the current events.

He was surprised to see the female suddenly removed a plate of fine jade from her belt. Then, she gave it to Su Yun.

“Although one hundred and twenty thousand spirit coins is not much money, if I was ingesting fake herbs, it could have led to incalculable consequences for my cultivation. You saved my life. I owe you one, so here is a jade plate the I wear. If you have any difficulties, you can rely on this jade plate to ask help from the Immortal Sword Sect! I will help you one time!” The female said.

“Immortal Sword Sect?”

Su Yun heart jumped, “You are from the Immortal Sword Sect?”

“Yes.”

“This ah...” Su Yun stammered as he began to think about the current situation.

He had already plundered the treasures that the Immortal Sword Sect wanted, so his relationship with the Immortal Sword Sect was already in shambles, right?

After thinking for a moment, Su Yun came to a decision. Then he said, “Why don’t you just give me two hundred thousand spirit coins?”

“What?” The female’s eyes lit up in surprise.

“That...I just need some money. I do not want this jade plate. I just need you to give me two hundred thousand spirit coins. Didn’t you say that you did not care about one hundred and twenty thousand spirit coins? I believe that you don’t really care about

money, right?” Su Yun rubbed his hands together as he smiled.

The female hesitated for a moment, then she said, “I am not carrying two hundred thousand spirit coins.”

“.....” Then Su Yun asked again, “One hundred and twenty thousand spirit coins is fine, too!”

“Senior cannot spare it!”

“The spirit grass, before you were trying to buy Nine Leaf Grass? Were you just planning to use IOUs?” Su Yun was furious now.

“Why not?” The female snorted, “How is it possible that senior won’t pay back her debts?”

“This mother*****...” Su Yun was completely silent now. He did not bother with this crazy woman who really had the nerve to act like that. He just shook his head and turned to leave.

“Where are you going?”

“Blossom Heart Valley!”

“Blossom Heart Valley? What are you going there for?”

“To make money!”

“To make money?” The female was thoroughly confused, as she puzzlingly looked as Su Yun vanished.

As she looked at Su Yun’s disappearing figure, her eyes raised a trace of doubt, “But why...am I feeling that this person is somewhat familiar...where have I seen this guy?”

.....

On foot, he could probably reach Blossom Heart Valley in about half an hour.

Su Yun was carrying his belongings with the purchase of Withered Death Wood into Blossom Heart Valley.

In Blossom Heart Valley, there was a sea of people. There were nobles, spirit cultivators, but also many people who were ill.

The disciples of Blossom Heart Valley Sect were behind a reception that was arranged at one side of the sea of people. In front of the reception were people that wanted to have an audience with the disciples of Blossom Heart Valley.

Most of the people waiting were in need of medical expertise. Therefore, no one dared to be rash. The regular disciples of Blossom Heart Valley could help most of the patients. Even if the disciples were met with unknown or incurable diseases, they would ask for elders of the sect to help.

As Su Yun went in, a young man wearing plain clothe was lending an arm to a frail middle aged man walk over. They were accepted for treatment by the Blossom Heart Valley Sect.

With only a mere one stick of incense to burn out, the middle aged man came out by himself. This time, he did not even need an arm to support him.

“They are really living saints! Living saints! Thank you! Thank You!!”

The middle age man constantly gave thanks, and the young man went down on his knees and bowed. The two were in tears. They regarded these disciples as flawless saints.

Several Blossom Heart Valley disciples smiled. They quickly controlled the crowd with eyes full of pride and joy.

As Su Yun saw this, he got up and walked forward, while shouting, “Ladies and gentlemen, you guys are really truly lucky!”

“Yes, ah, yes, ah. If not for the Blossom Heart Valley disciples, I’m afraid that my father would not have lived past the next month!”

The young man cried as he wiped his tears from his eyes.

Unexpectedly, Su Yun repeatedly shook his head and said, “No, no, the luck that I was talking about was not directed to you guys. I was referring to them that they were lucky to be alive, really

lucky.”

As these words were uttered, both the father, son and several Blossom Heart Valley disciples suddenly froze.

“Lad, what are you talking about?” A smooth-skinned disciple asked as he frowned.

“I just mean that you have extremely pathetic medical skills. It had a hundred loopholes. (Tl: idiom: full of mistakes) You were actually able to cure these suffering people, which really is a lucky outcome. And you two guys, father and son, were really lucky that with the mediocre treatment given, that you guys didn’t up and die! That’s what I was saying was lucky!” Su Yun laughed.

Chapter 43 - One Hundred Loopholes

“What are you trying to say?”

The young man froze for a moment. After he woke up from his stupor, he approached Su Yun and grabbed his clothes. He shouted angrily, “No matter who you are, I forbid you to insult my benefactors from Blossom Heart Valley. Apologize quickly to me and my benefactor!”

The young man moved on impulse, since he reckoned that Su Yun was just an ordinary person. After Su Yun used the Demonic Blood Array, he did not emit the slightest amount of spirit power. But even now, how was this guy his opponent?

However, Su Yun was not fazed. He turned to face the Blossom Heart Valley disciples and smiled as he said, “What? You guys opened the sect for treatment, but cannot take any criticism on your own, obvious mistakes! Ah, if it is like this, then the reputation of this sect isn’t worth much!”

“You...you cannot just insult Blossom Heart Valley Sect!”

The Blossom Heart Valley disciple did not all come down at once, but one by one, the other disciples began to shout.

The young man grabbed Su Yun with brute force and raised his fist. He was ready to strike Su Yun.

For those waiting for treatment that were watching the scene, they began to become discouraged; but they couldn’t do anything.

“Wait a minute!”

Just then, a slightly hoarse voice broke through the chaos.

The young man was surprised and quickly stopped his fists.

Everyone turned to look at the origin of the voice. They gazed as a group carrying baskets of medicine ingredients coming inside. These were all elite disciples of the Blossom Heart Valley. Leading

them was the famous Ghost Hand!

“Grand Ghost Master!” Several disciples welcomed him.

“So it seemed that Ghost Master has arrived!”

“Ghost Master, long time no see!”

“Ghost Master, since you have come. Here is a kid with some arrogance, so how about you teach this kid a lesson!”

“Master, I think this child is crazy. Something must be wrong with his head. Maybe you should treat his brain?” The disciples said as they came over to greet the ghost master.

Yet, Gui Mo Jue did not pay attention to anyone. He just quickly walked towards Su Yun.

As the young man saw this, he quickly let go of Su Yun and hastily saluted the white-haired old man.

Gui Mo Jue nodded at him, then his eyes fell on Su Yun’s body. He loudly shouted, “Young man, I did not think that you were actually headed to our Blossom Heart Valley!”

“As it turns out, the ghost master is polite! You even greet me with respect.” Su Yun dusted off his wrinkled clothes and immediately bowed.

“Hm.” Gui Mo Jue nodded as his old eyes analyzed Su Yun. Then he continued, “Young man, in the event before, you already corrected another disciple of Blossom Heart Valley. However, in a short amount of time, you have caused another commotion between my Blossom Heart Valley disciples. You are only spirit novice realm stage one, very weak and powerless, but is somehow extremely familiar with medicine and herbs. Their medicine is not that bad! Why do you say that my sect’s medical practices are clumsy? Not to mention...the treatment was carried out in the building, so how do you know how it went?”

“The ability to actually identify fake Nine Leaf Grass made you

carried away and now you have come to bother us?” The male disciples beside him cried, “Master, this person is unworthy of conversing with you, let us just kick him out from Blossom Heart Valley!”

“Teacher Mo Fei said it very well. This person is speaking nonsense, insulting Blossom Heart Valley, we can’t forgive him!”

“Let us just quickly kick him out!”

“Banish him from here!”

The angry disciples kept on shouting.

Gui Mo Jue raised his hand and the crowd’s voice quickly stopped.

He glanced at the crowd of people, and then continued, “Today, there are many people in my Blossom Heart Valley, so I, Gui Mo Jue, cannot be indifferent about this matter for it affects the reputation of my Blossom Heart Valley...little brother, this time, you will have to enlighten me on the matter. Should I be aware of some negligence on some medical practices and procedures that the disciples of Blossom Heart Valley completed? If so, please enlighten me!”

After he finished speaking, he gestured Su Yun to give an explanation.

This gesture shocked everyone present.

With a high level of cultivation, knowledgeable, compassionate, no hubris, modest nature, this elder was one that everyone admired.

Su Yun did not hesitate and stepped forward to face Gui Mo Jue in the center.

“Elder of high cultivation is the role model of everyone here. You are even courteous about this matter, while the juniors are raving in anger. Really admirable! Praiseworthy!” Su Yun laughed.

“I don’t dare act like that. Little brother, your age is young, but you can easily distinguish the characteristics of Nine Leaf Grass. I just want to know how are you able to do this while being so young!” Gui Mo Jue responded.

Su Yun thought for a moment, and glanced at the circle of people around him. Then he said, “Ghost Master, although your disciples had clumsily approach, it should still be able to deal with minor illnesses that occur. However, if you encounter people with some major illnesses, then you can let them see me. Let me be the one that will correctly cure them!”

“Correctly?”

The surrounding Blossom Heart Valley disciples gazed at Su Yun as he glared back at them. In their eyes, doubt was evident.

Many of the Blossom Heart Vallet disciples could not stand Su Yun. They wanted to punish him, however they were all stopped by Gui Mo Jue.

“If that is the case, how about you broaden my horizon?”

After saying this, Gui Mo Jue waved his hand to order some disciples to prepare some medical supplies.

These disciples that were normally elites were now cursing Su Yun in their hearts. Indeed, they were unable to control their anger, but they decided to let Su Yun treat some patients without any distractions. However, they made sure that he had no escape routes if anything went wrong.

Therefore, soon after, they directly went to one of the patients who was receiving some medicine from the sect. However, with before a stick of incense burned, an old woman who was suffering from pain knelt down on the floor.

The elderly woman was very grateful and gave thanks to the disciples.

The disciples were enjoying the patient’s praise as their faces

were evident with pride.

At this time, Su Yun was just shaking his head as he listened to the praise.

“Unlucky, this one is certainly unlucky!”

Listening to Su Yun’s words, Gui mo Jue felt really strange, “Little brother, is this what you intended to do?”

Su Yun did not respond. Instead, he went straight to the female disciple handing out the medicine and said, “Sorry to trouble you, fellow female disciple, but three inches above of the Tian acupuncture region, lies a embedded silver needle.”

The female disciple was startled as she could look at Gui Mo Jue for approval.

Since the Tian acupuncture region was not difficult, it would be fairly easy to remove the needle.

Gui Mo Jue just nodded.

After the female disciple saw his approval, she decided to see if there was an actual problem with the needle in the Tian acupuncture region of the elderly woman. She walked over to the elderly woman and asked her to wait. The female disciple took off part of the clothing to access the Tian acupuncture region on the back of the elderly woman.

She was shocked to find a silver needle embedded in the Tian point and the whole needle had become pitch black.

“What?” Gui Mo Jue indifferent eyes widened in shock.

The fellow female disciple who was giving the treatment and medicine face instantly became pale as she just stood there, dumbfounded.

“This elderly woman seemed to really have Spirit Heart Disease. Many people these days try to cultivate their spirit power, but countless people have to give up due to various reasons. Some of

them quit because they do not have proper cultivating lessons and do not know how to start. Therefore, they can only abandon cultivating. Nonetheless, improper cultivation of spirit power and aura resulted in blocked veins. It is well hidden, and usually remains undiscovered. Only until one becomes older does the illness flare up and begins to damage body, leading to the patient suffering a lot of pain. Usually, the Spirit Heart Disease patients die within a year. This disease is very common and it is very scary to people. However, it is not difficult to cure and there are even several ways. How about this little brother here uses some of the equipment of Blossom Heart Valley sect to correct this mistake, alright?" Su Yun asked.

The female disciple recovered herself and nodded her head as she gave her explanation, "This procedure was elder Yao Wang creation. It involves the use of the pollen Bleeding Blood flowers to be refined and smeared on the silver needles. In the body's two acupuncture points: Ju He and Liang Ge, the treatment was applied. It is currently the treatment that eliminates the unwanted spirit power from the body in the shortest possible time and thereby curing the patient. The implementation of this procedure was a few months ago. Everyone was cured with no problem! Not any problem!"

"Not now, but that does not mean nothing will occur in the future. Although the Bleeding Blood Flower's pollen is non-toxic, after it is refined, it will release an exotic fragrance. This fragrance cannot be allowed to stick on spirit power, for if this occurs, it will absorb the spirit power and the toxins will remain hidden in the body. How can this cure Spirit Heart Disease? Of course, it is not even a cure. Instead, it just absorbs the excess spirit power and the body's spirit power will decrease. However, her body will become more and more toxic as time goes on! Eventually, if you fail to correct this, within three months, the elderly woman will inevitably die. Even an immortal god (Tl: highest known cultivation) cannot stop it!"

“This...how is this possible?”

The surrounding disciples' faces became looks of horror.

Gui Mo Jue was also completely stupefied.

They really did not want to believe Su Yun. However, the needle's acupuncture points on the elderly woman illustrated otherwise.

Soon after, Su Yun walked towards a middle-aged man currently being treated.

“There is also this elite disciple who using Meridian Flush Method to cure spirit power irregularities in the veins and arteries. Although this method is very good, it is also very dangerous. Once even a small error occurs utilizing this method, the man's spirit power core would become completely shattered resulting in possible death. Although you are very skilled, it might not be this good in the future. To date, not a single tragedy has occurred, which is really lucky, but if this continues, I believe a tragedy will soon happen!”

As the surrounding people heard his explanation, the surrounding people were beginning to become afraid. Gui Mo Jue was even beginning to have difficulty caling the crowd.

After Su Yun finished his explanation on the drawbacks of the medical methods used in the Blossom Heart Valley, the scene became very quiet. The patient and the disciples of Blossom Heart Valley were deathly silent and the atmosphere was very tense.

After the speech, the scene had become like an uninhabited area, where no one dared to utter a word.

Gui Mo Jue lowered his head as he pondered the explanations. However, as one gazed at the Ghost Master, they could still feel the matchless authority he emitted.

He was the only person that was not completely shaken by Su Yun's speech. However, his heart was still pumping very quickly.

“Little brother, you seem to be quite knowledgeable in medicine and it even seems to surpass my Blossom Heart Valley’s knowledge...Since you have said the disadvantages of these medical procedures, do you have any way to improve these methods?” Gui Mo Jue asked.

“Of course!”

Su Yun said, “Not only do I have a way to improve the methods, it also will be much more convenient for your disciples to apply. From countless time spent researching spirit power of the human body, I have found another way to eliminate it, utilizing the Profound Spirit Power Heart pill.”

Profound Spirit Power Heart pill: a rare pill that is refined by Blossom Heart Valley Sect, which is refined from a large quantity of precious medicine ingredients. It is commonly used to recover or increase spirit power. It can even increase the effectiveness of the cultivation medicine. Therefore, it was once produced by Blossom heart Valley. However, it is well known that the spirit eyes would be completely ineffective for one hundred days. Therefore, the medicine’s effectiveness was never fully shown.

From this side effect, the drug quickly became useless trash, since no cultivator would take the medicine because of the detrimental side effect.

After Gui Mo Jue heard this, his calm expression suddenly became excited, “You...what did you say? You managed to solve the Profound Spirit Power Heart pill’s side effect? This is impossible, many elders spend countless years researching a way, so how could you know?”

“If you do not believe me, I can demonstrate it for you to see.” Su Yun lightly said.

Gui Mo Jue spoke without thinking, but continued, “Well, little brother, quickly come with me into the Blossom Heart Valley Sect. Quickly come!”

Then, he took Su Yun's hand and quickly headed inside.

"Wait a minute." Su Yun said.

"What?" Gui Mo Jue responded.

"There is no problem to tell you the medical procedure of this method, but...you have to pay me two hundred thousand spirit coins and two Profound Spirit Power Heart pills. Otherwise...I will not tell you my exclusive recipe!" Su Yun said.

"Two hundred thousand spirit coins?" Gui mo Jue frowned.

That was not a small number.

"It is currently a loophole in your medical expertise and it is a near perfect method for creating the Profound Spirit Power Heart pill...I can explain both of those to you. If you think they are wrong, then you can refuse to pay." Su Yun added.

As Gui Mo Jue heard this, he considered the situation for a moment. Then he immediately stood up, "Although two hundred thousand spirit coins is not a small number, but compared to what you said, it isn't much. Fine! Little brother, this time, this time, I, Gui Mo Jue will follow through. If what you said is true, the money will be given to you! Please!"

"Please!" Su Yun smiled as he stepped into the room.

Finally, the Blossom Heart Valley Sect restored calm and order.

People continued to line up, waiting for treatment.

Meanwhile, as Su Yun and Hui Mo Jue went inside Blossom Heart Valley Sect, it didn't take long for a white figure to suddenly descend from the sky...

"Why did the tracking technique for the Sword God lead to Blossom Heart Valley? Did he actually come to Blossom Heart Valley?"

Immortal Goddess gently said, as she was holding the round mirror and she gazing at the mountain top.

After pondering for a few moments, she put away the mirror and directly landed on the outskirts. Then she proceeded towards Blossom Heart Valley Sect.

Chapter 44 - The Pill King

Cuisine that is not magnificent cannot be considered a good cuisine. Similarly, if medicine is not magnificent, it is not a good medicine.

There were rare and famous medicinal herbs growing everywhere in Blossom Heart Valley. The diverse and numerous medicinal herbs and flowers that quilted over the fields formed a picture that was truly like a dreamy illusion. Furthermore, throughout the entire year, the medicinal herbs and flowers gave off a sweet aroma, causing the place to feel like a paradise on Earth.

In the middle of Blossom Valley Sect, there was a junction in one of the roadways. The right path of the junction led to a single domineering building, a grand pavilion. The pavilion design was original. It was not wide and not tall. Furthermore, it seemed exceptionally spacious, while on the right side of the pavilion, there was a chimney attached to the roof. Curls of smoke could be seen floating out from the chimney.

On the first floor of the pavilion, a plain, elderly bald man was in the middle of arranging herbs in an alchemist formation atop a large table. The elderly man had a long, white beard and, by the state of his sunken eyes, looked as if he had been awake for seventy days from his sunken eyes. Nonetheless, he looked very serious as both of his dry hands were constantly arranging the herbs into piles that seemed to be increasing without end.

He wasn't even looking at them; as his hands touched the herbs, he quickly took the right amount and organized it into the right pile.

After the medical materials were organized, a violet light immediately bursted out from the formation. The elderly man immediately stepped back to avoid being burned by the violet

light. After a few moments, the light faded. He nervously stared at the alchemy formation as the process began.

A pitch black pill had appeared in the center of the alchemist formation.

However, this did not make the elderly man happy. Instead, anyone who looked at his face could only see that it was filled with disappointment.

A voice emerged from behind him. “Using the alchemist formation...it seems to be even more difficult to use than the medical furnace, but it is certainly more efficient. Although the medical furnace is a stable, it is still a slow process. On the other hand, the alchemist formation is unstable but fast. The Pill King is very skillful to be able to utilize the alchemist formation for refining Absolute Foundation pill, which is able to stabilize spirit aura. It is commonly used to complete breakthroughs because it decreases the chances of making a mistakes that usually occur. It significantly decreased chances of death in devil techniques. However, the medicine currently has a side effect. That is, after ingesting it, the production of spirit power would drop by a lot.”

As the elderly man heard this, he uttered, “ah?” Then he turned around to look at the people walking towards him.

The person was a tall man wearing a white robe. He was young and handsome. He was tall, straight, and had a piercing gaze. His physique was certainly not bad.

“Who are you?” Pill King Zhang Mo frowned.

“Young Su Yun, greetings Pill King Zhang Mo.” Su Yun said as he bowed.

“Su Yun?” Pill King Zhang Mo moved closer to Gui Mo Jue beside Su Yun and asked, “Mo Jue, where did this Su Yun come from?”

“I don’t really know. However, elder, this person is highly adept at medical knowledge. He says that he can solve the side effects of

Profound Spirit Power Heart pill!” Gui Mo Jue responded.

“Solve the side effects of Profound Spirit Power Heart pill?” Zhang Mo face sank even more, “Truly arrogant nonsense! Young man, do you even know what are you talking about?”

“Of course.” Su Yun just nodded.

“If that’s the case, then go do it. I don’t like people that only know how to spout bullshit!”

After Zhang Mo shouted this, he turned his head back to his research.

Gui Mo Jue became tense as his eyes fell on Su Yun.

Knowing that he, Su Yun was now on stage, he went towards the alchemist formation beside the table. He skillfully used both of his hands to arrange the herbs in the right piles around the specific points of the alchemist formation. In addition, he incorporated his prior purchase at the market, the Withered Death Wood, which he broke off piece by piece and also placed in the alchemist formation.

Zhang Mo was slightly stunned, as his eyes began to be attracted by Su Yun’s actions.

Exact amounts, perfect combinations, with only a few moments, the arrangement seemed perfect. It was clear that this person was knowledgeable in alchemy.

Slowly, Zhang Mo’s cold face began to change.

.....

.....

Meanwhile, at the Su Family’s Main martial arts field.

Two figures were standing in the martial arts field.

Wind was blowing gently.....

As strikes of sword qi flew through the air, several iron statues that were erected in the martial arts field were shredded in an

instant. The sharp waves of sword qi clashed with the edge of a force field, causing the entire barrier to shake with a deep ring.

A long-haired, young lady was wielding a sword. She was sweating profusely and panting violently as she gazed at the result of her actions. Despite the destruction, she quietly let out a sigh, then tightened her hands around her snow sword and activated her spirit power again.

“Still not enough!” At this time, a cold voice shouted from the side.

The young female raised her eyes to look at the middle-aged man. He was cold and serious as he shouted, “This sword qi is still not enough! Continue to practice sword qi strikes!”

Continue to practice? She had already practiced for three consecutive hours.

Although the girl’s brow knitted, she did not resist. With only her willpower, she dragged her exhausted body, grinded her teeth and continued to practice sword qi strikes.

By sunset, she was still practicing.

“Alright!”

The middle-aged man finally relented and waved his hand. Then he said, “Wait for a moment before you take some medicine from the medical pavilion to recover your spirit. Then go back to cultivating, Qing Er, your time is very limited. You must understand that you cannot be lazy.”

“Yes master, Qing Er understands!”

Qing Er finally put down her sword as she weakly remained standing.

His master nodded and turned to leave.

“Master!” At this time, Qing Er suddenly yelled.

“Huh?” The master stopped in his tracks as he turned around to

look at her blankly.

Qing Er hesitated for a moment. Her cheeks were pale, but after a while, she finally asked, “Master, Qing Er has heard some rumors, that master set up a marriage for Qing Er. Is this really true?”

As master heard this, he was stunned. After a moment, he continued and said, “It is only words in the wind, do you really believe it? I am training you with the utmost care, so that you can contribute to the Su Family. I do not train you because of some baseless rumor. If you ask one more time, you will have to cut off your own ears! Hmph!”

After he said this, he left.

Qing Er stood quietly in place. After a long silence, she sighed. Her eyes were full of sorrow.

.....

.....

Inside Blossom Heart Valley Pill King’s pavilion.

“Great!!”

Many sounds of applause and joy burst from inside the pavilion; they was soon followed by bursts of laughter.

“I did not expect that this mere Withered Death Wood could actually synthesize with Soul Blossom and Vast River pill’s effect. This is really incredible! Little brother, quickly tell me, how do you know about this? Dare I ask who are your masters? Could this Zhang Mo actually have an opportunity to meet them?” Inside the pavilion, Pill King Zhang Mo eyes were blazing with excitement. His face was looking expectantly for the answer.

It was obvious, the young man in front of them, already evoked their entire attention, so the Pill King could not help but ask.

“My Medical Sect commanded to not disclose its name, but I can tell you a little bit. The sect comes from Gui Valley, it is very close

to Blossom Heart Valley. As one of the many small sects that you are aware of.”

The person standing in front of Su Yun was just laughing at the spectacle.

The words were half of true and half false. The master already understood this much; but as for the medical knowledge, it was actually learned from Blossom Heart Valley.

In his past life, he worked in this field for a period of time. The person that he was in contact the most was Medical Lord Zhang Mo. The crazy Su Yun at the time was full of questions and Zhang Mo often carefully took the time to answer them.

Therefore, in Su Yun’s mind, Zhang Mo was equivalent to half of his master.

No matter how high attainments Su Yun had in mind of medical knowledge or how strong his cultivation, in his mind, some bottom line must never be broken.

For the questions asked by Zhang Mo, Su Yun lacked no answer. As the Pill King asked question after question, Gui Mo Jue could only sit on the side. He didn’t even get a chance to interrupt.

This continued until midnight. Even then it still wasn’t over.

“Genius! You are really a genius, to actually have a medical knowledge of this magnitude at such a young age is magnificent! You really are a genius! Nevermind this master that resides in Blossom Heart Valley. Logically speaking, you could be considered as the genius of the entire Blossom Heart Valley! No, no! You are affiliated with my Blossom Heart Valley Sect, how are you still living outside? You must join my Blossom Heart Valley Sect!”

The Pill King Zhang Mo stood up and seriously gazed at Su Yun.

After Gui Mo Jue heard this, he was shocked, “Brother, recruiting disciples is not even your job?!”

Zhang Mo brow wrinkled as he responded, “What? Is it possible that with my position in Blossom Heart Valley sect, I am not even allowed to recruit disciples?”

“Of course you have the ability, but...” Gui Mo Jue returned a glance, but there was a clear reason there was an obstacle.

Although this person has vast amounts of medical knowledge, but with only this one point, how could they just recruit him. No one truly knows about him, how could they just recruit him like this? If they recruited him, wouldn't it cause a commotion?

However, Zhang Mo apparently just ignored this. Instead, with an angry face, he shouted, “I do not care! I do not care! Today, I guarantee I will recruit this guy into the Blossom Heart Valley Sect! In a moment, I will go directly to the Valley's Patriarch to complete this matter!”

Gui Mo Jue, “.....”

Su Yun's heart warmed up from this event. He smiled and said, “Honorable Zhang is kind, but junior has to say no thank you. Junior is already part of the Su Family, so I cannot join the Blossom Heart Valley Sect. Although I understand your offers, I have to abstain. Nonetheless, on the matter related to medical knowledge...if senior ever has any questions, you can feel free to contact this junior. This junior will personally come and answer them without withholding an information!”

After Zhang Mo heard this, his eyes flashed a hint of sadness. But the other party had already explained about this matter, so it was not polite to force his intentions. It was impossible and certainly a pity, so he responded, “Boy, I loved having a conversation with you! Your temperament is commendable for your age. You are an exceptional person! Despite this, you have to remember what you just said-Oh, in the future, you must come visit Blossom Heart Valley Sect numerous times!”

“This young junior will remember!” Su Yun responded.

Gui Mo Jue felt strange as he saw the exchange. Prior to this encounter, Su Yun was always lukewarm in conversing with him at best. Why was it that when he was conversing with Zhang Mo, he was this respectful?

“The hour is late, this junior still have some medical jobs! At this point, it is time to say good bye. Ghost Master, the agreement prior to this matter...will you honor it?”

At this time, Su Yun got up from the chair that he sat on while he conversed with Zhang Mo.

“Of course!” Gui Mo Jue nodded, “You solved numerous medical flaws of Blossom Heart Valley Sect. I won’t go back on my word! Quickly come with me!” After he said this, Gui Mo Jue left the pavilion.

However, right at this time, a sharp and crisp shout echoed through the air.

“Only correctly identifying the Nine Leaf Grass, how is it so difficult? Is it possible that my Immortal Sword Sect are really this behind in debts?”

This sound?

Su Yun froze for a moment, he had recognized the owner of the voice.

Gui Mo Jue accelerated his pace as he went towards the lobby.

In the front hall, several disciples with tense faces were standing there. Before them stood a female wearing a face veil. She was wearing snow white clothes and seemed like a goddess figurine.

“What happened?” Gui Mo Jue asked.

The goddess’ followers quickly walked towards them. They instantly saw Su Yun beside Gui Mo Jue.

“Is it you?” Both of the followers asked in unison.

“Why are you here?”

“To withdraw money!”

Su Yun exhaled and faced Gui Mo Jue, “Ghost Master, may you first get my spirit coins. I am in urgent need of them!”

“Alright, I will send someone there to withdraw the sum!”

Gui Mo Jue asked a disciple to complete this task. The disciple quickly nodded and immediately ran down the hall.

Afterwards, Gui Mo Jue faced towards the goddess’ followers and greeted her, “May I ask who are you?”

“I am the Immortal Sword Sect’s third elder, Long Xian Li!” (Tl: wow, took like 30 chapters to get a full name) The female coldly responded.

After the words came out, Gui Mo Jue and Su Yun became a bit scared.

Damn, how was she an elder of the Immortal Sword Sect. Was she related to the female at the battle of Gu Xie Mountain?

Nonetheless, this female did not recognize me, so there should be no problem.

Su Yun hastily calmed his surging heart. He still secretly remained wary of this person.

After the woman announced her identity, the surrounding audience took a deep breath. Gui Mo Jue immediately took action and quickly responded, “It turns out that you were an elder in the Immortal Sword Sect! Quickly, quickly, come inside. If some caused you any inconvenience, please forgive in that matter.”

“It is not necessary to officially receive as a guest. This time I just need to bother Blossom Heart Valley Sect for a moment. During my stay, I would like to not disclose my arrival. I wonder if that is possible?”

“Naturally, this isn’t a problem!”

“Also the Nine Leaf Grass?”

“If Immortal Sword Sect Elder requires it, Blossom Heart Valley will be happy to help!”

Although Blossom Heart Valley Sect’s influence was stronger than Immortal Sword Sect, its strength was still inferior. It was just not worth it for giving one batch of Nine Leaf Grass to offend such a major power.

For this female, Su Yun did not dare try to converse with. He just need to get his two hundred thousand spirit coins and two Profound Spirit Power Heart pills. Then, he will be ready to leave.

However, when he left, Pill King Zhang Mo asked a disciple to give a symbol to Su Yun. This way, Su Yun could freely enter and exit Blossom Heart Valley Sect.

Su Yun politely accepted it.

As Su Yun began to leave, Long Xian Li’s face suddenly changed.

She hastily removed the round mirror and looked into it. The point in the round mirror was actually moving.

“Why did it suddenly move? Was the Sword God aware that I sneaked here and is preparing to escape?”

Long Xian Li pondered for a moment. Suddenly she seemed to have thought of something and raised her head to ask, “May I ask, Ghost Master, who was the person that just left? What is his name?”

“Oh? Just that young man, ah? He is called Su Yun. It also seems that he is affiliated with the Su Family!”

“Su Yun....” Long Xian Li murmured.

Chapter 45 - Su Family's Summon

After leaving Blossom Heart Valley Sect, Su Yun immediately travelled to Broken Rush City with his newly earned two hundred thousand spirit coins. He would purchase all the ingredients that the sword elder required by following the list he had been given.

Although the ingredients were readily available, there were still some rare ones. It would take nearly two days, before Su Yun could obtain all the ingredients from the list.

After the ingredients were ready, equipped with the money leftover, he went to an upscale inn in Broken Rush City and rented a cultivation room. He was going to live there for awhile.

Following Sword Elder's instructions, he began to slowly refine all the herbs and ingredients.

Unlike ordinary living quarters, the cultivation was special. It was a room dedicated to contain spirit power using special furnishings that covered the room.

After using "Demonic Blood Array" for ten days, all the materials were completely refined. Following Sword Elder's instructions, he began to flush his meridians.

Firstly, flush his system.

The ingredients such as "Severing Tree Sap" and "Three Sun Mud" were used as the base. It was soon followed by adding "Birthing Flower Buds," "Luo Wolf Seeds," and "Heavenly Beast Heart Bones." These were all thrown into Spring Crystal Furnace to be thoroughly combined. After a few moments, a watery paste was created, which was then used to smear all over his body.

After three hours, the watery paste seemed to have been absorbed from his skin and disappeared.

Ten more days passed and his spirit power recovered. Once again, he used the leftover ingredients to refine some cultivation

pills.

Six more days passed and some cultivation pills were made. He ingested some of them.

Combined with the effects the watery paste that was absorbed by his body, the two substances worked hand in hand by flushing his meridians. Then it began to strengthen his muscles and tissues, especially his meridians.

Su Yun was sitting cross-legged in his cultivation room at the inn for four more days as he persisted in flushing his system. A large dark sludge discharged from his body by the end.

“This is really a great technique, not only does it strengthen body tissues and muscles, even a large amount of impurities were discharged from my body!” Su Yun sighed with delight.

“This is one of my Limitless Sword God Sect’s secrete techniques. It is natural for it to have numerous benefits!” The Sword Elder proudly responded.

Su Yun nodded his head. As he grasped the Everlasting stone hanging down from his neck, he immediately laughed: “Master, after flushing my system, are we now able to practice “Spirit Lord Aura?”

“Of course! After flushing your meridians, with the Everlasting Stone, coupled with a few of the cultivation pills you refined, transforming your regular spirit aura to Spirit Lord Aura will not be difficult! However, this will be somewhat painful, so kid, you better be able to endure this!”

“I will definitely endure through it!” Su Yun nodded with eyes filled with determination.

“That’s good! I will tell you the instructions and you execute exactly according to what I say! Remember, once you have converted to Spirit Lord Aura, your future cultivation results will lessen, meaning more time is required for cultivation. The

techniques to stabilize your aura require all four factors: steadiness, determination, precision, and quickness to develop and improve your aura!”

“Alright!”

“Listen up!” Sword elder took a deep breath, then he began to explain the methods one by one: “Spirit Wind Core, Cyclone of Lunar Ocean, Valley’s Sharpened Fang Eruption all will be opened to allow the channels for spirit power to flow through...”

Spirit Wind Core, Cyclone of Lunar Ocean, Valley’s Sharpened Fang Eruption...these are special points that control the flow of spirit power, so they are usually left alone. However, listening to what the sword elder said, it seems that for me to utilize the spirit aura, I would need to activate this acupuncture points...isn’t this just courting death?

Su Yun heart was scared just by thinking about it.

However, after pondering for a bit, he did not think that the sword elder was trying to harm. If the sword elder was ruthless, he would have already done it himself.

“Well...”

Su Yun just decided to go along with it and directly activated his acupuncture points in an instant. His whole body began to writhe in pain as it felt like his bones were scraping with each other. He tried to keep himself up as this happened. Su Yun’s complexion had begun to pale. Large beads of sweat was now streaming down his face.

Initially, he could still tolerate the intense pain.

However, as more acupuncture points were activated, the spirit power that was circulating in his body began to fluctuate more frequently as the intense pain continued to increase.

“Ah.....” Su Yun began to growl.

As the sword elder heard Su Yun's painful screams, he still did not stop.

This was the critical moment, he must not stop.

“Endure this pain, every spirit cultivator should have this amount of willpower. Su Yun, I do not need you to carry the burdens of the Limitless Sword God Sect. I just ask if you can utilize “Limitless Sword Arts” and demonstrate its former glory throughout the world. Then, I would be able to rest in peace.” The sword elder had a tranquil look as he said this.

The day began to brighten.

Outside was quiet. The inn was the same. However, inside his cultivation room, a violent growl suddenly erupted.

Gradually, the loud growling began to calm down to regular breathing.

“Su Yun, following the activation sequences of the mentioned acupuncture points, the process is now completed. The final step to transform your spirit aura's attribute would be to forcefully activate it. It requires to be circulated throughout your body once. By forcing it, you will be able to transform your spirit aura and begin to use Spirit Lord Aura. This is a crucial step, so you must not be careless! You must pass through this obstacle!”

Upon hearing this, Su Yun slowly calmed his nerves.

Break through this! He must break past this obstacle!

As his body was still throbbing with searing pain, which still did not disappear. The extreme pain was almost to the point that it began to feel numb.

In his spirit aura, the invisible barrier was met with a fierce collision. The main point was to open every acupuncture point one by one, and thereby transforming his tendons and muscles. However, the second part involves withstanding the recoil of his new Spirit Aura. The turning point was soon crossed and crackling

noises soon arose from Su Yun's body like the noise of firecrackers exploding.

On the surface of Su Yun, one would see a large number of protruding marks. The marks were only the size of small grains, but they were spreading throughout the entire body like galloping horses across the plains. These marking were present on Su Yun's torso and limbs...

“Pay attention! The collisions has begun! Inject spirit power! Reinforce your defenses, if they manage to break down your defenses, your meridians will be destroyed. You might even die from the side effects! You must persevere!” The Sword elder shouted.

After the sword elder said this, the chaotic process throughout Su Yun's body began yet again.

The surrounding area was filled with sword qi in disarray, which would any regular person endlessly shocked.

Su Yun did not have the slightest shred of laziness. He attentively waited for the incoming collisions throughout his body.

Bang!

With the first collisions, the walls surrounding his meridians were filled with deep dents caused by the chaotic spirit power. The spirit power lashing out was really damaging the surrounding area.

He could clearly feel the place of the collision. Su Yun quickly took advantage of the break in the collisions to use his spirit power to fill the defenses caused by the collisions. He then braced for the second collision.

Bang!

Another collision!

Quickly repair!

And it continued!

The third collision!

Quickly repair!

The fourth collision!

Quickly repair!

The fifth collision!

Quickly repair!

The sixth collision....

Su Yun was sweating all over his body. The spirit power inside his body was almost completely exhausted. He repaired the barrier once again. The padded barrier within his meridians was scattered and smashed through after the sixth impact.

Finally.

His spirit power was now completely exhausted and was unable to continue to repair the barrier.

Su Yun's heart tightened as his body tensed. He could not imagine what would happen in the next second.

However, the next phase left him completely stunned.

His spiritual perception of his entire body stopped functioning. It no longer gave birth to spirit power of his former spirit aura. The collisions between his meridians had calmed down.

"Could it be...that it ended?" Su Yun muttered.

The sword elder responded.

"Spirit Aura depleted. Your meridians were not broken. The transformation to Spirit Lord Aura was successful. In the next hour, you will not be able to recover the slightest amount of spirit power. Then, your whole body would begin to output spirit power of Spirit Lord Aura. Su Yun, this is great! I have not seen many people as resilient as you. Congratulations on transforming your spirit aura to Spirit Lord Aura!"

After Su Yun heard this, a smile of joy suddenly emerged on his face.

Nonetheless, he could not laugh long. His eyes soon darkened and he collapsed to the ground directly....

Su Yun woke up the next day. Su Yun did not dare waste his time. After eating his breakfast, he immediately sat cross-legged and began to cultivate once again.

After the transformation to an attribute spirit aura, his meridians expanded to more than double their original capacity. The capability of his spirit perception also increased, amounting to three hundred and eighty one. However, the even more amazing part was that he repeatedly broke through cultivation stages. He directly leapt into tenth stage of spirit novice realm. (Tl: last stage of 1st realm)

He really did not think that Spirit Lord Aura would actually enhance his cultivation level.

This one...the Everlasting Stone must have played a crucial role in that.

Su Yun gloomy pondered.

Although he condensed his Spirit Lord Aura, learning the first sword of the Limitless Sword Arts would become easier, his current Spirit Lord Aura was still very weak and dull. He needed more practice.

Practice aura.

The easiest method was to frequently utilize his spirit aura, which would allow his body to become familiar with his spirit aura. Allowing his meridians to flow with spirit power again and again would allow his body to adapt. Like a person exercising, as long as he exercised in the long term, his body would become more resilient.

The most important factor affecting the speed of practicing aura

was the recovery of the spirit power after use.

Su Yun was rather familiar with the continent, so he had one way to restore his spirit power quickly. It was a precious area.

After a distance of four hundred kilometers beyond Broken Rush City: Five Colored Cliff.

Obtaining some rations and a fine stallion, Su Yun rushed there at full speed with a steady pace.

The Five Colored Cliff was very remote. It was over a fifty kilometers away from the nearest village, so there was rarely people here. Su Yun could freely practice in this place.

Of course, the only thing that was worth noting there was to always beware of the clashes at Five Colored Cliff.

The next few cultivation sessions were fairly boring. Every day, he would need to deplete his Spirit Power in his Spirit Lord Aura. He had to become familiar with his new Spirit Lord Aura and constantly experimented.

Over time, coupled with the sword elder's patience to thoroughly explain Spirit Lord Aura, Su Yun gradually began to improve.

He began to use his Dragon Engraved Blade. He attempted to activate his Spirit Lord Aura on the Dragon Engraved Blade to.....manipulate.

Initially it was very shaky, the sword was like a paper airplane in the air. It was always shaking and could not stabilize. However, after a few days of training, he became proficient with the Dragon Engraved Blade.

Nonetheless, its lethality was still weak.

Nearly a month of training at this point, Su Yun had to say that the Limitless Sword Arts were exceedingly difficult. He never imagined that it would be so difficult to master on blade, but ten million blades....to what extent was his limit?

Despite this, even if it was difficult, it could not be delayed. After several months of hard work, he still had not entered spirit intermediate realm. Until that time, did he even have strength to achieve anything he needed at all?

After thinking this, he did not dare be lazy at all. He focused on training himself.

“What is the source of this determination in this kid’s heart? Why is it that once he started to train himself, he just can’t stop...”

The sword elder could not help but mutter as he saw Su Yun hyper focused in his training.

This continued for half a month more.

Su Yun had now become familiar with Spirit Lord Aura. It was now possible to control a single sword to kill his enemy. Although his spirit blade was small, but it was always improving.

Today, after his Spirit Lord Aura was exhausted, he sat cross-legged at the Five Colored Cliff. He meditated to recover his breath.

Suddenly, a urgent buzzing sound emerged from his waist.

Su Yun opened his eyes and fetched the talisman around his waist to look at the urgent message.

It was a summon for the outer sect of the Su Family.

“What is it?” The sword elder puzzlingly asked.

“It was a notification talisman from the Su Family. Once there is an emergency situation for the Su Family, they might use the talisman to recall members of the outer sect of the Su Family.”

“After saying this, you mean that Su Family is basically ordering you to go back?”

“Yes!”

“Then what do you do?”

“I do not know!” Su Yun shook his head.

After allowing him to ponder for a bit, the ground suddenly began to tremble.

“Now what is happening?” Su Yun asked after he was startled. He was standing while swaying from the shaking ground.

Chapter 46 - One Sword, Two Blades

Training

The vast grounds were lightly shaking like an earthquake. Su Yun quickly jumped off the giant boulder he was on and looked around.

However, the grounds began to shake more and more violently, causing surrounding rockslides and even a rift began to open up from the ground.

“An earthquake?”

“Wrong!”

The sword elder continued, “There is a dense amount of spirit power....observing the property....it really is True Divine Aura! Kid, be careful!”

“True Divine Aura?”

Su Yun’s heart was startled, but he still managed to quickly step back. He was surprised to find that not far from the ground that was split open, a massive stone skull emerged.

Su Yun’s eyes bulged as he looked at the underground monster with a surprised face.

If one only looked at the height, it would be five meters tall. It was a small giant that was covered with pebbles and rocks. There were many strands of grass stuck around the rocks. On the head of it, there were two green eyes the size of green peas.

“This...is...a Profound Stone Golem?” The sword elder was completely stunned.

“Profound Stone Golem??” Su Yun thought what he heard was prosperous.

“So the thing that hid underground that was feeding was a

Profound Stone Golem?”

“There is no way I am wrong!”

The sword elder continued, “This Profound Stone Golem has already been living here for a long time. The special rocks underground of this cliff has already been eaten from him. I reckon that this guy just wants to find another place. He wants to just find another special rock vein and just continue feeding!”

Su Yun was overjoyed as he heard this, “It is said that the spirit core of Profound Stone Golems have very powerful effects. Once it is worn on a body, it can be activated during a battle. It can greatly enhance the person combat capabilities!”

“Oh? You are thinking about this? The cultivation level of the Profound Stone Golem should be at the fifth stage of Spirit Core Disciple. You are only tenth stage spirit novice realm. You alone cannot even be considered as an opponent for this Profound Stone Golem.” The sword elder just shook his head.

“The Profound Stone Golem is a giant. It has amazing physical power and especially high defense. It is called the king of the monsters of fifth stage of spirit core realm. However, since there are advantages, there will be disadvantages. The Profound Stone Golem s extremely slow. It was even reported that its speed cannot be compared to a mid stage spirit novice cultivator. My current speed is about three times the normal spirit novice cultivator. Therefore, I am at least two to three times faster than it. I should be able to deal with it if I just rely on the Limitless Sword Arts to kill it.”

“Ha ha ha....” After hearing Su Yun’s words, the sword elder just laughed, “Boy, what you just said was too good to be true. This guy has only its defense and power? I reckon that you cannot even break through the spirit aura of this beast! Fundamentally, you shouldn’t even be able to hurt it!”

“What senior says is correct! However, it’s that actually a good

thing? I can just cultivate Spirit Lord Aura and form a sharp, pointed and highly lethal aura that even if it might not necessarily break through its defense, I will still be practicing it. By practicing and gaining combat experience, there is no harm to it. However, once I kill this Profound Stone Golem, it is one sword, two blades!" (Tl: idiom: Killing two birds one stone)

"The idea is good...but your spirit power is depleted. What means do you have that can allow you to recover?"

"Profound Spirit Power Heart Pill."

"Oh...I had forgotten you have that little guy!"

"The Profound Stone Golem has no long ranged attacks, so just use the first sword of the Limitless Sword Arts!"

"Since it is like this, why don't you try it out? However, what are you going to do about Su Family's matter?"

"I will set it aside for now. After all, I am an outer sect disciple, but was actually called in for the first time!"

Su Yun breathed out and equipped his engraved dragon blade. Then, he charged to the statue Profound Stone Golem covered in rocks. As he neared it, his engraved dragon blade extended out and headed straight for the Profound Stone Golem.

Dong!

The blade penetrated its defense, and stabbed right through one of the pea sized eyes. However, it only went two inches deep.

"Roar ! ! ! !"

The Profound Stone Golem let a painful and furious cry. Then it recovered and charged straight for Su Yun.

"The eyes are fragile, so I can easily break through its defense. However, the power of the attack was clearly too light and not enough." The sword elder said.

He could only gaze as Su Yun was covered with Spirit Lord Aura.

It was the result of Su Yun's capabilities. Soon after, another thrust of the engraved dragon blade followed.

Hua!!!

As the qi strike flew right into the Profound Stone Golem, it quickly spread out and tightly wrapped the Profound Stone Golem. Right after, Su Yun followed Limitless Sword Arts first form to execute his move.

One could see the engraved dragon blade piercing through the golem's right eye.

Like a drill, the rapid spin formed a large number of sparks as the Spirit Lord Aura clashed with the golem. Countless fine fragments broke off as the drill like aura penetrated the golem.

“Roar!!!!”

The Profound Stone Golem was now in more pain. It had become more and more furious and quickly struck a huge fist out to grab the rotating engraved dragon blade and take it out. Soon after, it flung the blade mercilessly back at Su Yun.

The blade quickly circled back in a loop and once again shot straight towards the Profound Stone Golem.

Clang!

How sharp was the engraved dragon blade covered with Spirit Lord Aura? However, as it clashed with the Profound Stone Golem's body, it could only leave a scratch on the surface of the golem. The next strike only left a small dent.

Doesn't hurt, doesn't tickle! (Tl: idiom: superficial, weak)

The Profound Stone Golem decided to rush Su Yun and intended to tear him to shreds.

As Su Yun saw this, he quickly retreated back to keep a suitable distance between him and the Profound Stone Golem. If he was too daring, he would have been truly torn to shreds.

He did not dare disperse his attacks. Instead, he focused on one point and repeatedly continued his barrages.

At first, it was only a shallow indentation. Like this, one after another, the strikes stacked up. Gradually, the results began to show themselves.

.....

.....

After a whole day.

In Su Family's Market Square.

At this time, a large number of people were gathered here. Inner disciples were keeping the area under control. The rest were from the outer sect.

On the stage of the Market Square, stood the elder Su Shi Long of the inner sect began survey the crowd.

The people began to quiet down and were afraid to speak after the elder stepped onto stage. They were waiting for elder Su Shi Long to say something.

After the crowd quieted down, Su Shi Long nodded his head, and said, "Are there anyone else that is going to arrive?"

"Reporting to elder. Other than Su Da, Su Xin Lu and a couple of outer sect disciples, everyone else has already returned!"

An orderly person came up and respectfully said, "Senior, Su Da and Su Xin Lu should be arriving back soon!"

Then he added another comment.

"Ah!"

Su Shi Long nodded his head, but did not say anything.

Just then, somebody uttered a cry.

"Su Yun?"

Su Shi Long brows knitted, “Where did he leave to?”

The steward in charge of the outer sect hastily said, “Senior, I do not know the whereabouts of this disciple.”

“Oh, did you not send him to perform some tasks?” Su Shi Long asked.

“No, the outer sect disciples are not barred from travel. At this moment, I do not know where Su Yun went to, but you already activated the distress signal. I believe we will see him very soon!”

“Return back?”

Su Shi Long sneered, “The Su Family is so mighty, yet how did it produce a good for nothing like Su Yun?”

The steward could not speak and could only lower his head.

Su Shi Long shouted, “Everyone listen to me. This time, an important task has been assigned from the Main House! There is a trial that everyone must participate. If any dares to refuse, you shall be punished accord to Su Family’s rules and expelled from the Su Family. Does everyone understand?”

“Yes, sir!” The outer sect disciples shouted.

“Very good!”

Su Shi Long lightly nodded his head, “This time, for the task, the main house has prepared a thousand badges: Blood Jade Crystals. This object is located in Su Family’s grounds, Martial Bone Mountain, which is able to produce a huge amount of it. For the first mission, the Martial Bone Mountain will be opened tomorrow. The Inner Sect will provide everyone with twenty Expelling Blood Meridian Pills, ten Spirit Power Regeneration Pills, five anti-poison pills, and ten Satiety pills. Furthermore, the inner sect will provide a certain number of weapons. Those who manage to obtain Blood Jade Crystals can exchange them for contributions. One badge will equal to five contribution. Those who obtain five hundred points will be eligible for promotion to the inner sect!

Good luck everyone!”

After this speech was uttered, a moment of silence fell upon the entire Outer Sect Market Square.

“Martial Bone Mountain?”

“Su Family’s Forbidden area....the soldiers that served the Su Family are buried in Martial Bone Mountain? This place.....is it actually open to us?”

“This Martial Bone Mountain is extremely dangerous. Rumors are that everywhere on the mountain has highly toxic miasma gas. There are numerous powerful beasts, even beasts worse than spirit intermediate third stage....If we enter this Martial Bone Mountain....wouldn’t we be unable to even come back??”

“My god, sir, this.....this task, if we go...isn’t it very dangerous?”

After the silence, the inner sect disciples immediately broke out in discussions. They had all kinds of doubts, fears and hesitations. The area became a bustling scene and people’s emotions began to come out.

“Silence!” A cold voice shouted.

Next, a mist-like spirit aura flew over and covered the entire market square.

Everyone could not help but shudder. They stopped shouting and the square immediately quieted down. No one dare to make another sound.

Su Shi Long scanned the entire plaza with his cold eyes as if he wanted to devour everyone.

After a few moments, he opened his mouth and shouted, “This is the task that was issued by the main house. The figures are what our Family needs. I do not care what methods you use, I just ask everyone to participate. No matter what you want to do, you must all enter Martial Bone Mountain tomorrow. Within ten days, you

must obtain one thousand Blood Jade Crystals for me!”

“However, you do not have to worry about the issues concerning safety. We will arrange seventeen elites of the inner sect to accompany each team. What do you guys have to worry about? Well, this task has now begun, everyone go and immediately prepare!”

“Yes, sir!” The crowd just replied without asking anything.

Although what Su Shi Long said sounded good, the outer sect disciples were not completely fools.

The main task for the inner sect from the Main House was just too dangerous, so it was given to the outer sect. It was extremely dangerous for the outer sect disciples to brave the Martial Bone Mountain and obtain Blood Jade Crystals. The outer sect was basically worthless, plus Su Shi Long had the backing to do so. They even had a time limit for the task.

Su Shi Long deliberately ordered the outer sect to do his bidding, knowing that they were basically giving their lives to him, but everyone was helpless. In the Su Family, other than the patriarch, no one else dared refute Su Shi Long.

Fortunately, however, at least they were being led by a dozen inner sect experts. Otherwise, if a bunch of disciples from the outer sect went into the Martial Bone Mountain, don't even utter annihilated, at least seven out of every eight disciple would have died. With an elite leading, they at least had a chance against the more powerful beasts.

The disciples dispersed and went towards the equipment warehouse to receive the supplies that were prepared from Su Shi Long.

“Correct!”

Just then, Su Shi Long suddenly shouted as he was a far distance from the outer sect.

“Senior, do you have any other orders?” The outer sect steward hastily said.

“Outer sect disciple Su Yun is delaying Su Family’s important matter. As for punishment, for him to participate for this time, other than the anti-poison pill and satiety pills, eliminate all the other items. If he refuses to participate at this trial, just immediately follow Su Family’s regulations and destroy his cultivation, do you understand?” Su Shi Long coldly said.

The outer sect steward was immediately stunned.

“Did you not catch it? Do I need to repeat it?”

“No, no....small....this small guy is very clear on your orders!” The steward quickly responded.

Su Shi Long gently crooned, turned around and left.

At this moment, at the square edge.

“Su Xing Yang, where did Su Yun go? You’ve got to find a way to contact him. Ah, such trials must be attended, otherwise we will be prevented to eat!” Su Xin Yue anxiously glared at her brother as she said this.

“I....I will drag people to find him.” Su Xing Yang said as he touched the back of his head.

“Be sure to let him catch up during the trial, otherwise we’re finished!”

Chapter 47 - Mandatory Trial

At the Five Colored Cliff.

Clang clang clang clang clang....

A magic-like long sword was flying through the air and trying to drill through a huge profound stone golem.

The flying blade was spinning as it constantly bombarded one point on the stone golem's body.

When one looked at the stone golem, it was covered by extremely dense rocks. However, at this time, cracks began to appear throughout the rocks and a large web-like crack began to spread over its body.

The Profound Stone Golem's speed became slower and slower. It seemed to have spent most of its strength. However, to control the flying blade, Su Yun was also upset at the costs.

His spirit power was almost all exhausted and the Spirit Lord Aura he was using was also almost exhausted.

Although the flying blade was nimble and quick, it was still extremely simple to control.

Firstly, the flying blade was wrapped with Spirit Lord Aura, which was absolutely essential. If not, the flying blade would have no penetrating power and it would be difficult to keep fighting. It would be slow and could very well be easily knocked away.

Secondly, the flying blade could only be controlled from the range of Spirit Lord Aura. Otherwise, if it was outside its range, the Spirit Lord Aura would dissipate and the flying blade would fall to the ground immediately.

Finally, there is still the maneuvers of the flying blade during the battle.

This required highly skilled use of Spirit Lord Aura to control the

maneuvers during the flying blade's clash.

The current Su Yun could only use basic sword strikes like stabbing or slashing. He was certainly unable to use any martial techniques with the flying blade.

This was just the first sword form of blade manipulation of Limitless Sword Arts. Imagine handling dozens of blades or.....hundred of blades, how difficult would that be?

No wonder Limitless Sword Arts practitioners were all complete masters with blades.

Su Yun had now become breathless as he continued to control the blade. Sweat was raining down from his face.

The spirit power within his body was depleted, but the Profound Stone Golem refused to fall to the ground.

Su Yun's heart was anxious as he tried to prolong his Spirit Lord Aura with his spirit power. They continued to bombard each other with attacks.

Finally.

The engraved dragon blade began to shake.

Su Yun no longer emitted the slightest amount of Spirit Lord Aura. His spirit power was completely exhausted and he was too tired to continue. He did not even have any energy to run now.

"Kid, you can't seem to hold on now!" The voice of the sword elder emerged at this time.

"I never would have thought, that this golems vitality would be so tenacious. I almost clashed with it for a full day and it still won't fall down...." Su Yun was almost sitting on the ground as he quickly said this in one breath .

"Who told you to be so arrogant boy? The strength of this golem is much higher than you, how could you have ever killed it?"

The sword elder laughed as he said it, but continued, "Never

mind, just let this elder help you out.”

“Help?” Su Yun asked.

At this time, he felt that the spatial ring containing Limitless Sword Arts began to shudder.

Su Yun quickly extracted out some spirit power. This time, it was a lot more deep and profound spirit power transferring from the Sword Arts. This spirit power was much more focused. The spirit power pierced through his palms and spread throughout his body, filling up the dried up spirit power.

“Spirit Lord Aura!” Su Yun surprising said with confused eyes.

“This elder transferred some of my Spirit Lord Aura power to you. It wasn’t easy. Kid, remember to thank me later!” As the sword elder said this, his voice began to weaken a bit.

“For the sword elder’s kindness, Su Yun would never dare to forget.” Su Yun seriously responded.

As the spirit power coursed through his body, the spirit power was restored somewhat. As his spirit power was recovered, his entire body began to recover its strength.

Su Yun exhaled, and he extended his right hand again and use Spirit Lord Aura to wrap around his engraved dragon blade.

The blade that was controlled immediately was restored to its former sharpness, but it did not directly fly towards the golem. Instead, it quickly rotated in Su Yun’s hands and one could see Su Yun charging towards the golem. He was directly going for a frontal assault against the golem.

Crash ! ! ! !

A loud sound emerged from the golem’s body.

The huge stone body gradually split apart and stone blocks fell to the barren ground.

Among them, a walnut-size core exhibiting a pale yellow light fell

with the smaller stones that crumbled to the ground.

Compared to this yellow piece of gravel, the other small stone seemed to be very insignificant.

After Su Yun saw this, he became breathless. He was finally relieved and dragged his weak and tired body to pick up the stone.

“This is really a golem’s spirit core! Awesome!”

Su Yun wiped the sweat from his forehead as he delighted celebrated.

“At long last, this old fellow here has no other business to attend to! Time for me to rest!” The sword elder said with relief.

After these words were said, his presence quickly disappeared without a trace.

Su Yun hung the golem spirit core on the Everlasting Sword Sheath. Then he quickly placed the engraved dragon blade back into the sheath, and quickly packed his luggage. Then he turned around to return back to town.

After he arrived back in town on his stallion, he went directly back to the Su Family.

The Su Family’s talisman was a simple thing that was used when the Su Family wanted to contact the disciples for something.

If the talisman emitted a red light, it represented that the Su Family had gave out an important task that required all the disciples from outside to return back.

If the talisman emitted a yellow light, it represented that a famous person had asked Su Family to accomplish something on their behalf.

Usually, the task was just an order issued for the inner sect. If the Main House released an order, it would be white light. Furthermore the white signal would not be just that simple, the patriarch of the Su Family could even directly talk to the holders of

the talisman in the ear.

This treasure was not constructed by anyone Su Yun knew of. He only knew that the creator was from the Su Family. This ability is related to the mystical void escape skill, even though it was only used to transmit information. Most disciples could never grasp a complicated skill like that.

He wanted to return back to Su Family a day ago.

Su Yun was riding his stallion and changed from his black robes to his previous uniform. He was carrying his Everlasting Sword Sheath and walked into Su Family's Bronze Avenue.

As the stallion's hooves galloped through the streets, it let a rhythmic ge deng, ge deng sound echoing the streets.

Su Yun rode towards his residence.

Along the way, he saw that the streets were deserted. He could not even see any disciples from the crowd. He only managed to glance at some middle-aged or older people....

Su Yun's heart began to feel suspicious.

Where are the disciples?

"Disciple Su Yun, is that you?"

At this time, a middle aged man quickly came over. He glanced at the majestic stallion that he rode and his face lit up in surprise, "You are actually riding stallions. Could you have made a fortune outside?"

"Ah, it's uncle Su Zhi." Su Yun smiled, "I did not make a fortune, a stallion such as this isn't worth much money anyways!"

"Oh...." Su Zhi did not ask for more, but instead looked worryingly at Su Yun, "Nonetheless truth be told, now that you are back at the Su Family, every young disciple is attending the mandatory trial to Martial Bone Mountain. Since you are still here....I heard the seniors talking with elder Su Shi Long

announcing the trial details yesterday. He specifically mentioned you, because you were not there, he was ready to ruin you! You better hurry and go to the outer sect to ask the steward for more information. Then he will be free from the guilt you caused him!”

“Go to the Martial Bone Mountain to train?”

Su Yun was taken aback, “However, it is in Su Family forbidden grounds. Furthermore, there are countless beasts there. How can Su Shi Long send outer sect disciples to accomplish this, isn’t it just sending the disciples to die!?”

“This you do not have to worry about.” Su Zhi honestly smiled, “It is said that the inner sect is led was a master a group of elites, all right?”

“Is it?” Su Yun brow knitted as he worryingly said.

Martial Bone Mountain was usually off-limits. According to each master of the house, every follower of the Su Family was buried under Martial Bone Mountain.

Some say that there are an extravagant number of elites buried in the mountains that cultivated. If they were to find them, they could live carefree lives forever.

The Martial Bone Mountain was never open, why would it be suddenly opened now from the the inner sect?

Su Yun tried to recall a few things from his memory.

However, after pondering for awhile, he still could not recount any memory of this.

he could not help but clench his fists. Remorse bursted from his heart.

No memory of this?

Why? Because at the time, I, Su Yun was still completely drunk....I missed the trial and did not ever know about it....

This life, I will never repeat the same mistakes again!

I will never be a debauchee again.

“Uncle Su Zhi, when did they enter the Martial Bone Mountain?” Su Yun asked after he sighed.

“Today, early in the morning, they went in. Most of the day, they were entering.” Su Zhi was feeling regret as he was thinking of all the disciples.

Su Yun nodded, lifted the reins and said good bye to Zu Zhi. He rode his stallion back to his cabin in the woods.

He did not intend to actively search for the outer sect steward.

Martial Bone Mountain was too dangerous. Otherwise, considering the best conditions, even with the patriarch of the Su Family leading, it would not be easy.

Not to mention the large forces that were entering throughout the day, he was sure that the beast asylum within the family was not so simple. Now entering the forces that were going to the Martial Bone Mountain alone, it was no different than courting death.

“Su Yun!” Just then, a loud shout came from a distance.

Su Yun pulled his stallion to a stop and raised his eyebrows as he looked at the source of the shout.

He saw a column of guards appear, all wearing black helmets marching towards him.

It was a bunch of the guards of the outer sect that was part of the inspection team.

He saw them running quickly toward him. Then they surrounded him.

“Dismount!” The leading guard shouted.

Su Yun frowned, glanced at cultivator that was only spirit novice ninth stage. He considered for a moment and then dismounted.

“Come with us!” The guards shouted.

“Where to?”

“Go with me to see the steward!” After Su Yun heard this, he did not say anything.

Two guards walked over and tried to escort Su Yun back.

However, just as their hands touched Su Yun’s shoulders, they were subjected to an abrupt burst of power surging forth. The two men were jolted back.

The two guards stared in shock at Su Yun and was surprised to see that he lead his stallion and whispered, “I can go there myself.”

The several guards looked at each other and then glanced at the captain.

The captain nodded with a stern face and guards did not try to take action.

Just like this, after just arriving back at Su Family, he was already being taken away.

However, this was the obvious outcome.

The bunch of guards did not take him to the inner sect steward at town hall. Instead, they led him directly away from the area and to the direction of the disciples in Martial Bone Mountain.

Su Yun looked at the sight with disbelief.

“Where are you guys really taking me?”

“Martial Bone Mountain!” The guard captain coldly said.

“Martial Bone Mountain? Are you sure you are not mistaken?”

“Mistaken? How is it possible! Hurry up!” The guards seemed to be too annoyed to explain and loudly urged.

Su Yun took a deep breath and endured this treatment. For the time being, he would follow them. However, his hand had already secretly extended to his Everlasting Sword sheath. If the matters

led to it, he could immediately release his engraved dragon blade.

After about an hour later.

The guards who took Su Yun elder Su Shi's area that was south at the bottom of the mountain.

This mountain was dark and hazy. It pierced through the dark skies, the green hills with thick with grand trees that were airtight. From gazing at the mountain outside, the whole mountain seemed very ominous. It made everyone very cautious, especially the atmosphere that it emitted.

A revolting and foul smell floated down from the mountain and made everyone uncomfortable.

In front of the mountain road ahead, stood rows of armored guards. Behind the standing guards, there was a huge enhancement formation with all the entrances sealed. Yet in front of all these guards, they were waiting for the outer sect disciple Su Yun....

Chapter 48 - Inside Martial Bone Mountain

Su Yun had forgotten about the outer sect steward. He only knew that the old man was sly and calculating. The outer sect's resources and rewards that were issued were all deducted by him. He was stingy and sarcastic. Many people behind his back just called him the old fox.

The steward squint to see Su Yun and chuckled. He sarcastically barked, "You actually decided to come, young master Su Yun!"

Su Yun walked over and glanced at the steward. Then he glanced at the enchantment formation behind him, and asked, "I do not know why the steward's guards have brought me here for. What do you want me to do?"

"What can you do? Senior Su Shi Long order has already been given. You will participate in the trials at Martial Bone Mountain!"

"To participate in the trials?" Su Yun was surprised for a moment.

"The trials are an important task given by the Main House. It is open for all the disciples of the inner and outer sect. There are even numerous benefits, how about it? Do you want to join us?" The steward said as he glared at Su Yun.

"Of course not!" Su Yun quickly responded.

"Impudent!"

The old Fox's face change and loudly shouted, "You are a disciple of the outer sect. You want to reject a task given by the Main House. To tell you the truth, because you did not return in a timely manner, as punishment, you will not receive all the supplies provided by elder Su Shi Long. Instead, you only get five satiety pills and ten anti-poison pills! Su Shi Long issued an order, you have to attend the trial! You obviously cannot just leave!"

"Right now, there is just me!" Su Yun eyes blazed in anger, "I am

only at spirit novice realm and am going to go alone to Martial Bone Mountain. This is simply seeking death. Furthermore, there is only this much supplies, aren't you guys just sending me to my death? To the point of no return?!"

"So that is to say that you do not want to go?" The old fox steward narrowed his eyes as he said this suspiciously.

As Su Yun saw this, his heart darkened.

He reluctantly asked, "If I do not go....what will you do?"

"What?" The old fox shouted, "Su Shi Long already said explicitly that you must participate during this time in the trial. You must enter Martial Bone Mountain. If you do not enter, you will be defying Su Shi Long's command. To go against Su Family's elder, you will be expelled from the entire Su Family! You're cultivation will also be destroyed!"

After his harsh words, the other guards behind him moved away from Martial Bone Mountain and began to surround Su Yun.

As main guards of Su Family, their strength was already in spirit intermediate realm. They were powerful and unfathomable for the current Su Yun. It was impossible for him to beat them right now.

Su Yun took a deep breath and pondered for a moment. Then he raised his head and said, "So, well, I will go to Martial Bone Mountain, but before then, could I go to some markets to purchase some supplies!?"

"No, you can only have the two pills with you! You are not allowed to bring any other items!" The old fox chuckled.

Su Yun's heart almost leapt out. However, to maintain a calm appearance, he took the two bottles of pills and silently went inside Martial Bone Mountain.

"Open the enchantment!" The old fox shouted.

Ka ! ! ! !

An odd sound echoed through the mountains.

As everyone watched the massive blue colored barrier split to form a two-meter gap.

Su Yun was still somewhat hesitant to enter, but in the end, he just walked through the barrier.

“Brat, even in your former position, the Su elder did not like you. Now that you are in the outer sect, but still dare to be arrogant enough to kill an elder’s son, Dong Fang! Well, looks like Su Shi Long wants you dead!”

As the old fox gazed at Su Yun’s leaving figure, his mouth flashed in a creepy smile.

It left in a flash.

Su Yun did not see the expression.

The old fox turned around and quickly left the area.

Whoosh!

Just then, a piercing sound burst forth and was aiming straight for the guards of Martial Bone Mountain.

“Be careful your excellency!” The surrounding guards shouted.

The old fox turned around and looked at the incoming blade. He suddenly became terrified.

It seemed that the slender flying blade was directly flying here.

On the blade’s slender body, there was a glimmering, yet chilly dragon engraved on it. As he looked at the marking, he felt horror. His scalp was tingling and he was very uncomfortable.

The old fox’s legs became soft. He was scared and quickly ran back. He was just a steward for the outer sect. He was old and his cultivation was not much. he has experienced a lot, but he had never saw such fierce flying blades.

What’s more, the blade was flying?

Was it the actions of the Immortal Sword Sect? However, the Immortal Sword Sect would never aim for a simple target like him, especially killing a cultivator of a major sect.

As the flying blade was about to pierce through the old fox's heart, the sinister atmosphere began to spread out.

“Stop attacking the steward!”

A guard with quick reflexes, who had not been stunned by the strange weapon immediately jumped from the side and slashed away the flying blade.

The flying blade that was slashed away was still constantly rotating. However, it did not fall to the ground, instead, it maneuvered back aiming for the old fox again.

This strange phenomenon confounded everyone present.

The old fox dodged a little too late, so one of his arms was cut off. Blood was spurting out from the wound. He was rolling on the ground screaming again and again in pain. His face was completely pale.

The other guards also began to recover. Seeing this situation, how could they dare to stay in a daze? They quickly rushed to confront the strange flying blade.

Except....as the flying blade made several maneuvers in the air, it abruptly stopped. Then it suddenly flew back into Martial Bone Mountain's direction. The enchantment formation was not closed off yet, so the blade just disappeared from view.

Ba da!

A hand stretched toward the empty air and seized the blood stained engraved dragon blade flying through the air. Su Yun's eyes gazed at the old fox writhing in pain, who eventually fainted. Afterwards, he began to walk towards the depths of Martial Bone Mountain.

Martial Bone Mountain.

The largest forbidden area of the Su Family.

Just wanting to enter Martial Bone Mountain required ingestion of anti-poison pills, which effects at optimal conditions would last one full day.

However, these supplies were clearly not sufficient. He currently had nothing. The materials left inside his spatial ring had no use in this survival situation. If he stayed like this at Martial Bone Mountain, he was afraid that it would lead to a miserable fate.

That being the case, it was not a good decision to just wait around the edges for the trial to be over and quickly leave once it was over. He still needed to obtain some of the Blood Jade Crystals for this task. He did not want to enter the inner sect using this.

After making his decision, Su Yun found a huge boulder around the edge of the barrier and sat down. He was cross-legged as he began meditating.

From the Five Colored Cliff, his Spirit Lord Aura was still very erratic. He could finally begin to calm down his spirit power.

The sun gradually disappeared over the horizon to signal the day was over.

In the entire day, except for the explosions and screams that transmitted through Martial Bone Mountain, there was nothing exceptionally strange that happened.

After a while, his Spirit Lord Aura was finally fully restored with spirit power. However, Su Yun did not dare to practice techniques using his Spirit Lord Aura. Once his spirit power ran out, if unexpected situations arose, it would be terrible.

With nothing else to do, Su Yun removed the Heavenly Crystal to analyze it.

When the Heavenly Crystal had been used at Gu Xie Xin, it was

still in the recovery phase.

Fifty days have passed since that month and the Heavenly Crystal was restored to about eighty percent.

Suddenly, a thought had occurred to Su Yun.

Energy recovery?

If the Heavenly Crystal could not be used because of the lack of energy within it, then....if he took the initiative to inject spirit power or a form of energy into it, that should accelerate its recovery.

With this amazing idea, Su Yun hesitated for a long time. He had wanted to ask the sword elder from his Everlasting sheath, but the sword elder was still in a deep slumber within the sheath. The golem that required him to transfer some spirit power to Su Yun really took its toll. This was just an inconvenience.

After thinking about it over and over again, he decided to try it.

With the Heavenly Crystal in his palm, Su Yun fiercely took a deep breath. With one hand covering the remaining blackish parts of the Heavenly Crystal, he settled down and began to activate his Spirit Lord Aura. Then he began to inject his spirit power inside it....

Jiue! !

Like a rocket about to take off, the Heavenly Crystal suddenly bursts forth with energy waves.

Su Yun whole body was slightly shaking as his spirit power was transferring to the Heavenly Crystal. It was difficult to pull away from the crystal as it forcefully consumed his spirit power and greatly weakened his Spirit Lord Aura.

After a while Su Yun was taken aback and laid down. He hastily withdrew his right hand and the Heavenly Crystal fell on the ground.

The Heavenly Crystal simply fell off his palms in an instant. In a flash, he was on the ground and his body did not have an ounce of strength left. His body became abnormally weak as if he incurred a serious illness.

“What....what happened?” Su Yun weakly gazed at increasingly more dark Heavenly Crystal. His heart was filled with doubts.

He carefully sat cross-legged again and took some deep breaths. He restored a bit of his spirit power.

Then, he picked up the Heavenly Crystal and took a closer look at it. However, it did not seem that the energy within the Heavenly Crystal was restored even a little.

Was it even effective?

Nonetheless....the Heavenly Crystal was instantly able to suck his energy away, leaving him weak and frail. Just how deep and profound was the need of this mysterious artifact?

Now that the only insurance he had was the Heavenly Crystal. He had no more cards. The Everlasting Stone could only be used in cultivation. As for the Limitless Sword Arts, even though he gained some insight in the first sword form, but it was still very mysterious. It would be best not to compete with any elites.

Exhaling, Su Yun carefully put away the Heavenly Crystal. Of course, he did not dare inject anymore spirit power inside. Otherwise, he could accidentally inject too much and put him in a crisis.

After resting at the huge boulder for a night, his Spirit Lord Aura finally recovered thirty percent.

At night, the entire Martial Bone Mountain was terrifying.

The sky was hazy, so the light from the moons and star did not seep through the clouds. At night, everyone's eyesight would be very limited. In fact, it was unwise to move at night. Therefore, during the night, there were no movement from the disciples in

Martial Bone Mountain. There were even less roars from beasts.

Finally, dawn was approaching.

Bang bang bang bang bang

The chain of consecutive explosions caused the cross-legged Su Yun sitting on the huge boulder to be awakened.

Su Yun quickly opened his eyes and gazed at the surround area in the mountains.

The sounds of the explosion were not far from here. At his position, he could survey the surrounding area halfway up the mountain, which seemed to have more than a dozen trees toppled over. A little of Swift Wind Aura was emitting from that area in the mountains. It was mixed with the rancid smell that floated down to where Su Yun was at.

Was it some Su Family's disciple?

Was it possible that someone met a fierce beast or was it civil strife between disciples?

The Main House issued a mandate for the inner sect, which then transferred the mandate to the elder Su Shi Long. He took this task to the outer sect. Although Martial Bone Mountain was dangerous, but the rewards were also very attractive. How could there not be fights between the outer sect disciples? One thousand Blood Jade Crystals were not a lot, since the conservative estimates of Martial Bone Mountain was that it had around two thousand Blood Jade Crystals. If one removed the most dangerous places, the Su Family should be able to collect one thousand crystals.

Su Shi Long's roles was not simple. It involved leading the inner sect disciples to come help him. The inner sect disciples that offered help would probably also be rewarded after this task was completed. For his objective, any disciple could use any despicable means to obtain the crystals.

Such as murdering disciples that managed to gather some Blood

Jade Crystals.

Crash.

At this time, at the grasslands beside the giant boulder, a few shadows suddenly rushed out.

Su Yun nerves jumped, and he immediately pulled out the engrave dragon blade. Like a cheetah, he was vigilantly staring at the disciples that had just rushed out.

As he analyzed the three male and two female disciples in front of him, he noticed they were covered in blood and were all panting. They seemed to have already suffered through a lot. Everyone's hands were holding a lot of Blood jade Crystal. Whereas a man dressed in brilliant yellow clothing and a female was draped in a rich red long sleeved dress. They both emitted killing intent and the two disciples weapons were both covered in bright red blood.

The Martial Bon Mountain gave birth to beasts mostly in the dark species. The monster blood was usually black or if not blue, but was just a little red.

Therefore, the blood on the two weapons were most likely human blood.

As the five disciples were fleeing, they saw that Su Yun was on the boulder. Many of them was completely surprised.

Despite this, soon after, the young man wearing the yellow armor emitted even more killing intent. With the blade in his hands raised in the air, he quickly charged towards Su Yun's place....

Su Yun eyes bulged, "This mother*****...."

Chapter 49 - He left just like that

However, after they saw that it was Su Yun that jumped off the boulder, with a pair of joyful eyes, they both said, “Finally, we found the person we wanted. Fellow brothers and sisters, may we present Su Yun.”

“Su Yun?” The female was slightly surprised even now, and asked, “You are the one they call trash Su Yun?”

“That is me!” Su Yun said as he nodded.

“How can only one person be here? What is your team doing?” The yellow dressed young man stopped his assault as he lightly asked.

“Dead!”

“Dead?” The response stunned all five disciples, “how did they die?”

“Green Jacket Demon killed them!”

“Green Jacket Demon?” The five disciples hearts fluttered spontaneously. Their faces became full of horror as they spun and looked around.

“Spirit Core Realm Green Jacket Demon is here? How can that be?” The yellow dressed man eyes were beginning to fill with horror. Then he hurriedly asked, “Where did you meet it?”

“Just right here?” Su Yun said.

“Here?”

“Yes, right behind you!” Su Yun suddenly looked very frightened.

The several nervous disciples immediately turned around to look, but....

There was nothing behind them.

The yellow dressed man hastily turned his gaze back and could

only see Su Yun was suddenly fleeing across the trees behind the boulders, heading straight for the mountains.

Flee?

The five people were completely stunned.

The yellow dressed young man's face burst with red and white anger. He discovered that Su Yun was just playing around and became furious. With his teeth clenched down, he shouted, "Chase Him!"

"Wait!"

The red sleeved female behind him quickly said, "He is nothing but trash. He probably does not even have any Blood Jade Crystals. Chasing him is useless! We already killed many inner sect disciples and luckily did not meet any powerful entities on the Martial Bone Mountain. If we meet something too powerful, we'll be wiped out. We are only wandering around the outskirts of the mountain and only fishing around for small fish. We are waiting for the time to end and then go out to complete the task. Wouldn't it be the better option to just exchange the badges for rewards in the Su Family, rather than just go chasing after that guy?"

"What red sister said is right. We've got more than enough of Blood Jade Crystal. We should not repeatedly risk ourselves. Instead, we can randomly wander around the outskirts of the mountain and take some more of the disciples returning. We must not lose our lives. I've heard other teams are beginning to kill anyone on sight. They are too enticed by the benefits of the inner sect of the Su Family. If we meet some elite disciples of the inner sect, we'll be no match!"

After the yellow dressed man listened, he could only endure the turmoil in his heart. He nodded and said, "Fine, we'll just stay around the outskirts, but if we meet that trash Su Yun, we will not listen to any more of his nonsense. We will directly kill him."

“I’ll help you kill him.” The red sister said.

....

As for the fleeing Su Yun, he was just fleeing around the other direction of the outskirts of the mountain. On the contrary to his direction, the five disciples were travelling down the mountain path.

After arriving at the bottom of the mountain, he accelerated his pace towards the place that the explosion originated from.

Although these five disciples were all from the outer sect, but they did have power. In particular, the yellow dressed young man and red sleeved lady were at spirit novice realm tenth stage. The rest were around ninth stage cultivation, but none of them seemed to have activate their Spirit Aura attributes. Compared to Su Yun’s Spirit Lord Aura’s spirit power, they could hardly put up a fight.

As Su Yun carefully sneaked near the explosion, he did not just step out from the underbrush. Instead, he was carefully hiding the bushes as he was staring in full alert and patiently waiting.

The explosion had left the land filled with bumpy texture covered with blood. There were several broken bodies lying on the ground. The female and male disciples were all just lifelessly lying on the ground. There were even a few bodies with their heads even gone.

He waited for a stick of essence, but seeing that the surrounding area was still very silent, Su Yun came out of hiding. He quickly ran towards the corpses.

The yellow dressed and red sleeved disciples fled towards Su Yun not long after the explosion sounded. They were presumably worried that the explosion would attract other teams, which coupled with some injuries of the five disciples, they quickly left in fear. If they were fighting with this team’s opposite, they would have been doomed. Therefore, they probably just took the Blood Jade Crystals and fled.

Su Yun guessed that they probably didn't have the time to check these disciples for treasures and valuables. Therefore, he boldly decided to pick up the valuables from the corpses of the disciples after waiting for a bit.

The countless corpses on the ground was charred black, which would scare most people to death. Across all the corpses backs were large holes, which was caused by the yellow dressed young man's five member team sneak attacks. However, to Su Yun's surprise, these disciples were all completely dead. Furthermore, they were all disciples from the inner sect.

After looking at one of the corpses brand across his belt, Su Yun sucked in some air in surprise.

These disciples actually dared directly attack disciples of the inner sect. They were truly bold.

Nevertheless, he didn't dare waste any time. He search through all the corpses and obtained numerous anti-poison pills and satiety pills. These would easily keep him supplied for over ten days. There were over twenty Spirit Power Regeneration Pills and seventeen healing pills. There was even a stealth talisman among the corpses.

Since his supplies were scarce, with these newfound supplies, Su Yun could support himself for a longer period of time.

The remaining items were all useless, since these inner sect disciples seemed to be really poor. Therefore, Su Yun did not take the rest. They could not even afford a spatial ring to store the items. Instead, all these items were attached to their waists.

Otherwise, all these materials would have been stuffed inside their spatial rings. Soon after, Su Yun quickly left.

Too many disciples died in the area, therefore, even if it didn't attract any of the other groups. Su Yun was afraid that before long, the corpses would attract a large number of wild beasts.

He returned to the original place he stayed. He decided that he would continue to stay in the outskirts at the bottom of Martial Bone Mountain.

Only, most of the disciples decided to stay at the bottom of Martial Bone Mountain. One could note the sound of violent explosions floating through the air coming closer. The surrounding air at the foot of the mountain was thick in spiritual aura. However, soon after, one could hear a chilly sound emitting.

“Su Xuan Yuan! You really have a lot of courage, you actually dared to strike our heads! ! What? You want our Blood Jade Crystals? Hmph, then just make sure you have the ability to finish the job!”

“Su Hong Xiu, I was really too blind. I actually trusted you snake-hearted people! Fine! Fine! Now you guys are following Su Xuan Yuan! Alright! Today, I’ll just send you guys on your way!”

“Do you really want to fight? Why are you talking so much crap?”

After the shout was uttered, the sounds of fierce fighting began to rang.

After Su Yun heard the noise, he rolled his eyes. He quickly circled around to get a closer look as he held his stealth talisman. After a while, he stepped closer to the scene of the fighting.

After taking a closer look.

An opportunity.

The three male and two female disciples that were going to battle against Su Yun were now fighting against another four disciples. These nine disciples were now in a fierce battle to the death.

Just judging from the conversations, it seems that the yellow dressed Su Xuan Yuan was acquainted with the four disciples that they were battling. However, Su Xuan Yuan and Su Hong Xiu was ruthless to these four disciples. They were actually aiming to kill

these four disciples in an ambush. They wanted to obtain the Blood Jade Crystals, but these four disciples were alert. Therefore, the ambush did not succeed.

Su Xuan Yuan and Su Hong Xie were only tenth stage spirit novice cultivation, but the other four disciples were only stage nine cultivation. There was a noticeable cultivation gap. However, Su Xuan Yuan's five man group was already in a battle, so they already consumed a lot of spirit power. They were already in a poor state and five against four was not an overwhelming advantage anyways. The two groups were now in a stalemate at the bottom of mountain.

As Su Yun saw this, his heart pace quickened.

Although during the previous competition, he killed Su Kuang, which banned from further participation, but it was not to say that he could not enter the inner sect. However, it seemed that it Su Shi Long was biased and Su Yun would have no peace. Obtaining massive amounts of Blood Jade Crystals were of little use, unless....

Suddenly, Su Yun thought of some great ideas.

Perhaps, he, himself did not need to enter the inner sect. By letting some of his trusted fellows enter the inner sect, it would also yield the same benefits.

After thinking about this, he quickly took a breathe. Then he quietly removed the engraved dragon blade from his spatial ring and pondered his situation for a moment. Then he also removed the mask that he used at Gu Xie Xin and covered it over his face.

Half of the mask was broken off, so it only covered a part of his face. Nonetheless, it was enough.

The Su Family explicitly prohibited disciples from killing each other, but during this trials, as long as people were not found out, killing within the sect was fine.

Su Yun was not confident that he could eliminate all the

disciples, so it was necessary to disguise his own identity. Otherwise, if he didn't managed to eliminate everyone, after leaving Martial Bone Mountain, he would be in trouble.

He draped the black swordmaster's robes over his clothes and equipped his everlasting sword sheath. With his face partly covered by the damaged mask, long hair floating over his shoulders, he felt truly free and at ease. He was completely unrestrained.

Su Yun was stilled hidden behind a clump of shrubs, vigilantly string at the fight on the other side. Nonetheless, he was secretly watching how both sides of the battle was faring.

From his hiding place, he was able to counter against both sides. Furthermore, he was not restrained in the front or the back.

The battle in front of him had already became very frantic, so they could afford to pay attention to the there. Therefore, none of the disciples discovered Su Yun's hiding place. Nonetheless, they were still paying attention to the surroundings, since when a fight breaks out, it would perhaps attract other groups to arrive. If that happened, the disciples were disperse as soon as possible.

Fortunately, the disciples were presently at the edge of Martial Bone Mountain. The surrounding area did not even have any movements.

Puchi! (Tl: sound of a slash, if you have any suggestions, just leave it in the comments)

A tense groan sounded.

Su Yun could see that within the four man group, a handsome male disciples eating a slash. His entire arm was almost completely slashed off. He seemed to be in severe pain as his face became paler and paler.

The male disciple could only retreat. He wanted to avoid Su Xuan Yuan's continuous onslaught. However, Su Xuan Yuan was like a

drug addict and crazily launched his onslaught as he launched a divine sword skill. A massive amount of spirit power and sword aura was unleashed towards the fleeing male disciple.

“Be careful Senior Xiao!” A female disciple dressed in dark green cried out as she moved to redirect the incoming divine sword skill.

With surprisingly ease, she effortlessly redirected the incoming sword aura and managed to protect the male disciple.

Only, with four against five, this action would only yield more despair. Right after the dark green dressed female disciple deflected the attack, her previous opponent quickly came over to to launch a sneak attack against her.

Just like ice and snow, the swaying sharp blade arrived. She could wait as it arrived before her eyes....

Chi! !

“Uggh....” The dark green dressed female disciple could only tremble a bit as her heart was already pierced through by the blade.

“Han Xiang!” Su Xiao stared at the female disciple in front of him with her mouth overflowing with blood. Her body slowly slumped down and his mind slowly blanked out.

“You....you actually killed sister Xiang. I will eradicate you!” The other male disciples eyes turned red as grief and rage engulfed their hearts. With a huge roar, they desperately rushed forward.

“Too overconfident, even if we are slightly wounded, killing you guys will be very simple.” Su Hong Xie sneered as her hands gripped tightly around her dagger, facing the two incoming male disciples.

The handsome male disciples clutched his injured arm as he looked at the dead Su Han Xiang. Tears began to fall from his eyes.

Men do not cry easily, but his heart ached with pain.

One of his friends were now dead, how could he not be consumed by sadness?

If it was ordinary people, would they even be able to stand up at this time? Perhaps, if he moved earlier, he may have prevented this from occurring.

Despite this, Su Xiao still retreated a few steps and a resolute complexion appeared on his face. He clamped down his teeth into pieces.

He painfully looked at his two fellow disciples frantically battling against Su Xuan Yuan and Su Hong Xie. He abruptly turned around and painfully dashed off.

“Su Xiao!” The two remaining disciples were stunned as they witnessed his action.

In this moment, he...he actually decided to escape.

“Ha ha ha ha, this is your good companion, in the critical moment, he left on his own because of of fear! Su Han Xiang’s death was wasted on him! Pity she is dead! Ha ha ha....” Su Xuan Yuan laughed.

“No! We believe in Su Xiao!”

At this moment, one of disciples suddenly clenched his teeth. Although his eyes were heavy and cold, it did not have a speck of hatred within them.

“Brother Su Xiao knows that he would inevitably be defeated if he was your opponent. If this battle were to continue, we would all be killed. Instead of this, it would be better to run away!”

“In the coming months, Su Xiao will help us take our revenge!” The other male disciple shouted loudly.

Both of the disciples had already understood the reason for Su Xiao’s actions. Nonetheless, they decided not to retreat, but instead stayed to fight to the death.

Their objective was very clear.

They were stalling Su Xuan Yuan for Su Xiao.

Since it had come to this, they already accepted their fate of death.

Su Xiao turned his head as his distance increased and watched the scene occurring. A lot of tears overflowed from his head, but at the moment, he refused to regret his actions.

Only by preserving his life would he be able to take revenge! Only then, for Su Han Xiang, for Su Luo and Su Jian would he be able to take revenge!

Only if he survives, would he be able to take revenge....

Su Xiao clenched his fists and turned around.

But.

As he began to turn around, a tall and thin figure appeared before him. It was quietly just standing there.

“You left just like that?” It uttered.

Su Xiao trembled and slowly stepped back. Then he asked, “Who are you?”

“The Limitless Sword God.” The figure said.

Chapter 50 - A Resolute Person's Revenge is Ten Years

“Limitless Sword God?”

Su Xiao sluggishly looked at the person in front of his eyes. He was wearing black robes, and a partially broken mask covered his face. He could not help but tremble a bit as he analyzed the situation.

“Why did you flee,” The mysterious figure asked.

Su Xiao clenched his fists and looked over to the left. He did not want to expose his tears to Limitless Sword God. He grudgingly answered, “Even adding me into the fray, we could never be Su Xuan Yuan’s opponent. Not to mention my injured arm, by continuing, we would only be annihilated. Only by preserving my life will I be able to have my revenge. A resolute person’s revenge comes in ten years.” (Tl: idiom: meaning not to be impatient to get revenge)

“This time, you do not need to wait ten years. I have come to kill!”

As the Limitless Sword God said this, he suddenly rushed forth and ran towards Su Xuan Yuan’s direction.

“Kill?” Su Xiao was stunned.

He hastily tried to sense Limitless Sword God’s aura attribute, but it was an extremely domineering and sharp aura. It was similar to Swift Wind Aura, but it was much quicker....and even more powerful.

However, it did not count as a powerful cultivation level; so in total the figure was at most a spirit intermediate disciple, even though the killing intent he emitted was very fierce. Nonetheless....did he have some kind of grudge with Su Xuan Yuan?

Furthermore....just what was his objective?

Whatever. I do not care!

Su Xiao gritted his teeth.

The intense hatred in his heart was burning for the disciples. Su Han Xiang's death did cause him to collapse mentally, but it did not make irrational. There wasn't a chance before, but now, the opportunity for revenge had come.

Su Xiao made his decision, with a determined look, he said, "Han Xiang, I will trust him this one time. Even if I lose, it is no big deal. I will sacrifice myself for you!"

Resolved, Su Xiao endured the piercing pain as he used his own blade to slice off the remaining part of his nearly torn off arm. The one armed disciple rushed forth, following Limitless Sword God.

As for the person called Limitless Sword God, when he approached Su Xuan Yuan's position, his hands suddenly flashed with movement. He had drawn a large, glowing dragon-engraved blade from his sheath.

One could see him pull out a blade flower, which caused a strange aroma to reappear. It began to cover the blade, making it like a cocoon. Soon after, he raised the blade up.

Whoosh!

Sword Qi flew out from his blade, like an arrow released from a bow, it aimed straight for Su Xuan Yuan.

As this sharp sword qi appeared, Su Xuan Yuan sensed that someone had appeared. As he looked at the arriving people, his face flashed a look of surprise. However, soon after, he sneered, "Come on. Come on. Looking at your spirit power, it doesn't amount to much. Yes, it is not nearly enough. What's more, I still have not killed enough people!"

After he said this, he hastily shifted to the right a few steps and

slashed away the grappling Su Jian. He pushed him towards Su Hong Xiu, while he raised his own blade and his spirit power exploded forth. He was rushing towards the sword qi strike.

Clang!

As the sword qi strike was hit in mid air, it flew off in the air.

“I have never seen an enemy that easily discarded their weapon when facing an opponent. You are the first one!” Su Xuan Yuan licked his dry lips as he gazed with strong killing intent.

He equipped his Huan blade and quickly stepped in Su Yun’s direction. His blade pointing down and dripping with blood from the tip, it was a frightening sight.

But this time.

He suddenly stopped and slowed his pace.

He only saw the figure raised his hand. Then both hands made a gesture, which seemed to resemble a signal.

“Is it a spirit skill?”

Su Xuan Yuan’s brows knitted as he had a bad feeling. He soon accelerated his pace and rushed forth.

As he and his blade were getting closer to their target, the mysterious man’s killing aura was becoming more and more terrifying.

Yet.

The man wearing the broken iron mask, carrying the sword sheath stood motionless, still....

He closed his eyes.

Did he disregard his defence?

“Did he have some secret move?” Su Xuan Yuan’s heart tensed, but soon he abandoned his concern. “This kid is not even a spirit intermediate disciple, what do I have to fear? Die!”

Hu!!!

The Huan Blade seemed to have roared as it was shrouded in spirit power. He was planning to cut Su Yun in half with this blade starting from the forehead.

This blade, was he really aiming to cut him in half?

Whoosh!

At this moment, a sharp spirit sword strike swept over.

It was like a thousand needles striking directly in Su Xuan Yuan's back.

He stiffened as he stopped his action. His complexion changed and he let go of his Huan blade. Soon, his whole body was full of pain.

Puchi!

The blade from before which had seemingly flown away had come back. The dragon-engraved blade actually pierced Su Xuan Yuan from behind, directly through the heart.

“Well.....”

Su Xuan Yuan directly coughed up blood as he faced the mysterious man in the black robes.

As he glared at this man, he suddenly noticed something.

The main blade that he used to kill was actually this blade! However this blade....wasn't it flung away?

“Damn! Damn! I will kill you!”

Su Xuan Yuan utilized the last bit of his will and fiercely activated his spirit power for one last-ditch attack. He quickly readied his blade.

However, the mysterious man only raised his foot and firmly kicked Su Xuan Yuan straight in the chest.

Bang!

Su Xuan Yuan was sent flying from the kick. The move also caused his heart to burst open; so as his corpse spun through the air his chest was completely ripped open. When his body crashed, it was accompanied by a large amount of bloodied entrails and flesh....the fire which had momentarily started from the strike, was quickly extinguished as he tumbled onto the ground.

Su Xuan Yuan trembled a few times as he lay on the ground. Then he died.

On the other side, Su Hong Xiu was alarmed as she witnessed the situation.

“Who are you?!” Su Hong Xiu panically shouted.

However, the iron masked man simply ignored her. After finishing up with Su Xuan Yuan, he was heading straight towards the location of the others. The strange flying blade was also flying with him, aiming straight for her.

When had Su Hong Xiu seen this divine blade technique? She had heard the the Immortal Sword Sect had many techniques like this, which were unheard of. As she saw the flying blade aiming straight for her, she bolted off like an arrow shot from a crossbow.

The other three accomplices did not hesitate to abandon their assault as they witnessed the situation. They all turned around and fled.

Although they still had higher numbers, but as Su Hong Xiu analyzed the situation, she was certain that if they fought, they would not be the opponents for the terrifying enemy.

Su Yun never wanted them to escape. The engraved dragon blade shrouded in Spirit Lord Aura was very quick and immediately closed off the distance. In an instant, it cut through one disciple and pierced right through his head.

At this time, Su Xiao finally caught up. He ran like a madman and rushed in front of the mysterious figure. He tried to stall the

fleeing disciples without any regard for his own life.

Su Hong Xiu fled with more speed as she saw Su Xiao gaining on her. She saw the flying blade behind her head cut her shoulder and caused a wound. Su Xiao relentlessly used this opportunity to launch his attack. Su Yun's sword made another turn to her head, and Su Hong Xiu was also beheaded.

The remaining two could not escape the power of the flying blade and naturally, they also died.

In an instant, the death match was already over.

This area was now bathed in the blood of the dead disciples.

The smell of blood in the air even overshadowed the revolting aroma that emitted naturally from Martial Bone Mountain.

Su Yun lightly flicked his hand and the controlled engraved dragon blade flew towards the everlasting sheath. The blade blurred through the air and crashed straight into the sheath. In a blink of an eye, it disappeared.

Su Jian had already bled to death, Su Lao was still alive, but he can't fight anymore. It was probable that they would not be able to last past the next day in Martial Bone Mountain.

Su Xiao gazed at Su Hong Xiu's body with lackluster eyes. Those disciples were now lying dead on the ground. They had lost all their lives.

The revenge was completed, but how could it be enough? Everything was already lost.

Su Yun's eyes swept past him, but did not say anything. He combed through the battlefield and search for Blood Jade Crystals from the corpses of Su Hong Xiu and their group.

After everything was looted, Su Yun was ready to leave.

As he neared Su Lao's resting place, he paused for a moment to think. Then he took at a bottle of healing pills and placed it beside

the weakened disciple. Then he quickly left.

Although Su Yun was not a good man, he still had principles.

This individual had truly helped them in a life and death crisis. How many people were like this in the real world? Su Jian or even Su Lao, both disciples were grateful in their hearts.

“Wait!” Just as Su Yun was about to leave, Su Xiao suddenly shouted.

Su Yun momentarily paused in his steps, but he did not say anything.

“Why me?” Su Xiao nervously asked.

Su Yun just remained silent and did not say a word.

“I will remember the kindness, Limitless Sword God!”

Although these words did not mean much, but they were very heartfelt.

“Then you must make sure to remember yours words!” As he said this, the man walked away.

Soon he disappeared.

In fact, helping Su Xiao was also Su Yun’s intention.

After facing off with Su Xuan Yuan’s group, he still had combat reserves remaining. When Su Yun took action, it would have been difficult to stall them. However, with Su Xiao’s help, it was a different story.

Secondly, he saw himself in Su Xiao’s predicament. Hopelessness, helplessness....Intense thirst for revenge.

Perhaps, it was the trust that Su Jian and Su Luo had for Su Xiao, which he admired.

Su Yun did not care, maybe he did not want this outcome for the future, but at least he got what he wanted.

After removing all the supplies from the bodies, he had

accumulated a total of two hundred and eleven Blood Jade Crystals! This accounted for two percent of the total crystals needed. It was already sufficient to exchange for qualifications to enter the inner sect.

But this was still not enough, he needed at least....another two hundred crystals.

Could he obtain more from killing disciples?

This obviously wouldn't work. After all, he was just one person. Alone, he was pretty much just another prey.

Besides that, wasn't there a law?

Su Yun gazed towards the peaks of Martial Bone Mountain....

The only choice was to gather.

....

Half a day later.

Kacha.

A piece of Blood Jade Crystal was mined out from the rocks Su Yun was at.

Su Yun smiled, "I never thought that Martial Bone Mountain would actually have so many Blood Jade Crystals. With a some effort for half a day, I already mined nine pieces!"

He quickly threw the piece into his spatial ring and already looked around. Then he fled to some grass growing to the sides of some outcropping rocks. He cautiously moved to look for more.

Here, in the valleys of Martial Bone Mountain, a myriad of places produced Blood Jade Crystals. Nonetheless, it was very dangerous. It wasn't the demonic beasts. It was because of people like Su Xuan Yuan, disciples with evil intentions. If he ran into them, there was no guarantee that he could even escape with his life.

Ta ta ta ta....

Then, the surrounding area suddenly bursts with mild and rapid footsteps.

Su Yun quickly stiffened and quickly laid down. He became completely motionless.

He saw a number of outer sect disciples rushing towards his current location at a rapid pace. They were panting as if they were escaping from something. Nobody seemed to notice the person hidden in the grass as they rushed past.

Very quickly, this group of disciples had left.

However, a few seconds had just passed, a bloodied inner sect disciple arrived. Then he left and chased after the outer sect disciples.

Looking at the killing intent in his eyes, Su Yun had already understood the situation.

Despite that, Su Yun was still confounded by why did the inner sect disciples not band together? Why were they supposed to help the outer sect disciples anyways?

Until they left, Su Yun continued to lurk in his hiding place.

As he decided to move after a stick of essence, he met a disciple of fourth stage spirit intermediate cultivation.

To avoid a battle, he quickly made a detour.

On the way, he saw many corpses of the disciples from the SU Family. Some of the beasts were feeding, some corpses were mutilated, and some were plundered by others. Most of them were covered with not the slightest trace of supplies.

At the places where there were corpses, there would probably be no place to mine any Blood Jade Crystals. So once Su Yun saw some bodies, he would immediately change his direction and seek elsewhere.

After two days passed, he had finally obtained ten more pieces.

Nonetheless, over time, the Blood jade Crystals within Martial Bone Mountain would become scarce. If one wanted to mine it, it would become very difficult.

Other than murdering other disciples for their crystals, there was no other way.

Because of the intruding disciples, plus the constant battles, constant casualties, many of the demonic beasts sleeping with Martial Bone Mountain had awakened. They became active throughout the eerie mountains.

Every single day, not few outer sect disciples ended up in the mouths of demonic beasts. For the inner sect disciples, it was a little better. After the seventh day, six inner sect disciples had died.

No one would have expected that this trial was turned into a survival of the fittest competition.

The outskirts of the Martial Bone Mountain was already sealed off. It would take another ten more days before they opened. Since Su Shi Long issued the order, who from the inner sect would dare object?

As Su yun wandered through the hills a few times, he did not see Blood Jade Crystals anymore. He could not help but sigh. He was deciding whether it was better to find a place to hide and just wait for this trial to end?

Dong! Dong!

At this time, not far away from him, a few turbulent sounds were made. It was soon followed by a lot of trees crashing down and smoke billowing into the air.

Was there a fight?

Su Yun's eyes gazed at the origin. After pondering for a few moments, he carefully closed in towards the source of the sound.

Chapter 51 - Hidden Killing Intent

Nothing at the new area could be hidden by the grasslands with the exception of the trees found everywhere.

As Su Yun stumbled upon a tall tree, he quickly jumped and with a few strides, he marched up through the branches and foliage. He carefully used the dense foliage of the trees as cover while he closed in on the sound.

Soon after, the area where an explosion had occurred entered his line of sight.

There was an open area within the small forest, but it seemed that the area's trees were thoroughly and forcibly razed to the ground. Two groups of disciples were standing in the open area. All of them had pulled out their swords. Their eyes were alert and fierce as they stared at each other.

On the ground, several corpses laid. The area was already reduced to a barren plain, but it did not have many battle markings. Apparently, the real clash had not even began, but seeing the drawn crossbows and weapons, it unfortunately seemed that very soon, a fierce battle was about to break out.

Wait!

Su Yun's eyes suddenly flashed as he stared at two human figures of one group.

Su Xin Yue and Su Xing Yang?

Su Xin Yue was wearing plain swordsman attire and held a weapon provided by Elder Su Shi Long, White Embroidered Blade. On her right shoulder, there was a sword wound. Luckily, it seemed blood had yet to begin dripping from the wound. Her soft wheat colored face was truly pale like a sheet of paper right now.

Su Xing Yang attire was also just as simple. His hands were holding a massive hammer that was very impressive. Nonetheless,

he had no small injury. His abdomen was bleeding, while several other parts of his body were also covered with wounds. He seemed to have already experienced many battles.

Leading Su Xing Yang and Su Xin Yue was a handsome young man. He was tall, there was a large scar over his face, but remained intelligent looking and charming. He was wearing a white robe. Furthermore, he was not wielding his sword, since it was still equipped on his waist. His demeanor remained very calm.

At his side, stood a long-haired disciple that looked like a teenager. After looking at these people, Su Yun thought they were very familiar.

“This man’s spirit power is restrained at the moment. From the way he carries himself, one cannot guess his intentions. He could possibly be a spirit intermediate disciple. However, the paper hanging on his waist clearly marks him as an outer sect disciple, this person....who exactly is he?”

As Su Yun whispered to himself, his gaze switched towards the opposite group of disciples.

He didn’t think that he would also recognize some disciples from this group.

Su Nan Ye!

He was now changed into a pure black body armor. He was armed with a expensive heavy sword and his eyes gave a penetrating gaze thick with killing intent.

Nonetheless, he was not the one with the strongest presence. The strongest disciple was in front of him. He was dressed in brown swordsman robes and was an inch shorter than Su Nan Ye.

Both of the man’s hands were holding an armament. He looked completely confident. As he gazed at his opponents, his eyes were full of disdain. It was as if the people before him couldn’t even be considered as his opponents.

He also had that arrogant personality, because he was a disciple from the inner sect.

His cultivation level was at least above stage one of spirit intermediate realm.

“I will only say this one last time, pull out all the Blood Jade Crystals from your body and pay up. Otherwise....this surrounding trees will become your gravestones!” The disciple wearing the brown robes shouted.

“If we do not pay up?” The disciple at the front of the other group nervously asked.

“Do not pay?” The brown robed disciple’s eyes ignited into fierce flames. Without giving any warning, his group immediately took action.

“Then just die!” After he said this, the brown robed disciples activated his spirit power and shrouded his palm. The palm became a claw and like an eagle and its prey, it aimed to kill the handsome outer sect disciple.

He just took action and it was already a killing technique

Although the difference was only between a spirit novice tenth stage and a spirit intermediate first stage, the difference in strength could still be described as vast.

The disciples of the inner sect were all cultivation rank of spirit intermediate realm first stage or more. How could regular disciples be their rivals? Currently, he was only facing one opponent, who was the handsome disciple that was standing at the very front of the group.

As the brown robed man rushed forth, he did not hesitate at all. In a few quick strides, he quickly flicked his left arm and pulled out a blade to stab the his opponent. The spirit aura was truly cascading down in torrents like the Yangtze River dispersing. (Tl: Yangtze river is one of largest rivers in China)

Unexpectedly, his opponent also flew forth.

This one disciple's sneak attack quickly awakened the other disciples to take action.

Two disciples were now fighting, how could they just watch the battle? Immediately after the two disciples made their moves, the entire battle broke out.

The battle had begun. Each disciples charged forth and the whole scene began to turn very chaotic.

As everyone's spirit power was activated, the spirit aura that was brought out seemed like dozens of rivers cascading forth. It was a terrible mess. The handsome spirit novice tenth stage disciple was skillfully holding his own with his spirit techniques. His spirit aura was shockingly powerful and terrifying. Nonetheless, the entire battlefield was quilted by numerous clashes.

"Stinking brat, we will take what is rightfully ours!" Su Nan Ye said as he coldly stared at Su Xing Yang. His hands were creating a sweeping sword dance as he aimed straight for Su Xing Yang's head.

As the blade neared, the surrounding people didn't dare come near it.

Su Xing Yang clenched his teeth. His brow had become extremely heavy and his sweaty hands raised the sledgehammer he had to block the heavy sword.

Despite this, the spirit aura of the heavy sword cascaded forth like a massive waterfall as it clashed against his hammer.

Su Xing Yang's whole body trembled from the powerful swing as he barely remained standing.

"Brother! !"

As Su Xin Yue saw this scene, she became suddenly afraid. She quickly sprinted towards him, hoping to prevent Su Nan Ye from

killing Su Xing Yang.

Although both man already sustained injuries, Su Nan Ye's body was still completely fine. Even if Su Xin Yue came, he did not care.

"I will let you experience my divine skill: Ripping Sky Sword Strike!" Su Nan Ye shouted as his spirit power poured into the blade and a sword shadow flew straight towards Su Xin Yue.

Had Su Xin Yue ever seen a sword skill this powerful? Her heart was shocked and she hastily rolled to the side to dodge the incoming attack.

After Su Nan Ye saw that he managed to push back Su Xin Yue, he immediately initiated more clashes and concentrated on taking down Su Xing Yang.

One could only seem him hack once, push once, release once and shake off once.

As the heavy sword hit the hammer, though it seemed as if several powerful forces were adding to its strength, and crashed into Su Xing Yang's body.

Puchi!

Su Xing Yang's body suddenly stiffened, his mouth open as a mouthful of blood was quickly spit out. To opponent's heavy sword strength quickly dissipated.

"Very good!"

Su Nan Ye's eyes gleamed with a flash. With a sudden kick, he kicked Su Xing Yang straight in the stomach.

Bang!

Su Xing Yan was caught off guard. From this one kick, he was forced to step back. This caused him to lose his defensive stance.

Instantly, Su Nan Ye leapt up and with one hand, he somehow lifted the heavy sword that one could not tell was how many pounds high in the air, "Go die!"

The heavy sword crashed down with ferocious momentum like a raging flood towards Su Xing Yang.

Su Xin Yue's pale face could not even be considered as white anymore. Her entire body had paled.

At this moment, no matter who it was, as long as the person had some strength, there was thirst for supreme strength.

Whoosh!

At this critical moment, a flying blade suddenly came from the side while whipping up a gale. It split through the stream of air, creating a shrill wail. It was clearly aiming for Su Nan Ye.

A sudden surprise!

Su Nan Ye's eyes suddenly darkened and hastily stopped his current strokes. He quickly moved his heavy sword to the horizontal position to block the flying blade. As it flew, powerful spirit aura surged forth and rippled towards the heavy sword. Soon after, as Su Nan Ye turned to face the blade, the blade suddenly flew into the sky.

This trick was completed.

As Su Nan Ye floated back to the ground, he did not dare launch an assault against Su Xing Yang. He looked around and scanned the people around him. Then he shouted, "Who dares?!"

However, the surrounding people were desperately fighting, so why would anyone even notice him?

At this time, Su Xin Yue rushed over and thrust the white embroidered blade towards Su Nan Ye. She was aiming straight for his heart.

Su Nan Ye lifted his heavy sword to block it.

Su Xin Yue quickly directed to her brother behind her with a shout, "Brother, quickly leave!"

"No way....Senior Qian is still here. How can I just escape alone?"

Su Xing Yang weakly said as he struggled to stand up.

“Fool you already received several combat wounds. Now you are also clashing with a spirit novice tenth stage cultivation, Su Nan Ye. How are you his match? Go! Hurry! I will hold him off for you!” Su Xin Yue’s eyes filled with tears as she hastily shouted.

Unfortunately, as soon as she finished speaking, her shoulder received a slash and then a kick. Her entire body flew and fell to the ground. She even began to spit out blood from her mouth.

“Younger sister!” Su Xing Yang eyes suddenly turned red.

In the midst of fighting, how could he be distracted? Moreover, Su Nan Ye was considered as one of the top disciples of the outer sect within the Su Family. Su Xin Yue was not even close to his strength so she was just a nuisance. Therefore, her loss was much faster.

“Oh, I heard that you have a good relationship with Su Yun. Originally, I had underestimated the enemy, which caused me to suffer defeat to Su Yun. However, that does not mean that I am weaker than him. I will definitely return this debt back to him, but I will first take care of you guys. Then I will finish him off!” Su Nan Ye said with a cold smile. His eyes overflowed with darkness.

He quickly stepped forward and injected his spirit power into his heavy sword. Like a roaring tiger, he chopped straight down towards the Su Xing Yang brother and sister.

Just then.

Whoosh!

It was blocked by a flying blade yet again. The blade nimbly slashed at Su Nan Ye as well.

“What is this random technique? Whatever, this is just some random insignificant skill!” Su Nan Ye apparently did not care and with a single wave, he slashed away the strange flying blade.

But at the last moment of the heavy sword slash, the single flying blade suddenly moved to the side and avoided the massive heavy blade strike.

“What?”

Su Nan Ye’s heart suddenly shrunk. Not waiting for his reaction, the flying blade suddenly pierced right into his chest.

He hurriedly retreated back, but also wanted to counterattack. Despite this, in an instant, a layer of rock suddenly spread from the flying blade around his body. This rock was like armor. With not even a breath’s time, it had completely engulfed Su Nan Ye’s body. It had changed him into a statue.

As the surrounding disciples saw this scene, they were all taken aback and tense.

What kind of divine skill was that?

As Su Qian and the brown robed inner sect disciple saw this, both of their hearts shook. They had better hastily conclude this battle, but since it was a life or death clash, one could not tolerate the slightest distractions and they could not retreat.

Crash.

At this time, a dark shadow rushed over here and leapt up into the branches to observe the battle.

This figure’s abnormal sense of the battle led to that since Su Nan Ye was already incapacitated, the opportunity had come. He suddenly took action.

The other disciples did not have time to react, the silhouette quickly descended and avoided all the sword strikes directed towards him. He was heading straight for Su Nan Ye.

“Not good!” The brown robed disciples of the inner sect said. As his face panicked, he agonized cried, “Protect Su Nan Ye!”

Several of the disciples from the outer sect that followed Su Nan

Ye saw this and immediately flew towards him to block the incoming attack.

However, it was too late.

They could only watch as the silhouette appear in front of Su Nan Ye. With one hand grasping the hilt of the flying blade, he pierced through the chest. Then he suddenly slashed up from the chest cutting right to the forehead, thereby splitting the entire upper body in half.

Kau La.

The stone fragmented.

Su Nan Ye's body remained motionless as he maintained a petrified expression. He was still maintaining his original action as if he was frozen still.

Hiss!!!!

Suddenly, blood flew out.

A hideous blade wound spread from his chest straight up towards his forehead.

The brain was cut. If a person died, he could not die again. The brain was spilling over and blood was gushing out from the wound. The sight was very terrifying!

They could only see the black shadow clasp the flying blade and rapidly killing Su Nan Ye. He grabbed his palms and quickly fled from here.

“Shit!” The brown robed disciple was furious and wanted to chase. However, Su Qian did not give him the slightest chance and still desperately blocked his way.

With Su Nan Ye dead, Su Qian's pressure was decreased by one and the situation slowly began to tilt in their favor...

Chapter 52 - Senior, Save Me

Because of their previous tournament bout, where Su Nan Ye was defeated by Su Yun, the opposing side had held a deep grudge. During this trial, he was afraid that Su Nan Ye would use this opportunity to pay back his debt. If Su Nan Ye recognized Su Xing Yang siblings, he would surely intended to pay back his debt from them.

Now that Su Nan Ye was dead, Su Yun believed that Su Xing Yang sibling could now be relieved or at least gained a fighting chance. Su Xin Yue's group now gain a small advantage.

Afterwards, Su Yun immediately fled. He did not stop until he was far away.

He didn't expect the spirit power of the Profound Stone Golem's core was so concentrated, even though it only had a cultivation of spirit novice stage ten.

"I just don't know how effective this petrification would be for a disciple of spirit intermediate first stage. After becoming petrified, it would probably not be able to last a long time."

After all, the petrification state could be resisted by activating spirit power. If the spirit aura produced was concentrated and deep, it could easily cancel out the petrification effect of the core.

Su Yun sighed soon afterwards. Then, he picked up the right hand of Su Nan Ye that he cut off and took off the spatial ring on the index finger of the right hand.

One reason was for the spatial ring on the hand, the other purpose was also to obtain the Blood Jade Crystals of Su Nan Ye. Of course, Su Nan Ye was much better off than regular outer sect disciples of the Su Family. It was rumored that because of his connected family relations and his relationship with some disciples of the inner sect, he was offered some divine skills and techniques

to increase his strength. In general, to obtain any divine skill was exceedingly difficult for a regular outer sect disciple, because the divine skills were never issued to outer sect disciples of the Su Family. If it was an inner sect disciple, he was allowed to choose one complimentary divine skill. To obtain more divine skills, they would have to complete missions, obtain contribution and then use it to exchange for more divine skills.

Of course, this was the method to obtain divine skills directly from the Su Family. Naturally, there was another method. It would be even more convenient, which was to directly purchase the divine skills from Grand Auction House in the city. Despite that, the prices of divine skills were truly staggering, so most disciples could never purchase those.

Su Yun slowly activated Su Nan Ye's spatial ring and began to dump the contents out.

There were a large number of healing potions, Revival Pills, and ten meters of talismans that had various effects when used. Stealth Talisman -crumbling one would result in increased stealth for a short amount of time-Clogging Blood Talisman -breaking it would result in stopped blood flow from the bodily wounds—

Of course, furthermore, there were also a few strange treasures.

Su Yun did not recognize any of the strange treasures, so he did not dabble with them.

If he randomly activate some divine treasure, not only could it cause some backlash and hurt himself, but one would usually need to find a special person to explain the effects of the treasures he had obtained. Only then could it be used safely.

Su Yun threw all those items back inside his spatial ring and continued to rummage through.

“Blood Jade Crystals!” As Su Yun saw bunches of red crystals inside the spatial ring, he became overjoyed. He quickly retrieved

all the crystals.

Hua La.

The accumulated Blood Jade Crystals were brought out.

After counting everything, there was actually more than two hundred and seventy crystals.

AS a result, Su Yun had more than six hundred Blood Jade Crystals in his inventory. He was afraid he might even had about half of the Blood jade Crystals collected in his hands.

“It is enough! Now, I just need to find a safe place to hide. After I wait for three more days, I can finally leave Martial Bone Mountain!” Su Yun hissed under his breath.

Then, he transferred all the contents from Su Nan Ye’s spatial ring and decided to discard it.

This spatial ring was Su Nan Ye’s. After he completed this task and report back, if Su Yun was found with this ring, he would be questioned. Although many disciples killed indiscriminately in Martial Bone Mountain, when they were back in the sect, they would have to follow all the sect rules again. If Su Yun kept Su Nan Ye’s ring, he would be accused of killing Su Nan Ye. If it came to that, Su Yun would not be able to explain himself.

“Hm?” Just then, a blue book went within his line of sight as he searched through the contents.

A divine skill!

Most the disciples from the outer sect did not have any divine skill. Usually, they would just have to rely on pure physical power and their spirit power.

“Sky Ripping Sword Strike?” Su Yun quickly removed the book from the ring and flipped it open with a sweep of his hand.

It was a very simple sword art, but it was also a very complicated sword art.

There were only a few pages on the sword technique.

It utilized vibrations, which was created from shrouding spirit power over a blade during a swing. Then the spirit aura generated from the spirit power could produce a honed form, which would be used to attack the enemy. One could only control the direction of the vibrations, similar to the other forms generated from spirit power. However, this skill just involved a more ingenious method to release the spirit aura generated.

“Spirit aura vibrations? If...if this was integrated with Limitless Sword Arts, then once I activate Spirit Lord Aura on a flying blade, I could split it into two blades. One real and one false! With this technique, I could easily catch someone off guard!” Su Yun said as he touched his chin.

Since he thought he could do it, he actually forgot his original intention. Instead, he pulled out his dragon engraved blade and began to practice the motions.

As the dragon engraved blade slashed through the air, his Spirit Lord Aura was activated, so he could actively inject spirit power into the flying blade. This was to slowly allow the blade to vibrate.

Su Yun sucked in a breath. According to the Sky Ripping Sword Strike skill, one must control the injected spirit aura created on the blade, while simultaneously trying to cause the blade to vibrate.

However, as soon as he took action, which caused the flying blade to vibrate, the flying blade began to fall from the sky.

I failed.

Su Yun frowned, “Did I use too much strength?”

Ta ta....

At this time, he heard the faint sound of footsteps closing in.

As the sound neared, like a needle that suddenly pierced a cat, Su Yun awoke with a start and recovered from his daze. He hastily

grabbed his dragon engraved blade and looked behind him.

Soon after, he saw an outer disciple of the Su Family step out.

This disciple was covered with wounds. Blood was flowing everywhere. It was evident he was severely wounded judging from the pale complexions of his face.

“Help me! Senior, help me!” The disciple weakly uttered in pain as he ran panting towards him.

Could there be someone chasing to murder this guy?

Su Yun’s complexion changed and he hastily retreated back.

Ke.

All was quiet behind this disciple. There wasn’t any sign of trouble, not mentioning other disciples, he couldn’t even see any demonic beasts chasing him.

“Who tried to kill you?” Su Yun said with doubt.

“A very powerful individual, but....but I managed to escape. Senior, I have some very serious injuries....can....can you take some medicine from your spatial ring to help me....I....I will always remember your kindness in the future....I will definitely repay you.”

“Really?” Su Yun secretly inspected the man and analysed the wounds on his body. Suddenly, he asked, “What’s your name? Why haven’t I seen you before? Does the Su Family even have a disciple like you?”

“I....I’m called Su Deng Lan....probably you have never seen me before....” The disciple weakly said as if he was slowly dying.

“Maybe that is it!” Su Yun nodded his head, “I train all year round and have little contact with disciples of the Su Family. I have never met many of the outer sect disciples....ah....if that is so, I’ll give you some medicine for the time being. This time, I will save your life, so you better remember to repay me!”

“Certainly! Thank you, senior....thank you senior!” The disciple said with absolute joy as he bowed again and again.

“Wait!” As Su Yun said this, he reached for the spatial ring on his hand. He was about to take the medicine out from his spatial ring.

As the disciple stared at Su Yun, his eyes flashed with a strange light.

However, in the next second, an extremely sharp sword slashed down from the sky, aiming straight for the disciple.

Puchi!

The disciple was caught off guard and instantly split in half!

A dark billow of smoke began to emit from the two halves of the figure that was split in half. It began to float up in the air and generated a massive amount of mist and clouds.

In the clouds, a pair of green eyes gazed Su Yun.

“You....you lied to me!” The mist gave a sharp cry.

As Su Yun saw this, his heart was startled. He quietly stepped back a bit and said, “Didn’t you also lie to me?”

“It appears that you saw through my disguise!”

“As long as the person is not a three year old child, anyone could have seen through it! The scars of the corpse had already rotted and there were creatures like serpents and rodents gnawing on the wounds. How could anything living have these characteristics? More importantly, under the corpse’s neck, there was a fatal wound, his windpipe was broken! How could he still survive? So I guessed that this body was possessed by the Martial Bone Mountain spirits or something! You....just what kind of vile spawn are you?”

“Ha ha ha ha ha....” After the dark clouds heard this, it let out a harsh sounding laughter, “ha ha ha kid, you are very careful. However, you are alone, yet you still dare ask for my name? Do

die!”

After this dark mist said these words, it immediately launched an attack. Despite that, the ghostly mist only spread towards Su Yun and was aiming straight for his head.

Su Yun hastily evaded the mist. As the deathly cold mist touched the ground it generated some fizzling sounds. Soon, the areas that it touched were filled with craters.

Upon seeing this, Su Yun had become horrified.

What did this mean? Was this the skills of a spirit intermediate soul?

Flee!

His mind had only this single thought. He immediately turned around and fled like a madman.

When had Martial Bone Mountain become this dangerous?

Meanwhile, the Yue Yang sibling and others were still engaged in the battle.

Whoosh!

As a frost blade danced through the air like a lotus flower floating, blood through the air. The brown robed disciples of the inner sect crashed to the ground. He was dead.

Phew!

The handsome young disciple, known as Su Qian finally let out a breath. He could finally calm his nerves a bit.

Even though the inner sect disciple was killed, Su Qian was not let off easy. His thighs and chest were both injured and bleeding. His white robe was completely stained with blood. Most of his spirit power reserves had been completely depleted, so he did not even have much combat capability left.

“Senior!” A long-haired teenager, who seemed quite young

rushed over and propped up the weakened Su Qian from falling to the ground. He urgently asked, "Senior, are you alright?"

"I'm fine. Don't worry!" Su Qian said with a weak smile. Then he glanced at the surrounding and saw the corpse of Su Nan Ye.

He did not hesitate at all and immediately shouted at the top of his lungs, "Stop everything!"

This cry spread over the entire battlefield.

Everyone who was fighting was stunned for a moment.

Su Qian's group of disciples were the first to retreat. They left their opponents and went over to Su Qian.

As the disciples near Su Qian examined their surroundings, they glanced down at the corpse of the inner sect disciple. Everyone's face became filled with excitement. Ultimately, they did not continue killing, but grouped together for now.

Since the elites of the opposing force were dead, from a strength perspective, Su Qian's group temporarily had the advantage. They could continue to battle and eliminating the other disciples should be easy.

However, Su Qian had chose this time was the time to stop the battle and called out.

Everyone was gazing at Su Qian, waiting for what he had to say.

Su Qian quickly took a few slow breaths, because the fighting had exhausted him considerably. His eyes had a tinge of red, but he was soon able to steady his breathing.

"Everyone, I understand that the reason for our battle. It is to obtain Blood Jade Crystals, which could then be exchanged for contributions. Using the contribution, one would be able to obtain entry for the inner sect! However, for such a thing, many have already lost their live, so does everyone think it is truly worth it??"

After everyone heard this, they looked at each other.

Su Qian let out a sigh. Then the teenage looking disciple gave him a pill, which he swallowed with his mouth. His complexion restored some color and he continued, "I propose....you guys leave. Let's not finish this battle. Just leave the Martial Bone Mountain.... For the people that died, how about we just say that some demonic beasts killed them? If you guys refuse, then everyone may continue this deathmatch, until one side is eliminated! I Su Qian, have already killed the inner sect disciple, so I'm not afraid of adding a few more heads to the list!"

After he said this, his opponents understood what Su Qian was proposing to them.

Su Nan Ye and the inner sect disciple were both dead. In fact, the opponents could eliminate them, but Su Qian obviously did not want to continue this unnecessary killing. Therefore, he decided to take a step back and try negotiating with the opposing force.

Nonetheless, Su Qian also had his reasons. Although the opposing group had lost Su Nan Ye and the inner sect disciple, they still had some combat ability. If they continued, Su Qian's group would probably need to sacrifice two or three disciples to eliminate the opposing side.

There was no deep hatred between anyone. This was just for some benefits from the sect, so there was no need to die for it.

Su Xing Yang and Su Xin yue looked somewhat grateful towards Su Qian. The two of them incurred hatred from Su Nan Ye, but that problem was clearly already taken care of. Their injuries were not light, so if the battle continued, they might truly be killed. Therefore, Su Qian ordered everyone to halt the battle as a disguise to save both of them.

Su Nan Ye's underlings looked at each other. Then they began to discuss and whispered a few words at the end. They decided to follow what Su Qian proposed. They ceased trying to continue the battle and decided to let this matter go. Then, they went their

separate ways.

Even if they continued, the cost of the battle would absolutely not be cheap. The only possible problem was if someone talked about the battle when they returned to the Su Family, but Su Qian said that they would just make up an excuse. After that, what concerns were left?

His companions quietly nodded their heads. Su Qian's group also agreed with the proposal after his persuasive speech.

In fact, everyone had already accepted the outcome.

Pa pa pa....

At this time, a resounding applause arose from the mountain top.

Su Qian as well as Su Nan Ye's underlings turned their heads to look for the source of the sound.

They were surprised to find a large crowd of disciples dressed in red robes, were walking towards their location....

Chapter 53 - Cutting Weeds and Pulling the Roots

As this group of people appeared, it really startled everyone.

As the group of people looked around and counted for a few moments, it was determined that the group that just arrived had more than fifty people.

Furthermore, they were well equipped and full of energy. Some of the disciples were even spotless, so some probably hasn't even experienced any form of battle. In the crowd, there were many disciples in nine or tenth spirit novice cultivation. Even more so, there were two inner sect disciples!

Once these people appeared, they slowly walked towards Su Qian's group and surrounded them.

As Su Qian glanced at the incoming group, his face paled. He focused on the two inner sect disciples that were standing together in front of the outer sect disciples. In front was one of the powerful outer disciples, "Su Mo Li! You....is it possible that you were always near us?!"

Wearing a purple robe, Su Mo Li braided hair fluttered in the wind as he nodded. His face did not change as he responded, "There was movements that appeared in this area. Then we arrived here and both of the inner sect disciples casted their techniques, and thus hiding our spirit aura. This resulted in you guys never noticing our spirit aura! We have been waiting. Therefore, from your suffering, we will obtain the benefits!"

"Oh. I did not expect that two different groups would actually join forces! However, since you guys have so many fish, how do you even organize the rewards?" Su Qian asked loudly.

"All the Blood Jade Crystals obtained will belong to me. As for the others, I have promised them reasonable rewards later! Once I

return back to inner sect, I will hand out the rewards!” Su Mo Li shouted.

“You guys are going to very well off!”

“Ha ha ha.”

“Then how are you going to deal with us?” Su Qian weakly asked. Then he continued, “Are you going to kill us all?”

“I had no such intention.”

Su Mo Li’s eyes fell down to the weapons gripped tightly in groups hands and said, “If you surrender all your Blood Jade Crystals and lay down your weapons, then we can promise to not kill you. After all, we did not attack you with our hands, so even if the trial ends, you will have nothing to say even after you return to the Su Family.”

After the opposing side finished, Su Qian and the other hesitated. Indeed.

The reason was the opposing group witnessed the battle. Therefore, Su Qian was worried that after they returned to the Su Family, the matter would be brought to light in front of the main house. Since killing within the sect is prohibited, once they are exposed, they would be doomed.

If they forcibly take the Blood Jade Crystals, then certainly it would be reasonable. There would be no grudges, since the other side would have no power to complain.

“Senior, what do we do? If we battle against them, with our current state, we would have no chance of winning.” The long haired juvenile whispered against Su Qian’s ear.

Su Qian did not say a word as he remained looking down in thought.

“I’m willing to surrender all my Blood Jade Crystals to you. I just hope that you guys will not kill me!” Just then, an outer sect

disciple shouted.

His voice was trembling. It was evident that he was scared.

After Su Mo Li heard this, he nodded, “That is not enough.”

Su Qian raised his head and looked surprised at the disciple that was willing to hand his Blood Jade Crystals. As he analyzed the face, he recognized that it was actually the loyal Su Zuo.

“Su Zuo, why are you fooling around?” Su Qian harshly said.

“Senior, this is our only way out. If we do not surrender, then what do we do? Are we really going to battle with them? With our current state? It is impossible to succeed. Even if we were not injured, we probably still would not be stronger than this group.” Su Zuo said with a bitter smile.

Su Qian remained silent for a long time. Finally, he sighed heavily.

“If we just surrender our Blood Jade Crystals, wouldn’t all the hard work these past few days be useless?” Su Qian hissed as he clenched his fists.

“Fine. Give....I’ll just give them away!” Finally, Su Zuo decided not to wait for Su Qian to compromise.

Su Zuo walked over and removed a bag from his waist. It had about a few dozen Blood Jade Crystals. Everything was given to Su Mo Li.

As Su Mo Li took it away, he swept over the contents with his eyes. Then he nodded, “very good!”

“Then, I’ll be fine, right? One more day to go before I can leave this god forsaken place. I don’t want to die here.” Su Zuo exhaled with a relief look on his face.

“Right, it certainly is the last day left. It would be really regrettable if now you died. You could possibly run into some natural dangers such as fierce beasts, which I’m afraid would lead

to your demise. How about this, you follow us. We will protect you and we will just leave together?” Su Mo Li asked.

Su Zuo became suddenly overjoyed as he nodded, “Great! Great!”

After he said this, he began to walk towards Su Mo Li’s group.

However, the two inner sect disciples blocked him with their hands.

“Boy, you have to stand over here!” One of the inner sect disciples shouted as he pointed to an area located where Su Mo Li was standing.

“Why?” Su Zuo was confused.

“Why not! Even though there is a reason, I will not bother to explain it to you!” An inner sect disciple said indifferently to Su Zuo.

Su Zuo’s heart became slightly furious, but he calmed his anger. Finally calming down, he walked towards the other end.

As Su Mo Lie saw this, he shouted, “Who will be willing to hand over their Blood Jade Crystals? I will consider to give everyone a stick of incense of time. If you guys do not want to surrender within a stick of incense, then do not blame Su Mo Li for being ruthless!”

As this ultimatum was given, the other disciples in Su Qian’s group began to clamor and shout.

“I am willing to hand over my Blood Jade Crystals!”

“I am willing, as long as you will not kill me, I promised that I will give all of them!”

“And I!”

“I....”

.....

As the shouting began to rise, nearly all the disciples from Su

Qian's group switched sides. Everyone was willing to accept Su Mo Li conditions.

“Enough! Enough!”

“Su Qian shook his head. He directed the long haired juvenile and commanded, “take out Blood Jade Crystals. They will also be given to them!”

“Yes, senior!”

The long haired juvenile nodded and then removed their Blood Jade Crystal.

“All of you standing at the open area, I want to count everything one by one! If someone decides to create any trouble, then they will be instantly killed on the spot!” After Su Mo Li shouted these words, everyone began to calm down.

Su Qian did not move and stood there waiting. Then, the long haired juvenile took all the Blood Jade Crystals and went over.

“Old...older sister....let's go over there.” Su Xing Yang said weakly as he caught his breath.

“Ah....but brother, I think this is a little suspicious. Why should we go stand over there, ah....”

“Who cares!”

“Ah....how about we stand on the edge of the open area. Therefore, we are not crowded together with them. I definitely feel that there is something suspicious.”

“That's fine, let's listen to you.” Su Xing Yang responded.

At this time, they saw that Su Mo Li step behind the inner sect disciples and just blended back into the crowd. He disappeared.

This action was very subtle and the others did not even notice. However, Su Qian accidentally caught this casual scene in the corner of his eye.

His heart became suspicious and quietly stared at the inner disciple within the crowd of people. He was surprised to find that several other disciples came forward and block his figure. Afterwards, SU Qian could only see half of the inner sect disciple's face.

Soon after, however, he was surprised yet again. He found that the inner sect disciple shut his eyes on his hand and his lips began to move. It seems that he was going to activate some form of skill.

What is he doing?

Su Qian's heart began to pump much faster. He felt something was off. Su Mo Li suddenly shouted from the crowd, "Su Qian, why are you not standing over there?"

"Why....why should I stand over there?" Su Qian whispered as he hesitated.

"Why not. I just want you to stand in that area. How about you just quickly go over there. Otherwise, don't blame me for being heartless." Su Mo Li said as he became serious.

"We already gave the Blood Jade Crystal to you. We are no match for you guys. Arguably, we should be able to leave already. Why should I stand there?" Su Qian secretly beckoned the long haired juvenile to come back. At the same time, a few other disciples began to step back.

Su Mo Li began to sense that some disciples realized his little trap. With deep killing intent emitting from his eyes, he quickly mouthed some strange skill. Then he said, "Since it is like this, if you don't want to stand there, then just don't stand there. This is enough!"

"Alright?"

Su Qian group of people, "??"

Right at that moment, beneath the soles of the person standing in the front, there was a massive influx of spirit aura. Then the earth

began to frantically shake and spiky thorn rose from the ground.

Puchi puchi puchi.

A lot of disciples were stabbed right through and died a tragic death. The only disciples that escaped were the disciples at the edges of the gathering area.

Because of Su Xin Yue's vigilance, the Xing Yue sibling managed to avoid death.

However, this turn of events shocked everyone that was still alive in Su Qian's group.

"You bastards...." Su Qian's eyes widened in astonishment.

"Kill them all. Do not let one escape!"

After hearing Su Mo Li's order, his face paled.

Instantly, Su Mo Li's group of people rushed towards them. They raised their swords one by one and aimed straight for the survivors of Su Qian's group.

"Flee!" Su Qian did not have a shred of hesitation as he screamed at the top of his lungs. Grabbing the long haired juvenile, they fled.

As for the disciples at the edge of the area.

Su Xing Yang and Su Xin Yue had become extremely pale.

"Xin Yue, you go first! I will block them for you!" Su Xing Yang weakly said as he struggled to stand.

"Brother, we can't flee. With our current condition....I'm afraid that we would not be able to get away...." Su Xin Yue whispered as she bit her lips.

Su Xing Yang clenched his fists, "Damn, could it be that....today will be the day that we die to a despicable bunch of people that we surrendered our Blood Jade Crystals to? Why do they still want to kill us?!"

"They must be worried that we would hold a grudge. The fear

that in the future, we will find opportunities to get revenge. Therefore, they have to cut the weeds and pull out the roots!” Su Xin Yue said bitterly.

Whoosh!

Several shadows rushed over.

The aura of death surged around them, as if the water had splashed around the entire battlefield.

The ice cold blades of death were charging towards them.

As the ice cold aura of death flooded over, it stimulated all their hairs.

Su Xing Yang stared at the magics weapons getting closer. Meanwhile, Su Xin Yue closed her eyes.

Crash!

Suddenly, the chilly aura was blown away. It was soon followed by a high-pitched sharp cry.

“Brats! Let’s see if I can peel all your skin and bones from your bodies! I will pull your three immortal souls and seven mortal forms inside my void! I will let you experience torture!” As he heard this, Su Mo Li was surprised to find a man wearing blademaster robes charging towards here.

This person was not wearing a mask. Therefore, as they looked at the person’s face, everyone recognized him.

“Su Yun!”

“Senior Su Yun!” Su Xing Yang and Su Xin Yue immediately cried out.

“Senior Su Yun, leave! Su Mo Li will kill us, there are too many, just run!” Su Xin Yue hastily warned.

However, Su Yun did not seem to hear her voice at all. As before, he was still running as if he was flying and aiming straight towards

Su Mo Li.

Just then, the disciples saw the huge mass of black cloud closely behind him.

“This....this is....” As the inner sect disciples saw the cloud, his complexion lost its color. He was shocked, “It is a spirit soul stage ghost: Silent Death Evil Spirit!” (Tl: 4th realm, basically 3 lvls above Su Yun)

“Silent Death Evil Spirit?”

“The lingering souls of the dead have the strength to condense into such a terrifying apparition? No...isn't it really difficult for something like this to form? How could it appear in Martial Bone Mountain?”

“Those elders that served the main house must have had a high level of power. Furthermore, countless soldiers were buried in Martial Bone Mountain. The sinister spirit aura released after death must have been the source of this terrifying apparition!”

Everyone was stunned. They felt an ice cold chill as their legs weakened.

The two inner sect disciples and Su Mo Li instantly turned around and hastily fled.

“Go!”

Su Yun said after he raised his eyebrows as he dashed past Su Xing Yang and Su Xin Yue.

The two did not hesitate, quickly got up and staggered into a run.

Seeing the huge mass of evil spirit rushing towards, the fifty man group of disciples fled in all directions.

The scene became quickly chaotic, everyone fled in their own direction....

Chapter 54 - If you have the Guts, then Come in here!

Outside of the Su Family grounds, there was someone at the front gate of the outer sect.

A woman dress in snowy white robes while reining a stallion was walking towards here.

The female was wearing a veil. She was tall and her skin was as white as snow. Her eyes shone like stars and her body emitted a powerful aura. Her black hair weaved around her shoulders like ink, in contrast to the light color of her skin.

As the two outer sect disciples on duty as gatekeepers saw this person walking towards here, they couldn't help but just gaze foolishly.

“Quickly go down and alert the head. The third elder of the Immortal Sword Sect is paying a visit!” The beautiful female said in a smooth voice.

Her voice was heavenly.

The two guards were stunned for moment, before the left guard recovered and asked as his voice rose an octave, “Who did you say you are?”

“The Immortal Sword Sect Third Elder Long Xian Li! Quickly notify them!” The female shouted.

Elder?

Both of the guards looked at each other. Then one of them loudly asked, “Please show us your brand!”

“I accidently left the brand behind.”

“Then, I'm sorry for this. Woman, you cannot enter our Su Family.” Then the two guards laughed and said, “But....there is

another method to enter the sect....we might be able let you enter the sect after that!”

“Just say it! Just say it!” The right guard at the side grinned, “Not just anyone can enter the Su Family grounds. First of all, us two brothers will not allow anyone to enter the gate without permission, he he....”

However, right at that moment, the whole floor suddenly cracked. Soon after, a huge ten feet sword smashed down from the sky and pierced deep into the ground. It was firmly collided with the ground with a resounding crash....

Boom!!!!

The ground shook with immense power. One by one, spirit blades began to appear and began to creating more cracks, just like a spider web separating.

The gate guards were.....already completely petrified.

The two mouths hung open as their facial expressions seemed to have solidified.

“You dare to be presumptuous, you are asking for death!” Long Xian Li said as she released her spirit aura with a slight flick of her hand.

The two bodies of the disciples trembled wildly. They had become terrified and hurried nodded as they shouted, “This is a small misunderstanding....a small misunderstanding! Elder forgive us....forgive us.... ah this little....this little one will immediately notify them....” Then the two guards both fled.

Only a few moments later, the outer sect immediately informed the inner sect. The inner sect notified the patriarch. Then the patriarch quickly rushed over as he brought a few servants.

As the patriarch arrived and went outside of the front gate, he saw stallion and the person beside it. As he looked at her, she was indeed a Immortal Sword Sect elder. He immediately stepped

forward and greeted her, “Greetings Elder Long for personally visiting here. I’m sorry that I didn’t come to welcome. I truly lacked manners, but I ask goddess does not hold a grudge!”

“Patriarch, you are too polite. In fact, Xian Li suddenly arrived and had not yet notified the elders. Therefore the welcome was omitted is understandable. If Xian Li’s abrupt visit have caused patriarch any trouble, please have my condolences!” Long Xian Li replied with an indifferent expression.

“Elder Long is too polite. Quickly, please come inside!” The patriarch said.

“I do not need to trouble you. Patriarch, Xian Li here only came for one purpose!” Long Xian Li said as her eyes suddenly burst forth with a chilling light.

Then she said, “I actually came here to confirm something with a disciple. If it is convenient, I would like to ask patriarch personally give that person to me!”

“A disciple?”

The patriarch’s eyebrows furrowed as he asked, “I do not know which disciple that Elder Long is referring to?”

“There should be someone called Su Yun within your Su Family. I think so?”

“Yes....but what is Elder Long asking to find Su Yun for?”

“He actually stole a treasure from the Immortal Sword Sect. I came here today to make sure that he hands the object that he stole back to the Immortal Sword Sect!” Long Xian Li said coldly.

After these words were said, the group actually jumped in fright.

“How is that possible? That trash actually stole a treasure from the Immortal Sword Sect?”

“Impossible, may I ask Elder Long. Are you sure the culprit was Su Yun? Su Yun is actually only at Spirit Novice stage! I heard....I

heard that his cultivation is only at sixth stage! How could this trash disciple steal some treasure from you? This....could this maybe be a mistake?”

“Wasn’t this disciple transferred out to the outer sect? How could he have that much ability?”

“This is hard to believe.” The people said behind the patriarch. Everyone’s face had a stupefied face.

After Long Xian Lie heard this, her eyebrows wrinkled for a second. Then she responded, “I am not sure if it is him. I can only verify it in a meeting with him face to face!”

“Alright, since it is like this, I will bring Su Yun out. I cannot let this simple matter cause deep grudges between the Su Family and the Immortal Sword Sect!” The Patriarch was reluctant to offend the Immortal Sword Sect in any way. He immediately waved his hand to ask Elder Su Shi Long to bring Su Yun out.

Unfortunately, after Elder Su Shi Long quickly walked over to the patriarch, he whispered the situation to the patriarch’s ears.

After the patriarch heard about the situation, he nodded his head a few times. Looking a little nervous, he pondered for a moment and said, “Elder Long, I’m afraid that you’ll have to stay at the Su Family grounds for one more day.”

“Oh?” Long Xian Li responded and asked, “Why?”

“It is because Su Yun is still in Martial Bone Mountain to complete the Su Family’s trials. By tomorrow, he will probably come out!”

“Really?” Long Xian Li pondered for a while. Then she nodded, “Since that is the case, then I will just stay here for one day.”

“Servants, quickly entertain Elder Long!” The patriarch shouted.

“Yes, sir!”

....

....

Kacha.

Blood splashed as an arm flew into the air.

“Ahhh! ! !” A painful cry miserably sounded after.

The name of the divine skill: Ground Piercing Strike, had killed many of the outer sect disciples. Their bodies laid sprawled on the ground.

Not waiting for them to get up, the black mist that was floating in the air began to drift over. Within a blink of an eye, the mist began to open up and a blood red skeleton appeared before the disciples. The person's entire body, including skin, bones, clothes and even personal items were completely engulfed by the terrifying mist.

In the eyes of the outer sect disciples, the godly inner sect disciple that they worshipped just died tragically before them.

As Su Mo Li saw the situation of the other disciples, how could he have the courage to continue battling? He immediately just ran off.

However, the lightly armored Su Yun was the one that was chased by the mist. However, wherever the disciples ran, Su Yun also followed.

Even saying it was strange. Although Su Yun's cultivation was not high, but his agility was very adept. The mist's fierce assaults were mostly all dodged, but his overall speed was still slowed than the mist. However, during the times that the msit came close to Su Yun, he would always take a strange parchment to repel the mist, which would then be pushed back a couple feet.

Although it seemed fine, Su Yun was in a very bad situation.

Right now, his face no longer had any more color. His body appeared to be exhausted of its spirit power and his speed was getting slower and slower. The pace he kept as he fled was

staggering, so it seemed that at any time he could fall over from just the massive amount of physical exertion he was doing right now.

Other disciples spread out as they fled. Su Yun was staring intently at Su Mo Li's bunch of people because of their high strength. He wanted to transfer the Silent Death Evil Spirit's attention to this group. Fortunately, there was already some results. The evil spirit had already consumed a few of the disciples following Su Mo Li. Nonetheless, it was still chasing Su Yun.

Seeing that this spirit was immortal, it just would not give up.

“Fuck!”

Su Yun could not help but curse in foul language as he continued to flee forwards.

All around, there was no more of the dark forest. Rather, they had finally arrived at the peak of Martial Bone Mountain.

The surrounding area was instead filled with shorter vegetation, which had many thorns. Along the way as he ran, his legs were cut many times and blood came bubbling out.

Su Yun endured the pain and kept on fleeing in panic. This time, if he stopped, then he would become a pile of bones. It was certain death.

Hissing....

Suddenly, a burst of knife-like cold winds blew, which Su Yun could not help but tremble for a bit. The surrounding temperature suddenly became freezing cold as if blood would become frozen.

What's going on?

Su Yun was scared.

However, right at that moment, there were not many people left. Nonetheless, they still continued to flee.

“Kid, you actually fled....you actually fled to here!”

This time, behind him, the Silent Death Evil Spirit was endlessly chasing him had stopped. It did not dare to approach. However, it was drifting in place and staring intently at Su Yun.

Just like that it stopped chasing?

Su Yun wondered in his mind, but his whole body was shaking terribly from the cold.

Seeing that the spirit was not chasing any more, he stopped fleeing. He was panting heavily, but decided to still survey the surrounding area.

Indeed, he only saw that the rocky area was completely flat. There was few vegetation near the cliff edge of the peak, but what caught his attention was at the top of the cliff, there stood a giant stone that was about three full meters tall.

The stone was dark in color. There were several intricate inscriptions carved in blood on the surface. It looked solemn and heavy.

“Su Family’s third Patriarch, Su Tain Long’s Tomb?” Su Yun read.

Su Tian Long? How is this person connected to Su Family’s history?

“It appears that you are aware of devouring spirits floating within the cemetery. That’s why you fled here!” The floating Silent Devil Evil Spirit shouted angrily.

A sharp sound rang throughout the Martial Bone Mountain.

In a distant mountain, Su Mo Li was finally out of danger as he heard the sound. He hastily gazed the situation, just to see the Silent Devil Evil Spirit was confronting Su Yun.

“It appears that you will not live for long!” Su Mo Li whispered as he took a breath. Then he quickly walked away.

At the mountain peak, Su Yun was hearing the Silent Devil Evil

Spirit roar and became stunned for a moment. Then he shook his head, “No! I really didn’t know.”

“You didn’t know?”

“Yes. I was panically fleeing and inadvertently ran over here. However, looking at your performance, devil, it seems that you fear this place very much? Can you not catch me? Didn’t you say that you’ll take my three mortal souls and seven immortal souls to the void and torture them? Why haven’t you still taken action?” Su Yun ingested some of the medicine pills and restored his strength. Afterwards, he began ridiculing the spirit.

After the Silent Devil Evil Spirit heard this, he was furious. His killing intent was overbearing.

However, after a moment, it’s anger just suddenly vanished....

Su Yun was surprised for a moment, “What? You can’t kill me?”

“Ha ha ha ha, brat. You are even more cunning than me.” The Silent Devil Evil Spirit laughed and continued, “Maybe you did not know about the devouring spirits that came out of this tomb. However, after I explained it, since you guessed that I could not enter, you began to ridicule me. You wanted to provoke me so that I would rush into the cemetery to devour your soul. Then with spirits of the cemetery, I would also be consumed....Oh, you are very smart! However, you won’t succeed! I will not be fooled!”

After Su Yun heard this, his mocking attitude immediately stopped. Then he said, “Oh. In that case, then just wait outside for me.”

“Just you wait! Just you wait! Don’t celebrate too early!” Silent Devil Evil Spirit said with a nonchalant smile, “Although the spirits do begin to devour my spirit force, but they will also have an impact on you. Boy, does your body not feel frozen, as if your body have become completely frozen? Ha ha, yes, it can swallow your body’s spirit power. It can even consume your life essence.

Before long, you'll be tragically dead! You will just become a withered flower! Ha ha ha...."

After Su Yun heard this, his eyes sunk and grinded his teeth.

"Tut tut tut...." The Silent Devil Evil Spirit looked over and with a persuading voice, "I see that you will suffer a lot if you die that way. How about you just come out? Then I will just give you a comfortable way to die. Alright? I will not allow you to experience any more torture!"

Now, this guy was irritating Su Yun!

"Go fuck yourself!" Su Yun spat on the ground. Then he shouted, "Even if I have to die here, I will not leave to appease you! If you have guts, then come in! Well, don't you have great power? You can't even kill a spirit novice realm disciple? This is really funny!"

"You...." The Silent Devil Evil Spirit was short of breath. His pair of deadly green eyes flashed and his entire misty body trembled badly.

Finally, it seemed that it could not stand Su Yun's actions anymore. He growled out, "Kid! I will never let you go! If you are so eager to die, then I'll just give you just that! I'll show you that in front of my eyes, you are nothing but a tiny speck of sand!"

After he said this, the Silent Devil Evil Spirit body began to spread out and his body began to emit more mist, similar to a chimney. Chilling Yin Devil Power began to accumulate.

Su Yun heart was cold as he asked, "What are you going to do?"

Chapter 55 - Dead

“Do what? Hmph, you really think that I am completely terrified of the devouring force of the spirits in the cemetery? You are wrong, this cemetery will only weaken my strength. Killing you only requires one breath! In one breath, it is impossible for the cemetery to kill me! Although I will lose some strength, but it does not matter to me! Let’s see if I can kill you!”

After he finished, the evil spirit immediately took action.

As Su Yun saw this, his heart leapt in panic. He never would have thought that this spirit was this ruthless.

He really wasn’t seeking for his death.

Su Yun did not dare neglect this situation in the slightest. He began to step back and was prepared to flee at any moment.

However, right at this moment, he was still in a very sorry state. His spirit power was exhausted, while his body was riddled with injuries. It was even worse because of the devouring force. Not talking about escaping, if he did not ingest some healing pills from his spatial ring into his mouth as he was talking, then Su Yun’s body would have already been dead.

Rush!

The Silent Devil Evil Spirit already could not wait anymore. He built enough power and launched his technique. Looking at the black mist, the wide area it encompassed suddenly doubled. Then, the entire body of mist came rushing forward. Its spirit aura was dominating, completely suppressing Su Yun’s body.

Did he really want to jump over here?

Su Yun could only slowly step back.

Unfortunately, there was no path left to retreat. There was no escape.

Since it had come to this, then he could only fight.

Su Yun hardened his resolve. As he was retreating, he removed his engraved dragon blade from his spatial ring.

Yet.

Just as he was slowly retreating back, a sudden powerful force swepted over. This short malevolent like wind really made Su Yun's hair stand straight up.

Su Yun was surprised. He quickly turned around only to see half of his own body inside a massive black tombstone in the center of the cemetery.

The tombstone?

Su Yun focused his eyes and extended his limbs to back away from the tombstone. He was surprised to find that the tombstone was just an illusion. It was the entrance leading to another area inside.

The Silent Devil Evil Spirit was already charged over here, but as he saw Su Yun entering the entrance of the tombstone, it backed away. It even seemed suddenly surprised.

“Brat, if you go inside, you're dead!”

“If I do not go inside, then I'll be dead right now!”

Su Yun just snorted and grinded his teeth. After finalizing his decision, he turned his back and entered the tombstone. Soon after, his whole body had disappeared into the tombstone.

Almost in an instant, he felt he was on the verge of fainting. The bitter cold within the cave was piercing his body causing him to experience extreme pain. It seemed that it could even freeze him to death.

Shroo!

Just then, a warm current passed through Su Yun fingers and transmitted throughout his body. The light that warmth made his

entire body light up.

This caused his already muddled brain to relax. His whole body felt that it could faint at any time.

Peng.

Soon after, his body collapsed onto the ground. He only uttered a slight cry. His entire body was falling apart as he lay motionless on the ground. He did not have the strength to move anymore.

....

The tenth day.

The seal around Martial Bone Mountain was opened once again.

Surviving disciples from the Su Family came out one after another.

Despite this, only about half of the disciples that entered had survived.

A few died from demonic beasts, but most had died from battling other disciples for the Blood Jade Crystals.

However, the act of infighting was something no one discussed outside. Even if they knew very well, no one decided to point out anyone. If someone tattled, they would be advertising for their own demise.

Two figures were standing in front of the enchantment. They were anxiously waiting for a specific disciple. These two people were the Su Family's patriarch and Elder Long Xian Li.

However, after an half an hour, the inner sect's Elder Shi Long personally went to the main house. Waiting inside were Su Family's patriarch and Elder Long Xian Li, who came in after waiting for only a few moments.

"Is there any news of Su Yun?" The Su Family's patriarch asked.

"Honorable patriarch. Honorable Elder Long Xian. According to

some disciples of the outer sect, Su Yun had encountered a evil spirit in the soul core realm. He could not escape the Silent Devil Spirit and was consumed. He is dead!”

“Dead?” Su Family’s patriarch was stunned.

Thump.

At this time, the sound of a shattered object echoed through the hall after the conversation.

Long Xian Li eyes looked up and her silhouette stood up as if she was preparing to depart.

Su Family’s patriarch was frowning. He gazed at Long Xian Li and watched her lower her head in thought. Then she asked, “Did you witness Su Yun’s death for yourself?”

“Su Mo Li witnessed the Silent Devil Evil Spirit catch Su Yun. How powerful is the spirit soul realm? Even with a hundred Su Yuns, it would be impossible for him to escape the spirit. I’m afraid that he has perished.”

“For this type of demonic being, I’m afraid that even comparing the elites of the inner sect, they would not be able to escape the demonic being. How could this trash cope with this demon, if the main house can barely handle the demonic being.”

“Although the Silent Devil Evil Spirit is just a spirit. Just looking at the spiritual cultivation, it is only at novice spirit soul core realm, but its opponents cultivation was only at novice realm. The massive gap in power between the two would result in the obvious. The little spirit novice realm disciple just won’t be able to survive the battle.”

After Long Xian Li heard this, her frown on her face deepened. Then she said, “If that is so....maybe....maybe the person that stole the treasure from the Immortal Sword Sect was not Su Yun. Perhaps everything was just a misunderstanding.”

“If it was just a misunderstanding, then it would be the best

outcome!” The patriarch chuckled.

On Su Yun’s death, the patriarch just did not care.

Soon after, Long Xian Li stood up. She faced the patriarch and said, “Sorry for the disturbance, but please forgive me. Long Xian Li have matters to attend to, so I cannot stay for long. Therefore, I must say good-bye.”

After she said her words, she prepared to leave.

“Be careful Elder Long Xian. Please greet the elders of your sect on behalf of the Su Family. A little gift will be ready by the exit. If you don’t mind, I would like to invite you on your free time. In the future, Su Mou will certainly ascend the Immortal Sword Sect Mountains. I will pay a formal visit to elders.” The patriarch said as he also stood up.

“Patriarch is very generous.”

....

A figure was staggering towards the entrance of Martial Bone Mountain. Then person was waiting by the gates.

This person was a female wearing white blademaster armor. Her face was pale and her eyes were very red. Two lines of tears were stained on her face.

Inside the sheath on her back, the sword was swaying as she was swaying. The snow white blade was even picking up some dust.

Standing outside were Yue Yang siblings. They were standing to grieve for Su Yun. Then they raised their heads to gaze at the horizon.

“Is it her....”

“Su Qing Er?” The Yue Yang siblings froze.

“Let me tell you guys. You still have not went back to the main house to complete your trials, that guy is dead. If he died, why couldn’t he have died farther away, but don’t be an eyesore in

front of our eyes.”

The imperial guards that were on duty were yelling at the Yue Yang brother and sister. Their faces were full of disgust.

Su Xin Yue and Su Xing Yang were both injured, but they did not hurry to get healed. Instead, they were waiting with an anxious complexion on their faces.

“There is still people that have not left. You have to open the enchantment, otherwise, the person will never be able to leave.” Su Xin Yue yelled out.

The imperial guards just turn a deaf ear.

“Ah. You are talking about Su Yun, right? Ah, right now, he’s alone in Martial Bone Mountain. I think that he was probably already consumed by the demonic being. How would he come out? You guys should not remain here. It is just a waste of effort. If you really cared about him how about you guys quickly return to finish the trials. Since we can’t find the corpse, then we won’t even need a burial anyways.”

“Ha ha ha ha ha....” The other imperial guards began to laugh.

Su Xin Yue bit down her teethe. Her complexion reddened, but she did not know how to refute his words.

The two disciples did swallow some healing pills to stabilize their wounds. Nonetheless, it wasn’t a permanent solution. They will have to leave soon to get proper treatment. Otherwise, if they waited for too long, no mentioning their physical body, they will even be consequences for their cultivation. Despite this, they were convinced of one thing.

They believed that Su Yun would definitely come out safely.

Even though there was no news about him even now.

During this time, the imperial guards noticed Su Qing Er walking towards them. Although they did not know the person, a token

was hanging on her waist. Therefore, they did not think about neglecting their duties.

This was a token only worn by those of the main house.

Compared to servants of the main house, the formal members of the main house were like the sky above them.

“Greetings, senior!” The imperial guards all bowed and hastily saluted.

“Open....the enchantment.” The female’s calm and quiet voice sounded.

“Sister Qing Er!”

Su Xin Yue gazed at her and was surprised to find that Qing Er’s eyes were hollow. They looked sluggish, as if she had lost her soul. Her movements made it seem like she was dieing....

Several of the imperial guards looked at each other. They hesitated and then the captain stepped forward and salute. In a respectful voice, he said, “Honorable senior. Martial Bone Mountain is one for the forbidden areas in the Su Family. Except for special circumstances, such as the trails, we cannot just open the enchantment. Unless orders from the inner sect elders, such as Elder Shi Long or the patriarch gives permission, we cannot just unlock the seal.

“Open the enchantment....I....I will not repeat a second time.” Qing Er whispered.

The voice was ice cold. Within it was complete despair.

“Please do not embarrass me and the other disciples.” The guard kneeled down and bowed his head.

Nonetheless, Qing Er did not care about this gesture much.

They only saw her pull out a fluorescent light yet slender blade with one of her hands. Then she slowly walked towards the guards.

The sword was very sharp and the aura was bone chilling.

As the guards saw this, their whole bodies began to tremble. They were terrified of the power.

They did not dare resist anymore. Even though they are talented in the inner sect disciples and ignored the outer sect disciples, but compared to the main house, they had no power to resist. Even if the main house just blatantly killed them.

Furthermore, even if they had the power to resist, but how could they ever compare to the strength of Qing Er? She was carefully trained by elders of the main house, which possess heavenly strength. How could they ever be her opponent?

“Please have mercy, senior!” The guards loudly called out as they hastily bowed. Their voices were trembling. It was clear that they were very afraid.

However, the female did not stop advancing with the blade in hand.

The frost-like blade was still shrouded with sword aura and her intention was obvious.

They couldn't even kneel any lower than they have already kneeled.

“Sister Qing Er, quickly stop!”

Su Xin Yue hurriedly yelled.

If there was a confrontation, then the situation would become serious.

“Miss Qing Er! Please stop this! Even if we unlock the seal, in the large area of Martial Bone Mountain, we would not be able to find the location of Su Yun. We can only wait here and hope that Su Yun did not have any accidents. We can only hope he is going to leave by himself!” Su Xing Yang pressed.

However, Qing Er did not seem to have heard any of this. She just

wouldn't listen. She just directly raised her blade to begin the battle.

“I want to see young master....for those that block me....die....”
Her delicate pink lips said with a cold voice.

She was like a cold moon staring them with deathly frosted eyes.

Chapter 56 - The World behind the Gate of the Fragmented Void

Cough....cough....cough....

A violent bout of coughing suddenly erupted in the pitch black place. The person was still lying on the ground. He was shaking uncontrollably and struggled to raise his body upright.

“Brat, you finally woke up....this old grandpa here might have been sent to death with you....”

The sword elder weakly without any strength said in Su Yun’s ears.

The dazed Su Yun was experiencing a painful headache. After his vision returned to him, he slowly surveyed the surrounding area. He was astounded by the place and ask, “Where is this....what....what happened?”

“I do not know. This place is very mysterious. I even do not know how have you come here. Everywhere in this cave are devouring force from the spirits. If you do not find a way out of here, soon or later, you will just die in here!” The sword elder warned.

Escape?

Su Yun remembered. He seemed to have entered a tombstone and actually fell on the way down. Is it possible that this place is just one person’s tomb? If that is the case, then the exit must be at the top of the tomb.

Su Yun hastily gazed up, but, the top was just a layer of pitch-black air. There was no end to it. From whence he fell from, it seemed that he would be unable to find out.

This won’t do....could he really not escape from this place?

Su Yun took a few deep breaths and sat himself back on the ground. He began to analyze the situation.

“Hey! Kid, you still have time to spare to sit? This old grandpa is using his own energy to protect you. Ah, did you really think that you could just ignore the power of this place by yourself? Quickly find a way out!” The sword elder said.

“I can’t get out!” Su yun sighed. Then he told about the recent events that occurred to the sword elder.

After the sword elder heard about the situation, he was also very surprised.

“This is called Sky Dragon Cemetery of the Su Family. How could there be an underground passage here?”

“I just don’t understand this.” Su Yun said as he stood up and staggeringly went forward.

“I feel that the exit at the top of this cave should be: Fragmented Void’s Gate.”

“Is it the one that one could only enter and never exit, Fragmented Void’s Gate? This type of magical door is usually only used for misdirection. Why would there be a gate like that here?”

“I do not know. Nonetheless, one thing is for certain, there must be a correct route for the passage under this tombstone! Therefore, the exit must be somewhere else. For us to escape from here, our only choice is to find the other Fragmented Void’s Gate.”

“We are ruined, completely ruined! Kid! This grandpa here cannot help you on finding the other Gate of the Fragmented Void. This time, I really cannot do anything to save you.” The sword elder repeatedly sighed for it seemed that there was no hope for them.

Fortunately, Su Yun did not exhibit an ounce of panic during the situation. Instead, he looked calm and collected. Then he asked, “Senior, you do not have to worry. I have one object that can help. It will also be able to temporarily extend the time that I have to stay here.”

“Oh?” The sword elder said. Soon after, he remembered and anxiously asked, “You mean the Heavenly Crystal, right?”

“Not bad!”

Su Yun nodded. Then he took the Heavenly Crystal out from his spatial ring. He gazed at it for a moment. He analyzed with intense focus. Then he said, “The Heavenly Crystal only have a little time left before it will fully recover. Right now, I do not think that it can be pushed up, I think....that it will require at least another day.”

“Wait another day? We can barely endure much longer and we still have to wait another day?”

The sword elder shook his head and said, “Ah, in the end, you still need me to help you. Kid, place the Heavenly Crystal on the ground.”

“On the ground?”

Su Yun was puzzled, “Senior, what are you trying to do?”

“Just place it down.”

“Uh, alright.”

Su Yun was still full of doubts as he completed the command.

After the Heavenly Crystal was placed on the ground, a sudden bright white streak of light flew out of the spatial ring. After the bright streak appeared, it illuminated the surrounding in a dazzling light. Soon after, the light vanished into the Heavenly Crystal.

As Su Yun saw this, he suddenly looked lifeless.

Even a fool could see what the sword elder was doing.

“Boy....following this....everything will be up to you now....”

The sword elder’s voice uttered one last sentence, but it was not vibrant with energy anymore. The voice sounded weak and sickly

as his presence vanished....

“Master....” Su Yun called a few times, but there was no response. He gently clenched his fists as emotions swirled in his saddened eyes.

Afterwards, Su Yun went over and picked up the Heavenly Crystal. The energy inside the Heavenly Crystal had now become completely restored. It was ready to be used. Now, he could immediately activate it.

Rich spirit power began to flood into his body, expelling the cold. The frozen meridians and blood in his frigid body began to melt. His body began to slowly recover. He could move now. His vitality was now almost completely invigorated.

Su Yun took a breath. Did he still dare to hesitate? He stood up and started towards the exit.

....

....

Boom!

A massive heavy spiritual force slammed down and clashed with the guard captain's blade.

Su Qing Er's arm was jolted back as her five fingers lost their grip. Her blade flew into the air.

However, she did not retreat. She only collapsed onto the ground. With a pale white face, tears flowed from her delicate face, silently crying.

Finally, her light of hope had been put out. She despaired alone, far away from everyone.

“Su Qing Er! How many times have I told you! Do not tangle with Su Yun! He is no longer your master and yet, you....are no longer his maid! He died as a trash, so why are you sad? Quickly go back to the main house and practice! If keep delaying and being lazy, then

you will have to face punishment as well!” A solemn looking man shouted from behind her.

Looking at him, one could see that he brought a crowd of disciples as he arrived at the scene.

“I....want....to see....young master....” Su Qing Er said defiantly as she stressed every syllable.

“Come back!” The patriarch shouted.

However, the words were never heard by Su Qing Er.

They could only see that her spirit aura suddenly soared. Her spirit aura seemed to burst forth like a bomb as she rushed towards the enchantment. Her delicate hands clenched into fists as the spirit power clashed with the enchantment. She was crying as she slammed at the enchantment, “Hurry up and open the enchantment....I want to see young master....he certainly did not die....quickly open the enchantment....”

The girl clashed against the enchantment again and again. She was crying as she kept shouting the words in a hoarse voice. She was completely grief-stricken.

The imperial guards all had a foolish expression on their faces.

The Yue Yang siblings were even more stunned.

No had expected that in Su Qing Er’s heart, Su Yun was this important.

Whoosh!

Just then, a female elite from the main house sneaked behind Su Qing Er. She caught he completely unprepared as she jabbed right into a point in Su Qing Er’s neck, Chong Xin Qi Hai Acupuncture Point. After Su Qing Er was hit, he mind blacked out and her eyes dimmed. Her soft body immediately crumbled to the ground.

The female elite quickly held her in her arms.

“Bring here back!” The Patriarch sternly said.

“Yes, sir.” The female elite quietly responded.

“In addition, without my command, do not let anyone near here! If they attempt to breach it, kill them!”

“Yes, patriarch!” Everyone shouted in unison.

After hearing this, the Yue Yang siblings’ faces looked bleak.

Perhaps....they really couldn’t wait for Su Yun to come out.

“Brother. Brother....Su Yun will come back, right?” Xin Yue wiped her tears of her eyes as she said biting her lips.

“Of course, He will definitely come back.” Xing Yang responded.

....

Rumble! ! !

A loud sound erupted from the dark space. Then, both sides of the wall abruptly blazed in a great amount of flames. The pitch-black void was illuminated with a radiant light. Everything was now clearly visible to Su Yun.

Looking at the flames inside Harmony Flames Crystal, Su Yun was suddenly overjoyed.

He suddenly realized that he managed to activate a light source in here.

Since that was the case, now he could find the exit in this mysterious place.

After thinking about it, a faint hope emerged from Su Yun’s heart.

He quickened his pace as he went forward on the illuminated path.

In here, it was like a grand palace. He was flanked by stone pillars. Everything was extremely spacious. One could never understand how this mysterious place was built. In front was a massive gate. For a region so massive, there must have constructed

an exit.

In front of the gate stood a statue of a honorable warrior holding a spear on his shoulders. The warrior's expression look very dignified, just like a war god: no anger, just power.

Su Yun hurried past them.

If there is a gate, then there must be a path. Right now, his body was utilizing to Heavenly Crystal to temporarily stay here. However, once the effect of the Heavenly Crystal ended, Su Yun was afraid that his body would not be able to endure the devouring force for even a stick of essence. To survive this ordeal, he had to race against time.

Only, Su Yun did not know whether this place had any traps, so he had to carefully analyze the surroundings as he went forward. His nerves were stretched to their limits as he tried to watch out for anything odd around him as he went forward.

Just then, a deep and profound voice drifted over.

“Filthy and dirty trash, how dare you break into master site! ! Do you understand the magnitude of the sins that you have committed? Quickly kneel down and confess your sins to the master. Otherwise, I will turn you to ashes!”

The sound resembled the sound of two stones rubbing each other. As he listened, Su Yun felt infinite pressure on his body.

Su Yun immediately looked around. He could only see the tall statues holding the spears, which actually became alive.

“This is....a construct?” Su Yun's heart jumped.

The statue looked ordinary, but spirit array was actually carved in the interior. The spiritual being spirit power actually came from a core set inside the intricate array. The core was in a dormant state, but when anyone with spirit aura came close to it, it would be activated. Then the statue would be able to come alive.

The constructs that were used were very strange and mysterious. Very few people could create them. Although Su Yun did know some of the manufacturing methods of artifacts, but most of them had no power. To make elite constructs, one would not only require a lot of time, it would also require a huge amount of manpower and strong financial support to create them.

In the previous world, Su Yun did work under a construct expert for a period of time. Under his tutelage, he did learn some things in that short period of time. He learned about the Five Lives of Constructs.

For each construct, there were five critical areas. If three of the five points were damaged, the construct would immediately stopped functioning.

However, for each construct, the five life points were never the same. To find these five life points, it would not be easy.

Su Yun slowly pulled out his dragon engraved blade as he stared at the statue. Nonetheless, he did not dare to move.

The statue spirit aura was very domineering. Observing its strength, he could already determine that it was at spirit core ninth stage cultivation. Luckily, it wasn't at spirit soul cultivation, otherwise Su Yun would never have chance. In that situation, he would be pushing the HEavenly Crystal's effect, unless he managed to use the HEavenly Crystal with the Demonic Blood Array.

Regardless, right now, there was no way out. His only hope was this gate. He had to find a way around the statue and go through the gate.

Then he stopped hesitating and took a deep breath. He stared intently at the door as he rushed forth.

Spirit Lord Aura exploded forth and like a locomotive that just launched, he was like an unstoppable force that charged forward.

“You are bold!”

The stone warrior's spear slammed down to the ground. His spirit aura was activated as he drifted down and blocked Su Yun in all directions.

Soon after, the spirit aura of the statue drowned Su Yun and began to forcibly squeeze his entire body.

Despite this, Su Yun right now had the support of the Heavenly Crystal. With the new power surge, it was as if his spirit cultivation was no longer spiriti novice realm of tenth stage.

He stared at the statue emitting the deep spirit aura as he sprinted as if he was flying towards the gate.

Upon seeing this, the statue raised his spear yet again to strike Su Yun yet again.

Boom!

The dragon engraved blade was raised and blocked the statue's stone spear.

Clang!

A heavy force like the ocean rushed into Su Yun body. Right after, the body transferred most of the force into the ground, which caused the ground to quake from the sheer force....

Chapter 57 - Triple Yuan Gas

Su Yun grinded his teeth as he suddenly counterattacked and deflected the stone spear away. At the next instant later, he threw his engraved dragon blade while using Spirit Lord Aura to control the flying blade aiming to pierce through the statute.

This time, he did not have the held of the blood array. He did not have the blood blades' help. His might right now was not equal to the battle of Gu Xie Xin Sect where he obtained the Everlasting Stone. Despite that, to compete with the stone statue, it was enough. His main objective was still the massive gate behind the statue.

As the flying blade clashed with the stone statue, the stone statue managed to dodge and resist the initial strikes with his stone spear. However, soon the flying blade overwhelmed the statue from its complex maneuvering and was stabbed repeatedly by the flying blade.

Yet....its abnormal defense was astonishing. After being repeatedly stabbed by the blade, it was only covered by some small cracks or marks on the surface of its body. The assault had hardly injured it.

If Su Yun wanted to eliminate the statue, it would be exceptionally difficult. The Heavenly Crystal's time was limited, so he could not last in a long battle!

Su Yun heart felt heavy.

“Hmm?”

As Su Yun neared the gate, the statue's attention towards the flying blade was immediately transferred to Su Yun as he came, crashing over.

“Despicable filthy trash, you actually are attempting to disturbed the master's sleep! Die! ! !” After the statue roared these words, he

charged towards Su Yun and mercilessly stabbed towards Su Yun with its stone spear.

The stone spear made a whirring sound as it pierced through the air. The strike was terrifying.

Su Yun hastily sidestepped the spear like a carp. (TL: I don't really know what this idiom means)

The stone spear slammed down heavily on the ground, creating a crater about one meter deep. The massive crater in the ground was massive. The strike was horrifying.

Too close!

Upon seeing the crater, Su Yun was wiping his sweat.

Yet....this move was not the end of the battle....

Suddenly, the ground voluntarily cracked open and a myriad of stone pierced up through the ground. It was layers and layers of sharp stones that aimed straight for Su Yun.

“What is this mysterious divine skill?” Su Yun eyes widened as he madly turned around and retreated.

However.

Boom!

His agility was far less than the flying stones and was hit directly by a massive rock. Su Yun coughed up some blood as he crashed in front of the massive gate.

His energy from the Heavenly Crystal had begun to decline! His power was fading.

As the energy was the Heavenly Crystal was pretty much consumed, the devouring force of the the Fragmented Void also began to act upon Su Yun's body.

Su Yun struggled to remove the Heavenly Crystal from his chest. He saw that there wasn't the slightest trace of internal energy in

the Heavenly Crystal anymore. His eyes flashed a trace of unwillingness.

Will I really die here?

Will I be trapped in here forever?

No! Impossible!

I cannot just die here.

Qing Er....she is still waiting for me to save her....

I must not let her get married on that day!

Never again will I let her become a puppet for the Su Family!

“Qing Er....” Su Yun made his decision. He struggled to stand up.

Right now, he was completely supported only by his willpower.

“Just die!” The charging statue roared as he ruthlessly swung his spear towards Su Yun.

Hua hua hua hua hua hua....

The stone spear of the statue was shrouded with spirit power as it spun, like a constantly rotating drill. This high speed thorn was flying straight towards Su Yun.

The velocity of the spear was boundless. The grand pressure of the spear was exceptionally astonishing.

Su Yun did not panic. He did not even have a trace of fear!

Just as the stone spear pierced towards Su Yun, he suddenly raised the Heavenly Crystal in his hands and sidestepped towards the assault of the stone statue.

Dang....the pitch-black Heavenly Crystal made contact with the stone spear's tip.

However. Su Yun did not feel any of the heavy clash.As he welcomed the blow, it felt like he had hit cotton!

Su Yun's heart was surprised. Then he was overjoyed.

He could only see the Heavenly Crystal emit a streak of black light and as the light illuminated the area, it managed to swallow part of the stone spear. Just like lightning, the black light soon began to envelop the entire stone statue. The Heavenly Crystal began crazily vibrate as this occurred.

“Ah ! ! ! ! !”

The statue issued a deafening roar as its massive body began to become riddled with a large number of cracks. An immeasurable amount of spirit power began to flood out from the cracks as it seeped into the Heavenly Crystal!

Just as expected!

The Heavenly Crystal was absorbing the energy of the statue!

Although the Heavenly Crystal's energy was depleted, it can readily absorb the spirit power present from anything that possess them. Then this energy would become his to use!

Although the strength of the statue is impressive, but it could not resist the suction force of the Heavenly Crystal as it took away its power!

Even though the Heavenly Crystal's suction ability of the black streak only lasted for a moment, most of the spirit power of the statue was taken away. It suddenly retreated from the clash as it took back the stone spear to get out of the range of the Heavenly Crystal. The massive stone body glared with its huge pair of eyes and shouted in an enraged voice, “I will definitely kill you!”

The statue continued its onslaught as it slashed with its stone spear yet again.

However, Su Yun did not panic. He made sure to pay attention to the stone spear as he blocked it again with the Heavenly Spear.

Clang....hua!

The Heavenly Crystal was like an endless pit. It frantically

devoured energy from its prey.

In the end, the statue was only a construct, so it did not have a person's brains. Although Heavenly Crystal kept damaging it, but it did not stop its onslaught. It did not retreat. It continued to clash move after move to kill Su Yun!

However, the only result was that the core that was contained in its large array had its energy basically completely depleted.

The massive body stopped moving. Its five vital points were exposed as the Spirit Lord Aura was deactivated.

Su Yun quickly propped himself up from the last clash. As he wielded his engraved dragon blade, he pierced through one of the vital points and ended the life of the statue.

Although the statue was not a person, even if its Spirit Lord Aura stopped running, it was still not fully dead. After a period of time, the body's spirit core would once again be replenished to regenerate its spirit power and thereby reactivating its spirit aura. Then it could rise once again, so completely destroying the construct was very necessary.

After eliminating the statue, Su Yun dragged his injured body and step by step he walked towards the massive gate.

As he neared the gate, he reached out with his hand and with a little effort, he pushed open the gate.

Click, click, click, click, click....

Strange sounds were emitted as the gate slowly opened. Suddenly, as the gate finished opening, a burst of green light burst out and went straight to Su Yun's pair of eyes.

Su Yun immediately closed his eyes and waited for the light to disappear. Then as the light weakened, he slowly opened his eyes again.

Before his eyes, there was a vast flat area.

As he looked behind the gate, the vast area seemed to have a circumference of about 500 meters. This location was truly very spacious. However, it was completely void of anything except a massive array drawn by green ink on the ground.

There was not the slightest devouring force here. Instead, the atmosphere was extremely comforting in this area.

In this strange atmosphere, it was like a spring. It made Su Yun feel like he was immersed in a smooth and cool wind that healed him. His whole body's fatigue, cold, pain, etc. all soon disappeared without a trace....

"This is Triple Yuan Gas! Wow, it is actually so rich in here! You struck big! Boy! You really struck it big this time! Ha ha ha ha...."

Then, the sword elder's voice suddenly calmed down.

"Triple Yuan gas....what is that?" Su Yun pondered.

"It is a nourishing type of gas, it is comparable to some of the ordinary cultivation medicine, however its effects are much higher than most cultivation medicine! Su Yun, quickly sit down cross-legged. Open all your pores and absorb the surrounding gas! Absorb it all! This is a cultivator's treasure! If you cultivate here, with your Everlasting Stone, your strength could jump by leaps and bounds! !"

The sword elder was overjoyed. It seemed that he also exited his scroll and was readily absorbing the Triple Yuan Gas.

Su Yun did not dare neglect his good luck. He quickly sat cross-legged and started his meditation. He opened all his pores on his body and began to absorb the rich Triple Yuan Gas from the surrounding air.

This type of gas seemed like heavenly spirit energy, as it went into his body, it permeated through all his arteries and veins. The moisture was very calmly to his withered body.

It seemed as if a clear spring had begun to flow through his body,

giving him a very refreshing feeling. It simply made him unable to calm down.

“Amazing! I did not expect that my depleted spirit power would be able to restore so quickly....furthermore it also seems that my spirit vision also expanded by a lot!” Su Yun opened his eyes as he said this.

The sword elder smugly said, “There was so much of the devouring force in the other place. You must have never thought of where all the spirit power devoured there had gone, right? Yes! It seems that all the spirit power engulfed there entered here, which is probably controlled by the extremely grand and intricate array beneath your feet. It is capable of creating Triple Yuan Gas, but....I wonder who constructed this?”

“If I had to guess, I’m afraid that this would be Su Tian Long!” Su Yun responded.

“The patriarch of the Su Family?” The sword elder asked.

“Yes.” Su Yun nodded and thought about it again. Then he continued, “Perhaps, this is one of the trials that the Su Family would give to its disciples?”

“Trial? Do you really think that Su Tian Long would give this trial to the hundreds of disciples?”

“This is just my guess. If one could not overcome the devouring force and not be able to beat the construct, how would one enter this magical place?” Su Yun said with a calm heart as he continued to sit cross-legged to cultivate.

With effects of the Everlasting Stone, his mind stayed in a serene state. Not only that, his spiritual eye saw that his Spirit Lord Aura cultivation increased by several times. Any of the gas that entered his body was first purified by the Everlasting Stone, which turned them into beneficial substances that could be readily absorbed to nourish his body.

If ordinary people had come across this place, if they felt the Triple Yuan Gas, they would have probably become completely flustered, because they would not know where to start. However, Su Yun was different, when he came in contact with the gas, he immediately activated the Everlasting Stone and began to calmly cultivate without any rest.

His muscles, blood, bones and marrow and soon all of his body continued to strengthen. Furthermore, his spirit power also kept on vigorously increasing. His spiritual eye was reborn and his spirit power became more tough and durable....

The vast region of Su Yun's inner spirit power took in the gas as it expanded from a small hole, where the gas seeped through. However, he only managed to absorb a small amount. Even though he was ferociously taken in all the gas, The Triple Yuan Gas was just gushing in more violently into his core.

After approximately half a day, Su Yun felt that his body had reaching its limit in absorption.

Although the Triple Yuan Gas was beneficial, his body's capacity was limited. It was like a cup, whether it was water or wine, no matter which type, there was still a limit for the container.

Nonetheless, if you wanted to hold more liquid, the only way was after he completely used up this glass of wine.

Su Yun remained calm and focused as he continued to ingest the Triple Yuan Gas. He spent one whole day just ingesting. Only afterwards did he continue to absorb the surrounding gas.

After two day....

Dong!

There was a clear sound that was emitted from his body. Then his whole body let out a burst of light. As the bright light illuminated the area, he continued to absorb the surrounding gas.

There was only one way that this event could occur.

That was when one made a breakthrough.

Su Yun opened his eyes with joy.

“I have broke through spirit novice realm tenth stage to spirit intermediate realm first stage. Furthermore, it only took two months of work! Fast, just too fast! Throughout history, I have never heard of anyone cultivating this fast!” Su Yun said with a light voice. He hastily examined his spirit eye inside his body and it had changed to a whole circle.

One thousand and eighty-one!

Su Yun was completely shocked.

It was higher than most peak spirit intermediate disciples by nearly double!

In other words, his own spirit power recovery speed based on his spiritual eye would be faster than them by two times!

Since it had come to this, his cultivation would inevitably jump by leaps and bounds....there was still lots of “Triple Yuan Gas,” he could not waste this precious opportunity.

Su Yun said in his head and continued to greedily take in the gas.

His pores opened yet again and his whole body began to enter a realm of ecstasy. After he fully drained the amount of gas his body could take, he began to enter the digestion phase.

The Triple Yuan Gas also seemed to have an effect on the sword elder and the Limitless Sword Arts Scroll. Although the sword elder could not absorb a lot of the gas, but even a little would help recover from his current condition.

Thus, under this strange spatial tomb containing Triple Yuan Gas, the gas was slowly decreasing as if it was slowly being consumed....

Chapter 58 - Blade Dress

Thump thump thump....

As the sun went down, an alluring woman was riding a majestic stallion that was galloping forward.

Her fingers were like spring onions, truly beautiful. They were holding a piece of the iron mask. She gazed at the mask as she emitted an aura of unwillingness.

This was one of the pieces of the Limitless Sword God's mask.

However, too much time have passed. The spirit aura from that mask has already dissipated, so her Ten Thousand Mile Tracking Technique would not work anymore. The technique relied on the spirit aura residue left on objects to track the person. Therefore, now that the spirit aura was gone, her technique was now useless.

Long Xian Li's small and fine hand suddenly tightened around the mask and crushed the iron mask to dust.

Then she threw away the iron mask and continued on her way.

Just then.

The air suddenly was enveloped by a strong and thick scent of blood. She quickly looked up ahead.

She could see countless corpses had littered the road up front. The blood was flowing out like a river flowing down a mountain.

She quickened her pace as she headed towards the scene. She was soon greeted by a terrible sight.

When one only looked at the ground, there were countless different types of bodies. There were male, female, whether old or young. Their goods were scattered around the ground and many of the bodies had a few sword wounds. One of the corpses still had a expression of absolute fear on his face as a corpse. Looking at him, it looked like they encountered some terrifying figure.

Maybe, did they perhaps encounter a bandit?

Long Xian Li pondered in her heart. Afterwards, she did not make sense of this and continued on her way.

“Ugh.....”

Then, a light sound that seemed to be a tender cry was leaked out.

It was extremely weak, just like a mosquito.

Long Xian Li turned around to check and was surprised to find that under a body of a middle aged female was something that was trying to crawl out.

She quickly rushed over and pulled away the corpse of the middle aged woman. Afterwards, she could only see a little girl who was wearing a red dress> She was currently panting very heavily.

The mother used her body to hide her child? Was she preventing her daughter was being taken away?

There was a small flicker in Long Xian Li's eyes.

As she analyzed the girl in front of her, who looked to be about seven or eight years old, the adorable little girl got up and looked around the circle of corpses. As she looked around, her eyes began to fill with tears that began to overflow everywhere.

“Mother....uncle....2nd uncle....father....” The little girl cried as she slumped back to the ground: paralyzed and heartbroken.

“Child, don't cry. The dead cannot be revived. The only choice you have is to endure this and live on.” Long Xian Li said with a soft heart as she crouched down to gently pat the little girl's shoulders.

The little girl froze for a moment as she stared at Long Xian Li's beautiful face. As if she saw a person like one of her loved ones, she miserably let out a wail and threw herself in Long Xian Li's arms. She was weeping loudly as her little body trembled uncontrollably.

Long Xian Li extended her slender arms like thin onions as she gently patted the little girl's back and quietly consoled her.

Despite this!

After she consoled the little girl for a while, Long Xian Li's eyes suddenly flashed a trace of doubt.

In an instant, the little girl stopped sobbing as all the corpses around her began to rise up.

"Hm?" Long Xian Li said as her eyebrows knitted.

Whoosh!

A chilling light streaked and was flying straight here.

Patter.

A white tender hand had grabbed her hands.

Long Xian Li looked down and was surprised to find that the little girl had unexpectedly actually grabbed a sharp short sword.

The short sword was enveloped in a scarlet aura appearing as a very devilish as if the blade itself was immersed in poison.

After witnessing the situation, she did sweat a little. Long Xian Li had been tricked and encountered an ambush.

She saw the little girl raise her head. Then the little girl innocently gave a harmless and brilliant smile as she said, "Little Li, you must always be vigilant!"

"Senior sister?" Long Xian Li secretly frowned.

As she spoke, she felt her hands already loosed their grip and the little girl's hand suddenly disappeared. When she saw the little girl again, the girl was standing five meters in front of Long Xian Li.

The girl was standing in the center of the bones, as if she was a devil herself. The little girl seemed like a horrifying phantom of a painting.

Just then, a breeze blew over. The bones, blood, debris and etc.

on the ground all disappeared without a trace. Then, the red skirt little girl changed her appearance. Her appearance changed to girl of around eleven years old as her appearance on the girl's face increased in charm and even in seductiveness. It would draw the attention of anyone that saw, especially her eyes, which seemed to trap one's gaze forever. If one gazed at the pair of eyes, they would no longer be able to move away.

However, that was not the main point. The most remarkable was that on top of both sides of her head was a pair of soft fox ears....and sticking out of her red skirt was a snow white fluffy fox tail.

A beastman. She was half human and half demon. On more than one occasion, the Demon continent invaded the Sky Martial Continent. Many of the invaders raped, murdered and pillaged countless cities. If a female was raped by a demon, there was a very low probability to give birth to a half human and half demon offspring. Therefore, it was possible to see some of beasts features on some humans. Not surprisingly, although these people were different from a regular human, but they never had a demon true strength or a true demon aura.

Nonetheless, since of the unique features given upon birth, it often resulted in causing the offspring to suffer from discrimination and bullying. Therefore, these people tend to prefer to live alone and avoid contact with regular humans. As a result, people rarely see beastmen.

After witnessing this change, Long Xian Li eyes suddenly lit up.

“So it is like this. You were actually using your your illusion force to ambush me!”

“My lovely sister, you are really illusioned. You actually took this long to find out!” The girl that was dressed in the red skirt said as she leaned against the side of a dead tree. Her mouth raised with a trace of cynicism, “But to say that I wanted to attack you, I do not.

If I really wanted to attack you, why would I let you discover my illusion?”

“Senior Sister, aren’t you saying this too early?” Long Xian Li angrily responded as she mouthed a few more words, “You are equal to me in strength, so you can’t determine who will be the clear winner. Yet, if you want to fight, I’m afraid that you wouldn’t be too sure if you can win, right?”

“Ah, friends then!”

The indifferent fox girl said, “I have come here to solve the problem that had happened!”

“What do you mean?”

“The Heavenly Crystal!” The fox girl said.

Long Xian Li remained silent.

“Tell me, the Heavenly Crystal is in whose hands?!”

As the fox girl said this, she slowly raised her thin scarlet short sword from her waist. Her eyes were oozing with killing intent, “If you say it, I will let you go. If you do not say anything, then....next time will not be like this, leaving you with only a warning!”

“Senior sister.” Long Xian Li did not take out her sword as she responded.

“What? My dear junior sister?” The fox girl amusingly winked in a playful manner as she grinned at Long Xian Li.

“Master have warned us before that we should not kill each other!”

“However, master is dead!” The fox girl’s face became ugly as her eyes flashed a trace of redness. She ground her teeth as she said, “Furthermore, you still have the right to mention master?”

“Master’s death was unrelated with the sect, only....”

“Enough!” The fox girl shouted as she began to approach Long

Xian Li.

Long Xian Li bit on her pink lips and no longer uttered a word.

The fox girl sternly gazed at Long Xian Li and coldly said, “Immortal Filthy Sword Sect, sooner or later, I will make them disappear. Master’s injustice will be corrected by me. You will regret your foolish actions!”

“Regret?” Long Xian Li said as she continued to look indifferent.

The fox girl coldly responded, “Long Xian Li, you must think that I cannot kill you. Tell me in which hands is the Heavenly Crystal!”

As she said this, the fox girl had already begun to rush forth. Her body was covered in spirit aura as she swiftly made her move.

Obviously, she was not lying about what she just said. She was truly aiming to kill junior sister.

Long Xian Li bowed for a moment and ultimately decided to lightly comment, “I think....it might be related to a person....”

“Who?”

“Su Yun!”

“Where is he?”

“Dead....”

....

Puff! ! !

Su Yun spat out a mouth full of blood that fell straight to the ground

As he witnessed the pitch-black blood fall to the ground, it let out a noise. The ground was corroded by this black blood.

As Su Yun’s eyes looked on the ground, there was a cheerful expression evident on his face.

“Foul blood? This type of accumulation usually resides in the

depths of the human veins, which is only expelled as a precursor for breaking through spirit intermediate realm second stage! After the foul blood is expelled, one's impurities within their bodies would decrease by half! I did not expect that after entering spirit intermediate realm first stage that I would so rapidly advance to second stage. How many days have passed? Fantastic....with the effect of Triple Yuan Gas and Everlasting Stone, the effects are truly staggering.”

“Not only that.” Sword elder's old voice emerged, “This elder here feels so comfortable for the first time. Since I first entered the Limitless Sword Arts scroll, I have never felt so comfortable. My soul has probably increased in power by one level, so the amount of spirit power I can provide should increase.”

Su Yun nodded with his body. He raised his hands in the air and waved them around for a few times. Then he responded, “Nonetheless, I seemed to have learned that the Triple Yuan Gas here is now depleted, so I am unable to progress in my cultivation here anymore. It is time to leave.”

Su Yun followed the outskirts of the area and finally arrived at a large coffin.

“Su Family's Third Patriarch: Su Tian Long....”

“Is this Su Tian Long's corpse?” Su Yun said as he analysed the coffin.

Afterwards, he went back to the matter on hand. He decided to continue to look for a way out.

He completed numerous laps around the area, but no escape route could be found. There wasn't even an escape button or anything.

“The Fragmented Void Gate should not still be in the spirit devouring area, right?” Su Yun whispered.

“The other Fragmented Void Gate cannot exist so close to each

other. If they are too close, the forces between them would cancel out and thus one would disappear. Therefore the would not be set up anyways! As a result, the other Fragment Void Gate must be in this area.” The sword elder said.

“But the surrounding area is empty, how do we leave?” Su yun sighed.

Suddenly, his gaze fell upon the huge coffin doors.

“Maybe....”

“Is it in the coffin?”

Su Yun walked towards it. He hesitated for a moment and then forcefully lifted the coffin lid.

Bang....

As the coffin lids were pushed in, the entire coffin was opened. The smell that overflowed from the coffin was not the disgusting smell of corpses, but a sour smell.

Su Yun hastily jumped on the coffin and peered inside.

After checking it, it was really surprising.

As he gazed into the coffin, there was no corpse of Su Tian Long. Instead, in the dark coffin, it was filled with black water. he did not know if the dark water was the gateway.

“Is this the exit?” Su Yun doubted.

“In all likelihood, it is. However, why is there so much water?” The sword elder responded.

“I do not care!” Su Yun held his breath as he stared at the dark water. Then he directly jumped in.

Splash!

The water splashed out.

As Su Yun dived into the coffin, it was evident that the space within the coffin was not too large. It looked about only a couple

square meters. Nonetheless, at the bottom of the black water, there was the Fragmented Void Gate.

it was really there.

Su Yun was overjoyed and quickly swam towards the Fragmented Void Gate.

Shua!

As he neared the Fragmented Void Gate, he immediately felt a powerful suction force emit from the gate and Su Yun's body was quickly sucked in.

He was still in the dark and holding his breath, since he could not breathe underwater.

He did not know where this Fragmented Void Gate would lead to in Martial Bone Mountain....

Luckily, the transfer only lasted a short while. Su Yun's face was beginning to turn purple as he faced a bright incoming streak of light. Then he came out of the water.

His world finally was restored and Su Yun was shocked.

In the distance was a lush forest. Behind him was a massive waterfall and he was currently floating away from the bottom of the waterfall.

He actually flowed out of a waterfall?

Su Yun looked towards his rear and could see that behind the massive waterfall, there was a black hole.

Then....then that is the hole to Su Tian Long's Tomb?

Su Yun was puzzled, but before he could think, he heard a splash. He had landed straight into some pool.

"Who is it?!" A cold, yet urgent voice sounded.

It was a sweet female voice....is it possible that someone was taking a bath?

Su Yun froze for a moment and peeked his head out of the pool to look around. He was surprised to find that within the pool was not a naked female. On the contrary, on the shore of the pool was a very young girl wearing a red blade skirt. She was looking right at him.

Su Yun was a little disappointed.

“I knew I left a little late.”

Chapter 59 - A Beauty

The young girl had a pair of fluffy snow white fox ears and a huge soft white tail gently swaying back and forth behind her.

After seeing herself, the young girl subconsciously became alert but the expression quickly disappeared without a trace. Soon, her face was replaced by a blooming smile.

“Hey! It seems a handsome gentleman actually just fell from the sky!” The voice was clear and bright with its own strong charm. It seemed like every word could hook in anyone’s soul.

Su Yun was just staring at her stunned for a moment. Then he hastily recovered his mind.

“She has a very powerful mind skill. Kid, who are dealing with? Why does every single word she says seem to have so much allure?”

The sword elder seemed a bit nervous as he directly whispered to Su Yun.

“I do not know. I do not know this girl, but she must not be that simple. Let’s quickly think of a way to get past her and quickly leave!”

“You have to be careful! I will have to return to the Limitless Sword Arts Scroll to finish assimilating the Triple Yuan Essence!” After those words, the sword elder’s presence disappeared.

Su Yun took a deep breath. Then he dog paddled back to the shore.

However, the eleven year old girl soon walked up in front of Su Yun. She gave Su Yun a flirtatious look and smiled at him as she chuckled, “Where has this handsome brother came out from? Why did you suddenly fall into the middle of the pond?”

“Uhh....” Su Yun slowly said as he gazed at the girl.

After seeing an entire set of red battle dress and a not long blade hanging from the side of her waist, he became very surprised. Her long hair extended to her waist, but her she was still quite young. Nonetheless, there was some development in her chest, which was small and delicate. However, her snow white tail was particularly alluring as it was continuously moving back and forth, making anyone unable to do anything but feel the soft white fur.

Despite this, at the moment, this little girl that was equipped with a full battle dress that was riddled with holes, which exposed her pure white skin. On her body, she was covered with wounds. Presumably, it seemed that this girl was just at the pond to wash away her wounds.

Some wounds could not be healed just by medicine. Therefore, water still had its uses.

“What is handsome brother looking at, maybe....you want to be my husband?” Right after listening to this extremely charming voice, Su Yun could only see that the beautiful little girl looked away. She was blushing, which would make any man become crazy.

My god!

Su Yun erratically shook himself after he bit his the tip of his tongue. He was freed from the mind technique.

He took a deep breath and said, “Young lady, I only met you by coincidence, since we do not know each other, I will take my leave.”

Afterwards, Su Yun hastily sprinted off and quickly left this place.

However, as he began to take on step, the beautiful girl with the scarlet short sword appeared under his neck as quick as lightning.

Su Yun was startled to see that the young girl wearing the battle dress was standing right in front of him. Then she smiled as she

said, “You can leave....but....but can you do something for me?”

“Young girl, quickly say it!” Su Yun hurriedly said.

“Hmph! As a matter of fact, I will say it.” The battle dressed girl laughed, “The Su Family is not far away from here, but I do not know the way. May I inconvenience you, so that you may accompany me to the Su Family!”

“Su Family?”

“You will not go?”

“That is....”

“If you will not go, then there is no value in keeping you, then?”

“How can I not go? I will take you there!”

Su Yun secretly hid the Su Family crest on his waist as he quickly said this.

Yet, Su Yun wondered if this person was looking for trouble with the Su Family. Nonetheless, from the lightning fast movement from a moment ago, he’s afraid that this person cultivation level was above him. Furthermore, it was probably several times above him, so he was certainly no match for this person if she was the enemy. He could only try to appease her.

“Come on, handsome brother!” The young girl sheathed her sword and smiled.

“.....”

They quickly left the pond and went on a wide trail. As Su Yun recognized the road, he suddenly froze.

They were actually a full hundred miles away from the Su Family at an area called: Joining Green Forest. If they went from here on foot, it would take nearly a day of travel to get back.

How did he come here from Su Shi Long’s tomb?

Su Shi Long built himself a tomb, but what was the final purpose

for it? Was it really just to test Su Family's disciples?

Su Yun's mind was completely shrouded in mist.

They hiked along the wide trail towards Su Family Outer Sect. The trail had many twists and turns.

"Hey, handsome brother. Recounting the incident before, just how did you fall from the top of the waterfall?" What happened?"

The young fox girl asked as she twirled her large white tail in front of Su Yun. Both of her arms were crossed behind her back as she neared him. Her cute and innocent little face had a big smile as she looked upon Su Yun.

Su Yun's eyes swept over her and said, "Then how did you receive the wounds on your body?"

After the fox girl heard this, she snorted. Then she cast a sideways glance and said, "Nonetheless, I was injured by a despicable person. Although she was powerful, she was not enough to deal with me."

"Oh...." Su Yun nodded, but did not say another word.

"Hey, I said my reason. You did not say anything!"

"I'm not going to say it!"

"What? Are you teasing me?"

"This is considered teasing?"

A resounding sword let out.

Her sword was taken out of the sheath.

"Well....fine....I will say it...." Su Yun's head overflowed with sweat. His eyes secretly turned as he said, "I was playing in the mountains. Then I accidentally stumbled and fell...."

"Bullshit!"

The fox girl shouted. She obviously did not believe him.

But Su Yun was dead set on remaining as a dead pig in hot water, he did not utter another word. (Tl: idiom: completely ignore)

The fox girl would not become agitated from a simple matter and kill him. After all, she needed Su Yun to lead the way. Otherwise, she would not have asked Su Yun for directions.

After hearing this, the fox girl put her sword away. She did not become angry. Instead, her pair of bright eyes gave him a crafty look. The corner of her tender lips curled as her body fell to the ground. Ow! A thud was heard.

Her little white hands exposed her ankle as she was currently frowning. She tearfully looked at Su Yun, “Handsome brother, your girl....your girl twisted her feet....”

Su Yun was stunned silly as he saw this.

How bad at acting could she be?

How could someone with a cultivation that high twist their foot?

Was she trying to insult his intelligence?

However, after the words were sounded after the incident, it had a dramatic impact on Su Yun’s mind. He did not know why, but he found himself yielding to the young girl. He could not help but step forward and reveal a look of concern. Then he asked, “Are you okay?”

“No....no problem, just....just my ankle is in pain....”

“I will carry you!” Su Yun said.

“No....no, handsome brother, as long as you prop me up it is fine.”

The fox girl said with an exquisitely alluring voice. She extended her thin white arm as the dark red sleeve slowly slide back to her shoulder, exposing her bare lotus white skin.

As Su Yun began to speak, his mind was becoming controlled. He was getting into a trance and the situation became more difficult to

grasp....

Dong!

Suddenly, a muffled sound emitted from his heart.

After the noise, Su Yun's whole body trembled. He quickly looked at his chest and saw the Everlasting Stone was trembling.

At this moment, the Everlasting Stone had actually activated on its own and allowed him to recover himself and free his mind.

After Su Yun recovered. He felt surprised yet again.

He did not expect this person would be able to just use her eyes to entrance him with a mind technique. If the opponent was powerful to a certain level, they could easily control others. If it continued, Su Yun would probably have had his secret discovered.

This fox! Too strong!

Fortunately, there was the Everlasting Stone!

He secretly exhaled in his mind, but then he had an idea.

Suddenly, Su Yun hand grasped the fox girl's white arm.

The fox girl became slightly stiff, but did not let out a retort. One could only see a strong arm wrap around her as she was propped up like a child in his arms.

"How are your feet? Can you walk? Here, let me hold you as you walk!"

Su Yun said with concern.

The fox girl suddenly became baffled.

How could she have thought that Su Yun would help her like this. Her soft body became very stiff.

"Put....put me down...."

After a moment, the fox girl recovered.

She looked a little more angry and considerably more tense. In

one motion, she pushed Su Yun away and she fell to the ground.

“What are you doing?” Su Yun said with a bewildered look at the fox girl. His face looked confused.

Although a trace of anger passed through the eyes of the fox girl, it was soon replaced by a bright smile on her cute little face.

She circled around Su Yun and clicked her tongue: “You were actually hiding a trick!”

“What are you saying?” Su Yun dumbly responded.

The fox girl calmly laughed, but did not bother to continue teasing him. She quickly became a child again and said, “Well, hurry up, I have to quickly arrive at the Su Family. I do not have time to waste. Otherwise, if you make me angry, you will be dismembered!”

Dismembered?

Although she seemed to be an extremely strange young girl, Su Yun felt that she was really capable of doing it. Therefore, he just moved his body and willed himself forward.

Ke.

After taking two steps, an eerie atmosphere floated towards the road.

“Really annoying!”

The fox girl sighed and uncomfortably looked and said, “These flies are so annoying, right?”

Flies?

Su Yun doubted it was that by the tone of this fox girl. It seemed that she sense some kind of foreign existence.

Since it found her, then he would just stand a distance away from her. Therefore, he would not get into the battle.

Su Yun immediately retreated back and created some distance

between them.

He was surprised to find that this time, a number of silhouettes swept over the trail and directly stopped in front of her. They surrounded Su Yun and the fox girl pretty tightly.

After the dark atmosphere dissipated, three people wearing black robes appeared.

One person was holding a knife, one was holding a sword and one was holding a spear. The three angrily glared at the fox girl. Their eyes were ferocious as if they wanted to completely devour the little fox girl.

“Beastgirl! You actually killed my entire family. Seventy-three relatives died. Even my twelve year old son was not spared! I have chased you for a month and today I will avenge my family. I will chop your head off and sacrifice it to him!” The middle-aged man holding the knife growled.

“Your whole family of “Mo Silk City” can be considered as a notorious group. You did not even consider that even though your twelve year old son was young, he already learned to bully others as if he was tending to fish in the village! Why would I spare him?” Then the smile on the fox girl’s face lit up even more, “Moreover, I let you guys give me the Turquoise Life Jade, but you guys refused me. Therefore, I had to use force!”

After talking, the fox girl just giggled. It seem to think that whatever happened before was a funny event.

Su Yun’s sides suddenly became alert. His heart became very tense.

As he gazed at this sweet and seductive young girl laughing, he became afraid that she was a scorpion, which he could not get away from.

Chapter 60 - You are Su Yun?

“Beast-women!”

At that moment, the man wielding the sword shouted as he coldly glared at the fox girl.

“Who are you?” The fox girl stopped smiling and innocently asked.

“I am Zhen Hu!”

“Zhen Hu!” The fox girl’s tail suddenly stiffened.

“You know this elder’s name?” The man’s eyes flashed a trace of astonishment.

Afterwards, the fox girl just slowly shook her head, “I do not know.”

“You....” His temperament became more furious. He almost rushed in if he could not hold in his fury, but after listening to the fox girl’s comments, he responded, “I want to ask you. Why did you kill my brother!?”

“How many months ago did your brother die?”

“Three months ago!”

“Three months ago.” They saw the fox girl think about it for a moment, but she only shook her head, “I do not know who is your brother. I have killed too many people. If they are not particularly famous, then I will not remember those ones that I have killed!”

“Despicable!”

The man was basically grinding away his teeth as he was waiting to take action.

“You may not have heard of Chen Hu’s brother, but you have heard of Seven Brothers of the Horizon, right?” At this moment, the man holding the spear shouted.

“Of course! I have heard of them!” The fox girl smiled as she continued, “However, those seven cultivators are only spirit core fifth stage trash!”

“You are going too far!” The man holding the spear growled. Then he continued, “I heard from others, that even though some of my brothers were just walking in the streets, but you mercilessly beheaded them all. Why did you do that?”

“They looked at me!”

Then the fox girl shrugged and continued, “They were also trying to rudely flirt with me!”

“Just because....just because of that?” The man holding the spear could not accept this.

“Of course!” The fox girl continued to smile, “I will disregard them if they just looked at me. Despite that, they were trying to molest me. The only choice I had was to eliminate them. Truth be told, it seems that I missed one of the seven Brothers of the Horizon. I did not expect you guys to come to the palm of my hand. Therefore, I’ll make sure to send you to reunite with your brothers!”

After her voice fell, the fox girl took action.

She took the initiative to strike first. Her soft and tender hand reached for her waist and with a flash of her hand, a devilish looking dagger emitting a scarlet aura appeared. The aura was swaying within the palm of her hand. Then, it automatically shot straight towards the spear guy.

“Beast-woman, do you really think that you can resist us? I have been well-prepared for today’s battle. We will definitely kill you here today!”

After he said this, the man who wielding the spear quickly activated his divine skill. Then, he suddenly stomped heavily on the earth to make it tremble. As the ground shook, a massive stone

wall rose from the ground to obstruct any direct assault of the fox girl.

Meanwhile, the other two cultivators were taking out pitch-black spheres one by one. They firmly grasped the spheres within their palm and quickly chanted some skills very quickly.

“Confounding Grand Enclosure Array!” The fox girl suddenly stopped her assault as she gave up on the spear cultivator. Instead, her pair of sinister looking eyes swept over the other two cultivators and with a contemptibly said, “This is a demonic array, which fully lets out its potential as a supporting array technique for restricting the opponent. After the spirit energy within the array is activated, the opponent would be unable to use any divine skills and their combat strength would plummet, causing most people to surrender. The combat strength would probably decrease by one entire level. Furthermore, if one stayed within the array, they would become sleepy and could easily faint from exhaustion.”

“Ha ha ha ha! It looks like you have quite the knowledge on this array!” Zhen Hu laughed.

“To deal with you, the three of us has constructed this Confounding Grand Enclosure Array! Beast-woman, this time, you will not escape from us!”

“We will use this array to enslave you. After destroying your cultivation, you will be put trained properly and become a female slave! Oh, it seems you also looked very pretty, so we will not quickly kill you. Instead, we will slowly torture you until we are satisfied enough. Then you will be beheaded, so that you will inherit all the pain you caused from the ones you have killed!”

The person holding the spear said with eyes full of contempt. His eyes were filled with ravenous desires.

After the fox girl heard this, her little face seemed to fill with terror, “How can you do this to weak girl like me?”

“You are scared now? Well, it’s too late! Just give up, beast-woman!”

Zhen Hu roared as he firmly grasped his knife, while waited for his companions to throw the pitch black spheres. As they saw the the pair of spheres collide, they rapidly melted and merged into one. Soon after, they expanded and soon formed a truly massive profound net. It was specifically used to counter the fox girl.

Despite this, as the fox girl was trapped within the net, she did not exhibit the slightest trace of panic.

She only calmly looked at her hands as her fingers turned yellow as she utilized a form of palm arts. Soon, her whole body was shrouded with a large orb of scarlet light that pressed against the black net.

And it happened! She was soon completely free from the black light’s enclosure and stepped closer towards Zhen Hu who was still just wielding his knife.

“What?” (Tl: I was tempted to translate: Dafuq...)

The two other cultivators remained shocked, “You’re actually unaffected by the Confounding Grand Enclosure Array’s influence?”

“This insignificant technique, why are you displaying it in front of a master like me?”The fox girl disdainfully said with eyes full of triumph.

They could only watch as she abruptly gained the upper hand. Using her soft and tender small hand, her dagger soared into the sky. Then, a long blade appeared and she slashed through the top with lightning fast movements at the Confounding Grand Enclosure Array.

Puchi!

Zhen Hu who was still supporting the massive array as the scarelet dagger let out a massive slash that shook the entire array.

He spat out a mouthful of blood and quickly retreated. The other two cultivators complexion paled dramatically.

However, before the two could even react, a sword slashed through right in front of them. This slash made the sky spin and the Earth go round.... (Tl: in this context, means very, very powerful)

Bam. Dong.

Two heads flew into the air.

The blood madly spurted out from the two headless bodies like a pillar of blood.

The person that was still holding the spear stared dumbly at the scene. He had come looking for revenge with his partner, but his partner was beheaded with just one move....

Were they really just too weak?

Impossible! They had three cultivators and several days of preparation, to understand each other's strengths and weaknesses. There was no way they could be this weak!

Yet why, did they lose after meeting with the beast woman face to face?

There was only one explanation.

The fox girl was just too powerful!

"Your strength is too pathetic, would you still dare to behead me?" The fox girl gently twirled her soft white battle dress around. The man holding the spear just laughed, "So....you were...."

"...."

Puchi.

The voice was cut short by the sound of a sharp dagger piercing through flesh.

Flanked.

The Su Yun who desperately desired to escape from this event could only wait quietly on the side after he witnessed the battle.

Spirit Core Fifth stage....

They were sufficient to easily deal with several Su Yuns. However, in front of this fox girl, they could not even hold their own in battle!

Moreover, there were three of them! Equipped with Confounding Grand Enclosure Array, everything was well prepared! However, they had actually met their end.

What level of cultivation was this fox girl in front of him?

Su Yun was truly scared.

Moreover, she said killing after killing, but there were no major backlashes. Su Yun was really afraid....that there was some major forces behind her that was backing her up.

Su Family was not very powerful, but most people could ignore the vast communication network that they had set up. Su Family's relationship between various sects and forces were comparable to Blossom Heart Valley. Despite this, Su Family did not dare try to offend the Immortal Sword Sect. After all, the Su Family true strength was not comparable to Immortal Sword Sect's.

If you had the backing of the Su Family, Su Family's important figures were people that no one dared to kill!

In fact, based on this matter, Su Family was still not equal to the Immortal Sword Sect. Therefore, Su Family used Qing Er to marry into Profound Sky Sect. In this way, the Immortal Sword Sect would not even be a problem anymore. The Profound Sky Sect was sufficient to completely oppress the Immortal Sword Sect. If they could not eat it, they would leave. (Tl: since Su Family could not be true allies to Immortal Sword Sect, they found someone else)

Which forces were backing this fox girl?

It seems that he could only follow her orders and take her to the Su Family! Anyways, she was looking for the Su Family. She was not looking for him, so what was there to be afraid of?

Su Yun made up his mind. He no longer wanted to run away.

After the fox girl kill the three people, it still did not stop. She lined the three male corpses and used her hands to slowly pierce through each of the three corpses' hearts.

In an instant, he could see that the scarlet dagger trembling as it issued a piercing screeching noise. A lot of veins appeared on the dagger's blade, creating an intricate pattern. As he gazed at the dagger piercing through the corpses, it was evident that it began to erode the corpses.

Su Yun's hair stood up as he saw this scene.

This blade....was definitely not something that the Sky Martial Continent could produce.

"Are you not afraid?"

At this time, the fox girl curiously turned her gaze at Su Yun. She was still smiling.

"I am afraid." Su Yun replied.

"Oh? Then how can you look so calm?"

"This is probably....I was born aloof." Su Yun casually replied.

The fox girl froze for a moment and then clutched her stomach as she giggled.

"You are too interesting!"

"...."

After the fox girl's dagger finished absorbing the blood from the three corpses, the two went back on the trail.

Cruel, insidious, sinister, two-faced....this was Su Yun's evaluation of the fox girl.

It seems that her heart was indifferent and unfettered to everything!

“Right, what was your name?”

Suddenly, the fox girl asked as she walked to the front.

“Me?”

Su Yun hesitated and thought that he should not announce his real name.

Should he announce his real name and she came to get revenge on the Su Family, then he would probably be doomed.

However, if he announced a false name, and the disciples of the Su Family exposed him, then this fox girl would probably become very angry. Given her temperament, Su Yun was afraid that he could not escape being beheaded.

After thinking about it, Su Yun decided to take a gamble.

Yet, it is better to tell her truthfully. After all, even if she had some type of grudge with the Su Family, it should have nothing to do with him, an outer sect disciple. With his inferior status and humble strength, he could not have brought any type of trouble to himself.

After making a decision, Su Yun took a deep breath, “My name is Su....”

“Look, isn’t that the Su Family territory?”

As Su Yun was about to speak his name, the fox girl suddenly ran a few steps ahead. She had unknowingly interrupted Su Yun as she asked these words.

In the distance, an image of a massive stone wall that were several meters high appeared. Behind the walls, there were many buildings that lined the streets, which had flags attached to the roofs. The massive dark banners that were swaying in the wind had one word: Su.

“Uh....yes, that is the home of the Su Family!” Su Yun nodded.

“Ha ha. I finally made it to the Su Family!”

The fox girl’s eyes glittered with joy. She quickly went past Su Yun and sprinted straight ahead.

Looking at her appearance, it seemed that she was definitely looking for trouble with the Su Family.

Su Yun was relieved, but his mouth revealed a small snicker. Nonetheless, he accelerated his pace.

The trial had ended long ago and he had disappeared for a long time. Most likely, the Su Family thought he was dead. He did not really care about anyone but himself, but he was still worried about the Xin Yue brother and sister.

Especially Qing Er.

Su Yun felt his heart tighten, as if he was somewhat afraid that the girl may have done something stupid....

Soon, the two arrived at the main gates of the Su Family.

“Hey! Open the gates! Hurry and notify your patriarch! Please inform him that I, Hu Qian Mei, a master who is willing to teach the Ming Ying Arts is here! Quickly, open the gates!” The fox girl shouted with her utmost strength and allure that she could muster.

Was she that powerful?

After the gatekeepers of the Su Family heard this, they quickly looked at each other.

Right after sending back the Immortal Sword Sect Elder, another master had appeared to teach demon arts!

Just then, Su Yun came over. The two outer sect disciples suddenly turned pale.

One of them vigorously rubbed his eyes and found out that he

was not mistaken. With his hand, he trembling point in horror and said, “Su....Su....Su....Su....Su Yun, is that really you....you are not dead yet?”

“Su Yun?”

Hu Qian Mei suddenly backed off and stared at the man that came with her. She blinked her eyes in doubt, “You are Su Yun?”

Chapter 61 - Back to the Su Family

When Su Yun saw Hu Qian Mei break out into a gleaming grin his heart felt as if it was about to leap out of his chest. Her actions were like an ominous premonition.

“You say that you are a famous elder of the Ming Ying Sect?” He sneakily stepped back as he whispered.

“Ah, that’s right!” Hu Qian Mei grinned as she responded, “The reason for coming to the Su Family....was to find Su Yun, right?” Hu Qian Mei nodded her head back and forth. Then her little hand slowly reached for her dagger on her waist, but the smile on her face did not vanish....

“Why....are you trying to find Su Yun?” Su Yun quietly said as he swallowed his saliva.

“The Heavenly Crystal....” Hu Qian Mei slyly said as she smiled, “If you surrender it, I’ll spare you.”

“So you came here for the Heavenly Crystal?”

Hu Qian Mei quickly made a keng qiang sound and pulled out the dagger. She did not say a word as the dagger went below Su Yun’s neck. She just smiled and ordered, “Give me it.”

Unexpectedly, after those words were said, Su Yun had a relieved appearance.

“Why are you laughing?”

Seeing that the opposition was so relaxed, Hu Qian Mei became very curious and decided to ask.

“Oh, nothing.” Su Yun laughed, “Just, the Heavenly Crystal is not on me!”

“Then who has it?”

“Naturally, I will not say it!”

“Then my only choice is to kill you!” Hu Qian Mei indifferently said as she was about to take action.

“Alright!” Su Yun seemed not care. He just shrugged and said, “Anyways, if I am dead, then no one will ever know where the whereabouts of the Heavenly Crystal. Since you decided to kill me, then I will just give you my strip of this rotten life....ah, it is such a shame about the treasure. You will be forever buried in the pitch-black area!”

After these words were said, the dagger on Su Yun’s neck was immediately taken away. Then, a lovely aroma wafted into his nose as a soft body hugged around his arms.

“Oh, what is brother saying? When did I ever want to kill you? I definitely like my awesome brother!” Hu Qian Mei’s face looked shy as she said these words with coy.

After Su Yun witnessed this, he nervously reminded himself that the Everlasting Stone was still on him.

This fox girl was really powerful. Her expressions changed faster than when the weather changes. Her killing intent was dominating one second and the next, he was feeling the charm of her seduction....

“Nonetheless....” At this moment, Hu Qian Mei craftingly said one more sentence, “If I do not obtain the Heavenly Crystal within five days, then....then I will be forced to get rid of brother!”

As she was saying this, her little white fingers gently tapped the dagger hilt that was back on her waist.

A threat!

This was naked threat, how could he not figure it out?

Nonetheless, he never expected that this horrible predicament pertaining to this fox girl was actually directed to him or the main purpose....to obtain the Heavenly Crystal.

Why would she decide to obtain by herself? How did she even know that he had the Heavenly Crystal?

Su Yun's stomach was full of questions, which seemed endless. However, the problem that he had to solve right now wasn't these types of questions, it was how to solve the domineering strength of the fox girl: her exceedingly high cultivation and aura.

He did not want to lose the Heavenly Crystal.

If he were to lose the Heavenly Crystal today, then all his well-thought plans would become disrupted.

Time was running out, and without the Heavenly Crystal, all his efforts would have been for naught.

"That one...."

Just then, the two guards that were at the sidelines finally came down. One of the fat guards approached them and directly face Hu Qian Mei with a courteous expression. He was currently trembling as he said, "This....this elder, please wait a moment, little one here....the little one here will inform the patriarch of the house! Also....Su Yun....you....you also wait for a bit! Please do not run around, alright?"

After he finished speaking, the guard took a few steps back and turned around. He sprinted out from the outer sect.

It seemed that this guard was really tense and nervous as he hurried away.

Su Yun decided to formulate a plan. He had to come up with a good reason. If the truth became public, the Heavenly Crystal would be very difficult to conceal. Having this charming fox girl was already giving him a horrible headache. If the Su Family was also aware of this treasure, then it would be a complete disaster for him.

Furthermore, trespassing the Su Family cemetery was already a capital offense. According to the Su Family's laws, his entire body

would ground to just bones.

“Judging from your expression, it seems that you have some secrets that you are concealing from the Su Family!” Hu Qian Mei analyzed Su Yun as she spoke again.

Su Yun remained silent. Then he looked down in thought for a moment and asked, “how do you know that I have the Heavenly Crystal?”

“The despicable person said so!” Hu Qian Mei’s face slowly changed as she harrumphed.

“A despicable person?” Su Yun’s heart pounded as he asked again, “Who is that person?”

“What?” Hu Qian Mei was stunned at the question. Then she asked, “You do not even know the person? Tsk. Tsk. You really aren’t very cautious, are you? The godly treasure was already in someone else’s sights, but you never noticed?”

“I’m just a spirit intermediate realm cultivator.”

“Since that is the case, quickly give the Heavenly Crystal to me or I will make you die a painful death!”

“If you want my life, then just kill me now. However, you will not obtain the Heavenly Crystal! Of course, you can torture me, but if you decided to torture me, that I will shatter my spirit cultivation and commit suicide. Even then, don’t even think about obtaining the Heavenly Crystal!” Su Yun clearly said.

After Hu Qian Mei heard this, her face slightly darkened and grunted, “I will give you five days to consider. The Heavenly Crystal or your life, you will have to pick one!”

Su Yun did not respond.

At the gates of the outer sect of the Su Family, they waited for about a time for a stick of incense to burn out. Su Family’s patriarch was leading with a high class Su family member. Su Shi

Long, who had one of his arms cut off was being dragged here. They were swiftly running over here.

Ming Ying's teachings were not a weak collection of martial arts. Although Ming Ying School was not a faction as powerful as the Immortal Sword Sect, but the masters of the Ming Ying's teachings generally all had high cultivation. Hu Qian Mei's reputation was known even here. Even in this isolated area, there were still rumors of the fox girl. The rumors portrayed her as a cruel individual, who acted ruthlessly. If there was anyone that was bothering her, she would just behead them without batting an eye. Don't speak about being sensible, she had many enemies all over the continent, but since the Ming Ying School had one eye closed and one eye open, they did not care. Furthermore, they even provided shelter for this beast woman, so no matter how many people came for revenge, they were not able to kill the fox girl. If they were not killed by the fox girl's blade, then they were killed by her Ming Ying techniques.

To this end, the reputation of the Ming Ying School reputation took a turn for the worse.

Despite this, it was worth it.

After all, the might of the fox girl's blade was obvious. The most important matter was that she was a master of battle techniques. How could a school survive if there were no high level experts?

After the Su Family's Patriarch's group arrived, they first saw the charming little eleven year old Hu Qian Mei, they suddenly froze for a moment.

Many people that saw Hu Qian Mei for the first time would only think her as a lovely little girl with a lot of charm. Many of the people would never believe that this little was rumored to be a devilish female executor.

The Su Family's patriarch stepped forward. He cautiously came forward and politely greeted Hu Qian Mei.

As the two people were talking, Su Family's patriarch asked what was the main purpose of her visit. Fortunately, Hu Qian Mei was very astute and did not mention anything about Su Yun. Instead, she said that she was here to borrow some treasures to direct the patriarch's attention somewhere else. She also asked to lodge at the Su Family for a few days.

After the Su Family's patriarch heard about the situation, he could only courteously comply.

After Su Family's patriarch finished greeting with Hu Qian Mei, he looked at the side. He blankly stared at the figure of Su Yun.

"You must be Su Yun?" The Su Family's patriarch said with a bold demeanor. His chilling eyes had a mysterious luster.

"Greetings patriarch, it is me." Su Yun clearly responded, but his heart was trembling inside.

He was trying to control his emotions, so that he looked more natural and calm.

"Some disciples said that they saw you die in Martial Bone Mountain. Why are you still alive?"

"I had a lucky encounter, so I survived."

"Really?"

Then Su Family's patriarch shouted, "Quickly take him to the main house. I want to personally question him!"

Then he turned around and walked back to the inner sect.

.....

The main house.

Inside a secluded little garden.

A young lady wearing a blue battle dress was sitting quietly within the garden. She was quietly gazing at the flowers with a daze. Her entire being seemed to be detached from the current

world.

The lady's face was haggard. Her eyes were red and tears were still welling up. She remained motionless. The little garden's atmosphere was unusually indifferent.

Kacha.

Just then, the door leading to the into the small garden was gently pushed open.

Su Mo Sha stepped inside.

As he watched the lady sitting by the flowers in the garden, his brows wrinkled.

"Miss, it is time to practice your sword techniques. Quickly go to the martial field." Su Mo Sha slowly said.

However, the lady just turned a deaf ear and remained motionless.

"Miss!" Su Mo Sha's voice became a little impatient.

"Tell the patriarch....I....I do not want to practice anymore....I do want to anymore...."

Qing Er's hoarse voice emerged.

It was airless and exhibited no power....it sounded like a low groan.

"Do you know what you are doing?" Su Mo Sha became completely furious. He shouted again and again, "Su Family spent so much energy, manpower and financial resources to help you cultivate. Are you really just going to give up just like that? Was everything in vain? Wishful thinking! Quickly come with me to the martial field! Quickly!"

"I do not want to go!"

"Well, your roots was just a female maid, now you have become a phoenix, who has bad temper? Qing Er, let me tell you. If you

continue to be like this, you will be deprived your status to remain in the main house. Then you can just go back to your home and continue to be a maid!”

“Whatever....” Qing Er bit down on her lip as she lightly responded.

“You....” Su Mo Sha was losing his breath and became unable to speak.

Bam!

Just then, the door was slammed open. A maid dressed in a green dress quickly ran into the garden.

“Miss! Miss! He’s back, miss! Miss! He’s back!!”

The maid’s face was beaming with joy as she said this, but as she saw Su Mo Sha, she immediately became too scared to move another muscle.

“Why are making a big fuss? What’s next?!” Su Mo Sha coldly looked at the maid as he shouted.

The maid became terrified. She trembled and almost crumpled to the ground.

Then, Qing Er’s reddish eyes looked towards the maid and asked, “Who....who has come back?”

The maid fearfully looked at Su Mo Sha and then nervously directed her gaze to Qing Er and lightly said, “Su....young master Su Yun....”

After hearing these words, Qing Er became shocked. She suddenly stood up and stared at the maid and asked again, “Young one, what did you say....who has come back?”

“Su....”

Bang!

The maid’s body was ruthlessly kicked with Su Mo Sha’s foot.

The little maid was in intense pain as she rolled over on the ground.

“You bitch! What is this nonsense? Quickly leave now!” Su Mo Sha roared.

“Su Mo Sha! You impudent bastard!” Qing Er was thoroughly annoyed and thundered directly at Su Mo Sha.

“What? Miss, I am just helping you disciplining your servants for speaking nonsense. Is that not alright?” Su Mo Sha laughed.

“Are you trying to court death?” Qing Er reached for her sword by her waist.

Su Mo Sha was not fearful at all and just sneered, ‘If you have the skill, then quickly use your sword! However, you have to consider the consequences that who will have the last laugh....you or me.’”

Qing Er’s face changed, but she ultimately sheathed her sword back and her fingers loosened from the sword hilt.

He walked over towards the maid sprawled clutching her belly painfully and whispered, “Leave!”

“Ah, quickly go to the martial field. If in the past hour you do not, I may report to the patriarch!” Su Mo Sha chuckled loudly and stormed off.

Chapter 62 - Really True

Qing Er siphoned some of her spirit aura to maid Xiao Cui as she checked up on her injuries. Then, she brought Xiao Cui to the main hall's medical ward.

Although Mo Sha only gave one kick, but because of his high cultivation level, it was practically as if he was aiming for a fatal wound! Nonetheless, since she did not die, he just walked away.

Right after entering the medical ward, she quickly arranged for treatment for Xiao Cui's injuries. Xiao Cui was still in excruciating pain, but she managed to raise up her hand to grab Qing Er.

“Miss....quickly go back, I don't have any more problem....go back....and find Su Yun....”

“Young master....” Qing Er lightly said, but she was still reluctant to leave her.

However, in her heart, she was much more worried about Su Yun.

She did not know in what state did her young master return from Martial Bone Mountain. She didn't even know if he had many injuries....

Qing Er's red eyes hardened. Only after much thought did she stand back up from Xiao Cui's bed. She faced the spirit doctor and said, “Take care in curing Xiao Cui. If there is the slightest error, I will punish you!”

“Yes, miss!” The elderly spirit doctor nodded.

After she finished, she quickly went out and left the Su Family's Main Hall Medical Ward.

Right now, she was headed straight to the inner sect of the Su Family.

Su Shi Long's outer sect elites and the inner sect elites were all

inside the main hall. They had already entered the meeting hall.

They had just finished conversing with Hu Qian Mei and also complied with Hu Qian Mei's requests. They had already sold the items to her, even if some of the items were expensive, but it was for maintaining connections, so the Su Family was willing to sell them.

Of course, Hu Qian Mei was stranded here for a few days, which the Su Family's patriarch did not refuse to accommodate.

After everyone entered the hall, the crowd all took their seats.

Su Yun was patiently waiting outside the meeting hall before he was brought inside.

Outside of the meeting hall were four heavily armored disciples with green level equipment. On their hands, they held green level weapons and defenders. The outer sect disciples could not even compare to these elite guards, they emitted a domineering spirit aura as they stood there. They were mostly all spirit intermediate seventh stage, the cream of the crop of guards in the Su Family. Every single one of the guard's expression was focus and collected. They did not dare exhibit the slightest trace of wariness.

The meeting hall could hold about ten people. The most important people such as the inner sect middle steward Su Shi Long, financial minister Su Ming He, government minister Su Xiao Fang, military officer Su Da, and also inner sect's head lecturer Elder Yi Xin Qiu.

The rest were from the outer sect elites. Regularly, they would not be allowed to come to this place, but because of the current affairs dealing with outer sect disciple Su Yun, they were related. Therefore, they were outside, even though they could not step into the building.

"Greetings, honorable patriarch!" Su Yun said as he came inside eyeing everybody. His eyes rested on the person sitting in the back

of the meeting hall, Patriarch Su Li Xiong.

Su Family's elders had all arrived, even though it was dealing with an outer sect matter, if not for Hu Qian Mei's charm, perhaps the patriarch would not even have intervened.

Su Yun secretly clenched his fists and as his heart was racing. He stood there silently.

"Su Yun?" At this time, the open remark came from the patriarch. It had a serious tone. There was no friendliness or sadness.

"Yes!" Su Yun responded in a low voice.

"I want to ask you. In Martial Bone Mountain, just what happened in the end? Why did someone witness you being killed by a Silent Devil Spirit?! However, you are standing here, perfectly fine? Not only that, an Immortal Sword Sect Elder specifically came here to find you! Then....what matter did you have with Elder Long Xian Li? Just what did you do?"

Su Li Xiong did not waste any words, he went straight to the point.

Elder Long Xian Li went here herself?

Su Yun became startled.

What was this woman's purpose of coming here? Did she know that he....had the Heavenly Crystal?

Su Yun's heart was in turmoil, but the current patriarch of the Su Family was asking him a myriad of questions.

He had not planned for this beforehand, but he could not beat the grass to scare the snake. (Tl: alert the elders of the truth) Furthermore, his current plans required him to remain in the Su Family. If he had to leave, he would still need to bring along Qing Er.

Finally, he finished thinking about the situation. Then he spoke,

“Honorable patriarch, that day, Su Yun was indeed about to get killed by the Silent Devil Spirit. My life was hanging by a thread and I was trapped on top of a cliff. Su Yun was afraid and did not want to be killed by the Silent Devil Spirit, so I chose to jump off. I landed in one of the lakes in Martial Bone Mountain. Su Yun was lucky enough not to drown, but my body was exhausted and I was unable to leave the Martial Bone Mountain on time. Afterwards, Su Yun was just wandering around Martial Bone Mountain and found a river that was flowing out of the Martial Bone Mountain. I just followed along the river to leave Martial Bone Mountain and return back to Su Family! I just met Hu Qian Mei in front of the main gates as I arrived.”

Martial Bone Mountain was enormous, so even though it was Su Family’s forbidden area, the Su Family’s enchantment would obviously not be able to cover the entire mountain. Therefore, it was not surprising that some rivers in the mountain would lead outside.

After Su Li Xiong heard this, his brows slowly knitted together.

His eyes were serious and focused as he silently glared at Su Yun to see if any of the words he said was a lie.

Su Yun was well aware that a very powerful spirit aura was wordlessly checking on his body and was stealthily trying to determine his mental state at the moment.

Hua.

Just then, the hidden Everlasting Stone in his clothes began to gently tremble. A warm current soon overflowed and covered his heart. It allowed him to maintain a steady mind.

The Everlasting Stone effect was not only an increase in cultivation ability, but it was also able to help meditation, where one had to have a calm mind and complete focus.

Su Yun quietly gazed up at Su Li Xiong, seeing if he noticed the

Everlasting Stone. After seeing that nothing was amiss, he let out a sigh of relief.

Su Li Xiong remained calm as his eyes stared deeply into Su Yun. After a moment, he spoke, "Is this what really happened?"

"Yes!" Su Yun's complexion did not change.

Su Li Xiong became silent. Both sides were focused on each other's expression, so there were no openings.

"Then...." At this time, Su Li Xiong once again asked, "For Immortal Sword Sect's Elder Long Xian Li, she claimed that you had stolen some type of artifact from Immortal Sword Sect? I want to know, just what did you steal from them?"

"Immortal Sword Sect claimed I stole from them?" Su Yun's pupils shrunk as he had a flash of nervousness.

Obviously, Long Xian Li did really discover about him and the Heavenly Crystal. Presumably, the reason why she had left the Su Family's grounds were since she heard that he had been sent to a trial in Martial Bone Mountain.

However, Long Xian Li did not inform that the artifact was the Heavenly Crystal to the Su Family. Otherwise, it would be impossible to leave with the Heavenly Crystal.

Since that was the case, she wanted to let the Su Family find the truth of the matter, since she was not confident that he had truly died in Martial Bone Mountain. Therefore, when the Su Family did question Su Yun about the events that occurred, even if it was difficult to hide the Heavenly Crystal, it would not be impossible.

After he finished analyzing, Su Yun took a deep breath. He had chosen to gamble.

He did not know whether his analysis was correct, but based on the current situation, it was the most likely scenario!

Immediately, his face suddenly changed as he answered,

“Oh....this matter was just a misunderstanding! This matter was really just a misunderstanding!”

“When I had left Su Family’s grounds, I went to Mirror Lake Town to purchase something. Elder Long Xian Li was also there. She was completing some tasks for the Immortal Sword Sect. Su Yun was fortunate enough to have a conversation with Elder Long Xian Li. However, that day, she had lost her purse, which I think that she had thought that I took it in the end. I was really wronged! Seniors, based on my cultivation, would I truly dare to provoke Immortal Sword Sect on purpose? I thought that Elder Long Xian Li looked like an angel, so I could not help but take some extra glances. I just really did not expect there was such a misunderstanding, the injustice....” After he finished, Su Yun sighed.

“Was it that simple?” Su Li Xiong asked.

“Su Yun guarantees that every word is true. You seniors should know, would I really have enough courage to dare provoke a tiger within the Immortal Sword Sect?” Su Yun calmly responded.

“Yeah! Just by relying on your cultivation, Elder Long Xian Li could kill you easily!” The nearby Elder Su Shi Long harrumphed.

“Outer Sect’s trash would definitely not have this much courage, right?” Another one said.

Su Yun did not say another word.

Su Li Xiong did not make a comment as he lowered his head in thought.

The whole atmosphere in the hall became somewhat weird, since the entire meeting hall was completely quiet.

Su Yun did not dare make any nervous movements, so both of his hands from time to time would just straighten the bottom of his clothe. If he remained perfectly motionless, it would quickly make some people suspect him. However, if there was too much

fidgeting, then he could also be suspected of having a guilty conscience.

Fortunately, his current actions were just perfect.

Although his persuasion ability was not brilliant, but he was still able to genuinely convince the opposition. Nonetheless, his reasoning was still only mediocre.

At least....it was reasonable.

“Alright, now I know!”

At this time, Su Li Xiong stared blankly at Su Yun and continued, “You have just come back from Martial Bone Mountain, so I believe you are exhausted. Go home and have a rest.”

“Understood patriarch, Su Yun will return!” After Su Yun bowed, he quickly withdrew.

After he left, the elders remained sitting there.

Everyone’s expressions were different.

Some of the elders whispered to each other, but were hesitant to speak up.

Finally, Su Li Xiong spoke up first, “Do you think that what this child has said....was true or false?”

“Although it did sound kind of suspicious, but it doesn’t mean that this kind of thing could not happen!” The head lecturer Yi Xin Qiu said from the second seat. He continued, “Su Family’s Martial Bone Mountain is a forbidden area, but it is part of an entire mountain range. Even if the enchantment was there, there are still many paths to take that one may leave the Martial Bone Mountain. I think what Su Yun said was reasonable. As for the matter dealing with him and Elder Long Xian Li....I think it is also reasonable. Otherwise, how would he dare be rash against the Immortal Sword Sect with his weak cultivation?”

“Couldn’t have said it better myself! This poor cultivation

individual, even if there is ten of him, what would he even amount to?" The nearby Elder Zhang Hao also agreed.

However, the financial minister Su Ming He had a puzzled look on his pair of eyes, "But....this Su Yun truly is very mysterious. Everyone had the same impression, right? I'm just saying that just a while ago, his cultivation was only about spirit novice sixth stage, right? After observing his aura today, I determined that it was already spirit intermediate stage one!"

"A strength test?" Su Li Xiong suddenly remembered something and turned to face Su Shi Long. Then he asked, "Su Shi Long, this child is a member of the outer sect of the Su Family, right?"

Su Shi Long quickly got up and nodded, "Honorable patriarch, you are correct!"

"I am just saying, this disciple's cultivation had stagnated for about eight years, why would he suddenly have such monstrous growth rate now?"

"On this matter, I am not clear...." Su Shi Long just shook his head.

Su Li Xiong thought for a moment and whispered, "Let me say this, I think that one of these two people must have deceived us!"

"These two people?" Su Shi Long asked.

"Yes, either Su Yun or Long Xian Li...."

Finally, Su Li Xiong stood up and quietly ordered, "Everyone watch Su Yun and carefully observe his every move. If there is any action taken, quickly report it to me!"

Then, Su Li Xiong turned around and directly left the meeting hall.

"Understood, patriarch!"

Everyone in the meeting hall quickly got up and saluted.

Meanwhile, at a large tree outside of the meeting hall, a

silhouette could be seen if one swept their gaze, but it soon quietly disappeared.

Chapter 63 - Want to die? Just come here!

“It seems that Su Li Xiong has already noticed me now!”

Back inside his little cabin in woods, Su Yun had a worried expression on his face.

“During these next few days, I must behave. I cannot do anything that will attract their attention, otherwise a lot of things that I have planned will not work.”

In the little rundown room of his cabin was only a worn out chair and table. His bed was basically still broken and his cabinets even lacked legs.

Since it had been awhile that he resided inside his little cabin, there was a thick layer of ashy dust over his table.

Su Yun cleaned some of the areas that were necessary and then arranged a small array for cultivating.

However, before the array was even completed, he heard a “tapping” knock at the door.

Su Yun could roughly guess who it was and quickly opened the door.

After taking a look, it was actually the Yue Yang siblings.

“Big brother, Su Yun!” After the Yue Yang siblings saw that Su Yun was still intact, they became ecstatic. Xin Yue’s eyes began to overflow with tears, and she covered her mouth to weep.

“Brother Su Yun! We had thought that you had died!”

Su Xing Yang grabbed Su Yun in a great bearhug. His arms tightly wrapped around Su Yun that it made Su Yun almost unable to breathe.

The two siblings calmed down after a moment of excitement from their emotional reunion. Then they entered the little cabin.

Even though the two were joyful that Su Yun was well, they began to inquire if Su Yun was pain, just to make sure Su Yun did not have any serious injuries.

Su Yun was truly touched in his heart. In front of the Yue Yang siblings, he did not conceal anything. The two would never betray him, so he spoke about everything that had happened, including the tomb of Su Tian Long.

As the two learned about Su Yun's adventure, they became excited but also nervous. They were extremely surprised that Su Yun had now managed to enter spirit intermediate second stage.

With only a little more than half a year of training, his spirit cultivation jumped from just spirit novice sixth stage to spirit intermediate second stage!

What was this unbelievable pace?

It was very likely that even in Su Family's history, there was no genius that had achieved these results.

In fact, they did not know that that Su Yun had recovered his talent, and coupled with the effects of the Everlasting Stone, it would have been strange if his cultivation pace was not so fast.

"Ah, right, Xin Yue and Xing Yang, I have something to give you guys!" Su Yun activated his spatial ring as he rummaged through the items inside it.

"Spatial ring?" Su Xin Yue asked as she saw the dark yellow metal ring on Su Yun's finger. As she covered her mouth in shock she asked, "Brother Su Yun, how did you obtain a spatial ring?"

"In Mirror Lake Town, I completed a mission and earned enough money to buy it," Su Yun said as he smiled.

Completing a mission for money?

Xin Yue and Xing Yang looked at one another. The two felt as if this Su Yun was almost unrecognizable to them.

After a while of rummaging through his ring, Su Yun began to take out a massive amount of Blood Jade Crystals out. They crashed in one heap, which truly resembled a small hill made of jade. If one quickly counted the crystals, there were probably several hundreds in the pile.

Xin Yue and Xing Yang were forced to remain shocked.

“Brother Su Yun....this....this is....these are all Blood Jade Crystals?” Yue Yang stuttered with his tongue as he asked. His voice was trembling.

“Yes.” Su Yun just nodded.

“How could there be so many?” Xin Yue asked. She took her trembling hand to pick up one piece of crystal to check.

It was real.

She was completely dumbfounded.

“These....these were obtained after killing Su Nan Ye.” Su Yun said in a low voice.

After the two siblings heard this, their mind could not help but replay the sudden assault that had killed Su Nan Ye. Instantly, they felt a cold chill on their backs, and their bodies began to tremble.

“So....the one who killed Su Nan Ye was brother Su Yun....” Xin Yue whispered.

“Senior Su Yun is at spirit intermediate cultivation, so killing Su Nan Ye was effortless.”

The two siblings would not dare underestimate Su Yun again. What happened to gambling debauches who did not know anything of the world? They realized that Su Yun would hardly need their assistance now.

Despite this, this matter did not affect the feelings between the three people.

After pulling out all the Blood Jade Crystals, Su Yun pointed out

his plan, “Xin Yue and Xing Yang, these Blood Jade Crystals are enough for you to exchange for contribution to Su Shi Long, which should allow you both to be qualified to enter the inner sect!”

“What?” Xing Yang was surprised, “Brother Su Yun, do you really want to give all of them to us?”

“No no no, we do not want them! Brother Su Yun! You should take them to exchange for your own contribution!” Xin Yue argued as she shook her head.

“I cannot enter the inner sect,” Su Yun said after a moment.

“Why,” Xin Yue asked.

“It is hard to say the reason, but these Blood Jade Crystals were specially prepared for you guys. If you enter the inner sect, then your entire life will become very easy. It is enough if you cooperate with me later! I have offended many members of the inner sect, so if I entered the inner sect, it would not be peaceful life for me at all.”

“But....”

“Do not hesitate, just quickly take them,” Su Yun answered.

Seeing that Su Yun was so insistent, the brother and sister eventually complied, even though they had hesitated for a moment.

“Brother Su Yun, if you need any help, just make sure to tell us. Even if we enter the inner sect, we will certainly help you.” Xin Yue said with a serious expression.

“Silly girl!” Su Yun could not help but smiled, “You guys have already helped me more than enough.”

The two siblings and him continued to talk for another hour, until another knock rang on the small cabin’s door.

Knock knock.

Su Yun frowned.

In the Su Family, except for Xin Yue and Xing Yang, he did not really know anyone else.

The three stopped talking. Xin Yue and Xing Yang gazed at the frowning Su Yun who begrudgingly got up and opened the door.

The door opened.

A girl draped in a yellow blade dress was charmingly waiting at the doorway.

The female had long hair that extended like a waterfall. Her figure was flawless like a jewel and her age was not yet fifteen. She had bright eyes and snow white teeth. Her eyebrows soft, which made her even more beautiful even compared to Xin Yue. She really was a luminous fairy.

Despite this, the female's eyes were slightly red, and there were dry tears marks over her face. She looked a little tense and haggard. Nonetheless, when she saw Su Yun, Qing Er's tears could not help but fall like a rainstorm. The people around her gazed at her hardship in pity.

"Young master...." Qing Er choked as she tried to speak. She simply could not stop the tears from falling down. She threw herself in Su Yun's embrace as she smothered her sobbing.

"Qing Er." Su Yun's throat felt dry. His arms clasped around the girl as if he did not want to let go right now.

Seeing the situation, the girl began to sob even more fiercely as her tears began to wet Su Yun's chest. After a moment, she stopped trembling and crying. With her red eyes, she gazed at Su Yun.

"Young master....you....are you alright....?" Qing Er sobbed again.

"Don't worry, Qing Er, I'm fine. You don't have to worry about me." Su Yun laughed.

"Nothing is greater. Thank god. Young master must have been

very careful and alert. May you please bless Su Yun to safely come back from Martial Bone Mountain.” Qing Er faced the sky to complete her prayer.

Su Yun did not really know how Qing Er felt about him, but there was no doubt that he did not want to lose this girl.

During the first few moments, the Yue Yang siblings just sat there frozen. Afterwards, Xin Yue cheerfully ran over and gave a couple of jokes. She greeted Qing Er to come sit and chat with them.

Seeing the haggard appearance of Qing Er, Su Yun’s heart was in terrible pain.

Even with her busy schedule, she rushed from the main house without any break.

Although she did not converse much, she still sensed Su Yun’s genuine concern for her.

After entering the cabin, Qing Er carefully examined Su Yun’s body up and down for any injuries. She had to verify herself that Su Yun was definitely alright, before she took her purse from her belt.

Nonetheless, before she could even give take the money out for Su Yun, Su Yun’s serious gaze cast over it.

“Young.....young master....”

“Keep it for yourself,” Su Yun said in a serious tone.

Qing Er hesitated as she bit her lower lip. She did not respond.

The sounds of galloping horses....

At this time, the sounds of some spirit stallions were heard.

The sound was getting closer and closer. Eventually, the sound stopped and the neighing sounds the spirit stallions could be heard right outside the cabin.

Su Yun live in a small cabin located in the corner of the outer sect of the Su Family. Who would want to come here?

Su Yun frowned. He felt that outside, there were a lot of spirit auras that were unrefined and deep. It seemed that a lot of disciples of spirit intermediate realm had arrived.

Were they from the inner sect?

Su Yun got up and decided to take a look outside.

“Young master....”

At this time, Qing Er’s hand pulled him back.

Su Yun looked back at the girl to see her wiping away the tears in her eyes. Then, the expression on her little face changed to determination and with a harsh tone, “I will check outside.”

As Qing Er staggered up, Su Yun looked at her. Her entire body seemed weak, while her face seemed to show that she was barely enduring the exhaustion.

Su Yun’s heart was thrown into turmoil.

Until now, she was the one that protected him from the rain.

Until now, she still protected him regardless of everything.

Since her parents had died, she had to face everything alone.

How could she continue on like this?

Su Yun grabbed Qing Er’s hand.

Qing Er was startled for a moment as her reddish autumn eyes gazed at Su Yun.

“Just rest here for a little bit, okay? I’ll check it.” Su Yun lightly said, with a chuckle at the end.

“But....but young master....” Qing Er also wanted to say something else, but she already saw that Su Yun had already stepped forward, opened the door and went outside.

How could Yue Yang siblings and Qing Er be calm? Right after, they also hurried out the door.

As they gazed outside, they became really shocked.

In front of them appeared to be a dozen imperial guards wearing armor. Many were still on top of their spirit stallions. Each of the imperial guards seemed to have a blade crafted by the inner sect. All the eyes of the imperial guards gazed the people coming out of the little cabin.

The spirit stallions were constantly neighing and trampling the ground, making it very dusty. The imperial guards were emitting a desolate aura.

The imperial guards of the inner sect were really worth of their title in the Su Family. Outer sect disciples were a tiny insect under their foot. Some of the imperial guards even had real combat experience.

Su Yun glanced at the mysterious guards that were riding on the horses. His eyes rested on the person in the front riding a white spirit stallion.

Su Mo Sha!

Since the first day of Su Yun's rebirth, he had warned him to stay away from Qing Er.

The present Su Mo Sha was living high and looking down as he gazed down towards Su Yun from his horse.

In the depths of his eyes, there was pity and disdain.

"Miss, it seems that my warnings did not work at all!" Su mo Sha arrogantly projected his voice.

"Su Mo Sha, why did you come here?" Qing Er came forward and directly glares at Su Mo Sha.

Qing Er took one step forward, while Su Mo Sha also took one step back. Maybe he would observe this time from the sidelines.

Su Mo Sha play with his braid and slowly spoke, “In the beginning at the small garden, I allowed you only to the Martial Field to practice. Instead, not only did you not go, but you also went to this trash’s home! Ah, the practice times were set by the patriarch, if you do not follow the practice routines, then you are ignoring the patriarch’s orders! Now....quickly come back with me to the main house and accept your punishment. Otherwise, if you decide to betray the Su Family, then I....I will have the right to kill you!”

As the last words fell, Su Mo Sha’s eyes became murderous.

“Su Mo Sha, don’t go too far!” QIng Er shouted as she grined her teeth in fury.

“I’m going too far?”

Su Mo Sha sneered, “This is what the laws dictate! How can I deceive you with them?” Then he waved his hand, “Take the young lady home, in addition with Su Yun! For obstructing Qing Er from going to the Martial Field, he will receive his due punishment. Send him to the outer sect’s prison for ten days. Let him taste some imprisonment!”

“Yes, sir! We understand senior Su Mo Sha!”

The inner sect imperial guards shouted and they uniformly dismounted. Then they began to advance toward Su Yun and Qing Er.

Xin Yue was became very tense and was about to take action.

However, she heard Su Yun abruptly yell, “Stop!”

The imperial guards were startled for a moment.

Su Mo Sha just frowned, “A trash of the outer sect, what are you guys afraid of? Just finish the task!”

After the imperial guards heard the order, they did not hesitate to charge forth.

Keng Qiang!

Suddenly, a slender double-edged blade flew out of the sheath on Su Yun's back. Without any warning, it soared straight to one of the imperial guards and mercilessly beheaded him.

The imperial guards were startled as they slowly stopped and retreated. They hastily pulled out the swords from their waist to resist.

Kuang Dang!

A blade was cut off from a sword.

The guard's arms trembled. They felt the spirit aura of this outer sect disciple was very deep and profound. They began to feel sheer terror.

Was this motherfucker really a outer sect disciple?

The imperial guards trembled as they pondered this.

Bang!

A vicious kick from a foot hit squarely in the chest of one of the inner sect imperial guards. The foot firmly crashed into the armor. Everyone witnessed the man flying away and brutally crashing into the ground. His entire body was in pain and he could hardly stagger back up.

They saw Su Yun's blade stab into the ground as it emitted sword aura that enveloped the entire area. It had even begun to lift up dust. His face had a merciless expression as he calmly gazed at Su Mo Sha and his group, "Want to die? Then just come over here!"

Chapter 64 - Fine, Just Slaughter them all (Part I)

The scene was really awkward.

Xin Yue and Xing Yang dashed to Su Yun's side. Then, they also pulled out their swords from their waists and to aid Su Yun.

Qing Er was completely shocked.

"Young master....when did he have so much courage?"

She could only stare dumbfoundedly at Su Yun. Her entire body felt remained stunned, because she thought that this event was very fake.

The unconfident young master's talent which was ruined, who gambled and drank day after day,how did he suddenly change so much from his original demeanor?

Furthermore....every month's spirit coin funds that I provided him, which he constantly demanded, suddenly stopped....

What really happened to young master.

Thump....thump.....

The Su Mo Sha there urged his stallion forward to approach Su Yun.

He did not dismount from his stallion, but continued to use his eyes to stare condescendingly at the man in front of him.

"Are you going to rebel?" Su Mo Sha said with a clear tone.

"I never intended to!" Su Yun replied.

"You dare argue with me?"

Su Mo Sha coldly snorted. His pair of eyes were beginning to fill with deep killing intent as he suddenly pulled out his sword from his waist. The sword screamed as it vibrated. Then he pointed it to

Su Yun and gave his ultimatum, “Just surrender willingly to me. Otherwise, I will behead you on the spot!”

“Su Mo Sha, if you dare take action, then I will destroy you to the point that only a skeleton remains! Do you dare?”

After Su Mo Sha heard these words, his eyes flashed a moment. Then he harrumphed, “What strange words are you saying? Su Yun, do you really think that you can kill me?”

“I cannot!”

“Then who can?” Su Mo Sha laughed.

Su Yun raised his hand and point to Qing Er.

Su Mo Sha froze for a moment and then abruptly broke out in laughter again.

“Ha ha ha ha....a female maidservant? Ha ha ha ha....this is really too funny!” Su Mo Sha’s eyes was letting out tears as he continued to laugh. Only after a long time had passed did he stop.

He had an extremely ugly looking face as he disdainfully gazed at Qing Er with contempt. His mouth curled up, revealing a sneer, “Not to mention that her strength is below, even with her status right now....she is not even an opponent in my eyes! She will try to kill me? If you have the courage, then just let her try it!”

“Ha ha ha ha....”

This time, Su Mo Sha was not alone. Even the inner sect imperial guards had joined in the laughter.

Their laughter was full of ridicule and disdain.

Even though they knew about this little sister, Qing Er’s name, it was just a name with no substance.

Qing Er wanted to utter something in rebuttal, but her small hands tightened into fists, trying to restrain herself from taking action.

The complexions of Xin Yue and Xing Yang both turned red in fury, and were waiting to rush forward to attack Su Mo Sha.

But right at this moment, Su Yun spoke again.

He opened his mouth in a very loud voice and shouted, “Naturally, she cannot kill you, but someone here is able to easily take your life !!!”

“Who? Is it the two pieces of trash standing by your side?” Su Mo Sha laughed as he examined Su Yun’s side.

“Bastard!” Xing Yang was about to explode, but Su Yun restrained him.

Su Yun winked at Su Mo Sha, and shouted, “Of course it is not them. It is the famous Elder Hu Qian Mei of the Ming Ying School!”

His voice was awfully loud, which was probably to scare Su Mo Sha. Then he continued, “Not Long ago, Qing Er and Hu Qian Mei met with each other. They hit it off very well. They had already become close friends in that short amount time! As for the matter relating to coming here to see me, the true motive of Hu Qian Mei was to teach Qing Er. If you want to provoke Hu Qian Mei and her Ming Ying School, making Ming Ying School an enemy of the Su Family, then it will be entirely your own fault that you took upon yourself. Therefore, Qing Er does not have any guilt, instead she should be praised for her meritorious deed!”

“What nonsense are you talking about?” Su Mo Sha eyes narrowed as he sneered, “Hu Qian Mei is friends with this despicable maidservant? Don’t make me laugh to death! Everyone, quickly come and help me take them away. Do not waste anymore time!”

“Understood!” The imperial guards were no longer polite, every single one of them activated their spirit aura rushed to Su Yun’s group.

However, just then, a red figure abruptly flew over with lightning quickness. She landed right in front Su Yun.

As her feet landed on the ground, the ground trembled for a moment. The entire group of elite imperial guards were shaken and clumsily fell to the ground. They became really embarrassed by their actions.

Even Su Mo Sha suffered. His spirit stallion was apparently very frightened from the scene and the stallion was randomly kicked in the air. He was nearly thrown off his stallion on the horseback.

It took a while for the stallion to calm down.

As he gazed up from the ground, there were actually three cracks. These cracks actually were branching out from one source: a small and exquisite foot.

Hu Qian Mei!

Su Mo Sha was stunned.

“Thrash him!” Su Yun issued a light order.

A wrinkled brow appeared on Hu Qian Mei’s face, but result was still completed. She took action and rushed towards Su Mo Sha like a hurricane. With the palm of her hand, she mercilessly slapped Su Mo Sha right in the face.

Bang! ! !

Su Mo Sha’s body was immediately sent flying off from the spirit stallion, before severely crashing not far from a large tree.

Boom!

His body crashed into the tree and rolled on the ground a few more times. As he was standing up, a bright red handprint appeared on his cheeks.

On the corner of Su Mo Sha’s mouth, there were blood leaking out. As he touched his wound on the side of his face, his mind was totally astonished. He stared intently at Hu Qian Mei with fury.

“Honorable Elder, you....what are you trying to do?”

“Trying to do?” Hu Qian Mei secretly glanced at Su Yun. Then she gazed at the person standing behind Su Yun and stared transfixed at Qing Er. She pointed to her and said, “This person is my sworn sister, as we both have affection for each other. It was love at first sight. This time, she specifically brought me to the outer sect of the Su Family to go sightseeing. If you dare to both her, then I, Hu Qian Mei, then you must have the guts!”

“Then, just....just eliminate him....” At this time, Su Yun quietly whispered to Hu Qian Mei from the side.

It was not loud, but Qing Er had clearly heard it.

Her eyes widened as she looked at Su Yun with surprise. She was surprised again to find that Su Yun’s eyes were filled with a fierce light. It was killing intent asking for destruction.

Qing Er’s entire body trembled....

Was this truly young master?

Nonetheless, Hu Qian Mei did not take action this time.

She waited a moment before she responded, “Even though this is for the Heavenly Crystal, but if I do this, since he is Su Li Xiong’s men, once I kill him, there will be a grudge between the Su Family and the Ying Ming Sect. Although Ming Ying School is not weak, but Su Family’s relationship is important. The connection are complicated, I do not want to be their enemy.”

“Then just seriously injure him. As for killing him, just let me do it.” Su Yun whispered back.

After Hu Qian Mei heard these words, she immediately took action. This time, in a clean and efficient manner, she charged towards Su Mo Sha.

“Hu....Elder Hu....” Su Mo Sha’s eyes widened, but it went without saying, once he saw the alluring petite Hu Qian Mei’s body

nimbly charging towards him, in a blink of an eye, she was instantly in front him. Then she extended her palm and squarely struck him right in the chest.

Puchi!

Su Mo Sha's flew into the air and vomited blood. He fiercely crashed onto the ground again, but it was not over. Hu Qian Mei's special aura assaulted Su Mo Sha's entire body from the inside, which soon began to batter his five viscera and six bowels. (Tl: Basically all internal organs) It created internal injuries throughout Su Mo Sha's body, which temporarily block his spirit meridians, preventing him from using spirit power to recover.

With only one hit, she had already seriously injured the spirit intermediate tenth stage elder. He was in no shape to continue fighting.

The inner sect imperial guards that saw the scene became very nervous. Evidently, no one would dare to provoke or take action against Hu Qian Mei. Instead, they rushed over to Su Mo Sha to help prop him up.

“Leave.”

A single word clearly came from Hu Qian Mei little pink mouth.

As they helped place Su Mo Sha on his stallion, they quickly went back on their stallions and galloped away.

Soon, the sounds of hooves died away and only dust remained floating around.

Hu Qian Mei's objective of this trip was to obtain the Heavenly Crystal. While the Heavenly Crystal was in his hands, Hu Qian Mei had to comply with Su Yun's requests. Of course, as long as the requests were not too outrageous.

As for announcing that Hu Qian Mei and Qing Er were sworn sisters, it would allow Qing Er to have a bit more influence in the Su Family. At least she would not be easily bullied. Also, Su Yun

could not be related to Hu Qian Mei, otherwise Su Li Xiong would check up on him and expose everything.

Su Yun gazed at the direction the Su Mo Sha's group left. He pondered for a moment and then asked, "In about three days, he will retaliate right?"

"He can't even leave his bed right now." Hu Qian Mei gently smiled. Suddenly, she thought of something and looked at Su Yun in his eyes, "What are you going to do?"

Su Yun did not respond and directly went back into his room.

Meanwhile, Qing Er was staring at Hu Qian Mei in a daze.

Ming Ying School's elder, which had over ten thousand disciples under her. Even that would let Qing Er respect her.

Su Family's patriarch personally went to the outer sect to greet her....Hu Qian Mei actually went out of her way to help her this time.

Furthermore, she had said....she had said that she was sworn sisters?

"Quickly come in and talk, little sister!" Hu Qian Mei exposed her snow white teeth as she smiled at Qing Er. Soon after, her large snow white tail disappeared into the room.

"....."

After entering the shack, Xin Yue and Xing Yang just stood in front of the table. They did not dare to take action, same for Qing Er.

In their opinion, knowing Hu Qian Mei's cultivation, how could they dare be rash?

"Ha ha, just sit everyone, ah! Do not be so stiff! Ah ah ah, little sister Qing Er, do not be so shy, tsk, tsk, you look so cute!" Hu Qian Mei said as she winked at Qing Er with her charming eyes. Hu Qian Mei delicate little tongue licked her lips as if she had a ravenous

look on her.

Qing Er face reddened and hastily lowered her head.

“Alright, Elder Hu, don’t tease anymore.” Su Yun was not courteous and directly sat on the floor.

“I’m teasing?”

One could see Hu Qian Mei turned to Su Yun and beamingly stated, “I am teasing them? Compared to me, there is someone that has already played two to three tricks on me.”

“Ahem....cough....cough....” Su Yun suddenly erupted in a severe cough.

Nonetheless, Hu Qian Mei clearly intended to befriend Qing Er. Then, she lifted her little white hand and snapped her fingers. Instantly, a white layer of light enveloped Xing Yang, XIn Yue and QIng Er.

Suddenly, the trio found that they could not hear anything from their ears.

“What is going on? Why can’t we hear anything?” Xing Yang anxiously said.

Just then, Hu Qian Mei’s voice appeared in their minds.

“I have some things to discuss with Su Yun. It will be inconvenient for you to hear it, so I temporarily shielded your hearing ability, so everyone just wait!”

After they heard this, everyone’s heart calmed down.

“What are you doing?”

Su Yun was puzzled as he continued, “If you don’t want them to hear the conversation between us, then we can just ask them to leave.”

“That’s not it! If they leave, if there is just the two of use here....there will be rumors that will erupt from this situation!”

Hu Qian Mei said using her charm as she giggled.

The pair of beautiful eyes were constantly blinking at Su Yun flirtatiously.

Su Yun was like a maid, he did not what to do.

Hu Qian Mei continuously smile on her face went rigid and looked dissatisfied as she asked, “Am I not pretty?”

“No, you are very beautiful!”

“Then why do you....have no reaction whatever?” Hu Qian Mei mouth curled as she glanced at Su Yun.

Although Hu Qian Mei figure was petite, her development was pretty good. Her red battle dress supported plump and matchless mounds, which seemed to want to burst out. It was evident that other than her charming face, there was still another key area that would attract anyone, her chest.

At this moment, Hu Qian Mei was still in the trio’s line of sight. She just disregarded them and unbuttoned her clothe and exposed the pure white skin of her delicate body. Then she enchantingly said, “If you want this....that is fine!”

Chapter 65 - Assassination of the Quiet Night (Part II)

Dropping off the groceries! (Tl: idiom: basically she's tempting him)

Moreover, she still had the same expression. It seemed that if Su Yun's willpower was just a little less solid, it would be very likely that he would have complied.

However, Su Yun was not stupid.

Hu Qian Mei was what kind of cultivator, why would she be interested in weak person like him? Besides, in his previous life, Su Yun had experienced many tricks such as this, why would he dare take action?

Fortunately, his Everlasting Stone was always keeping his mind in check or else he would have probably just threw himself at her feet by now.

"Alright, no more teasing. It is time we get down to business!" Su Yun hastily tried to keep his head clear as he said gently.

"Insensitive!"

Hu Qian Mei's mouth curled upwards and quickly straightened her clothe. In spite of the three nearby individuals that couldn't hear anything, she directly raised her tender white leg forward and said, "The reason why I did not want to let them go was because there are many people near your area!"

"I know, because of the incident in Martial Bone Mountain. Coupled with my sudden increase in cultivation, they have become suspicious!" Su Yun said, as he also suddenly realized why Hu Qian Mei did not want to let the three people leave.

If Qing Er and the two people left the little shack, it would leave only Hu Qian Mei and Su Yun in his home. That would make it

even more suspicious for the Su Family.

Why were Su Yun and Hu Qian Mei meeting? For this matter, it would be avoid bringing up the Heavenly Crystal, so Hu Qian Mei did not want them to go out the door.

“So, this was all about the Heavenly Crystal!” Su Yun suddenly exclaimed.

“Ah, you can’t really say that. Didn’t you also use me a moment ago, right? You already knew that because of the Heavenly Crystal, I would be watching you. You purposefully shouted during the large commotion. That loud speech was not for Su Mo Sha to hear, but It was for me to hear, right? Hu Qian Mei giggled.

“If something happens to me, naturally, the Heavenly Crystal will disappear with me without a trace!”

“You people, you are more cunning than even me!” Hu Qian Mei gently harrumphed.

“This is just for my survival!”

“Anyways, if this situation happens again, I will not help you solve it. You still have four more days, my patience is limited, just give me the Heavenly Crystal right now. Then, I could help you enter the inner sect, but if you still do not give me the Heavenly Crystal by then, just prepare for death!”

After Hu Qian Mei said this with a smile, she immediately got up and head out straight to the door.

Xin Yue was just gazing at the two people conversing and did not know what were they even talking about.

Soon after, they heard a finger snap sound at the door and their hearing ability were recovered.

Hu Qian Mei opened the door gracefully and just left.

.....

Main House Medical Center.

The young maid, Xiao Cui humbly accepted the medicine prescribed by the spirit doctors. She clutched her sore belly and hobbled out of the room.

Just then, she heard a burst of noisy cries in the Medical Center.

“Quickly quickly quickly! Quickly bring elder Su Mo Sha inside. Slow down, everyone, walks slower now!” A wave of noise flooded inside.

Subsequently, she watched Su Mo Sha being carried with two imperial guards that kept him hoisted up. Right after they entered the door, they heard a ‘puchi’ sound. Su Mo Sha was now bleeding scarlet red blood. His entire face became even more pale as he groaned in extreme pain?

“What is happening right now?” Xiao Cui mind was bewildered at the scene.

Su Mo Sha was carefully placed onto a bed and senior spirit doctors quickly began to diagnose him.

After a moment, the patriarch of the Su Family came to drive everyone away.

Seeing Su Mo Sha in such a weak state, his mood became much moody.

“What happened? Weren’t you following the young lady?” Su Li Xiong asked Su Mo Sha coldly as he channeled his spirit aura to completely envelop Su Mo Sha

Su Mo Sha weakly informed the patriarch of the events that occurred a few moments ago.

“What? The young girl was actually close friends with Hu Qian Mei? How is that possible?” Su Li Xiong obviously did not believe him. Hu Qian Mei came to the Su Family to converse with a friend for how long?

“Patriarch....if it is like this....then, in the future....if Qing Er is

sent to Profound Sky Sect....if Hu Qian Mei found out....wouldn't Hu Qian Mei interfere with our plans?" Su Mo Sha groaned out like a dying man.

"Hmph!" Su Li Xiong harrumphed loudly, "Ming Ying School might be powerful, would they dare do against the Profound Sky Sect? The elders of the Immortal Sword Sect even wouldn't do something like that, so I think that Hu Qian Mei will not act! Nonetheless....I'm just very upset....why had Hu Qian Mei beaten you up so badly? For a matter like this, would it really require her to be so brutal?"

Su Mo Sha eyes suddenly widened and Su Mo Sha's hand grabbed the patriarch. He responded, "Senior, you have to get revenge for me....I am not content with this....I am not content with this outcome....I will definitely retaliate....senior...."

Actually, Su Mo Sha was a nephew of the patriarch, however many in the Su Family did not even know about this relationship.

Despite this, Su Li Xiong quickly took his hand away from Su Mo Sha as he stared with a solemn expression.

"Hu Qian Mei cultivation level is extremely high. Furthermore, the Ming Ying School is backing her up. Therefore, if you want to start this, it could lead the Su Family to be a mortal enemy of the Ming Ying Sect!"

"Then....I should just forget about this?"

"Of course not...." Su Li Xiong lowered his head in thought. Then, he raised it again and continued, "I had heard that Hu Qian Mei is rare individual that would appear only every thousand years. She has both a genius mind and perfect physique. If you obtained her body, your power level would increase by many folds. Nonetheless, it seems that Hu Qian Mei is generally very disagreeable with everyone. Therefore, she has never dated anyone....Mo Sha, what do you think of Hu Qian Mei?"

“Hu Qian Mei?” Su Mo Sha stared blankly, his mind was filled with a charming young lady that had a heavenly complexion. His eyes erupted with endless desire and lust.

“If we can obtain her, I would even be fine living a few less years!”

“Alright! Let’s wait until you are better before we discuss it. When you feel you are ready and recuperated, I’ll think up of something.”

“Ah, Hu Qian Mei....”

Su Mo Sha clenched his fists and ground his teeth, “I will make you regret this!”

.....

About Hu Qian Mei’s true purpose of coming here, Su Yun decided not to tell Xin Yue and the bunch. He thought that if they truly knew the truth of the matter, the Heavenly Crystal would be like a hot potato. Everyone would have it on their minds.

After Su Yun conversed for a little longer, Qing Er had to return to the Main House. Meanwhile, Xin Yue and Xing Yang also returned home.

Hu Qian Mei was still dwelling around Su Yun’s shack, but she made no movement. Su Yun knew what she was waiting for and also understood that time was running out.

How could he get rid of Hu Qian Mei?

Su Yun did not know, but it couldn’t be left as it is right now!

The sun soon went down and darkness fell.

Su Yun jumped onto his spirit stallion and spurred it into a gallop. He was heading straight for the Main House.

Utilizing Hu Qian Mei’s name, he was unimpeded throughout the entire journey. Very quickly, we entered the outer sect grounds and was within five thousand meters away from the Main House

entrance.

Su Family had three circles. On the outskirts were the outer sect, then the inner sect and within the inner sect was the Main House. It was a layer by layer classification.

There were countless hardships in Su Family's outer sect. Everyone was struggling for their future. In the inner sect, everyone was struggling to increase their strength. As for the Main House, it was a little different.

The Main House not only had the best conditions, the building was even constructed above a Wind Water Gem in the ground. As one took a step inside the Main House, their recovery rate of their spirit power would increase by not a few times. This was extremely beneficial to any cultivator.

Main of the lifelong dreams of residents in the outer sect were to enter the inner sect. Meanwhile, the inner sect disciples' lifetime dreams were to enter the Main House, but many disciples could never achieve in a lifetime.

After arriving at the entrance, he stopped his stallion by the corner of the gate. In the dim night, he changed from his ordinary white clothes and took out another set. He changed to a black set of blademaster robes and equipped his blade sheath. From his spatial ring, he took out a mask and placed it over his head. Then he began rapidly marching inside.

As he went to the center of the Main House grounds, Su Yun slowed his pace.

There were many protection enchantments, which were all set up by the patriarch. Every single one of them had customized martial capabilities. It could quickly alert the guards of any foreign spirit aura detected. In the event that someone was rushing here, it would quickly alert everyone. The first objective of the protection enchantments were to capture the individual, while the secondary objective was to notify the guards.

The guards of the Main House were mostly all top experts. It was likely that there was not a weak existence in these gates. A conservative estimate of cultivation levels would be around spirit core fifth stage or perhaps even stronger. The current Su Yun could not compete with the guards of the Main House.

Therefore, everything must be done stealthily.

He slowly sneaked towards the Main House and walked towards the Medical Center. In the moonlight, his iron mask appeared like an endless chilling forest.

To avoid the guards, he sneaked through the shadows.

Soon, he arrived outside of the Medical Center.

Kacha.

The door was pushed open.

In the middle of the night, the senior spirit doctors were already asleep. Only one servant was standing by the bed and kept guard over the sleeping individuals.

Su Yun walked towards him without making a sound. The servant was startled, because he was not sure of who had arrived. He could only gaze as this person agilely extended his hand towards his neck, aimed at the Jing Hai pressure point and lightly pressed. His mind was immediately paralyzed as his brain was deprived of its oxygen for a few moments. Then he soon fainted.

Gua da.

The servant fell to the ground.

The sound awakened the sleeping Su Mo Sha as he suddenly opened his eyes. He painfully propped himself up.

“Who!” Su Mo Sha shouted.

“Do not be nervous!” A deep voice came from the masked person.

Su Mo Sha stared at him nervously, “Who are you?”

“It does not matter. The important matter is how many years did Qing Er suffer from humiliation from you and bear it. It is time to take out the unpleasant smell.”

“Qing Er?” Su Mo Sha stared blankly, but soon understood, “You are the lowly servant girl.”

“Lowly servant girl?” The iron masked person frowned, but Su Mo Sha could not see him.

“He he, is it possible that you are not? Nonetheless, it is a trash like the lowly servant girl, who had some luck to enter the Main House as a servant! Despite this, she cannot alter her lineage in the end! The lowly servant girl remains a lowly servant girl!”

The iron masked man did not speak. He did not move. Then, he directly turned around and headed straight outside.

“Stop!” Su Mo Sha shouted.

However, the person did not stop and quickly left the room. Su Mo Sha really wanted to call someone, but even getting off the bed was going to be a problem.

After the man left, he was surrounded by an eerie silence. There was no movement and no sound.

“What is that person’s profession? Is it possible that he came here....is just to say a few mysterious sentences?”

Su Mo Sha began to have some doubts.

“Impossible! Someone come! Quickly, someone come!” Su Mo Sha began to shout, preparing to get the iron masked person back.

In only an instant!

Suddenly, a ‘whoosh’ boomed as the Medical Center’s windows were broken. It was soon followed by a chilling sharp blade rushing straight towards him.

Puchi!

Su Mo Sha did not even have time to respond as the blade pierced through his head and nailed him into the walls of the Medical Center. His whole head was cut into two halves from the blade.

After beheading him, the blade vibrated for a moment and then twirled around and flew straight out of the window. It soon disappeared into the night.

Screeeeeeech !!!!!

A shrill siren rang throughout the Main House in the night sky. It was soon followed by a chain of protection enchantments lights activating. The entire Main House woke up. The Main House entrance was quickly closed. The patriarch brought many imperial guards with him as he rushed towards the Medical Center.

At the Main House, outside the Martial grounds, in case it sensed spirit aura, the alarm would immediately be activated.

The group that was with the imperial guards were rushing towards the Medical Center at their fastest pace.

However, as one person just arrived at the Medical Center, a sight in front of them stunned everyone.

Su Mo Sha of the Main House's head was actually split into two halves. His body was leaned against the wall and his face still had maintained his bewildered expression. White brain matter and red blood was scattered all over the entire bed....

Chapter 66 - The Biggest Inconvenience

(Part III)

Area around the Main House.

In the middle of the night, a spirit stallion was galloping at top speed as its hooves kicked up dust in its wake.

Su Yun took off his mask and reined his horse forward.

Although the Main House enchantments could detect spirit aura and quickly issue out an alarm, but with “Limitless Sword Arts” flying speed at cutting down opponents, the alarm could not keep up with Su Yun’s attack speed. Su Yun was merely required to lock in his target, stand several hundred meters away and utilize his flying blade’s ability to eliminate his opponent. As the personnel in charge of this place arrived, Su Yun would have already left.

If not using the flying blade’s ability, he would not have dared to kill anyone in the Main House.

The night’s light sprinkled on a person’s back: one person, one stallion that quickly disappeared.

The next day, Su Mo Sha’s death spread throughout the Su Family.

The patriarch was furious and ordered a search to capture the criminal. However, no one would have connected Su Yun to the deeds of last night.

Although Su Yun and Su Mo Sha had met earlier, in the end, Su Mo Sha was only grievously injured. He was recovering in the Main House, how could he kill Su Mo Sha?

The investigation began inside the Main House. They investigated everyone one by one. The leader of the group was Su Mo Li. It was then that he understood, Su Yun had killed Su Mo Li’s brother. However, after investigation for over half a day, there

was no spider's thread or horse track. (Tl: no trace at all)

After Su Mo Sha was dead, maybe Qing Er could live happily for awhile. Nonetheless, it was still temporary, she still could not leave the Su Family. Sooner or later, if she did not leave, she would become a tool for the Su Family.

This was Su Yun's last loved one, the only person left that truly cared about him from the bottom of her heart. How could he not care about her?

At this moment, Su Yun was still practicing inside his broken little shack.

After storing up sufficient spirit power for Spirit Lord Aura, he quickly went to the mountain behind his shack. He went back inside Martial Bone Mountain to practice his Ripping Sky Sword Strike.

His Ripping Sky Sword Strike gave results, so now he did not need Hu Qian Mei to seriously injure Su Mo Sha anymore.

The Everlasting Stone helped him remain focused, which increased his cultivation speed by many times. It amplified his talent, not just the cultivation speed. Furthermore, it even help the understanding of divine skills. In addition, Su Yun's spirit eye within his core had already far exceeded the regular spirit eye. His spirit aura was already rich, while his growth rate was also extremely high. Practicing "Ripping Sword Strike" was not really difficult, but it still took about a half a day of toil before he could steadily utilize and manipulate his sword aura to use the technique.

The sunset gradually fell and Su Yun was seated on a boulder as he continued to pant. As he gazed at the dark forest in the mountain, he removed a medicine pill to swallow.

"Tut tut tut tut...."

Suddenly, a sound came from nearby. As he turned to look, he

saw a purple dressed Hu Qian Mei walking towards him.

“You stared at me for one day?” Su Yun swept his gaze over Hu Qian Mei as he said this.

However, Hu Qian Mei did not respond to this comment. Instead, she went over to look around Su Yun with a large flirtatious smile.

“It appeared that i looked down upon you! Handsome brother!”

“Looked down upon?”

“Why not? This time.... you really took advantage of me this time. Ah, I, Hu Qian Mei is really clever, but I never expected that you would use me one event after another!” Hu Qian Mei smiling face began to become cold, “You let me injure Su Mo Sha, which caused him to lose his strength. Then, you entered the Main House Medical Center and leisurely entered his room to kill the weakened Su Mo Sha, right? You wanted him to die, but I did not want to take action, so you took upon the task personally?”

Su Yun did not respond.

“Su Mo Sha was grievously wounded and then mysteriously assassinated in the Medical Center. Your cultivation is very low and you are from the outer sect, so no one will ever think it is you, but it’s different for me! That is because Su Mo Sha was heavily wounded by me, it would be hard not to suspect me! Furthermore, I heard someone used my name as a reason to enter the Main House....it would not be you....would it?”

“.....”

Hu Qian Mei took a few small steps as her huge swinging tail gently wrapped around her battle dress, lightly exposed her butt as her skirt was lifted, “Whatever, so what if I was used by you, as long as I obtain the Heavenly Crystal, then I will not pursue these matters. But then again....your sword arts ability, it was really mysterious! In the Immortal Sword Sect, to make the swords fly, they have to directly use their own spirit power to create sword

aura. The their body is not in direct contact with the sword, they simply cannot make the sword fly....but you....you even don't have to be close to the flying blades and even use divine skills to cut down your enemies, you must be many times above them! Kid, this ability....how did you obtain it?"

"Secret Manual of my Ancestors!"

"Secret Manual of my Ancestors?" Hu Qian Mei was startled for a moment.

"Yes! My grandfather's grandfather's grandfather's grandfather passed down to me!"

"Are you kidding me?" A smile appeared on Hu Qian Mei's face, it was evident that there was killing intent in it.

"Yes!" Su Yun magnanimously confessed.

"You are courting death!"

"Do you still want the Heavenly Crystal?" Before Hu Qian Mei took action, Su Yun hastily shouted.

Hu Qian Mei's face changed a few times, but a grin soon re-appeared on her face, "Fine, fine. I will let you off for a few days, if in three days, you do not have the Heavenly Crystal, I will peel your skin down to the bones!"

"Then, you'll have to wait!"

"Ah, alright," Hu Qian Mei suddenly said, "You are not the only one that can bully people. For these past few days, you have bullied me to no end, how can I just easily forgive you? If, at the time, you do not surrender the Heavenly Crystal, then the person that will die will not only include you....it will also include other people!" After she finished, Hu Qian Mei just blinked with a mischievous look.

But in the next second, a surge of cold air burst out.

Su Yun's face instantly became cold as he stared indifferently at

her.

Her agile body quickly straightened herself as one shrieking blade flew towards her forehead.

She did not dodge.

The blade scratched the side of her face and stabbed into the ground. It went in to some degree.

A frightening pair of dark and cold eyes stared at her. The viciousness would make anyone's scalp feel numb just reflected of her charming eyes.

Hu Qian Mei's smile did not diminish, as before, she was still smiling as she gazed at him as if he was her's.

“What? Handsome brother cannot wait? But....it's fine! The first time is not on the bed, but in the wild....although it is exciting, but it just will not be comfortable! But it does not matter, if handsome brother likes this, then it's fine! Even if handsome brother is like this, it will be no problem!” Hu Qian Mei spoke with allure as she let the words linger in the air. Her little pink tongue did not forget to lick her chapped lips.

The distance was very close, Su Yun could even smell the fragrant aroma of her body. Furthermore, there was also a strange milky fragrance mixed in.

Su Yun just ignored the aromas and stared coldly at Hu Qian Mei, “It doesn't matter if the time is over, I will still not surrender the Heavenly Crystal to you! i just want you to remember one point, it's fine if you kill me or you do not kill me, but do not touch them, otherwise I will get you! Do you want the Ming Ying School to die without grave, do you understand?”

After Hu Qian Mei heard this, she suddenly froze.

But after a while, she could not help but chuckle a bit.

She laughed as her whole body shook. Her stomach was also

endlessly shaking in laughter.

“Ha ha ha.....just from you? Su Yun! You are too self-righteous, aren't you? Ha ha ha ha....” Hu Qian Mei continued to laugh after she said her words.

Su Yun did not pay attention.

Instead, he got up and the engraved dragon blade went back to his sword sheath. Then he turned around and left.

“Oh? Handsome brother, how arrogant! If everyone is charging at you, how will you run? Is it possible....that you are not enough?” Hu Qian Mei playfully said from behind as he left.

Nonetheless, Su Yun continued to walk farther and farther away.

.....

.....

For the next three days, it had been very calm.

Su Yun stayed inside his little rundown shack for awhile, before he went to some stores to purchase some simple items.

Although Hu Qian Mei gave him many conveniences, but she had also become the biggest inconvenience. If he could not get rid of her, he would never have peace.

Su Yun suddenly thought of a clever plan in his mind.

He did not know if utilizing the Demon Blood Array with the Heavenly Crystal could allow him to battle Hu Qian Mei, but the Heavenly Crystal could not fully restore its power at the moment. Even collecting the ingredients to activate the Demon Blood Array would be impossible. Moreover....he was afraid that Hu Qian Mei was watching him at all times, if he were to take out the Heavenly Crystal for one moment, she would directly eliminate him, take the Heavenly Crystal and leave here.

Therefore unless it was critically important, he would never take out the Heavenly Crystal.

Su Yun did not purchase any rare ingredients from the stores, he just bought two “Gale Symbols,” which were wrapped in cloth. As for other products, he did not buy any, since it would lead to Hu Qian Mei getting suspicious.

As for the rest of the time, he was busy cultivating in his rundown small room.

The third day calmly passed.

On the fourth day, he was called out by the investigation group to drink some tea. Afterwards, he returned home safely.

It was now the fifth day.

Noon was over.

Ka Cha.

The shack’s door was gently pushed open.

Wearing a dark red battle dress, Hu Qian Mei slowly came in.

With snow white skin, a flawless face, exquisite body, hair extending down to her waist, her pink lips gently creased and revealed a seductive smirk.

After entering the room, she slowly walked towards Su Yun step by step. However, on her right hand was the dagger that was always hanging on her waist, this time she intended to kill to obtain possession of the treasure.

“Time is up!”

She smiles as she announced the news.

Su Yun lifted his eyes and looked at her.

“So....are you going to give the Heavenly Crystal or not?” Hu Qian Mei cutely gazed at him as she asked, “or....is it your life?”

Before the eleven year old female, he concealed his sigh and stood up with a pale face, “The Heavenly Crystal is in a hiding place. If you want it, you must come with me.”

“In the grounds of the Su Family?”

“No!”

After saying this, he immediately left the shack and directly went to the spirit stallion. He quickly mounted up and left.

As Hu Qian Mei saw this, a smile crept on her face. She hummed a tune or two and directly went to the overseer of the outer sect of the Su Family to take a good spirit stallion. Nonetheless, she also headed out.

Soon, he left the outer sect of the Su Family.

Su Yun was running in the west direction. There was no Hu Qian Mei or anyone else.

However, Hu Qian Mei was not afraid that he could escape, after all, her cultivation was too domineering compared to Su Yun's.

The two stallions galloped for nearly a day, before Su Yun decided to stop.

Su Yun did not know where this was, it was just a beach that was located by the mountains.

Both of the sides were extremely barren, there was no vegetation. The pool was also very strange. It had a faint blue color and there were no ripples. There was not the slightest trace of any creatures living inside. Furthermore, the pool was emitting bursts of icy chills, which caused them to tremble.

“What did we come here for?” Hu Qian Mei asked as she glanced around the surrounding.

“To take the Heavenly Crystal!” Su Yun clearly announced and ingested a stealth pearl. Plop, he jumped into the pool.

Hu Qian Mei's eyes flashed a trace of nervousness,, but she quickly activated her spirit aura and wrapped herself in a protective layer of her pink spirit aura. Then she nodded, and also jumped into the pool.

The pool was not deep, but the water was extremely cold. Ingesting an Aqua pearl, Su Yun was still somewhat able to support himself. However, his body soon began to become covered with frost. Meanwhile, Hu Qian Mei leisurely swam behind.

After swimming for a while in the underground tunnels, they came to a large boulder.

Su Yun swam forward and pushed away the boulder. Then, a white gold enchantment appeared in front of him.

She saw Su Yun pull out his dragon engraved blade and stab the enchantment a few times. Then, the enchantment was quickly broken.

As Hu Qian Mei saw this, she thought, “To clearly find the weak point of this powerful enchantment, it is evident that it isn’t his first time here.”

After the enchantment was broken, a corridor appeared. The water was unable to flood the corridor, but Su Yun spurred his lightweight chariot on the familiar road and walked down into the corridor, but Hu Qian Mei did not enter. (Tl: did it like a routine)

“You placed the Heavenly Crystal here?” She puzzlingly asked.

“Yes, you can come, too!” Su Yun hastily whispered.

The pair of eyes swept across the scene with a nervous feeling....

Who would have realized....

That Hu Qian Mei was very crafty, “Nah, I will not go down there. You will go down and fetch the Heavenly Crystal for me. I will just wait here!”

Chapter 67 - Once in a Millennium Rare Physique (Part IV)

After hearing her response, Su Yun abruptly stopped in mid-step.

He had never thought that Hu Qian Mei would actually answer like this.

If Hu Qian Mei did not descend, then his plan would not work. Everything he had done so far would have been in vain.

He did not expect Hu Qian Mei would have been so sly.

Su Yun's face betrayed discomfort, and his eyes became evasive.

“So I will go there to pick it up, alone?”

He gasped a breath of air, “Is it possible that you are afraid of something?”

“I'm not afraid of anything,” Hu Qian Mei lowered her voice and laughed, “I just think there is something suspicious going on here! You are very particular, but why did you place the Heavenly Crystal in there? Furthermore, who constructed this place? For you, a spirit intermediate cultivation level cultivator is it possible that you could have constructed this place? Wouldn't just one of these things make anyone suspicious!”

“Just because of that?”

Su Yun was amazed for a moment. Then he immediately chuckled, “The Heavenly Crystal power is formidable, if one wished to take it here, they would certainly have to have high strength. Therefore, I placed it here. I did not construct this place, but it is all of my inheritance....hmmm, this place is what my parents left for me, so what's your answer? You do not have to worry, just quickly come in with me.”

“No need! No need!”

Hu Qian Mei loudly double-downed as she shook her head. Then she smiled and said, “I’m fine with just sitting here and waiting for you.”

“You really don’t intend to come in?” Su Yun asked as a frown appeared on his face.

“Why should I come with you?” Doubt had appeared on Hu Qian Mei’s face as she vigilantly asked.

Upon seeing this, Su Yun rolled his eyes discreetly, but he did not insist. He nodded his head, “Fine, just wait over here, I will take the Heavenly Crystal for you.”

A grin suddenly appeared on Hu Qian Mei’s face. She said with a lovely voice, “Handsome brother is my best friend!”

Su Yun shot her a glance, then he quickly descended down the flight of steps.

Hu Qian Mei used only a little strength to open up a gap in the frigid cold water and sat down in the bottom of the pool to wait.

After Su Yun descended down the flight of steps, there was no sounds of movement for a short period of time. Nonetheless, even after confirming that there was no commotion below, Hu Qian Mei still did not go down. Although she only met Su Yun, and yet in a short amount of time she had already been used by him three times. Hu Qian Mei already understood him a little bit now and now she was kind of nervous of him.

This guy’s cultivation level was not high, but he was very cunning. Hu Qian Mei thought.

“Ah! ! ! ! You....who are you?!” Suddenly, a loud scream came from the steps below.

Hu Qian Mei was startled as she suddenly stood up. Then she ran towards the steps and directly looked inside.

After stepping inside a little, she found nothing. However, there

was the clash of steel and screams of agony coming from below.

“Who are you?”

Is it possible....that someone else had snuck inside?

Hu Qian Mei was feeling anxious in her heart, nonetheless, she did not dare to instantly go down to the bottom of the stairs. On her face, there was still a trace of doubt.

At this moment, an unexpected thing occurred. An elderly voice emerged from the bottom of the stairs.

“Ha ha ha ha ha....you lowly trash want to keep the Heavenly Crystal? Just die! The Heavenly Crystal is this elder’s!”

This voice?

This voice was obviously not Su Yun’s! There was other people inside?

Finally, Hu Qian Mei had run out of patience and directly jumped down inside and ran down the stairs.

At the bottom of the stairs, there was an obscure and dark winding road. The lighting was weak and both sides of the road were narrow.

Hu Qian Mei bit down her teeth, and pulled out her dagger. Then she quickly rushed forth.

After walking through the winding road, she arrived at a fairly spacious crystal blue room. The crystal blue room was very mysterious. Both wall on the sides of the room were massive, but varying in heights. The floor was uneven and coarse. It seemed that this room was not artificially constructed, rather, it seemed that this room was naturally formed.

There was a strange aroma in the air and the temperature was very low, but right now, in the center of the crystal blue room, Su Yun laid on the floor, motionless.

He seemed to be unconscious.

As Hu Qian Mei saw this scene, she was startled.

She quickly surveyed the surroundings, but still found the area very strange. She hesitantly went over, but decided not to get near Su Yun.

“Qu-....quickly chase after the person....there was someone....that came here before me....” Just then, Su Yun, who was weakly lying in the center of the crystal blue room, weakly uttered. He was extremely pale.

Hu Qian Mei quickly glanced over Su Yun, but could not perceive any spirit qi. It was evident that his body did not have much strength left. Furthermore, it seemed that he was heavily injured.

After analyzing the crystal room one more time, a snow white door appeared. The door opened with a small crack and then began to fully open.

Seeing this situation, Hu Qian Mei’s patience was running out. Didn’t she do everything so far for the Heavenly Crystal? If the Heavenly Crystal was truly taken away, how could she just give up?

Immediately, Hu Qian Mei activated her spirit qi and rushed forth towards the door.

As for Su Yun, she really despised him in utter contempt.

She only wanted the Heavenly Crystal!

But—

Just as Hu Qian Mei rushed towards the Crystal Blue Room, a strange power suddenly enveloped her. In a flash, it covered her from head to toe like a silkworm spinning a cocoon. Then, her spirit qi began to quickly dissipate and soon just disappeared without a trace.

“What happened?”

A trace of fear seeped into Hu Qian Mei’s heart as she gazed at Su

Yun's body lying on the floor. Instantly, she understood that she had fallen into a trap.

She hastily retreated. At this moment, a powerful gust suddenly blew from the door of the Crystal room. The spirit qi-less Hu Qian Mei has no chance to react. Her petite body was quickly blown back into the center of the crystal room.

The mysterious energy was even more dense in center. Her entire reservoir of spirit qi had been completely wiped clean. Not only that, even her overall physical strength had decreased many times.

Hu Qian Mei fell hard on her butt on the ground. She closed her eyes to try to endure the pain of the crash. As she looked up, she was surprised to find that on both of the crystal door panels had talismans, "Gale Symbols."

At that moment, Hu Qian Mei truly understood.

"You...." She turned towards Su Yun and began to shout in his face.

However....before more words came out of the little girl's mouth, she was captured by a large hand and was pulled towards him.

Hu Qian Mei did not have any spirit qi, and her own physical strength was many times weaker. How could she battle against Su Yun? Her petite body simply could not put up any resistance.

This place was very mysterious. It could lower the physical strength and the spirit qi of anyone that came within the room. She was afraid that Su Yun knew about this, so he deliberately lured Hu Qian Mei over here. Although Hu Qian Mei was cautious throughout, she had become impatient and anxious from Su Yun's actions and words.

Especially that strange voice, but Hu Qian Mei would never know that within Su Yun's artifacts, he was also carrying an elder's soul.

Hu Qian Mei intended to quickly flee, but did not think that Su Yun would use two Gale Symbols to blow her back inside.

“Truly despicable! I did not expect that you would plant two gale symbols over there!”

Hu Qian Mei was struggling with her tiny hands as she gazed at the expressionless Su Yun. She grinded her teeth as she continued, “However Su Yun, don’t be conceited! The roots of my school is infinite, if they wanted to kill you, it would be as easy as lifting a hand! The best course of action for you right now is to let me go. Otherwise, I will not let even your skeleton to exist in this world anymore!”

“Eliminating my skeleton from this world?” Su Yun just sneered and directly pinched Hu Qian Mei’s little white face, “Then quickly come and eliminate my skeleton from this world right now, ah! Ah?”

“Ow....” When Hu Qian Mei’s tender little face was pinched, a little red mark appeared. The pain from the pinch caused her to cry out. Right now, she did not have any spirit qi or physical strength. It appeared that her body’s strength truly weakened by many folds.

“This is the center of an entire interconnected region based on a formation. It is the region of “Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds!” The place that you stand with me right now is the central region of the Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds. Here, not to mention spirit qi, even divine treasures will be useless in this area. No matter if it is purple grade or spirit grade, even if it is a peerless artifact, it will remain completely useless in here! You still want to destroy my skeleton from this world!? Ah, if you think that is possible, then you can have a try!”

Hu Qian Mei was suddenly stunned as she heard this, “Five Extinguishing....Elements of Balance Formation?”

“Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds: it balances the power of all five elements: metal cancels out wood, wood cancels out earth, earth cancels out water, water cancels out fire, fire

cancels out metal. The Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds will remain functioning endlessly. There is only one area that this phenomenon occurs, fortunately I happened to know the place of this formation!”

Su Yun dragged her little head over and directly slapped her charming little butt with the palm of his hand without any mercy.

“Ah....”

Hu Qian Mei was beginning to call out in pain. Her charming eyes were now overflowing with tears. She was in a pitiful and miserable state while she asked Su Yun, “Handsome brother, you....are you trying to kill me right now?”

“It will not be that easy!” Su Yun responded as the corner of his mouth turned into a nefarious grin, “You actually dared to use Qing Er and them to threaten me! Why would I let you go so easily?!”

“But....but didn’t you do it too? Just let me go, I don’t want the Heavenly Crystal anymore. I will never dare to provoke handsome brother again, alright? Please, just let me go!”

Hu Qian Mei began to beg, her normally lovely and charming complexion was replaced with a pitiful expression, which could even melt hearts of iron.

Nonetheless, Su Yun completely disregarded this matter. Instead, with one hand, he grabbed the large soft and fluffy tail and clenched his fingers around it. As creamy and cozy feeling seeped into his hands.

Instantly, as his hand wrapped around the tail, Hu Qian Mei’s body went limp. Her white cheeks burst into a flush as she fell down to the ground shaking and rapidly panting from her mouth.

“Do not....do not touch....me there!”

“Oh?” Su Yun looked at his hands that were wrapped around the fluffy tail. He was stunned for awhile.

However, then he knew.

Is it possible, that her tail was extremely sensitive?

“Ah, who cares!” Su Yun did not care about her remark one bit.

Furthermore, he decided not to let Hu Qian Mei leave.

This deceitful female was just a simple person. If he did not have the Heavenly Crystal in his possession, it would have been very likely that he would have been killed! Prior during to the three connected times of helping each other, it was all for the Heavenly Crystal! In addition, Su Yun was not sure of her words. Even if he gave the Heavenly Crystal to her, wouldn't she just quickly behind him after?

Due to her personality, the probability of killing him was very high. When he was gone no one would be able to trace the Heavenly Crystal back to her.

Then, a deep killing intent oozed from his eyes as he maintained his ice cold expression. His face did not have a trace of expression as his killing intent rippled out!

This situation even astonished Hu Qian Mei!

“Kid, don't act recklessly.” Just as Su Yun was holding Hu Qian Mei, preparing to kill her, sword elder's voice suddenly emitted from the scroll of Limitless Sword Arts.

“What?” Su Yun asked.

“This female has an once in a millennium rare body constitution: Pure Dual Cultivation Physique! If you do her, you will gain some of her talent and will increase your cultivation capability! How many people would yearn to obtain this type of woman! Don't you have a plan to execute; don't you thirst for power? Why not just do her? Then, you would increase your own talent and your growth rate.” The sword elder chuckled.

“....” Su Yun remained stiff for a while. Then he called out,

“People of the Limitless Sword Sect are so shameless.”

“Get lost! This elder here is trying to give you advice!”

“But if I do not kill her and she manages to escape, then I will suffer! !”

“Ha ha ha, you are very weary of her. She has a Pure Dual Cultivation Physique, you have obtained her body, you guys will share your talent with each other. If she decided to kill you, her talent will become ruined, which would make cultivation progress in the future very difficult. Unless she unexpectedly manages to cultivate to a much higher level, why would she dare retaliate against you?”

“What if she decides to take action against Qing Er? They will not share the talent with Hu Qian Mei!”

“Then use suicide to threaten her!”

“How are you full of these stupid ideas?” Su Yun frowned.

“He he, I will let you decide.” The sword elder issued a smile and continued, “Not mentioning the Pure Dual Cultivation Physique, which is rare to come by, just saying that this high talent and this high cultivation, which is not seen usually for five thousand years. Let alone her beautiful appearance, tsk tsk tsk, kid you are blessed, so why not enjoy yourself, ah!”

“.....” Su Yun.

Chapter 68 - At Wit's End (Part I)

The blushing Hu Qian Mei raised her head to face Su Yun as she struggled to stop her panting.

She tried her best to free her tail from Su Yun's large, hardened hands. However, her body didn't have the slightest ounce of strength, so she could only continue lying on the ground while taking deep breaths. With a pitifully weak voice, she asked, "Senior....are you....are you going to kill me?"

"What do you think?" Su Yun coldly responded.

"If senior lets me go, I, Hu Qian Mei will never demand the Heavenly Crystal anymore. I will vow never to trouble senior ever again? Is....is that okay?" Hu Qian Mei nervously asked.

After Su Yun heard this, he seemed to ponder a moment.

Seeing this, Hu Qian Mei hastily continued, "Not only that, I can also get you all kinds of rare cultivation medicine....and precious armaments. Not matter how many armaments senior brother wants, I can get for you! Right, right....if senior brother desires splendor and wealth, I can also obtain those for you! Senior brother, directly entering Ming Ying School is also possible! As long as I give my recommendation, there will not be a single problem for you to enter the school. The conditions will be ten thousand times better than the Su Family!"

"Really....is it really that good?" Su Yun seemed a little surprised.

As Hu Qian Mei saw this, she suddenly became ecstatic. Then she immediately responded, "Yes, I swear."

"You swear?" Su Yun broke into laughter, "This pathetic promise, who would believe you! The moment I let you go, you will kill me, right?!"

"Hu Qian Mei will not!" Hu Qian Mei responded as streams of tears poured down her face. Her childish face seemed extremely

cute and pitiful, which would make any normal person melt.

But, right at the next second, Su Yun took action.

He took out “Limitless Sword Arts” from his spatial ring and opened the scroll.

“Wait wait! Kid, what are you doing?” Sword elder thought something was not right, so he called out.

“Elder, I will have to temporarily cause you some grief!” Su Yun said.

“Grief? What grief? Hey, hey, hey, don’t throw me away! Hey!” The Sword Elder shouted.

He didn’t really know why this Sword Elder did not want to go inside the Everlasting Sword Sheath.

Nonetheless, Su Yun directly sent him into the sheath.

After the Limitless Sword Arts entered the sheathe, the Sword Elder’s cries immediately disappeared without a trace.

Right after, Su Yun placed the Everlasting Sword Sheath inside his spatial ring.

He took a deep breath as his eyes filled with resolve after making his decision.

Maybe.

This decision would make him unworthy for Qing Er.

However, if this will allow Qing Er to flee from the Su Family, then it would be worth it!

Su Yun quietly clenched his fists.

When Su Mo Sha died, it was as if a needle pierced through Su Yun’s heart.

However, Su Mo Sha was only a small figure in the main house that could do as he wished. In the main house, how many more people could bully or humiliate Qing Er?

They must leave the Su Family! They must!

Su Yun kept clenching his fists as he gazed down at Hu Qian Mei lying on the floor in front of him.

She felt a peculiar feeling from Su Yun. Hu Qian Mei became frightened. She raised her head to directly face Su Yun's cold and detached pair of eyes.

She was terrified. She did not know what Su Yun really wanted to do.

Did he want to kill her? How can that be?

Maybe? He wants....he wants me for himself?

Hu Qian Mei instantly became even more terrified. She had never been more terrified than right now, even before death.

However, in Su Yun's eyes, she could not see the least bit of lust....

Suddenly!

The man took action. He turned Hu Qian Mei around and used his large hand to grasp at her chest. Then he pulled a piece off.

Rip!

The chest area of the battle dress was ripped off and her delicate skin was exposed to the air.

Hu Qian Mei was shocked.

In an instant, her lovely appearance disappeared without a trace, and her disguise completely dissipated. Her expression now only contained surprise and anger.

"Su Yun! What are you doing?" Hu Qian Mei struggled to shake Su Yun off with her small hands.

However, in the Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds, how much strength could her little body have?

Su Yun did not seem to take notice of her struggles. With one

hand, he detained Hu Qian Mei by grabbing her wrist and pushed her down onto the floor. In addition, his other hand was ripping her red battle dress.

“Bastard! Let me go....let me go....you fucking bastard, I hope you die....” Hu Qian Mei eyes bubbled with tears as she angrily shouted.

Although Hu Qian Mei specialized in charm, she did not have any actual experience with this kind of thing. Before, if she was going too far when she played around, at least her body was strong enough to keep her safe, but today was different!

Maybe one day she would find a partner to become her cultivating companion, but she was unable to accept that she was becoming a partner with this person.

He was only a spirit intermediate level cultivator!

“I don’t want it....I don’t want it....I don’t want it....let me go....” Hu Qian Mei screamed again and again.

However, it was useless.

Soon after.

The battle dress was pulled off.

Two pairs of pure white thighs were exposed.

Although they were not slender, the proportions were just right, not too long and not too short.

Hu Qian Mei’s feet were constantly kicking Su Yun, but her little assault was like cotton attacks, so Su Yun simply ignored her.

Suddenly, her chest felt hot as a large hand came over her chest.

Hu Qian Mei’s entire body was trembling now. She stared at her precious place being desecrated with eyes of disbelief.

However, it was still not over.

Su Yun did not intend to do any foreplay or attempt to enjoy her

exquisite body. After kneading her breasts a bit, he directly used his hands to pull apart both of the tightly closed legs. He quickly took off his own clothe and was preparing to thrust into her!

“I don’t want this! Su Yun! You cannot do this! Anything you want, I promise that I will get it for you! I beg you to just let me go!” Hu Qian Mei was basically screaming her lungs out as tears overflowed down her desperate white face.

He was breathing heavily, but then his action slowed down right at this moment.

He gazed at the face beneath him. Fear, despair, helplessness, and a nervous little girl was before him. A sharp pain abruptly appeared in his heart.

“What am I doing?” He asked himself.

“Su Yun....just let me go, alright....” The girl said with a clear, but fearful voice.

This time, Hu Qian Mei was no longer pretending. Her heart was in a state of panic.

The terrified feeling had nothing to do with her strength of a cultivator, but it was simply the sincere feeling deep within an innocent girl’s heart.

“Maybe I was wrong.” Su Yun whispered.

Hu Qian Mei’s pupils faintly enlarged as she gazed at his sharp face with eyes that seemed to blankly stare in the abyss.

“You can hate me!”

“Or maybe....you can kill me!”

“But....it will have to be after I finish my objective....”

“In order to protect the people important to me, I have made a lot of mistakes. However, for all the evil deeds that I completed....I do not regret any of them!”

“I can be unworthy to live in this world, or this world may be unworthy of me, but I cannot fail to live up to my expectations as a man! As long as my companions live happily, apart from that matter, this doesn’t matter!”

Hu Qian Mei just remained completely stunned.

Just then, Su Yun’s hips thrust forward and a searing pain came from her lower body as something ripped apart.

“Ah....”

Hu Qian Mei clenched her teeth as her delicate body violently shuddered.

Her tears silently fell.

She did not cry or beg for mercy. Only her eyes widened as she painfully gazed at Su Yun in front of her.

Slowly, his eyes began to fill with lust and Su Yun began to slowly lose his bearings.

The two people’s spirit qi began to collide with each other, bursting forth with a unique, exotic energy.

....

....

It was very quiet at the Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds.

No one would be able to find this place underneath a deserted pool, hidden within a hidden area.

Here, the gusts of winds were even quiet.

All except the exotic cries, which finally began to quiet down.

After it rained.

Su Yun was breathing very heavily.

The naked Hu Qian Mei was silently lying on his chest.

The little girl's body was curled as her huge tail covered the love markings around her body, which riddled throughout each area of her pure white skin. It was especially serious in her lower body, which was swelling from unbearable pain. Her virgin flower had been broken.

Despite it being Hu Qian Mei's first time, he did not even know how many times they did it. He only remembered that, after she was entered, he felt that he reached the summit. Not only did he not feel the slightest amount of exhaustion, on the contrary, his mind became more and more alert. After sharing the energy that resided in the lower body, he felt like he became a small sun that was emitting rays of light. Every place of his sweaty body including his spirit essence had improved. This feeling made him feel inexplicable joy!

Wait wait!

Suddenly, Su Yun became aware that something was wrong.

Within his body, his spirit essence was scattered at every place....the amount increased a little bit, but....but why were some spirit essence that were only the size of a grain of rice?

Maybe....

Su Yun nervously analyzed the grain sized spirit essence that was residing with other normal spirit essence. Only seventeen spirit essence were that size, but they were emitting extremely astonishing spirit qi. Evidently, they were more than ten times better than normal essence.

Earth Spirit Essence!

Su Yun became ecstatic.

Only those at the fourth stage of spirit intermediate realm would give birth to such high level spirit essence!

Is that not to say that....I have already reached spirit intermediate fourth stage?

In just a short span of time, I had managed to raise my strength by two levels!

Furthermore, his talent was improved. His spirit meridians, spirit essence and spirit qi properties were even more formidable than before. His mind was full of vitality and his heart was alert. Were these the benefits of sharing the talent? Su Yun whispered to himself.

“Are you happy?” Just then, a low voice came out.

Su Yun’s joyous mood calmed down as he lowered his head to see that the girl in his embrace, Hu Qian Mei, had already woken up.

She blankly stared at Su Yun with dull eyes. There were still some tears left....

“Your cultivation rose, talent rose alot? Aren’t you so happy?” Hu Qian Mei indifferently said.

“I require power!”

“Power?”

“Heavenly Crystal is fine! It is the same as your strength, if only I can obtain power and amplify my strength will I be able to strive for my goals! I just don’t have much time.” After Su Yun said this, he became silent.

After a long time, he spoke again.

“Do you hate me?”

“Hate you?” Hu Qian Mei’s flushed red face gazed with a pale expression at Su Yun. Afterwards, she started to laugh.

“Ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha....”

Her laugh was very loud, but accompanied by her sweet sound of laughter was something of indescribably pain.

Her tears began to overflow again. The tears fell down her face, which had still not dried up from her tear stains.

“I am merely a lowly hybrid, why would there be anything for me to hate?” Hu Qian Mei wiped her tears from her eyes. Then with an indifferent voice, she continued, “I am merely the result of a beastman raping a human, which then gave birth to a hybrid. My mother abandoned me. It was my master that raised me up to be entered into the cultivating sects, but from when I was little to right now, I did not know how much bitterness I experienced, how much bullying I experienced, how much hate? I hate thousands upon thousands of people, but is there any use? This hate, is just some unnecessary feelings!” After Hu Qian Mei finished, she laughed at herself again. However, her laughter sounded bleak.

She had already understood that she could not have any killing intent towards Su Yun! Unless she wanted to personally ruin herself, she understood, she could do nothing ill towards this person anymore!

“I painstaking cultivated, all for the sake of protecting myself from bullying. I just did not think God would do this to me. I thought my objective was completed and I had practically no more opponents. I didn’t expect that my final encounter with a small spirit intermediate cultivator would lead to defeat....ah, how ironic....”

Su Yun did not say a word.

Hu Qian Mei stopped laughing. She wanted to get down from Su Yun’s body to fetch the torn up battle dress, but her body was still extremely sore.

The Mutual Destruction of Five Elements Grounds did not just weaken her strength, it sapped the energy from her body.

Hu Qian Mei’s pair of eyes dimmed and her body ceased to move. It seemed as if she had given up.

But right at this moment, a pair of large hands suddenly wrapped around her.

Afterwards, a pure white battle dress covered her delicate body.
Hu Qian Mei was startled as she turned around....

Chapter 69 - What Date Is Today? (Part II)

There are a many secrets that are not known to anyone in this world.

The Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds was one such case!

There were not many people that knew of this special region. Currently, this place was only recorded in the Blossom Heart Valley's Secret Palace. The forefathers of the Blossom Heart Valley have once used the Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds to refine secret medicines. Hence, they have studied this peculiar region.

This Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds of the Entwining Secrets District was discovered seven years later. However, after this Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds was discovered, people were shocked to find out that this place have already been used as a graveyard by others. Moreover, it had been a graveyard for over eight hundred years. Although the Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds was merely the center of a district, but it was not a fixed location. Furthermore, it also does not possess a large range. Thus, it was extremely difficult to find its concrete location. As it would usually be underneath the ground, it would usually not affect anyone. Likewise, it would also not be easily utilized by anyone.

Su Yun changed into his pitch black swordsman outfit and wrapped his white gown around Hu Qianmei. Step by step, he proceeded to walk out of the crystal room.

Hu Qianmei did not say anything. Her body was in a fetal position, and she was even slightly trembling.

At this moment, neither one of them could kill the other. Hu Qianmei's special physique gave Su Yun a large amount of talent and cultivation prowess. Likewise, Hu Qianmei had also profited.

Merely, hers was an extremely small amount. After all, Su Yun's cultivation level was not high.

Hu Qianmei cannot kill Su Yun, and Su Yun was the same. If he were to kill her, then his talents would be damaged and the Spiritual Path would be thwarted.

After coming out from the Mutual Destruction of the Five Elements Grounds, the two people recovered their cultivation prowess.

"I cannot give you the Heavenly Crystal. Let's separate here." Su Yun said indifferently.

Hu Qianmei who wore a white gown smiled. Her smile appeared a bit dry. It was not charming and splendid like before.

After she recovered her martial prowess, the slit scar on her body also gradually healed.

She had already thought of how she would kill Su Yun. However, she did not do it. She understood her own body better than anyone else. The man who managed to obtain her body shall be able to enjoy her talent together with her. If she were to kill that man, her talent would definitely be disabled. It would be impossible for her to recover her talent in her lifetime. If that was the case, then her cultivation path would also come to an end.

"This does not represent that the matter is solved! Su Yun! I, Hu Qianmei, would not acknowledge you just like this! Perhaps you were planning to use this to restrict me and continue to exploit me; however, you would not be able to have it your way that easily! The Secret Techniques of the world are boundless. I will find a way to remove the benefits given to you by the Dual Cultivation Physique and remove all association that you have with me. At that time, I will definitely kill you with my own hands! I will destroy you!"

Said Hu Qianmei as she narrowed her eyes. It was impossible for

ordinary people to see the bone-chilling ice blade like resentment within the depths of her charming eyes.

However, the moment after that, a large hand pinched her tender and soft white little white cheeks.

“Wuu...”

Reflexively, Hu Qianmei held her hand over the area of her face that was pinched. Startled, she opened her mouth but felt that she was unable to say anymore words.

Instead, she looked at that man. The man directly walked up toward the stone steps and left.

He actually did not say a single word and left just like that.

Could it be that he wasn't afraid?

Hu Qianmei continued to stand there and quietly watched him leave.

Kacha kacha kacha...

The dashing sound of the spirit horse was heard underneath the moonlight sky. A man and a stallion was dashing toward the direction of the Outer Su Family.

Click.

Su Yun opened the Everlasting Sword Sheath and took out the 'Limitless Sword Arts' from it.

“It's done?”

The Sword Elder coughed a couple times and then said in a deadly earnest tone.

“M..mn...”

“Truly shameless!”

“You are not qualified to say that!”

“Although this old man had also fooled around during the time of

my youth, I have never forced anyone like you!” The Sword Elder laughed. “Does your Su Qing Er knew about how shameless you are?!”

Click!

The Everlasting Sword Sheath was closed. The Sword Arts were once again thrown into it.

Su Yun took took a deep breath. He then went on with his journey.

Spirit Novice Disciple, Spirit Intermediate Disciple, Spirit Core Disciple, Spirit Soul Disciple, Spirit Star Disciple, Spirit Master, Sky Spirit Master, Spirit Emperor, Spirit Sage, Spirit Immortal, Spirit God.

These eleven stages, the further one reached, the harder it was to train. The difference in strength between the levels were also extremely wide.

It was said that a level one Spirit Soul Disciple would be capable of ripping apart three level ten Spirit Core Disciples using only his bare hands.

Su Yun’s current level was a level four Spirit Intermediate Disciple.

He possessed a thousand nine hundred and seventy two Spirit Essences. Compared to ordinary Spirit Intermediate Disciples, he had over eight hundred more Spirit Essences. Not only that, he also possessed seventeen Earth Spirit Essences. Ordinary Spirit Intermediate Disciples only possessed three Earth Spirit Essences.

Furthermore, his Spirit Energy has also been amplified through the Crescent Moon Fruit, Divine Five Life Beads, and other medicines. Thus, his Spirit Energy was much more dense than that of ordinary people. This led to having his recovery speed of Spirit Energy be much faster than ordinary people. When he doesn’t use the Heavenly Crystal, even if Su Yun was to encounter a level five

Spirit Intermediate Disciple, he would still be able to fight against them. However, if he were to encounter a level six Spirit Intermediate Disciple, then he would likely have to find a way to flee.

As the Everlasting Stone only increased the cultivation speed and not one's strength, thus, Su Yun's only trump card was the Heavenly Crystal. The Heavenly Crystal was the only method for Su Yun to save his life if he were to encounter an expert.

In the Sky Martial Continent, a level four Spirit Intermediate Disciple could only be considered as a person of ordinary martial prowess. If one wanted to wander the world, the very minimum requirement was a martial prowess of level eight or higher Spirit Intermediate Disciple.

However, then again, the amount of magical weapons that Su Yun possessed was truly sparse. Other than the Engraved Dragon Sword and the Heavenly Crystal, Su Yun have nothing else. The might of one's magical weapons was also a part of one's strength. Sometimes, those weapons could bring about an unexpected effect.

Su Yun had his hand on his chin and thought for a moment. Suddenly, he thought of a pretty decent treasure.

The Heavenly Crystal is a most valuable treasure, and possessed a boundless amount of power. Countless people sought for the Heavenly Crystal.

However, the Heavenly Crystal was not an unequalled existence. There's actually another valuable treasure that could rival the Heavenly Crystal!

Sprite's Shadow!

Back then, when people were persistently searching for the Heavenly Crystal in the Crescent Valley, the news of the birth of the Divine Artifact 'Sprite's Shadow' was transmitted outward from the numerous great districts in succession. It was said that

the Sprite's Shadow possessed a power not inferior to the Heavenly Crystal.

“According to the information that I know from back then, one must be at the very least possess the martial prowess of a level five Spirit Intermediate Disciple to search for the Sprite's Shadow. I'm currently a level lacking. I shall concentrate fully and train for a while.”

Su Yun thought in his heart.

Although he was already able to set off to search for the Sprite's Shadow with his current martial prowess, in certain sectors, the level five Spirit Intermediate Disciple's strength would provide much more security than the level four Spirit Intermediate Disciple.

As he only had a single life, it is best to try to have more safety measurements. Unless he had no alternative but to do it, Su Yun would not risk his life.

Soon, Su Yun returned to the Outer Sect.

Hu Qianmei had not followed him. Since she did not managed to obtain the Heavenly Crystal, she didn't dare to kill Su Yun. As it was meaningless for her to tang along with Su Yun, it was likely that she was already enroute to return to the Ming Ying School right now.

After returning to the outer sect, the surveillance from the family have not decreased. However, Su Yun did not mind about it. Minding his own business, he proceeded to go and train. Of course, Su Yun did not dare to train in the 'Limitless Sword Arts' under the surveillance. He would only start training when those people monitoring him grew bored and proceeded to go drink and be lazy.

Other than the 'Limitless Sword Arts,' he also decided that he shouldn't stop training the 'Heaven Splitting Sword Technique.' Among the battle techniques, the Heaven Splitting Sword

Technique was a relatively practical skill.

After training in the outer sect for several tens of days, Su Yun's Spirit Lord Aura's control became more stable. He also managed to have some slight progress in his Heaven Splitting Sword Technique. Currently, he was capable of creating a single sword silhouette. However, this sword silhouette only had an attack range of a meter. That was to say, if his enemy was to be outside of the range of one meter, then Su Yun would not be able to utilize his sword silhouette to attack them.

However, this was already sufficient.

In merely several tens of days, he have managed to learn the basics of a profound skill. This was the cultivation speed of someone who possessed a Divine Level Talent. For ordinary people, it would require them at the very least an entire year to learn a profound skill. The reason why Su Yun was capable of achieving such amazing speed was not only because the restrictions on his talent have been removed. It was also because of the Everlasting Stone and Hu Qianmei's talent. At the very least, fifty percent of Hu Qianmei's talent was shared with him. Su Yun did a basic assessment of his current talent.

At the very least, it was six times that of ordinary individuals!

Six times? What was that? Using the simplest line of thought to explain this would be that if Su Yun was to train for a single day, it was equivalent to ordinary people training for six days!

Even the so called geniuses were likely not this frightening.

The training in the outer sect was both quiet and lonely. Xinyue and Xingyang successfully entered the inner sect with the 'Blood Dew Jade Crystals.' They enjoyed the treatment given to them by the inner sect and obtained better training conditions. After a period of adaption, the two of them left the inner sect and came to Su Yun's place to visit him.

The clothing on the two of them had slightly changed. At the very least, the clothes on their bodies were all new. Their complexion was also glossy and sleek, like the luster of gems. Their eyes were filled with vigour. Their beautiful hair were jet black. Evidently, these were the results from taking high quality medicinal pellets.

The two of them brought with them many goods and spirit coins to gift to Su Yun. However, they were all declined by him.

The three of them sat inside his worn out house.

Su Xinyue boiled the spirit tea that she brought as a gift to Su Yun and poured a cup for him.

“Big brother Su Yun, these are the spirit leaves of the inner sect. Drinking the tea created from these tea leaves would help increase one’s spirit energy. Drinking the tea for three days would open a Spirit Essence. This tea could at the very most open up to five Spirit Essences. It is extremely beneficial. In the future, you must remember to drink this tea often!”

Said Su Xinyue as she poured the tea.

“Let’s talk about this matter later.” Su Yun smiled. He then asked. “Oh, that’s right. Did the two of you do what I asked and inquired about the guests the Main Family have received?”

“Regarding that...”

Su Xinyue and Su Xinyang glanced at each other. Su Xinyue then shook her head. “There is no one who has come to visit the inner sect or the Main Family in this period of time, they have not received any guests!”

“Is that so?”

Su Yun lowered his head and started pondering.

“Oh, that’s right! Big brother, I’ve heard that the patriarch’s third son has been bothering big sister Qing Er constantly. This has

caused big sister Qing Er to be extremely distressed!”

At this moment, Su Xinyue suddenly said.

“Patriarch’s third son?”

Su Yun frowned. “Who?”

“It’s young master Su Huoyu! Big brother, could it be that you’ve never heard of him?”

Su Xinyang blurted out.

“Su Huoyu?”

Su Yun had a slight impression of this man in his memories.

It was said that this Su Huoyu was an extremely sharp and crafty yet also extremely timid person. He does not possess a very handsome appearance and thus women does not think highly of him. However, he had relied on his status as the son of the patriarch and toyed with many girls. His martial prowess was also not high or strong. He was merely clever in trivial matters.

“Ever since Su Mosha died of a bizarre death, that guy has started bothering big sis Qing Er. Big brother Yun, I’ve heard that this guy is close to that Su Guimu. Neither one of them are good people, so you must tell big sis Qing Er to be more careful!”

Said Su Xinyue.

“That’s right, that’s right. Big brother Yun, when big sis Qing Er comes here, you must definitely tell her to be on guard!” Su Xinyang echoed what his sister said.

“Qing Er? Shouldn’t she be in the Main Family? Although Su Mosha died, it would still not be that easy for her to come to the outer sect!”

“Ay, now that you mentioned it, I remembered that it seemed like big sis Qing Er had left the Su Family yesterday!” Su Xinyue suddenly said.

“Left the Su Family? Where to?”

“Not sure. I think it might be because of a mission given to her by the patriarch?”

“Mission?”

“I have heard, from a maid that has returned to the inner sect from the Main Family to visit her relatives, that it seemed that big sis Qing Er seems to be going to represent the Su Family in going to the Purple Star Academy for a martial prowess learning exchange!” Said Su Xinyue.

“Purple Star Academy?” Su Yu lowered his head and started to ponder. Suddenly, major information concerning the Purple Star Academy flashed past his mind.

That was the largest misfortune that have fell upon the Purple Star Academy in its five hundred years of history.

Because of how big the scene had become, this information had spread wide and far. Thus, Su Yun had also heard about this. He even remembered that it seemed to have occurred in the middle of October.

“Oh, that’s right, what date is today?”

Su Yun asked without thinking much about it.

“Today? It’s the 1001 Year of the Stellar Calendar, October thirteenth. Big brother Su Yun, is something wrong?”

“.....”

Chapter 70 - A Hundred Swords (Part III)

Su Yun remembered that, in his past life, the Su Family had dispatched a disciple to Purple Star Academy for cultivation; but it had not fallen on Qing Er.

Is it possible that this was something like a butterfly effect? Perhaps Su Mosha's death caused this exchange to change between the two sects?

Su Yun did not know the exact date of this event, but it occurred when he was about twenty years old. Nonetheless, he still did not remember Qing Er participating in such an event and was afraid that there might be some unexpected accidents during the exchange, which would cause the death of some of the candidates.

After pondering for awhile, Su Yun suddenly stood up.

"Big brother, what are you doing?" Su Xinyue and Su Xingyang blankly stared at Su Yun.

"Xinyue, Xingyang, after you guys entered the inner sect, many things have become easier for you guys....so, can you guys quickly prepare one hundred profound iron swords for me? They must be lightweight, but also good quality, as long as it can kill someone....by the way, the sword must be radiant, like a mirror! Can you guys accomplish it?"

"One hundred?" Su Xingyang and Su Xinyue almost jumped up in shock.

"The inner sect should have enough in storage, but to take one hundred in one go....I'm afraid this will not be too appropriate!"

"There should not be a problem, brother Su Yun. We received some spirit coins, so even if Su Family's arsenal is not enough, we can go to the inner sect's store to purchase some directly from the Su Family!"

"Purchase?"

When Su Yun heard this, he relaxly just took out all the spirit coins from within his spatial ring and placed them on the table. If one counted everything, it would have been about three thousand spirit coins. Although it was not considered as a lot, it was more than enough to buy one hundred high quality swords.

“Take these first!” Su Yun pushed the money towards them.

As the two siblings saw this, they politely declined Su Yun’s goodwill. However, on Su Yun’s continued insistence, they accepted the money just to appease Su Yun’s countless offers.

“Can you prepare everything within three hours?” Su Yun asked.

“Three hours?” Su Xingyang surprisingly exclaimed.

Su Xinyue nodded after she pondered for a moment. “This should probably be not a problem!”

“Alright, sorry to trouble you guys! After three hours, I will wait for you here. If you guys cannot gather one hundred swords within three hours, that’s okay! Nonetheless, try to obtain as many as you can, the more the better!”

“Alright....alright.”

Both of the siblings were confused. They did not know what Su Yun was going to do but, as long as it was Su Yun, they decided they would not ask anymore. Despite such a crazy request, they were not going to refuse. In their hearts, they understood that Su Yun was not so simple. Furthermore, Su Yun, their benefactor, had already helped them countless times.

The two siblings quickly went to prepare the equipment, while Su Yun led the Spirit Stallion to the stables to feed it some grain. After finishing this chore, he went to the outer sect and headed straight toward the mission center to obtain a general labor mission at Purple Star Academy.

Of course, this was just used as a pretext, for his main purpose was still to go to Purple Star Academy. With the Su Family

observing him, if he left the Su Family without any reason, it would certainly be suspicious.

If anyone else went to the Purple Star Academy, Su Yun would never decide to interfere, but this time it was Qing Er who was going to go. Therefore, he had to make sure she avoided the inevitable conflict that would occur.

In this world, Su Yun had no more loved ones. The only ones left in his heart were Qing Er and the Yue Yang siblings.

After he received validation on his mission, he returned back to his little shack. Soon after, the Yue Yang siblings came inside and dropped a large number of iron swords in front of Su Yun. There were exactly one hundred swords, and Su Yun was ecstatic. He immediately sent them all into his spatial ring, making it completely full. Now that everything was ready, he jumped on his spirit stallion and rushed out of the Su Family.

“Where is big brother Su Yun going?” Su Xinyue looked worried as she gazed the Su Yun’s figure that disappeared over the bronze avenue.

“I really don’t know.” Su Xing Yang said as he shook his head.

.....

.....

One day earlier, Qing Er had already headed out on behalf of the Su Family. She was travelling straight to the Mystical Mountain Range, where the Purple Star Academy was located.

As she was traversing through the Mystical Mountain Range, she passed through the Great Cyan District. They only had about ten days left to arrive at their destination. However, Qing Er and her escort had a very effective means of transport, which was a powerful spirit beast, the Single Horned Bull. Its endurance and strength was more than twice of a spirit stallion. Su Yun, who was quickly trying to catch up would still take ten days, but they only

needed about five days.

Despite this, Su Yun travelled day and night. Only when he was utterly exhausted would he dare take a break. On the other hand, Qing Er's group leisurely travelled and stopped during their journey. On their way, they were greeted by many types of people who had good relations with the Su Family, which caused them a lot of delay on the road. Therefore, they only managed to arrive one day early to their destination.

A few days later, a black spirit stallion with a mysterious individual wearing a blademaster's clothes and carrying a sword had also arrived. He quickly rushed through a nameless district as he headed straight for the Great Cyan District.

The fourth day.

In the scorching sun, the spirit stallion was still galloping crazily. It had been panting for air for a few hours, and it was almost straining its eyes from exhaustion.

After Su Yun saw this, he hastily stopped his ride and removed the feed that the spirit stallion was still carrying, quickly tending to it. Furthermore, he took out a bottle of spirit leaf foam tea and poured the contents down his mouth.

As one, the stallion and him breathed. Then, Su Yun gazed into the distance before looking at his surroundings.

A long gravel road lead towards towards the mountain range. Both sides of the road were littered with weeds. Furthermore, whether he looked in front or behind himself, there was not a single person in sight. This was indeed a truly desolate area.

He was sure that these were the signs that he was about to arrive at the Great Cyan District.

After resting for a moment, and allowing his stallion to eat, they hurriedly left after their energy recovered.

However, as he arrived in front of the mountain range, a pitter

patter noise blew over.

When Su Yun heard his this sound, his brow immediately wrinkled. He quickly pulled back his spirit stallion and dismounted. Then he took out his engraved dragon blade and carefully circled around to the bottom of the mountain range.

Exposing half of his head, Su Yun carefully stuck out his head from the underbrush and gazed toward the bottom of the mountain range. As he gazed over, he realized he was bearing witness to over one hundred spirit cultivators who were engaging in a life and death battle.

The ground was full of the corpses of men and women. On the weeds beneath their feet, the ground was dyed red with blood. Furthermore, there was still a wide variety of divine skills being used, which caused the area to bursts with radiant light. The battle was very intense.

Su Yun carefully analyzed the people in the intense battle, and found a party that was entirely composed of cultivators that were bare chested. In their hands were tiger blades and their spirit qi was thoroughly mixed, which exhibited an astonishing and powerful aura.

While the other party of spirit cultivators were identified by their clear silver attire. Their spirit qi was also mixed, and their weapons were the same. However, it seemed like they were encircled around a luxurious carriage pulled by a massive spirit beast that was headed straight for the Purple Star Academy. Evidently, this group of cultivators were probably part of a famous and rich household from their attire. Most likely, they were part of the bodyguards for the people inside the carriage.

It was a normal day on the road.

This was simply a bandit robbery on the road. The two sides were clashing relentlessly.

It was not his business.

Su Yun just shook his head and jumped back on his spirit stallion. He intended to just pass right through.

Gah!!!!

Just then, a strange noise suddenly reached his ears.

Su Yun immediately gazed at the source and saw a violet horned beast that was pulling the carriage. A palm sized stone suddenly flew out.

As the stone flew through the air, it began to spin and a whirlwind of red radiance burst forth from the stone. The sound that the stone emitting as it streaked through the air was like the roar of a leopard!

Just as the sound was heard, the stone disintegrated and bright red light flashed. When the light from the flash had faded, a Flame Leopard appeared.

It crashed right into the crowd and instantly just opened its mouth as it blew flames all around causing the entire area to catch on fire.

The spirit cultivators were completely caught off guard by the Flame Leopard spewing flames. Its flames burned through many bodies and caused many to roll on the ground in pain.

The flames were very domineering. Even against the opponents' divine water skills, after a direct confrontation, the divine water skill was immediately cancelled out. It could not douse the raging flames that the leopard emitted. By now, countless people had already been burned alive and were now charred black; it was incomparably saddening.

This is....

Su Yun's eyes widened as he witnessed the scene.

This Flame Leopard! Is it a Soul Stone?

The Flame Leopard was ruthlessly spewing out its flames at the surrounding area. Its spirit qi attribute was Scarlet Star Aura, which increased its fire skills. Its spirit qi was emitting scorching temperatures, which any ordinary water could never extinguish.

As the situation was reversing, which caused disastrous losses for the bandits, the bodyguards began to battle with more power, since their morale was boosted. Their killing ability increased.

“With only a mere low-grade soul stone, you dare display your pathetic skill in front of me? How about you taste my technique!”

At this time, a thundering shout sounded through the area. Soon after, a massive, dark faced person rushed out from the group. He took out his sword and slashed straight towards the Flame Leopard.

Chi la.

They had witnessed the Flame Leopard being split in half by just one slash from a sword.

Puchi!

There was a vomiting sound that came from the carriage.

As Su Yun saw this, his complexion became grave.

Although the burly man's sword was very simple, it was extremely rare. In a simple clash of swords, the sword was not very powerful. However, the blade of this sword was shrouded with a layer of spirit qi, which suppressed the fire of the Flame Leopard. Since the Flame Leopard failed to dodge, it was easily killed by the sword.

The burly man had a cultivation of at least ninth stage of spirit core level.

As for the soul stone, it was probably cast by a beginner.

Soul stones were even used as refining ingredients for some valuable types of equipment and created by injecting spirit force

inside a stone that was specially carved with a seal. After the soul stone was created, the stone could be used to summon a spirit to battle.

The ingredients of a stone coupled with the seal carved upon it and the cultivation level of the soul that was used to inject the spirit force, determined the power of a soul stone.

However, production techniques for soul stones were not widely known. The reason was that most soul stones were passed down generation after generation. An ordinary person would never encounter such a treasure. Those that understand and study the process of creating soul stone were as rare as a phoenix feather and an unicorn horn, in other words, extremely sparse.

Su Yun had not expected to actually meet someone here that may have the capability of creating a soul stone.

“This person is from a Soul Stone Family!”

Su Yun touched his chin as he analyzed the situation.

If he could save this person, perhaps he would even be able to befriend the family. It is possible that he would be able to ask for help in the future!

Only.

If he rushed out to battle, it would be asking for death. It was just impossible. The burly man that was holding the sword, who split the Flame Leopard, would also be able to easily slash him in two pieces as he did the Flame Leopard.

How could he match up against this opponent?

As the clash raged on, it was apparent that the bandits had complete control of the battle.

After analyzing for a bit longer, he came up with an idea.

He could only rely on pulling a trick!

Su Yun quickly took a deep breath and carefully led the spirit

stallion down back the mountain range.

Then he dismounted and activated his spatial ring. He took out the one hundred sharp swords from his reserve and placed them on the ground.

As the slender and sharp swords lay scattered on the ground, beneath the sun, they reflected the sun's light with a powerful glare.

After making up his mind, Su Yun stepped back a few steps. He lightly touched his cracked iron mask before he stepped into the center of the swords. Then, he activated his Spirit Lord Spirit Qi, which caused a thin thread to attach to each of the iron swords.

Kacha kacha kacha....

Immediately, the iron swords began to rise up.

Chapter 71 - A Fraud (Part IV)

Kacha kacha kacha...

As the amount of 'Pure Divine Spirit Qi' being emitted from Su Yun's body grew more and more numerous, the iron sword also started to vibrate with a higher and higher frequency. The sound from the hundreds of iron swords ramming into each other was incomparably ear-piercing. Among the crowd of people that were fiercely fighting, several people have already discovered the peculiarity coming from here.

Using one's qi to govern one's sword, this was the most basic ability of the 'Limitless Sword Arts.' However, to govern a single sword was nothing amazing. The only reason why the 'Limitless Sword Arts' were a powerful technique was because it was capable of governing hundreds of millions of swords to achieve an endless amount of power.

Controlling a single sword and controlling multiple swords was intrinsically different. Those who manipulated multiple swords at once must learn how to separate their Pure Divine qi and evenly distribute them to connect with the flying swords.

Although Su Yun possessed the assistance from the various different materials, and has increased his martial prowess by a lot, he was still very far from mastering the number one sword technique. It was still impossible for him to handle that many swords at the same time. After all, the amount of spirit qi required to govern them was truly too enormous. If he were to forcibly try to do that, then it would only cause his qi channels to rupture, and his martial prowess to decline.

Although this was how it was said to be if the weight of the swords being used were extremely light, like that of the ordinary iron swords, then it would be extremely different. When not using martial abilities, the aura consumption would decrease by a

countless amount. It was completely possible for the qi channels to support it.

These hundred swords were all ordinary swords of substandard quality. Although they appeared to be very sharp from the exterior, they were nevertheless substandard products. It was extremely easy to make these swords fly through the use of Pure Divine qi. There was no need to use a lot of Pure Divine qi at all.

Su Yun was extremely concentrated. He was spreading his Pure Divine qi all around him and then covering the iron swords with them. His mental state was at a brace. He bit down on his teeth tightly. A large amount of sweat were coming out from his face.

Slowly!

Those iron swords finally started to ascend. While trembling, they floated in the air and started to surround Su Yun.

Very good!

Su Yun was overjoyed. At this moment, he did not have the slightest intention to save up on using his Pure Divine qi. Thus, he opened all of his Spirit Essences. The amount of Pure Divine qi flowing through his qi Channels were like surging waves.

In the end, the amount of Pure Divine qi that was released reached a quantity enough to stabilize all of the iron swords.

The iron swords stopped moving. They merely continued to float surrounding Su Yun. Under the shine of the sunlight, each and every sword was flickering. It was an extremely shocking scene.

However, this was merely impressive looking. It possessed no actual substance to it. Su Yun's martial prowess was very low-grade. Among people of the same rank as him, Su Yun's profound spirit qi could be considered as extremely dense. However, in terms of controlling a hundred flying swords, his Spirit Lord Qi was still extremely lacking.

Although these swords could fly, they are incapable of killing. It

was extremely hard for Su Yun to make these swords fly a bit faster.

However, even though this was the case, it was already sufficient!

Su Yun took a deep breath. He once again took out the 'Limitless Sword Arts' and called out the Sword Elder within it. He had the Sword Elder increase the qi of the Limitless Sword Arts to the max. After that, he placed the Limitless Sword Arts on his chest to hide his own qi. Then, with the hundred swords flying around him and an majestic aura, he jumped down toward the hill.

The bandits that were still fiercely battling with one another, upon seeing the grand appearance of Su Yun, were all stunned shock.

A hundred swords flying around him. Who among them have seen such sort of skill?

“What the hell is this??”

“Those swords are... really... really flying in the air? Is it a governing technique?”

“Governing technique? In order to govern that many weapons, how dense must one's Profound Spiritual qi be?”

All the bandits were endlessly frightened. Even those bodyguards were dumbstruck.

“Outrageous bandits, you all actually dared to do such a thing in broad daylight. Quickly get out of here. Otherwise, if I am to get my hands dirty, then you all shall be annihilated completely without even the slightest bit remaining!”

After he said those words, Su Yun waved his hand. The swords floating around him have immediately flew toward the sky. They continued to spin unceasingly. The edge of the swords were creating a trembling noise. The crackling sound was echoing unceasingly. The scene was extremely majestic.

“What sort of technique is this?”

Beside the carriage pulled by the Purple Horned Beast, a youth with a pale complexion, and wearing a purple gown, walked out. Upon seeing this scene, the youth was stunned.

“Young master! It seems that... it seems that this almighty person have come to help us!”

The servant that had already pissed his pants ran over and said to his young master with an endless amount of happiness.

“That’s truly great! Truly great!” That purple gowned young master was overjoyed.

The bandits, although they were scared so bad that their legs were trembling, their leader did not display the slightest bit of fright. He stared at Su Yun and said disdainfully. “He’s a fraud! If he truly was an almighty person, how would he possibly bother to talk superfluous words with us? If you truly have the ability, then come and fight me for three hundred bouts! If you do not have the ability, then scam quickly. Otherwise, your daddy here would not mind bringing back another head to my headquarters to make tea with!”

“Oh? A fraud, you say?”

Su Yun did not get angry. He extended his hand to the sword sheath behind him and took out a sword.

Engraved Dragon Blade!

The slender sword with a large engraving of a dragon was being shined under the light and radiating a golden shine. The large dragon engraved onto the sword’s body seemed to be vivid and realistic. It was as if it was about to escape from the sword.

The bandit boss was slightly startled. The hundred swords that were flying in the sky possessed a world of difference from the Divine Sword that was just taken out by Su Yun.

Before he could think much about anything, a thunder like roar echoed beside his ears.

Roar!

The bandit boss jumped up in fright. At this moment, he saw that his surrounding have instantly turned dark. It seemed that he have been pulled into a sort of space. An enormous dragon was hovering before him. That endless grandeur aura, that oppression from the supreme power, it was like a mountain was crushing down on him.

The bandit boss was unable to refrain himself from shivering anymore.

The various bandit lackies, upon seeing their boss displaying a deeply frightened expression and pale complexion, all became scared witless.

“Scram!”

A cold shout echoed.

The bandits were unable to resist any longer. They all turned around and started fleeing. Their frightened screams, as they fled, were sounding in the air nonstop.

Su Yun’s complexion was pale. He used the Engraved Dragon Blade to control the bandit boss. Merely, that bandit boss’ cultivation level was too high. It was likely that the Engraved Dragon Blade’s mind attack would not be able to hold him down for long.

Seeing that the other bandits have fled, Su Yun did not dare to hesitate anymore. He shouted to the bodyguards that were daydreaming over there. “Get him! Kill him!”

“Quickly, do it!”

The purple gowned young master on the carriage also hurriedly shouted at his guards.

All the bodyguards were immediately woken up. They promptly

leapt over and thrust all sorts of weapons and used all sorts of profound skills at that burly man with a very condensed spiritual qi.

Bang!

At this moment, the void space created by the Engraved Dragon Blade was jolted and shattered by the bandit boss. He had already sensed that this was nothing more than a mind attack that would at most frighten him and not harm him. Immediately, he became furiously angry and struggled himself free from the binding.

“Motherfucker! This bastard is practically a fraud. He has no real skill at all. Brothers, do no fear, follow me and kill this fucker!”

The bandit boss shouted loudly.

However, after his voice landed, there was not a single voice to be heard from his surroundings.

The bandit boss hastily looked to his surroundings. He was shocked to see that there was not a single one of his men in the surrounding anymore. Instead, those bodyguards were swarming toward him to kill him.

What’s going on?

The bandit boss was completely astonished.

However, before he could think much about it, this group of people have already arrived at him. The bandit boss had no other choice but to brandish his blade to face the incoming swarm of bodyguards.

Although his martial prowess was very strong, there are also many experts within the bodyguards. On top of that, this purple gowned young master was extremely wealthy and possessed many peculiar treasures. After being besieged by everyone, the bandit boss eventually met his end regrettably.

A fraud was indeed a fraud. However, ordinary bandits simply

cannot tell whether a person was a fraud at all. On top of that, the mind attack from the Engraved Dragon Blade had caught the bandit boss unprepared. As the bandits saw that their boss was at a loss, how would they possibly not shake in fear? How would they possibly still dare to stay here? Thus, they all escaped without a trace.

“Although this man has died, that group of bandits still survived! We shall promptly leave! It would be bad if that group of bandits were to come back! When we returned to our Mu Family, I will definitely have my father dispatch experts to exterminate these bandits!”

The purple gowned young master held onto his aching heart and said.

“Yes, young master!”

The surrounding bodyguards all shouted.

Su Yun retrieved the iron swords into his spatial storage ring.

Although the scene from earlier appeared to be very amazing, but it could only scare people. However, even though this was the case, he had still exhausted a lot of Pure Divine qi. His condition cannot be considered as being good.

That purple gowned young master jumped down from his carriage. Without bothering to take the support from his servant, he quickly walked over to Su Yun.

When he arrived before Su Yun, he did a respectful and earnest salute with his hands clasped.

“Benefactor, the assistance from you is something that this Mu Feng cannot repay! Benefactor, please receive a bow from this Mu Feng!”

After he said that, that purple gowned young master called Mu Feng bowed deeply.

Su Yun promptly helped Mu Feng up. He displayed an embarrassed smile. “I merely saw injustice on the road and decided to help. Moreover, I did not help much. What I displayed earlier was merely a scare tactic. If we were to truly fight, I am definitely no match against that bandit boss.”

“Benefactor, you are being too modest. If it wasn’t for your timely appearance, if you didn’t scare those bandits away with your might, would the situation truly be able to be turned in our favor?”

Mu Feng said. “Benefactor, please leave behind your name so this Mu Feng could repay you in the future!”

“I am called Limitless Sword God.” Su Yun did not say his true name.

“Limitless Sword God?”

Mu Feng murmured once. Then, seeing that his benefactor wore a cracked iron mask, he nodded and said. “This Mu Feng is from the Mu Clan Manor of Mystical Mountain Range. My father is Mu Tianhao. For benefactor to be wearing a mask, there must be a reason for benefactor to not want to show his true appearance. In that case, Mu Feng will present to benefactor you an item that I carries along with me. In the future, if benefactor were to be in any trouble, you can come to the Mu Clan Manor to find me. Although this Mu Feng is weak, he would definitely give his all to assist you, benefactor!”

After he finished saying that, Mu Feng presented the dragon jade ornament on his waist to Su Yun.

“Mu Clan?”

Su Yun was shocked. Never had he ever expected that this youngster that he saved was actually from the Soul Stone Family, the Mu Clan of the Mystical Mountain Range, the strongest and oldest among the Three Great Districts composing the Great Cyan

District, Entwining Secrets District and Mystical Mountain Range.

Within the Three Great Districts, the Mu Clan was definitely an existence that was not inferior to the Su Family. Not only was the Mu Clan a Soul Stone Family with nearly a thousand years of history, it also possessed a very close relationship with the Mountain River Country outside of the Great Cyan District. The Mu Clan's bloodlines was extremely complicated. In all major sects and schools, there are descendents of the Mu Clan. The Mu Clan could be said to be a family that even the Immortal Sword Sect would not dare to casually provoke.

If this was the case, then this business was a success! In the future, when Su Yun brights Qing'er to leave the Su Family, he might be able to obtain asylum in the Mu Clan.

Although it was not hard to bring Qing Er and leave the Su Family, one's eyesight cannot be too narrow and shallow.

Qing Er, as the prop to connect the Su Family and the Profound Sky Sect through marriage, as the sacrificial victim to the great sect family, her existence was extremely important. Thus, if Qing Er was to leave, then Su Yun would encounter not only the Su Family, he would also encounter the extremely powerful and giant-like existence known as the Profound Sky Sect.

The combined force of the Su Family and the Profound Sky Sect was more than enough to rule over all Three Great Districts. Even the Mu Clan might not dare to contend against them.

Having thought to this point, Su Yu removed his shocked expression and exposed a slight smile. "So you're actually a young master from the Mu Clan. I am truly blind. Pleased to meet you!"

"Benefactor is being too modest! May I ask where benefactor is going to?"

Su Yun hesitated for a moment. He then said. "Purple Star Academy!"

“What coincidence! I am also headed for the Purple Star Academy for the learning exchange. If benefactor doesn’t mind, would you like to go there together with me?”

Said Mu Feng with a smile.

Su Yun took a glance at the carriage pulled by the Purple Horned Beast. He then looked to the bodyguard and the dead Single Horned Bull. He took a breath and said. “There’s no need. I have an urgent matter. If I were to go together with you, I’m afraid that I would be delayed. Thus, I shall be leaving first!”

“Since that is the case, then Mu Feng will also not force benefactor to stay. Benefactor, let’s meet again in the Purple Star Academy!”

“Farewell!”

After he finished saying those words, Su Yun mounted his spirit stallion and proceeded to rush toward the Purple Star Academy.

Mu Feng quietly stood in front of the Purple Horned Beast and looked to the figure in the distant.

“Young master, who is that person? That profound skill that he displayed earlier, it was truly strange!” His servant had walked over and asked carefully.

“I don’t know.” Wu Feng shook his head. “However, wouldn’t it be great if I were to befriend him? Quickly, tidy up and we shall proceed onward!”

“Yes, young master!”

Chapter 72 - This Handsome and Talented Fellow (5/5)

After a few days of trekking through rain and chilling winds, Su Yun finally arrived at the flourishing city south of the Mystical Mountain Range, Elemental Fire City.

The city belonged to Mountain River Country and was enormous. The city occupied a decent portion of the Mystical Mountain Range.

As the Mystical Mountain Range faced the sea to the south this allowed the Elemental Fire City to possess ample transportation methods. Everything was convenient. Furthermore, located in the center of the city was the world-famous Purple Star Academy. This caused Elemental Fire City to be always bustling with excitement and drew massive crowds of people.

As one gazed over the city, they would be able to see massive walls that were over four meters tall surrounding the city. The walls were covered with flickering water crystals that gave out a radiant glow. As light passed through the water crystals, the crystals seemed to have a multi-colored luster.

In the main gate, many people were entering and exiting. The atmosphere was very busy.

A person wearing blademaster cloths such as Su Yun was not suspicious, because of the special circumstances of the city, which resulted in many experts of spirit cultivation to come. Countless cultivators from around the continent lived in this city.

If one understood this aspect, then there must be thieves or people that will try to exploit when they have the opportunity.

Su Yun did not waste his time and directed his spirit stallion into the city.

Inside the city, nobody was allowed to ride a mount. Therefore,

he sent his black spirit stallion to a stable and then quickly strode towards the Academy in the center of the city. On the way, he passed many establishments.

“Spirit Cultivation Inn.”

“Joyful Arrival Grocery Market.”

“Drunken Autumn Restaurant.”

“Dark Horse Casino.”

....

The streets were lined with a great deal of stores. In Elemental Fire City, gambling was not illegal and, therefore, there were casinos along the road. Of course, most of the people entering were not ordinary citizens, but students that were studying here.

With the academy in close proximity, the streets were filled with active scenes of innocent young faces. The youthful atmosphere was brimming in the streets. Countless young men and women walked past Su Yun like a stream of endless flow.

The academy was not like a sect, so the people that they recruited were entirely different from regular sects.

The academy still had formidable masters that oversaw it. There were countless teachers that were willing to give lessons and classes. Everything was necessary for studying cultivation, so much so that there were even specialists that were conducting research in divine skills and techniques.

There were many skills that even large sects did not have.

The Purple Star Academy recruitment conditions were not too harsh. As long as you met their requirement of talent, you would just have to pay a fee and you could attend some classes. The entire term was five years. Regardless of what level of cultivation, you would be allowed to graduate. Even if your cultivation stagnated.

Compared to the conditions of remaining in sects, the academy

had countless other ways that allowed one to stay.

After Su Yun turned and walked in circles a few times, he finally arrived at the front door of the Purple Star Academy. He wanted to just quickly enter, but there were guards in front of the main door. They were currently inspecting the talismans that were hanging on the waists of the students that were entering and exiting from the Academy.

Seeing this scene, it was probably not possible to enter the academy without a talisman.

Su Yun pondered for a moment and turned his body around to go to a store near the academy to borrow a pencil. On a piece of paper, he wrote about the attack that would occur in the future, so that it would allow the dean of the academy to prepare for it as early as possible.

After he finished writing, he looked over the contents a bit. Ultimately, he did not fill in his name.

After finishing this task, Su Yun went back to the streets and looked around. He looked around and a large head fat man appeared within his sight.

Immediately, Su Yun walked over towards the gate.

“Greetings honorary student, please take a moment!” Su Yun shouted.

However, the fat man did not look back. Instead, he just kept walking with his slow moving body.

“This handsome and talented fellow, please wait a moment!” Su Yun said again.

The fat guy’s ears twitched and quickly turned his head. He looked around as his eyes fell on Su Yun who quickly walked towards him and shamelessly asked, “Did you call me?”

“Yes!” Su Yun said as his mouth twitched a bit from his false

expression.

“Fellow cultivator truly possesses marvelous observations! An average person cannot discover my beauty, because they merely see my appearance. Fellow cultivator, you are not ordinary!” The fatty said with a serious expression.

“You are flattering me!”

“May I ask what might fellow cultivator need me for?”

“I have a letter that is bears great importance for the life and death of your academy. It is from a reliable source, but I am unable to enter the academy to deliver this letter to the dean. Even though I strongly desired to enter, the academy only allows students to enter the academy. Although there are countless students in the courtyard, I found you with a glance from the crowd. I can tell that you are an important person, so I ask you, handsome and talented fellow, to help me accomplish this task! I wish for you to accept and bear this heavy responsibility!” Su Yun held out the previously written letter to the fatty with a solemn expression.

As the fatty saw the letter, his face became serious. With a trembling hand, he took the letter and said with a stern expression, “I will definitely fulfill this task.”

....

Anyone could talk big in the city, but as for those that would follow someone’s boasting, those types of people were rare.

The fatty very carefully weaved through the inner courtyard and directly placed the letter on the dean’s desk.

Then....

He was trespassing into the dean’s office, which was a violation of the school’s rules. He would have been punished by the academy if this matter was spread.

Outside of the academy was Su Yun who was still wandering

around to see if the dean received the letter.

After waiting outside of the academy for nearly a full day, within the academy, there was still not the slightest sign of movement. The guards were not increased and everything proceeded as normal.

Su Yun thought, maybe the dean just thought the letter was a joke and did not care about it at all.

Although, for hundreds of years, Elemental Fire City had fair weather and peace. Was there any major turmoil? One didn't even need to mention the Purple Star Academy.

"If I had known before I quickly wrote this letter, I would use the Mu Clan's name. Then maybe, the people of the Purple Star Academy would take action."

Su Yun could not help but sigh.

To be honest, whether it was Elemental Fire City or Purple Star Academy, he did not really care about their existence. He was worried about Qing Er's safety.

He wanted to persuade Qing Er to leave the Su Family, but, since this time she went on behalf of the Su Family, there would be serious repercussions if she just left.

Therefore, this was the only sure way to prevent this possible outcome from happening.

After thinking about it for awhile longer, Su Yun immediately began to scout out students of the Purple Star Academy to obtain more information.

Three days later!

Just as calculated, he was just in time for Mu Feng's arrival.

After Mu Feng arrived, he went straight towards the discussion hall. He had no time to search for Su Yun, besides....Mu Feng came here to accomplish his warnings, but Su Yun was still afraid that

there would be no result.

Still, Su Yun decided to make some preparations. If he decided to take her away, he would have to create a riot. Qing Er would have to quickly flee, then the Su Family would have no one to blame.

After he finished this train of thought, Su Yun immediately headed straight towards Elemental Fire City's marketplace.

He did not have much money on him, so Su Yun could only buy some ingredients and utilizing his Spring Crystal Furnace to refine several materials so that he could make some special cultivation pills that were from Blossom Heart Valley.

Students of the academy had a lot of money and the demand for cultivation medicine was very high. Several cultivation pills could easily be exchanged for two thousand spirit coins.

Wielding his spirit coins, he went to Elemental Fire City's Heaven Star Auction House.

After approximately half an hour, Su Yun came out of the auction house with a bunch of beasts organs and blood.

As a result, he had to select a location that was not too far away from the discussion halls.

Therefore, he could still sneak into the Purple Star Academy.

There were many visitors for Purple Star Academy. Many types of people came here to study. Some of the students that were not from well off families would still be able to rent rooms outside of the academy. Nonetheless, one could pay a little cash to obtain a spirit band that would allow them to temporarily visit the Academy. Of course, the time was limited and the students that were inspecting the students at the gate would make sure with force if the individuals did not leave. Nonetheless, anyone could obtain the bands, as long as they left on time, it was simple. If someone went overtime, there would be a notification, which charged the culprit for trying to steal the property. The academy's

public security system would take care of the situation and would relay all the necessary information to Elemental Fire City, which would also send out patrols.

Because of this, no one would dare hold out the rented spirit bands for extended periods of time.

After spending one hundred spirit coins, Su Yun rented a spirit band. There was a four hour time frame. With his spirit band, he waltzed into the Purple Star Academy.

In the massive academy, one could see a lot of bright dresses, which were worn by beautiful female students.

The air was filled with a mysterious spiritual atmosphere, which Su Yun could not find the origin. Nonetheless, it was not thin, but very rich and deep.

Equipped with a black blademaster's clothe and an iron mask, Su Yun did seem very conspicuous, but he did not attract much attention. After all, there were many mysterious individuals that resided within the academy.

Although many of the areas of Purple Star Academy were accessible, there were still areas that were not always open for the students.

For example, Elite Martial Grounds, which was an elite practice area that many students of the academy were waiting to reopen so they could practice there.

Like the advanced research discussion center, both places were temporarily closed. Not to mention the students, most of the professors were not allowed to enter.

Su Yun went around in circles for awhile before finding a pavilion within the inner garden. After becoming disoriented from academy, he walked up front towards a group of female students that were adorned with pure white academy uniforms to ask for directions.

“May I please inquire of senior sister disciple, in which direction is the Practice Grounds?”

With Su Yun’s tall stature, coupled with vast amount of time cultivating and practicing, eating nutritious foods, he had a very toned body. His skin was the color of wheat and his eyes exhibited a bright and piercing gaze. Although his mask covered half of his face, but it was evident that he was handsome. Equipped with his blademaster clothes, he was very suave looking.

Several of the females’ eyes shined as a blush appeared on their cheeks, making them seem very shy. Two of the courageous female students began to chuckle at once at the situation. Among the group, one female pointed in the right direction without the slightest hesitation.

Su Yun quickly said thank you and quickly went in that direction.

“Hey, who is this man? Is it a new student? How do I not recognize this handsome and talented fellow!”

“Dumb girl, shouldn’t you know not to take a fancy on just anyone?”

“But....but there....”

There were a few minor condemning comments, which were soon followed by light bursts of laughter.

In such a prominent academy, it was indeed emphasized that the strongest, following survival of the fittest, would succeed.

However, all of this was temporary.

A sect’s ruthlessness, was usually adequate for confronting crises. As for the peaceful days of the academy, when a crisis does break out, they would simply be unable to put up any type of resistance.

As he approached the Practice Grounds, there were already a lot of people with an ugly look on their faces. After all, the Practice

Grounds were already sealed off, which prevented any member of the academy from entering.

But Su Yun's objective was not the Practice Grounds.

He walked a few strides around the plaza and verified the location for his preparations—the small forest right beside the Practice Grounds.

But.

Just as he entered the woods, he felt that something was wrong.

The woods were extremely quiet. There was not another person in sight, but Su Yun felt that something was lurking in the shadows and monitoring him.

“Hmm?”

He was lost in thought as he carefully walked through the woods. Nonetheless, he remained vigilant.

So this was it.

Not a moment later.

It was the eve of the beginning of the Martial Arts Exchange. There were representatives that came from every place on the continent. They all congregated into this city. Across the grounds of the woods were arrays that would warn people of danger.

Su Yun was just afraid that the peaceful days would lead to few experts remaining at Purple Star Academy.

No wonder the dean of the academy was indifferent when he saw the contents of the letter. Even if the dean believed the contents of the letter, he already believed that he had done everything he could.

Although this was true, Su Yun was still very concerned.

Even if the array worked, it was clearly not enough.

Su Yun stopped his thoughts and went back to his work. He had

to make some more preparations.

Chapter 73 - Prohibited Drug Master (1/5)

With Devil Dragon Bones as the foundation of the formation array, it released the dark devil energy of the Devil Dragon Beast. The eyeballs of the Three Eyed Beast became the essence of the formation array. The foundation of the formation array served as the lead and the essence of the formation array served as the core. Su Yun used the Black Moon Beast's blood to draw the canvas of the formation array. When drawing the formation array, if it was drawn more carefully, as it would allow the line tracing step later to be a bit easier.

There are a lot of mystical techniques in Su Yun's mind. As for the ones that were the simplest, yet most powerful, they are the large quantity of Devil Arrays that he learned from the Devil Sect. In order to construct a Devil Array, one required materials that contained devil attribute and devil energy. However, in the markets, materials being sold would usually contain only a small amount of devil energy and are classified as low-end devil materials. That was because those that possessed a large and strong amount of devil energy more easily influenced one's mind and were classified as 'Prohibited Materials.' Because of that, the high-end devil materials were incapable of being circulated in the market. Thus, the amount of things one could buy had become limited. Of course, the black market was an exception.

This time around, there wasn't a need for Su Yun to set up a very powerful Devil Array because he only planned to bring people out. Su Yun did not have the intention to settle the coming upheaval. Also, unlike the time when he fought against the Gu Xie Xin School, it was much less difficult.

Thus, he merely need to set up a relatively common Devil Array from the Devil Sect, the 'Blood Dye Array.'

The location where he selected to set up the array was some distance away from the Academy Plaza. Su Yun had also surveyed

the surroundings. He discovered that, other than the occasional students that passed by here, there are no other people that would come by.

When the students saw Su Yun setting up a formation array here, they had merely thought that he was a student from the Formation Array Department practicing over here and did not bother to ask him anything.

After six hours, the sun had gradually set. The sky had become dusky. Only then did Su Yun stand up with sweat all over his head.

The large formation array only lacked the final material in order to activate it. What Su Yun must do right now was to conceal the formation array, then wait for the arrival of that day.

Su Yun obtained a sailcloth and used it to cover up the formation array. He then placed a couple stones on top of it to keep it down.

The basic quality of the students of the Purple Star Academy were all pretty good. When they saw a sailcloth and rocks over a place, they knew that it was an unfinished formation array. In normal circumstances, they would not lift up the sailcloth and mess with the formation array.

With everything in place, Su Yun left the academy and returned the academy plate.

The next step was to wait.

Su Yun took a breath of air. He slowly wandered the city center and walked toward the tavern.

He didn't know if Qing Er and them had arrived yet. After calculating the time, he figured that they should've arrived at Elemental Fire City by now.

As he was pondering in his heart, he suddenly discovered a couple familiar silhouettes before him.

A group of men and women wearing gorgeous clothes were

walking together. They were walking toward Su Yun.

These men and women were talking and laughing, chatting with each other about something. On both sides of the men and women were guards with uniform armor and cyan colored jeweled blades. There were a total of four individuals, and on all four of their waists was a jade colored title plate carved a single word.

Su!

They were from the Su Family!

Truly speaking of the devil.

Su Yun quietly looked to the group of people that were walking toward him.

They were all individuals from the Inner Sect and the Main House. A couple people from the Inner Sect were gathered around a white skinned, thin, and frail looking young master, laughing as they talked. However, this young master did not pay any attention to them at all. He was continuously trying to talk to the snow-white colored blademaster clothed girl who held an embroidered sword.

The girl was exceptionally beautiful. Although she wasn't wearing make-up, she was still naturally beautiful. Her facial features were incomparably exquisite. Especially her pair of bright, beautiful, and sharp eyes. They were extremely spirited, like the stars. They had a sort of ability to cause one to deeply sink into them, and it was hard to free oneself.

The passersby were all casting sidelong glances.

No matter how hard the white skinned and thin young master tried to fawn upon the girl, she continued to ignore him and walked on, minding her own business.

Su Yun stood where he was and did not move.

As they approached, he managed to hear what the white skinned,

thin and frail young master had been saying incessantly.

“Qing Er, it truly is not what you thought it to be. That store is definitely a scam. This is unrelated to me!”

“That’s right. Miss Qing Er, it is definitely because that shopkeeper saw that Miss Qing Er was beautiful like a goddess that he placed drugs in your drink!”

“Fortunately, Miss Qing Er is perceptive and did not drink it; otherwise the consequences would’ve been extremely grave!”

“Young Master Huoyu, we cannot let this matter by just like this. You ought to immediately report this to the city master of the Elemental Fire City and have him investigate this matter to attain justice for Miss Qing Er.”

“That’s right! We must attain justice for Miss Qing Er!”

Those young men and women beside Su Huoyu were all voicing their opinions.

Although he did not hear much, Su Yun already manage to have a general idea of what happened.

Earlier, Su Qing Er was dining with the people from the Su Family in a restaurant. The result was that the perceptive Su Qing Er discovered that her drink had been drugged. She immediately left the place.

The shopkeeper drugged the drink because of fancying Su Qing Er’s charm?

Who would possibly trust such a low level and childish speculation?

In fact, everyone knew who it was that drugged the drink. However, all these Su clansmen were on Su Huoyu’s side, and tried to give excuses for him. Su Huoyu, as the son of the Su Family’s Patriarch, possessed a very high status. If one managed to get in a relationship with him, then it would be a lot easier for them to do

anything in the Su Family.

Su Qing Er knew this very well. However, she did not expose him. She knew that it was no use even if she speaks the truth of the matter.

With her head lowered, Su Qing Er continued to walk. However, a trace of coldness was in her eyes.

She had been enduring the entire time. She had also been on guard the entire time. However, she didn't know how much longer days like these would continue for.

Suddenly.

Su Qing Er's sharp senses felt an astonishing gaze that had been fixed upon her the entire time.

She hastily leaned her head to the side. She saw that in the dark corner of the road was a man wearing a pitch-black blademaster clothes and a cracked iron mask. This man was quietly looking at her.

Who is he? Why does he felt this familiar?

Su Qing Er was confused.

"Qing Er, what's wrong?" Su Huoyu beside her asked in confusion.

"It's nothing, Young Master Huoyu."

Su Qing Er said indifferently with her head lowered.

Su Huoyu was completely confused. He looked toward the location where Su Qing Er looked to earlier. He too saw that iron masked man. Immediately, his complexion sunk. He humped and said. "What sort of bullshit are you? Restrain your fucking eyes. If you dare to look over here again, this Young Master will definitely dig those eyeballs out!"

The iron masked man did not say a word. He merely slowly retreated into the darkness.

“Cheh! That bastard actually left just like this!”

Su Huoyu smiled disdainfully.

The people beside him started to laugh out loud.

“Young Master Huoyu truly possessed an unrivaled grandeur. With a casual shout, you’ve made that man yield and leave shamefully. Amazing! Amazing!”

“It’s merely so-so!”

Su Huoyu was enjoying the flattery. He replied complacently.

This group of people slowly strolled toward the Purple Star Academy. Earlier today, they had already arrived at the banquet prepared by the Purple Star Academy. However, Su Huoyu insisted on going outside to dine. Su Qing Er felt suspicious of his action and thus had an idea of what he was planning.

The Elemental Fire City was bustling with an exceptional amount of noise and activity during the evening. The majority of the students of the Purple Star Academy would come out to stroll the night market after training for an entire day.

Some of them were merely strolling for fun and searching for an attractive member of the opposite sex. As for some of the others, they had come out to purchase the necessary medicines, drugs, pellets and materials for tomorrow.

It was an unending flow of people coming and going.

Su Yun quietly hid himself in the corner as he watched Su Huoyu and them walking toward the direction of the Purple Star Academy. His gaze was ice-cold.

After he lowered his head and pondered for a moment, he took out a pen and wrote a couple words. He then proceeded to walk toward that Su Huoyu.

“Eh? It’s you again?”

Seeing Su Yun walking toward him, Su Huoyu was slightly

startled.

“Quickly scram! Do not block our Young Master’s path!”

The other people shouted at him. Each and every one of them possessed an expression of loathe and disgust.

However, Su Yun did not comply. Instead, he directly walked past Su Huoyu and quickly placed the slip of paper he had wrote on earlier into Su Huoyu’s hand.

“Read it by yourself!”

A hoarse and low voice landed in Su Huoyu’s ears.

Su Huoyu was startled. He turned around to look but discovered that the man earlier had already disappeared.

“What a strange man!”

No one noticed that Su Yun had slipped the slip of paper into Su Huoyu’s hand and even whispered to his ear. Seeing that Su Yun had left suddenly, they were all confused.

“Young Master, what’s wrong?”

“What was that guy trying to do?”

The people beside Su Huoyu asked.

“I don’t know.”

Su Huoyu had an expression of doubt. He cast a glance to the slip of paper in his hand. He managed to faintly see several words. Immediately after, he hastily pinched the slip of paper tightly.

Su Qing Er took a glance at Su Huoyu out of confusion. She did not say anything, but continued to walk toward the Purple Star Academy.

After walking some time, everyone started to chat and laugh again. No one noticed that Su Huoyu was secretly opening the lump of paper in his hand. He carefully looked to the words written on it.

Seeing the words, Su Huoyu was startled. After he rolled his eyes, he stopped moving.

Everyone was startled. They all looked to him.

“That... Everyone, you all can return to the academy first. I suddenly recalled that I still have an old friend in this Elemental Fire City that I have forgotten to visit. You all can return first, I’ll be returning a bit later!”

“Friend?” Su Qing Er slightly frowned. “Why is it that we haven’t heard Young Master Huoyu mention this before?”

“I’d forgotten!”

Said Su Huoyu with a loud laughter.

Su Qing Er lowered her head and pondered for a moment. A bit of alertness flashed through her eyes. She no longer asked. She merely nodded and then continued to walk toward the Purple Star Academy.

“Liuhe, Xiaofeng, you two can follow me!”

“Oh, yes Young Master!”

Thus, this little group of people were separated into two groups. One group proceeded toward the Purple Star Academy, whereas the other group proceeded toward the outskirts of the Elemental Fire City.

Night descended. There was no light outside of the city. It was a pitch-black darkness and appeared to be very eccentric and weird.

The amount of people leaving the city at night was very few. The two people, Su Liuhe and Su Xiaofeng, who followed Su Huoyu, started to feel a bit cower.

“Young master, how come your friend is living outside the city?”

Su Xiaofeng who dressed elegantly and without much clothes was shivering while holding his body.

“You piece of rubbish; your spiritual cultivation is so low. You can’t even withstand the most basic wind chill?”

Su Huoyu scolded.

“Boss, you don’t know about it. It was reported that there would be ‘Heart Chilling Wind’ tonight. They’re wind blowing over from the Heart Chilling Mountain Range. It was simply impossible for one to withstand them with merely Profound Spirit Qi!”

Su Xiaofeng complained.

Su Huoyu shook his head. He did not understand it at all.

However, he also felt a bit cold.

“This should be the place.”

Su Huoyu stopped before a small piece of vacant land before the Elemental Fire City.

Su Xiaofeng and Su Liuhe were both confused.

“Young Master, why did we come here?”

“Please don’t tell us that your friend is here?”

“Hahahaha, what sort of damned friend are you talking about?! Your daddy has no friend here!”

Su Huoyu started laughing out loud.

“Ah?”

“Look at this!”

Su Huoyu took out the slip of paper that he had previously crushed into a lump. He opened the paper.

Su Xiaofeng and Su Liuhe opened their eyes wide and, with the help of the dim light, managed to clearly see the words written on the paper.

“Prohibited Drug Master... if you require Prohibited Drugs, then please wait for me at a location a mile away to the southern gate of

the Elemental Fire City. Being late is unacceptable.”

“Pro...Prohibited Drug Master?”

The two of them were completely startled.

“Could it be...”

“That’s certainly it! We are in luck! Who would’ve expected that we actually managed to encounter a Prohibited Drug Master that covertly sells Prohibited Drugs.”

Su Huoyu’s eyes were a bit hazy. “That damned bitch Su Qing Er possesses a high level of martial prowess. She is capable of sniffing out ordinary aphrodisiac right away. Only Prohibited Drugs would be able to enter her mouth without her knowing! Heh, that bitch is fond of acting noble and virtuous? Later on, after your daddy here purchased the Prohibited Drugs, I’ll have her drink it down tonight; then, I can play her however I like to tonight! Let’s see how that bitch will act noble and virtuous again!”

“Hehe, so this was what Young Master had in his mind!”

“Boss is truly brilliant!”

His two lackies were laughing. They were both looking forward to Su Huoyu obtaining Su Qing Er, and perhaps being able to obtain his leftovers.

Tacha.

At this moment, a light footstep sound was heard. Then, a figure walked out from the shadows to the side.

Su Huoyu looked over. Immediately, his eyes shined. “Hey! He’s here!”

Chapter 74 - My Supply of Goods Is Extremely Abundant, I Have Everything That You Need (2/5)

The person who arrived had a slender, pitch-black sword sheath on his back and wore a completely black clothes. He wore a cracked iron mask on his face and had black hair that ran down to his shoulder. His exposed chin was sharp, like a blade, and his eyes were bright and full of expression. This man was emitting an extremely handsome appearance.

“What a young Prohibited Drug Master!”

“Didn’t they say that all the Prohibited Drug Masters are wretched old men?”

Said Su Xiaofeng in a low voice.

“Who the fuck cares. The Prohibited Drug Masters are people that could only be come across by happenchance and not sought after. Generally, even if we want to purchase prohibited drugs, we won’t be able to find a Prohibited Drug Master to purchase from. We most definitely cannot let this opportunity slip by. You two, did you bring enough money? Later, we’re going to purchase as much as we can afford!”

Said Su Huoyu after he spit a mouthful of saliva on the ground.

“Boss, we got this!”

“Hehe, I truly want to see the appearance of that bitch Su Qing Er would be after we used all of the prohibited drugs on her!”

“We’ll definitely see it. Later on, your boss here would be taking the first token. If I have leftovers, I’ll reward them to you two!”

Upon hearing this, the two of them were overjoyed. They immediately said. “Thank you boss, thank you boss!”

Su Huoyu nodded. He then walked toward that man. When he arrived before the man, he immediately got into the main subject. He opened his mouth and shouted. “Hey, you’re a Prohibited Drug Master, right? What kind of drugs do you have?”

“All Nourishing Decoction, Golden Forever Erect Pellet, Night With Ten Women Decoction, Dragon’s Vitality Tiger’s Fierceness Ointment, Moist Beautiful Women Powder... my supply of goods is extremely adequate. I have everything that you need, as long as you have enough of the things that I wanted on you!”

Said the man with the cracked mask in a low voice.

Upon hearing that, Su Huoyu’s eyes started to shine. His overjoyed expression was completely visible on his face. He said, repeatedly. “Good! Good!! I’m taking all of those! I’m taking them all! Money is no issue! I’m taking them all!!”

“Deal!”

The cracked masked man nodded. “Money first, goods afterwards!”

“Xiaofeng, money!”

Su Huoyu shouted straightforwardly.

“Got it!”

Su Xiaofeng laughed with a hehe sound and ran over to hand the money.

The iron masked man frowned in his heart. However, he did not say a word.

A Spirit Check with a value of seventy thousand Spirit Coins was handed over.

Without batting an eyelid, the iron masked man received the Spirit Check.

“Great master, what about the goods?”

Su Huoyu have grew a bit impatient.

“Getting it now!”

As the iron masked man said that in a low voice, his hand slowly moved into his storage ring.

Su Huoyu and the other two were anxiously watching Su Yun’s hand. All them of them were extremely impatient and filled with thirst.

Suddenly, Su Huoyu seemed to have noticed something. He raised his head and asked Su Yun in confusion. “Now that I think about it, how did you notice that I needed these drugs?”

After he said those words, Su Xiaofeng and Su Liuhe were both startled. Alerted, their gazes became fixed upon Su Yun.

However, at the next moment, the hand that was inside the storage ring suddenly moved. It moved toward the sword sheath behind him. A dazzling sword with an enormous was taken out. With a speed as fast as lightning, it was slashed toward Su Xiaofeng and Su Liuhe’s heads.

Puchi.

The two of them were unable to guard in time. Their profound spirit qi was unable to react in time to even be used. In an instant, their throats were slashed. The two of them directly fell to the ground and died.

Blood dyed the ground red.

Su Huoyu was stunned.

“Great master, you...”

Yet, at this moment, that great master wearing a cracked iron mask started to rush toward Su Huoyu with his bloodied sword.

His murderous aura burst out in an instant. Like a dam being opened, that murderous aura started to pour down in torrents!

“Ah?”

Su Huoyu was scared witless. In a panic, he started to move backwards, then started to frantically run.

Woosh!

At this moment, a sharp sword flew over. It directly slashed past Su Huoyu's shoulder and knocked him over to the ground.

In immense pain, Su Huoyu fell to the ground. He promptly got back on his feet. However, the pain from his shoulder was so extreme that he started to gnash down on his teeth.

“Who exactly are you?”

Su Huoyu endured the sharp pain and shouted in a loud voice.

“A robber!”

Said the iron masked man indifferently.

“Rob-robber? Are you telling me... that you've done all this to rob my money?”

“What else did you think it was for?”

Said the iron masked man. He was about to rush over to kill Su Huoyu again.

Had it not been a robbery, Su Huoyu would definitely let his imagination run wild.

Seeing this, Su Huoyu's face once again grew extremely alarmed and frightened. However, at this moment, being scared does would not help him at all. At this moment, risking his life on the final bit of hope, he took out the Life Saving Treasure that his father had given him from the storage ring in his hand and threw it toward Su Yun.

A pearl the size of an eyeball was thrown over by Su Huoyu toward the iron masked man.

The pearl was pitch-black in color. However, as it flew toward Su

Yun, it was flickering with a strange green light. Flickering in the night, it appeared to be an eyeball of a demon beast.

The iron masked man was startled. He immediately dodged the incoming pearl.

The pearl landed on the ground...

Bangbangbangbangbangbangbangbang!!

Succession explosion sound was heard. The explosions have completely engulfed the iron masked man.

The aura of destruction filled through the air. The rocks in the surroundings were all crushed to powder. The weeds were completely dried up.

Seeing this, Su Huoyu displayed an overjoyed expression. He immediately started to run toward the center of the explosions.

However, he saw that a figure had rushed out from the center of the explosion and was dashing toward him.

Although he had escaped the explosion, it was evident that this man had also experienced injuries. His movement was already not as smooth and fluent as before.

Seeing that the treasures were capable of saving his life, how could Su Huoyu possibly have any more hesitation? He immediately put his hand back into the storage ring.

A scroll appeared.

However, this scroll was not an offensive weapon. Instead, it was a scroll that would allow a person to quickly recover their profound spirit qi in a short period of time.

He clenched his teeth and pinched apart the scroll. He then turned around and started fleeing.

He pulled out a slender weapon similar to a katana and, channeling the spiritual qi through his body, he turned around and started fighting the incoming iron masked man while still quickly

running away.

However, because he was in too much of a panic, his attack ended up always in a twist or at a weird angle. None of those attacks were capable of doing much damage.

The iron masked man was not lacking either. He once again threw his sword. Like a flash, that sword flew toward Su Huoyu.

Su Huoyu's eyes were filled with fear. He hastily dodged the incoming sword. However, his dodge was a bit too late.

Puchi.

Su Huoyu's leg received the sword. Blood sprayed from his leg. Staggering, he fell to the ground. He was no longer able to run to escape anymore.

Seeing this, the iron masked man quickly rushed over. He held up the Engraved Dragon Sword in his hand and directly pierced it toward Su Huoyu's heart.

His movement was rapid. It was extremely fierce and decisive. There was not the slightest amount of wavering within his movements. There was no intention of torment behind his strike. It was so much that he did not even say a single word.

He only had a single purpose!

Killing his opponent!

Woosh!

Right at the instant, while the spear like streak of the sword was thrust toward Su Huoyu, a white light was suddenly emitted from Su Huoyu's entire body. After that, he instantly disappeared.

“Void Fragmentary Teleportation Technique?”

The iron masked man was startled.

This was an extremely high level life saving profound technique!

It was simply impossible for Su Huoyu to know this profound

technique. Furthermore, for him to use this technique so quickly, it was most likely that he had used a scroll that contained the Void Fragmentary Teleportation Technique!

How could ordinary people possibly possess such a treasure?

As expected of the Su Family patriarch's son. Not only does he possess a lot of treasures, each and every one of those treasures were exceptional.

The iron masked man stared at the Su Huoyu, who had already been sent out a distance of a hundred meters away by the Void Fragmentary Teleportation Technique. He humphed in his heart and then once again brandish the sharp sword in his hand. Emitting an astonishing aura, he once again charged toward Su Huoyu.

The sharp sword flew through the air. Being covered with the sharp aura, it was ferocious like a dragon crossing through the ocean. The sand and stones on the ground were all blown away by the aura contained within the sword. It was like a soaring horizontal flaming arrow...

Su Huoyu's leg was injured, and he was no longer able to run anymore. Seeing the incoming sword, he was already so deeply scared that he had turned completely pale and his trousers steaming and moist.

He does not have any other method to resist anymore!

Right at this moment!

“Stop!”

A roaring noise burst forth from the Elemental Fire City.

Then, an extremely frightening and suffocating oppressing aura violently storm over to this location. It smashed into that rapidly flying sword.

Clank!!!!

The flying sword emitted an extremely crisp sound. Its aura was washed away. The sword rotated a couple times in the air and then landed on the ground with a wobble.

Seeing this, the iron masked man's expression had grown cold. He immediately looked over.

He saw that a large amount of guards had rushed out from the entrance of the Elemental Fire City. A bearded, middle aged man wearing a magnificent jade colored and embroidered gown was currently flying toward here.

An expert!

The iron masked man's heart tightened. He immediately started up his Pure Divine Spirit Qi and regained his Engraved Dragon Sword that had fallen to the ground. He then rapidly withdrew and started running toward the rear.

"Zhu Ran! Lead the squadron to chase after him!"

The bearded man shouted loudly.

"Yes! City Lord!"

The guard's captain Zhu Ran answered. He then started to chase after the iron masked man.

As for the bearded city lord, Zhou Zibu, he started to quickly walk toward Su Huoyu. Seeing Su Huoyu, who was still trembling on the ground with wet trousers, the city lord's brows were condensed together into a line.

"Stabilize his condition first!"

Zhou Zibu shouted.

"Yes!"

A guard rushed over to treat Su Huoyu's wounds.

Corrals of dense and cold water attribute profound spirit qi started to drift above the wounds. The wounds immediately

stopped bleeding. Su Huoyu's distorted face finally started to ease up.

"Thank you, Your Lordship City Governor, for saving me!" Su Huoyu took in a breath of air and then said weakly.

Zhou Zibu nodded. He glanced at the title plate on Su Huoyu's waist and then said. "Are you from the Su Family of the Entwining Secrets District?"

"My father is the Su Family's patriarch, Su Lixiong!" Su Huoyu immediately said.

Hearing this, Zhou Zibu started to frown. "Never had I expected that it is the young master of the Su Family!"

"Your Lordship, please capture that man who have injured me. I will definitely hack him into pieces!" Holding his crotch, Su Huoyu said while gnashing his teeth.

"I, the City Lord, was night patrolling the Elemental Fire City and just so happened to face the south gate and heard numerous explosions coming from the south gate. I then arrived over to the gates and the guards beside me told me that you're from the Su Family. I then immediately proceeded to lend a hand and saved your life. Merely, I do not know what sort of relationship you have with that man. Why does he want to kill you? And why are the two of you gathered outside of the city at night?"

"This... about this..." Su Huoyu was immediately unable to respond.

How could he possibly tell him that he had come to purchase prohibited drugs from that man?

The reason why prohibited drugs were known as prohibited drugs was because they were expressly stipulated by the continent to be forbidden and prohibited. If one was to be in contact with this sort of things, he or she would likely be punished. Each location possessed their own specific rules for punishments. Even

the Su Family was of no exception.

Furthermore, purchasing prohibited drugs was also an extremely face-losing matter.

“This... I...I was merely strolling outside the city with my two companions. I then ran across that man. The result... the result was that the man suddenly attacked us in surprise. He planned to kill us to steal our belongings... Mn, that’s exactly what happened!”

Su Huoyu’s gaze was drifting all over the place.

Zhou Zibu stared at Su Huoyu. For a long time, he did not say anything.

Su Huoyu’s face started sweating. However, he didn’t dare to look at Zhou Zibu.

After some time, the guards discovered the dead Su Xiaofeng and Su Liuhe’s corpses.

Zhou Zibu waved his hand and told his men to take care of this matter and see Su Huoyu back into the city for treatment of his injuries.

After he declared to strengthen the guards within the city, he returned to the Elemental Fire City.

“Ah, Your Lordship, are...are you not going to order the arrest of that masked scoundrel?”

Seeing how nimble Zhou Zibu was walking, Su Huoyu was unwilling to give up. He opened his mouth and asked.

“There is a need for investigation for this matter. I will dispatch my men to take care of it. Young Master Su, you should set your mind at ease and heal your injuries first. Wasn’t the Purple Star Academy’s academic exchange gathering going to start tomorrow? As the crooks are mixed with the honest folks in the Elemental Fire City, for the past few days, many murders and brawls have

occurred! If we were to order for an arrest for every single one of them, how could the power of the city guards within the Elemental Fire City be enough?”

After he finished saying that, Zhou Zibu proceeded to walk away and did not bother with Su Huoyu anymore.

Hearing what he had said, Su Huoyu felt extremely angry in his heart. However, he didn't dare to say anything. He only began to wish that Zhu Ran who had gone to capture the iron masked man would be able to smoothly capture him so that he could pay that iron masked man back for his resentments!

Chapter 75 - The Damned Sword (3/5)

The guards of the Elemental Fire City merely chased for a short period of time for appearance's sake before stopping their chase.

The iron masked man, that is, Su Yun, immediately changed his clothes and appearance after he cast off his chasers, then returned back to the Elemental Fire City.

It must be said that his actions this time around were too sudden. He had neglected a lot of details.

If he were to kill Su Huoyu under the guise of robbery, not only would he be able to lessen a threat for Su Qing Er and allow her to not be tangled by Su Huoyu anymore, it would also allow her to not be in the this gathering for the academic exchange.

If Su Huoyu died, the Su Family would definitely have to investigate this matter. In that case, how would they possibly have the mood to participate in some academic exchange?

Although Su Qing Er would receive punishment because of this, but the main responsibility for Su Huoyu does not lie in her hands. Thus, the death of Su Huoyu would be able to easily allow her to escape from all that was about to occur.

Toward this final close relation of his, Su Yun was willing to give his all to protect her.

Unfortunately.

He had neglected a single point: Su Huoyu is the son of the Su Family's patriarch. Although he was only the third son, he still obtained countless treasures from his father. Furthermore, the other members of the Su Family, in order to obtain favor from the patriarch, have also given Su Huoyu treasures from time to time.

How could the treasures bestowed by the patriarch possibly be inferior in quality? Although Su Yun had caught him unprepared, in the time of a life and death crisis, Su Huoyu managed to use

those treasures to save his life!

Using the seventy thousand Spiritual Coins that he had scammed from Su Huoyu, Su Yun went to the Heavenly Sun Auction House and purchased a lot of first-rate drugs and medicines. He then returned back to the tavern and took medicines to heal his injuries.

Su Huoyu's treasures were truly too astonishing. Even though he had dodged in time, he was still damaged and received some qi injuries. Luckily, they were nothing significant and likely wouldn't hinder his future learning of martial arts.

Although he didn't manage to kill Su Huoyu, Su Yun didn't feel that it was unfortunate. After all, he will still have more chances to kill him.

After spending an entire night on recovering and harmonizing his qi, Su Yun had finally recovered.

As there wasn't much time, there wasn't much of a point using this time to cultivate.

After pondering for a long time, Su Yun took out the sword sheath.

Having obtained Hu Qianmei's talent and absorbed a large amount of 'Three Elemental Vital Energy,' his martial prowess had increased greatly. With his current strength, he should be able to handle a second sword now.

As Su Yun was pondering, he activated the sword arts.

The slender and thin black sword sheath did not appear dazzling at all. However, during the moment of its activation, the entire sword sheath started to emit various black lights. The dense Void Fragmentary Aura drifted through the entire guest room.

With the sword sheath at the limit, a door appeared above it. After entering this door, one would be able to enter the world within the Limitless Sword Sheath.

When the sword sheath was activated, the Sword Elder was immediately woken up. “Brat, you’ve prepared to obtain another sword?”

“Senior, with my current martial prowess of level four Spirit Intermediate Disciple, I believe it shouldn’t be too hard to obtain the second sword, right?”

“Right, although it isn’t hard...” The Sword Elder pondered for a moment before saying. “Mn, you can go. I’ll go with you so that you don’t do anything reckless. While this Limitless Sword Sheath is the grave of swords, it is also the grave of men. If you were to get killed by the swords in here, there wouldn’t be anything strange about it at all!”

“In that case, I shall bother Senior to guide me!!” Su Yun nodded.

After he finished saying those words, he stepped through the gate.

Chrip!

His surroundings started to twist. The light started to change. A line of sight appeared. It was like a light being lit within the darkness.

After his line of sight returned to normal, the Greater Dao of the Divine Swords once again appeared before Su Yun’s eyes. In the distance, the palace that buried the Origin Sword was faintly discernible, like an underground palace of ghouls.

Su Yun was still standing where he was before, the location where he obtained the Engraved Dragon Sword. No change had occurred in this place.

“Only after removing that Origin Sword within the palace would you be capable of going to other places to obtain swords.”

The Sword Elder spoke. His voice was dull. “Brat, you can go and get another one. Last time I have already told you that this one here is much weaker than the Engraved Dragon Sword that you

held in your hand. With your current strength, subduing it should be extremely easy... Of course, you can also chose to obtain other swords that are even more powerful. Everything is depending on your own decision!”

Right after the Sword Elder’s said his words, Su Yun suddenly extended his hand and proceeded to grab the cyan colored sword that was thrust into the ground beside him.

Only.

Although his hand grabbed the sword’s hilt, he did not manage to pull it up.

Su Yun frowned. He immediately exerted all of his strength.

The sword started to slightly tremble. The sword blade in the jade ground also started to slightly move upward.

“This sword’s test seemed to be relatively easy. All you need to use is some strength, as well as perseverance.”

The Sword Elder said.

Hearing this, Su Yun increased his qi, causing his strength to increase. The cyan colored sword was soon to be pulled out. Only the tip of the sword remained in the jade ground.

Kachang!

Right when the tip of the sword left the jade ground and was completely pulled out, a cold ray of light swept past the sword blade. The sword energy started the sweep through the air. A murderous aura suddenly started to surge.

Su Yun’s heart tightened. He was unable to react. All he felt was that the sword hilt in his hand was violently vibrating. After that, the cyan sword broke away from Su Yun’s hand and flew into the air. It circled through the air and then, with the edge of the blade pointing toward Su Yun, it ruthlessly came slashing toward him.

“What?”

Su Yun was startled. He moved his hand toward the sword sheath and took out the Engraved Dragon Sword. Using that, he blocked the incoming cyan sword.

Clang!

After the first sword clash, Su Yun's body was violently trembling.

Although that sword appeared to be extremely lightweight, it contained within it the power of ten thousand catties. Its power burst forth like a flood. The Engraved Dragon Sword was giving off a sensation that felt like it was about to be hacked in half by it.

“There's two more sword strikes!”

At this moment, the voice of the Sword Elder sounded in Su Yun's mind.

“Two sword strikes?” Su Yun was slightly startled. “Senior, perhaps you know about this sword?”

Woosh!

The cyan sword made a circle and hacked down toward Su Yun once more.

Su Yun's eyes were opened wide. He didn't dare to neglect in the slightest. He held up his sword to once again resist the incoming sword.

Clang!!!!

As the sword slashed down, Su Yun's knees felt weak. He almost kneeled down to the ground. His entire body's bones felt as if he they were about to be split apart by the strength of the rumbling strength of the cyan sword. He clenched his teeth and, with two frantically trembling arms, held up the Engraved Dragon Sword to resist the bombardment of the cyan sword. Sweat started flowing down his cheeks. It appeared that he was going to be unable to resist it anymore, at any moment.

“Not bad, not bad!” The Sword Elder said in laughter. “Only the final sword strike remains.”

Whoosh!

Once again, the sword came cutting down!

Su Yun’s eyes were wide open as he stared at that descending sword. He finally roared lowly. He burst forth his energy and slashed his Engraved Dragon Sword toward the incoming cyan sword.

However, unexpectedly...

Although the Engraved Dragon Sword was slashed horizontally, it did not come into contact with anything!

Su Yun was startled. He carefully looked up. What he saw was that the cyan sword did not slash its third sword strike toward Su Yun. Instead, it started to wobble in the air before falling down and landing directly in front of him.

“Senior... this...what is going on?” Su Yun was dumbstruck. “Didn’t you said there’s three sword strikes?”

“That’s right!” The Sword Elder laughed. “However, you managed to smoothly pass the third sword strike!”

“How?”

“If you didn’t give your all to take the third sword strike but instead tried to deal with it by dodging or using other methods, then you would definitely be defeated by the third sword strike! The first two sword strikes tested your body. As for the third strike, it tested your will. The reason why I said that this sword is relatively easy to subdue was because I believed that these tests were not difficult at all for you.”

“If the third sword strike were to directly slash down, then I reckon I would not be able to resist it anymore!!”

With sweat all over, Su Yun sat onto the ground and started to

gasp for air.

“Hahaha, brat, perhaps you don’t know this but the profoundness of this sword lies precisely in its power!! The person who crafted this sword had crafted it through three sections. The first section is roughly the sword hilt. The second section is the two inch piece behind the sword blade. As for the third section, it is all the remaining portions of the sword. This sword possesses a Sword Core that is capable of producing Profound Spirit Qi by itself. This Profound Spirit Qi would naturally fill the three sections of the swords. When you emit a sword strike with this sword, you will consume the amount of Profound Spirit Qi within a section. For this sword, you are at the very most capable of using it three times. After bursting forth the Profound Spirit Qi within it three times, it would become no different than ordinary iron swords!”

Never had Su Yun ever heard of such strange sword before. Confused, he said. “Three-sectioned sword? Profound Spirit Qi? Senior! The Profound Spirit Qi stored within this sword... what’s so mystical about it?”

Hearing this, the Sword Elder raised his voice and said. “Could you perhaps not have sensed it yourself earlier?”

“Are you saying... it’s the power of this sword?”

“That’s right! The Profound Spirit Qi emitted by this sword’s Sword Core possessed the attribute of ‘True Dipper Qi’ and is extremely powerful. Those three sword strikes of its is capable of destroying metals and breaking apart stones effortlessly!”

Hearing this, Su Yun felt happy in his heart. He hurriedly pulled out the cyan sword before him. When doing that, he saw that there were two words carved to the hilt of the cyan sword, ‘Thousand Deep.’

“Thousand Deep Sword? Good name! Based on its qi, I reckon that it’s at the very least a High Level Cyan Quality treasure!”

Su Yun started to fondly admire this sword. Although it appeared to be extremely light and easy to use, it was abnormally heavy. It could only dispatch forth three sword strikes in battle but, if one were to use it well, wouldn't it meant that it would be able to give forth to an unimagined effect?

“Brat, you’ve obtained the Thousand Deep, are you planning to continue to obtain more swords? Thousand Deep has only consumed a little bit of your physical strength, no? There shouldn’t be a problem for you to obtain another, simpler sword!”

At this moment, the Sword Elder asked.

“If I can obtain more Divine Swords to assist myself, then that’ll be the best!”

Su Yun’s eyes started to sway. He started to sweep his eyes all over.

Suddenly, a unique shaped sword appeared in his line of sight.

This sword was located within a meter of him. The sword was located at the right side of the sword path, in between two other swords.

This sword was entirely black and incomparably slender. Its width was approximately two inches and its length was about two feet. From a glance, it appeared extremely mediocre.

The reason why this sword captured Su Yun’s gaze was because this sword contained a sword sheath!

The Sword Elder seemed to have noticed Su Yun’s gaze. He emit forth a bit of spirit energy to sense. Confused, he said. “Eh? This sword unexpectedly doesn’t emit a lot of sword aura. It seems... like it is a very weak sword. So strange, I’ve never seen this sword before...”

“It’s very weak?” Su Yun nodded and said. “In that case, let’s go and get it!”

“En, try it out!”

Su Yun did not hesitate. He immediately extended his hand, grabbed that sword, and pulled!

Kenchang!

The cry of the sword echoed. The black sword with its sheath was directly pulled out by Su Yun.

There was not the slightest amount of obstruction!!

“This easy?”

Both Su Yun and the Sword Elder were startled.

However, with the precedent of the Engraved Dragon Sword, the two of them knew that it would not be this easy. Although it might be easy to pull out the sword, it does not mean that the sword's test would be easy.

Su Yun did not dare to relax in the slightest. He stared at that black sword in his hand and held it firmly in fear of it flying out of his hand and slashing toward him.

However!

After waiting for an entire incense worth of time, there was no movement in the sword at all!

The sword did not emit any spiritual attack. It also did not fly out of his hand toward the sky to come back to attack him.

Just like that, the sword remained in Su Yun's hand without doing anything.

“What...what's going on? Could it be that this sword doesn't require any subduing?” Su Yun asked in astonishment.

“I'm not sure.”

The Sword Elder was also confused.

“Was there such a sword that could be obtained so easily, and without subduing, in the sword sheath?”

“I am truly ashamed now that we mentioned it. I did not manage to subdue many swords from the sword sheath. Many of them were only swords that I have heard about!”

The Sword Elder sighed and said.

“Perhaps there really is such a sword!”

Su Yun took a breath and felt extremely good. In an instant, he obtained two more swords. This was also a form of increase in his strength.

In this world, one's treasures were equal to strength.

After placing away the Thousand Deep Sword, Su Yun's gaze was cast toward that black sword. However, he did not see a name carved into the black sword.

Could it be on the sword blade, and the sheath had covered it?

Su Yun suspected that might be the case. He immediately grabbed the sheath and pulled the sword out.

Kenchang!

The pitch black sword blade was unsheathed.

Right at the time when the sword blade was unsheathed, an enormous blood red word entered into Su Yun's field of view.

“Die!”

Buzz buzz buzz buzz buzz...

In the blink of an eye, half of the swords on the sword path suddenly started to violently tremble. Sword cries echoed through the skies.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh...

They soared into the skies by themselves and started to circle the sky. After flying halfway into the sky, they converged together into a powerful current. The sword aura filled the air and covered the skies.

After they gathered, all the Divine Swords started rushing toward Su Yun.

It was like a legendary dragon charging wildly...

Chapter 76 - A Sword's Hidden Intent (4/5)

One hundred flying swords rushing directly to attack one point was a terrifying scene to behold.

Su Yun's face paled as he hastily retreated in the face of the countless sword aiming to kill him. How could he even defend himself?

“Quickly! Quickly put back the sword!”

Just then, the sword elder's voice shouted loudly beside his ears.

Su Yun's entire body trembled. He hastily took his black sword and tried to insert it back into the sheath, but it was very difficult to resheath the black sword. It seemed as if there was some form of resistance within the sheath that was rejecting the sword's blade. It did not allow him to resheath the sword.

Is it possible that if he did not resheath it, the hundred flying swords would never be pacified?

After thinking quickly, why would Su Yun dare to hesitate any more? Using all his power, he jabbed the sword into the sheath.

“Ah!!!!”

He let out a beast-like roar as veins burst forth around his body. His Pure Divine Spirit Qi was vibrating at high speeds like a galloping horse. He could not stop, as his aura surged to the surroundings. He utilized his strength to the outermost limit, only to see the black sword entering the sheath not fast nor slow.

The hundred flying swords that were coming to kill Su Yun were getting closer and closer. The ever-changing sword qi they were emitting was becoming more and more fierce.

Su Yun did not dare look over. He was too busy to look. He widened his eyes and carefully gazed at his current weapon, the “Death Sword.”

He was carefully looking to see that the sword was gradually sliding back into the sheath.

“Come on! Go quicker! Quickly!!”

The sword elder was very nervous as he constantly urged Su Yun in his ears. There was urgency throughout his voice.

Both of Su Yun’s hands were trembling. One hand was holding the sheath, one hand was holding the sword. Sweat poured down his body like rain drops.

“Be careful!”

At this time, the sword elder gave a loud warning.

The hundred swords were closing in.

Natural chills from sword qi resembled needles that were piercing his skin!

After one more breath of effort, Su Yun would be completely eradicated from the hundred swords.

But....

Keng Qiang!

The black sword sheathed.

Su Yun was instantly relieved and softly plopped down on the ground as he was gasping for air.

After looking once more, he was surprised to find that, about two inches from his face, were the one hundred flying swords. However, at the moment, they were all frozen in space and remained motionless as they floated in the air.

Upon seeing this, Su Yun shuddered a moment as he broke out in a cold sweat.

If he was just another step slower, then everything would have been lost.

“Did you succeed?”

Su Yun weakly lifted up the black sword as a smile rose in his face.

“Although I do not know what exactly is this weapon, but after analyzing that test, it is certainly an extraordinary one!”

“This might be the Primal Sword!”(首剑)

Then the sword elder pondered for a moment. Afterwards, he was not really sure about the words he said.

“The Primal Sword?”

What type of sword was that?

Ding dang ding dang....

Just then, the hundred flying swords emitted a burst of loud piercing sounds. Then, they aligned themselves, circled around, and flew back towards their original position.

The hundred swords returned back.

It was really a monstrous and multicolored world of swords.

Su Yun’s heart shook with emotion.

He used all his power to stand up. As he gazed down at the black weapon in his hands, his heart could not hide its suspicion.

Is it possible that this sword....could only control a hundred swords? Does its power only amount to this much?

Keng Qiang.

Just as Su Yun was finishing his train of thought, the Death Sword was suddenly unsheathed in his hands. With a speed that Su Yun had never seen, it quickly aimed straight for Su Yun.

“Careful!”

The sword elder roared.

But with only a small distance between them, he simply could not react.

Puchi!

The black sword stabbed through his body.

Su Yun still could not understand what happened as his eyes blacked out. His surroundings suddenly twisted and changed, as if this illusion crumbled.

When he came to again, he returned back inside the inn.

He stood in front of the limitless sword sheath blankly, with a bewildered look.

His chest was still wounded from the piercing blow of the sword, causing it dark red blood to flow out.

He was shocked for ages before he finally recovered.

“Lucky. That sword did not actually kill you! It only kicked you out of the sword sheath as a warning....lucky, you are really lucky!”

The sword elder seemed to recovered and began to remark.

“Warning?”

Su Yun clutched his sore chest and quickly sat down cross-legged. He took the best healing pills he had and swallowed them. Then he tried to stop the blood from flowing to recover from his wounds. Afterwards, he asked, “Senior, the Primal Sword....what is that thing?”

“It is just one of the many special type objects that the sword sheath created!”

“Special type?”

“Yes, it is a special type of sword!” The sword elder pondered for a moment and continued, “This sword sheath’s eighteen thousand swords, every single one is a divine sword, which means they are living things! There are ten thousand of the special types, which will inevitably exist forever within that environment, where sword qi is abundant. This way, the sword qi remains pure. The sword

must use their heart to subdue the groups of swords. This makes the divine swords able to achieve a whole new level, as the head!”

“But! There are also swords that are completely evil and full of sinister aura! For these types of demonic swords, they are cunning and surrounded by hoards of swords. If they yield to your power, they will also have their uses! Any swords that does not comply to the rules would suffer from pressure! The swords within the sheath cannot be destroyed, but they could be robbed of their power! For the swords that are robbed of their power, they would sink down the ranks to become swords of inferior quality!”

“Whether they are immortal hero swords or demonic devil swords, they can all be known as primal swords. As for these primal swords, they would evolve within a few more days!”

“Evolve?” Su Yun’s heart jumped as he hastily asked, “So, could it become the original sword?”

“No!”

“Becoming a divine sword is impossible, right?”

“That’s even more impossible! However, they could become the 4th tiered sword of the sheath! A very rare type known as: Apex Sword!”

“Apex Sword?”

“Yes! But for the apex sword....I do not truly understand. Everything I have said is what I have heard from before. This particular type of situation, it has never occurred for me!”

After Su Yun heard this, he pondered for a moment, before asking, “Then that sword must have been a demonic or immortal sword?”

“What was that sword called?”

“Death Sword!”

“Based on its hostility, it was most likely a demonic sword. If it

was a demonic sword, it would have killing intent! Then why did it not kill you when it pierced through your chest? How come you were kicked out?”

The Sword elder asked.

“When I pulled the sword from its sheath, the test began but, as sword qi erupted, it began to automatically launch an assault against me. After I sent it back into its sheath, it calmed down the storm of swords, but I did not pass the test. Therefore, it launched another assault. If I was to escape that strike, maybe....maybe I could have subdued the sword!”

Su Yun said.

“Your thinking is far too simple. When it launched the attack, it unsheathed itself. Therefore, not only do you have to defend against its sneak attacks, but you must also defend yourself from the storm of swords flying towards you! One hundred flying swords, each with their own movements, which you avoided within only two inches,” The sword elder sighed. “From what I saw, do not think you conquered the sword. After all, it is a primal sword, which is second only to the original swords. Your strength is not yet enough, so just take an appropriate sword for yourself.”

Su Yun lowered his head in thought. A flicker went through his eyes, but he did not speak.

After a while, he seemed to wake up from his thoughts.

“No matter, no need to think. Better for me to just heal my wounds. Sometime later I will begin my operation, as for this wound, it will only bring trouble!”

Su Yun said as he unbuttoned his clothe from his body.

The medicine pill that he just swallowed before was now increasing his efficiency of staunching to prevent further bleeding, but he still needed some time. This sword wound was not shallow. If it was an ordinary person, perhaps they would have been

bedridden already, and paralyzed for half a year. Therefore, using these medicine pills, he would recover within a few days.

Despite this, right now, Su Yun did not even have a few days of lax! He needed to recover immediately.

He could not have the slightest mistakes in his movements, otherwise his life would be lost.

After lifting off the clothe, Su Yun sat cross-legged on the floor with his upper torso exposed. He began to treat his wound.

Soon after, a shocking scene emerged.

He could only see that the sword wound on his stomach was unexpectedly pitch black. It seemed as if it was poisoned. Then, a pitch black smoke began to overflow from the wound.

This pitch black wound soon filled the surrounding area with smoke, and almost covered his entire left breast.

Although this was happening, Su Yun did not feel the slightest amount of discomfort or pain. It was truly stange.

“What is happening?”

Su Yun’s eyes widened and hastily injected spirit qi into the wound, to examine it.

As the spirit qi rushed forth, it was soon blocked by an invisible wall.

It seemed that his entire chest was completely isolated.

Su Yun’s complexion was becoming gradually more pale as the dark shadows crawled over his chest. A terrifying ghost eye appeared out from his chest.

“Kid, what is wrong with you? Why are you so cold? I feel like a cooler in the limitless sword sheath. It is extremely uncomfortable!”

The sword elder was shocked as he hastily went through his

knowledge. Unexpectedly, he stopped at one record of spirit items, which almost scared him to jump.

“Why would this come out from this wound! Senior, I feel that this dark shadow is slowly corroding my body. I am unable to even separate it with my spirit qi! I do not think it is painful, but I feel....I feel that I am quickly beginning to lose control of my body! !”

Su Yun said as he grinded his teeth. Soon after, he willed his spirit qi to hammer the invisible wall of the dark shadow again, but it never had any effect.

“A Demonic Sword! ! This is truly a Demonic Sword! Kid! You ate the Death Sword’s blade! !”

The sword elder whispered.

“What?”

Su Yun was stunned.

“After the Demonic Sword wounded you, it intentionally spared you and let you go. It was not merciful to you, let me warn you! It was because it wanted to take control of your body, so that you would become a sword spirit! !”

“Sword....Spirit....”

Su Yun was shocked.

“This wound has some of the original sword’s powers! Now the Death Sword is using its own power to launch an assault against your body. If it completely erodes your body, then you will lose control of your entire body, including your conscious soul, mind, and so on. It will imprison them all, then it will replace them! The sword wants to reincarnate into a new spirit being, a special existence within the Limitless Sword Sheath! You....you met a disastrous Demonic Sword! ! !”

The sword elder came closer and unexpectedly had a pitiful

complexion.

Su Yun eyes stared at attention. A streak of intense hatred passed through his eyes.

“Does senior have any special methods?”

“No....there is no special technique, unless....before its power completely erodes you, you must get help from an expert. It will temporarily suppress the erosion rate, but....this will only be temporary. Furthermore, the expert’s cultivation must be at least tenth stage of spirit core realm....”

The sword elder sighed.

“Right now, time is running out. In addition, I appeared in this special environment. How could I search for an expert to help me? Furthermore, an expert of the spirit core realm tenth stage can be discovered but not sought. There is no way that it would happen within such a short time.”

The sword elder did not respond.

Apparently, he could not do anything either.

No one had expected that the Demonic Sword would lead to this terrible predicament.

Were these all the swords within the sword sheath?

This was truly a divine sword.

As Su Yun thought this, his panic disappeared within a trace....

Crash!

At this time, the Limitless Sword Sheath was taken out again.

The sword elder was startled and anxiously shouted, “Kid, what are you trying to do?”

“Survive!”

Su Yun responded as he stood in front of the sword sheath.

“You....Are you really trying to....”

“There is only way prevent the Demonic Sword from taking control of my body. One method....” Su Yun took a step forward and went inside the sword sheath.

That was to conquer it!

Chapter 77 - The Situation Isn't Really Good (5/5)

Crash!

The world had changed.

The dusky inn instantly turned into the bright and clear graveyard of swords.

A gentle wind blew toward his face. Before him was a long and thin straight road formed by Divine Swords.

Around a meter before him, that pitch black Death Sword within the sword sheath was quietly thrust into the right side of the road.

Su Yun coldly stared at that sword.

One man, one sword, and not a single trace of noise.

Suddenly, he extended his hand and grabbed that Death Sword. As for his other hand, it was thrust into the Sword Sheath.

Kachang!

Engraved Dragon Sword appeared.

Su Yun began to bring strength into his arm. Before that darkness covered his arms, Su Yun decided to retrieve all of his profound spiritual energy that was used to charge at the wall of darkness back. A portion of this profound spiritual energy covered the Death Sword. As for the other portion, it was sent forth into the Engraved Dragon Sword.

Surrounded by the extremely pure Pure Divine Spirit Qi, the Engraved Dragon Sword started to burst forth with a shocking radiance. A snow-like white light shined through the surroundings!!

Buzz...

A sword hiss reached his ears.

Su Yun firmly fixed his gaze upon that Death Sword. Suddenly! He swung his arm and threw the Death Sword into the air. After that, he held the Engraved Dragon Sword with his hands and, using his entire body's strength, he ruthlessly hacked down upon that Death Sword!

Kacha kacha kacha!!!

As if it had sensed danger, the Death Sword suddenly began to tremble!

The Engraved Dragon Sword seemed to be snarling. Its sword energy was like that of a mountain crashing down. With all its might, it crashed upon the Death Sword.

However, at this instant, the Death Sword suddenly unsheathed itself.

Kachang!

Hundred of swords began to cry!

The several hundred flying swords on the either sides of the sword path, that were conquered by the Death Sword, soared into the sky. Releasing their sword energy and bringing with them an unfathomable aura of sharpness, they soared toward Su Yun.

Clang!!!!

The unsheathed Death Sword was ferociously hacked down from the air by the Engraved Dragon Sword. Both the sheath and the sword itself was knock down onto the ground.

Holding the Engraved Dragon Sword, Su Yun once again hacked it downward.

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

Without stopping, the Engraved Dragon Sword that was covered

with Pure Divine Spirit Qi continued to hack down upon the sword blade of the Death Sword. Sparks flew everywhere. The sword qis collided with one another. An intense battle had broken out. The Death Sword was attacked so much that it began to tremble like a leaf. As for the Engraved Dragon Sword itself, its sword blade was also trembling.

Seeing Su Yun's frantic state, the Sword Elder came to understood Su Yun's intention.

He did not wished to conquer the Death Sword. Instead... he wanted to destroy the Death Sword!

"Boy! You... what you're doing... this..."

The Sword Elder didn't know what to say. He muttered before Su Yun's movements. This scene had already stunned him.

To Su Yun, this was already a matter of life and death. He had grown completely reckless! He did not bother to be lenient in the slightest and had put forth all of the spiritual energy in his body! He did not bother to hold back in the slightest!

The hundred swords were soaring toward their location. This time around, those hundred swords were flying even faster and fiercer. They were prepared to completely annihilate Su Yun!

Kacha!

Suddenly!

The blade of the Death Sword gave rise to a light echo. A crack appeared on the sword body.

Su Yun had hacked a crack upon the Death Sword's sword body!

Once the crack appeared, the hundred swords that were flying toward them started to greatly tremble. The flying speed of all the swords became more than several times slower. They were tottering on the air. It was as if they were about to fall.

Upon seeing this, Su Yun became even more ruthless. He once

again chopped down upon the Death Sword.

Kenchang!

At this moment, the Death Sword on the ground flew up by itself. It rotated in the air and then hacked down upon Su Yun's head.

The sword energy that it emitted had completely covered its sword body. Coming down from the air, it appeared like a little pitch black sun.

Woosh!

The Engraved Dragon Sword was cast forth toward the sky and met with the Death Sword.

Clang!!!

The bodies of the two swords once again collided against one another.

However, at this moment, the Death Sword seemed to have brought forth all of its power. A large amount of black aura began to spill out from its pitch black sword blade. It began to completely charge toward the Pure Divine Spirit Qi that covered the Engraved Dragon Sword. The two energies began to attack one another. However, the Pure Divine Spirit Qi was evidently on the losing side. In merely several bouts, it was dispersed by the black aura.

After that, a frightening scene appeared.

The sword blade of the Engraved Dragon Sword became tainted by the Damned Blade and began to turn pitch black. And after that... kacha... kachakacha...

The sword blade of the Engraved Dragon Sword started to split open. After an ear-piercing 'clang' sound, the Engraved Dragon Sword turned into numerous pieces of sword parts. It had been completely shattered!

"Once a Divine Sword gets shattered, it would automatically enter into the burial mound of the sword and become dormant.

The lower the quality of the Divine Sword, the lower the amount of time it would remain dormant. You have temporarily lost the Engraved Dragon Sword!!”

Shouted the Sword Elder.

Su Yun have no time to pay attention to the Sword Elder’s words. The Engraved Dragon Sword turned into a ray of white light and flew to the location where Su Yun had pulled it out from. Su Yun’s hands had become empty. How would contend against the Death Sword now? Even if the Death Sword’s blade had been cracked, it still managed to easily defeat Su Yun’s Engraved Dragon Sword.

No wonder the Death Sword was capable of conquering so many Divine Swords and became a Chief Sword. It turned out that its strength was actually this valiant!

After shattering the Engraved Dragon Sword, the Death Sword still did not let go. It seemed to have been completely infuriated by Su Yun’s actions. The sword tip was thrust downward toward Su Yun without the slightest amount of hesitation.

However, in this instant, Su Yun’s feet moved and he jumped backwards to avoid the incoming sword.

Bang!

The Death Sword crashed into the jade road. The entire jade road had been crashed apart by the Death Sword. Black smoke covered the place.

Kechang.

Another sword was pulled out from the Sword Sheath.

It was the Thousand Deep that Su Yun had just conquered.

Taking the opportunity that the Death Sword had yet to attack him again, Su Yun took out Thousand Deep and attacked toward the Death Sword.

One sword strike!!

Kachang!

Thousand Deep was flickering with a white light. Its energy was completely released!

Boom!

Like a Divine Ox shaking the ground, Thousand Deep quaked the earth and shook the mountains. The entire jade ground started to tremble.

Thirty percent of the Death Sword's aura was beat back by this sword strike.

However, it was still unresigned. The Death Sword that was pierced into the jade ground started to transform. The word 'Death' that was carved onto the sword blade started to flicker. After that, black smoke arose once again. This time around, it appeared like a spiraling black dragon. It revolved around the sword blade of the Death Sword and started to spin.

Su Yun's gaze had grown blazing as he stared at this sword.

What sort of skill was this? Su Yun did not know!

However, at this moment, not only was he resentful toward this sword, he also possessed an enormous amount of greed toward this sword!

强大的剑，强大的法宝，那便代表着强大的实力！

A powerful sword, a powerful treasure, that signified a powerful strength!

What does he lack the most right now?

Strength!

If he were to possess this sword, Why would he fear the Su Clan? Why would he fear the Profound Sky Sect?

Having thought of this, Su Yun once again displayed a sense of craziness from his heart. A hard to restrain intention began to

soar.

His breathing became hurried. His eyes slowly turned scarlet. Perturbed, he seemed to be have gone berserk.

Hualahualahuala...

The hundred tottering sword in the air became steady once more. In uniform, their sword tips were all pointed toward Su Yun. After that, one by one, they came flying toward him.

The hundred swords were like a hundred dragons. Going against the wind, with an aura of sweeping everything away, they pieced toward Su Yun.

Bang!

Right at this moment, Thousand Deep hack toward the Death Sword once more.

The Death Sword started to shiver frantically. It seemed that it, too, had reached its limit. However, at this moment, even though it was knocked swaying nonstop, it did not allow the hundred swords that it controlled in the sky to stop.

At this moment, the Death Sword had decided to perish together with Su Yun! A man and a sword, neither would give up unless the other died!!!!

“Third sword strike! Quickly, use it! Use it! Boy!! That Death Sword likely cannot resist another sword strike!! If you were to break it, you’ll be able to recover from that strange illness and allow you to survive! Quickly, use the third sword strike! Quickly!! Use it, quickly!!”

The Sword Elder who had been observing this with his spiritual awareness was shouting with a roaring noise. Although it was not him who was fighting with his life on the line, his current frame of mind was also filled with anxiety!

In the battle of life and death, how could Su Yun possibly dare to

hide his power?

However!

During this moment of life and death, he did not use the third sword strike. Instead, he loosened the hand that held the Thousand Deep and threw Thousand Deep to the ground.

“What?”

The Sword Elder was petrified!

Abandoning his sword at this moment?

What was he trying to do?

At this moment of life and death, Su Yun suddenly grabbed onto the Death Sword in the ground before him. He quickly grabbed the sword sheath with one hand and rapidly thrust the Death Sword into the sword sheath!

Hua!!!

The hundred swords came to a halt. It was as if the stop button had been pressed.

The surging sword aura of the hundred swords, as per principle of inertia, continued to fly forward. They crashed on Su Yun's body like a big wave and completely engulfed him.

“This...this... how is this possible?”

The Sword Elder was dumbstruck. He seemed to have grown mute and was speechless for a long time.

Su Yun was frantically gasping for air as he half kneeled on the ground. He was holding the sword hilt on one hand and grabbing the sword sheath with another. He was still exerting his final bits of strength in the struggle.

Being suddenly thrust into the sheath by Su Yun, the Death Sword stopped the hundred flying swords. However, it did not surrender just because of this. It started to struggle non stop. The

sword sheath was shivering. The Death Sword seemed to be trying to burst out from the sword sheath still.

However, Su Yun was firmly pressing the Death Sword into the sword sheath. He refused to give it the slightest chance of coming out.

“Senior, quickly... quickly assist me...”

At this time, Su Yun yelled with difficulty.

“Assist? This...”

The Sword Elder was hesitant.

“Senior! Quickly! Otherwise I will not be able to suppress it!”

Su Yun shouted.

He had already spent all his energy earlier!

If the Sword Elder doesn't help him now, then Su Yun would definitely lose!

“Okay!”

Seeing this, the Sword Elder also didn't dare to hesitate any longer. He immediately began to move his energy. Drawing power from the Limitless Sword Arts, he began to channel his power to Su Yun.

In an instant, Su Yun's dried up body received some moisture of comfort.

With the assistance from the Sword Elder, the Death Sword was completely suppressed. No matter how hard it tried to struggle, it was unable to get out of Su Yun's suppression.

Su Yun had already spent all his energy. The Death Sword had also spent all its energy. The Death Sword was alone, yet Su Yun possessed the assistance of the Sword Elder. Thus, the Death Sword was unable to resist Su Yun.

Like this!

This lasted for an entire incense stick worth of time before the Death Sword finally stopped moving.

“Is it over?”

Su Yun was still holding down on the sword hilt of the Death Sword as he muttered.

“That should... be...” Said the Sword Elder.

After the Sword Elder said those words, Su Yun’s eyes grew dark. He fainted.

....

When he woke back up, he had already returned to the inn.

His surrounding was extremely quiet. The sword sheath was still on his body. However, on the side of that sword sheath quietly sat a long, pitch black sword.

Like the sheath the black sword was in, its entire body was covered with a fierce devil pattern. There was no other color. When one looked at the sword, one would feel a sense of oppression.

“You’ve woken up!”

Sensing that Su Yun had opened his eyes, the Sword Elder’s slightly weak voice sounded.

“Thank you Senior. This time around... I have troubled you once again.”

Su Yun apologized.

The Sword Elder however hurriedly said. “Don’t thank me so urgently yet! The conclusion of this matter was not as good as you had imagined it to be!!”

A trace of confusion flashed through Su Yun’s eyes. “What do you mean by that, Senior?”

“What do I mean? You’ll find out once you pick up that Death

Sword!”

Said the Sword Elder.

Hearing that, Su Yun promptly picked up the Death Sword.

“Senior, there doesn’t seem to be anything wrong!”

“Try pulling the sword out!” The Sword Elder said.

Su Yun immediately grabbed the sword hilt and started to pull.

However... it was as if the Death Sword had fused together with the Sword Sheath. No matter how much strength Su Yun used, he was unable to pull it out...

“This... what’s happening?” Su Yun cried in shock

Chapter 78 - The General Assembly

The Death Sword would not unsheathe, so how would he be able to use it?

As a Primal Sword, its role and use was unprecedentedly large! This is why Su Yun fought as if his life was on the line. It was simply because of its domineering power.

But he would have never thought that after conquering the sword, he could not even unsheathe the sword? What was the difference between junk and this?

“Elder! You should know the cause of this, so I ask if elder could please enlighten me! How will I be able to unsheathe the sword!?”

Su Yun shouted.

The sword elder truly did know the cause of this situation.

He could only see the sword elder shake his head and sigh as he responded, “The reason that the Death Sword could not be unsheathed is because you have not yet fully conquered it.”

“I did not completely conquer it? How is that possible? It has already stopped resisting. It is evident that I have already fully conquered it!” Su Yun said as his eyebrows creased.

“Nope! You did not finish it!” The sword elder shook his head, “In fact, it is not your fault. If, at that time, you did not do that, you would have probably been killed.”

Su Yun’s mind was muddled. What could he have done?

However, he still listened to the sword elder’s explanation.

“As I said earlier, for the swords within the sword sheath, they have a living spirit within. You cannot view every sword as something that is dead! As for the Death Sword, it is exactly the same! It also has a spirit. Not only does it have a powerful spirit, it also developed a underhanded plot to trick you!”

“If you want to conquer it, you will have to rely on brute force! You must use your own power to suppress it! I was pondering a while before. When you entered the sword sheath, as the Death Swords was launching its attack....were you actually planning to use my power?”

“Correct! Test after test, the Death Sword’s genuine strength is not something that I can contend against. Since the sword sheath sealed the strength of the Death Sword, then, I just need some type of method to make it easily enter its own sword sheath. Therefore, if I just used my own strength to contend against it, wouldn’t I have been crushed? From start to finish, I did not even think of utilizing this method. After all, this is just too unrealistic. Furthermore, I needed the Death Sword. If the sword was broken to pieces, I would have needed to wait for it to regenerate. The Engraved Dragon Blade requires about three more months before it can be used again. As for the Death Sword, it will require at least a year of effort! Perhaps it is because it is a Primal Sword, but its recovery time would be much longer! Therefore, I cannot shatter the sword, so I could only wait for it to use up its power. After it went into the sheath, it will not unsheathe, so it means that I will have to conquer it once more!”

Su Yun said.

“You’re thinking is very accurate! However, you must remember, the pressure that you exerted as you forced the sword into the sheath, it is because you borrowed power from me!”

“Su Yun will earnestly remember!”

“The problem is from this!” The sword elder sighed, “I lent you my strength to conquer it, which should have been accomplished from your own strength. The Death Sword does not accept you as its master. Even if you managed to suppress it afterwards, you will still be unable to fully conquer it! This is the reason why you cannot unsheathe the sword!”

“What?” Su Yun was stunned.

A life or death clash only led to this result....

“Before, when you were clashing with the Death Sword, I was always standing on the side simply because of this reason. When you conquer a godsword, I can only give you advice, I cannot intervene. Otherwise, the godsword will not accept it, and it will never yield to your control!”

“Since this happened, did I really just obtain a useless sword?” Su Yun sighed.

“During this entire time, were you only thinking about this? You must understand! Before you ate one of the Death Sword’s wounds, if you could not conquer it, you would have died!”

“But didn’t you say that I did not conquer it?”

“Let me see the Death Sword’s wound that was eroding your body.”

After Su Yun heard, he hastily opened the clothes around his chest and the skin had been already restored to its original appearance. The dark hue had disappeared without a trace. Except for the shallow sword wound, there was nothing.

“Just as expected! What do you say now? It can only be said that you did not completely conquer the sword!”

“The conquering....was not completed?”

“Correct! Indeed, you did expend a great deal of effort, which it does recognize from the sweat, but it will not surrender to you! Temporarily, you will still be unable to use it, but it has a spirit object’s intelligence. Perhaps, as long as you increase your strength, it will have a reason to submit to you, and would then be usable for you!”

“When my power is enough, will I easily manage to conquer it?”

“Yes, but kid, I must give you a warning, for the countless swords

within the Limitless Sword Sheath, your power will be accompanied by the growth of the sword's power also. As you become more powerful, the sword's power also becomes more powerful. In addition, as you become weaker, the sword's power also becomes weaker. Don't think that you are formidable, these swords have even more uses. It would be an idiotic way of thinking."

Su Yun just nodded as he gazed at the Death Sword. He exhaled and picked it back up. Then he began to sheathe it back.

"Do not sheathe it!"

The sword elder shouted.

Su Yun stiffly stopped his hand, "What?"

"In your sword sheathe, there are thousands of divine swords. If the thousands of divine swords stay in the same place as the Death Sword, I'm afraid to say what the thousands of Divine Swords will do...."

He did not finish, but Su Yun had already understood the meaning.

The Death Sword was a Demonic Sword, but also a Primal Sword....

"Uh....that does make sense..." Su Yun pondered for a moment after he placed the Death Sword on his back and put away his sword sheath.

"The sword will not be easy to conquer, so if you put it back into the sword sheath, you would have been required to conquer it again. It would only be harder, so you should just persevere and wait until you have enough strength in the future!"

"Mhm! I believe that the large sword will come in handy in the future!"

Su Yun just nodded his head and tidied himself before he sat

himself back down in a cross-legged position. His sword wound was still not healed yet.

He soothed his heart as he focused on recovering.

Just then, loud bursts of sound were heard from outside his window.

Su Yun was slightly startled as he walked over with his body and opened the windows to look outside.

He was surprised to find that in the streets next to the inn, there was a steady stream of people entering and exiting. It was several times more lively than usual. A large number of disciples with various types of clothes from multiples factions of the school were marching through the streets like a horde towards Purple Star Academy.

The regular weekday merchants were nowhere to be seen, with the exception of the stores that still remained open. On both of the pavilions beside the inn, there was a person. One by one the other windows of the surrounding buildings opened, and everyone popped their heads out. They were gazing down below.

“Hmm?”

Su Yun still could not understand what was happening today? Why was it so busy?

There were cries from young ladies on both sides of the road. The sounds of laughter and conversations attracted Su Yun’s attention.

“Look, look, Wood Sect’s young master is coming!”

“Woah! It really is him! He really is exactly like the rumors, really handsome....”

“Funny little girl, did you consider anything else? In a few moments, he will be entering Purple Star Academy, let’s go and try to have a conversation with him!”

“How would Wood Sect’s young master even look at us? I heard

that he was next in line to succeed the patriarch of Mu Sect, a position that was extremely exalted! Noble Soul Stone sect's are even looked down upon, but us....let's just forget about it!"

....

After the sounds passed through, Su Yun had heard enough, but after he heard the news of the Wood Sect's young master, he hurriedly looked at the carriage.

A Purple Horned Beast was pulling the carriage. An elite guard was surrounding the carriage. Painted on the carriage was "Wood" in large golden letters.

Mu Feng had arrived.

Does that mean....that the Purple Star Academy exchanges were beginning?

"So few today?" Su Yun quickly asked.

"How would this old man here know?" The sword elder responded.

After looking, Su Yun quickly equipped the sword sheath and went back. Soon after, he walked out of the inn.

"Innkeeper!"

"Oh! What orders do you have?"

"The event relating to the Purple Star Academy is on which day?"

"Isn't it only today?" The innkeeper responded.

But right after his voice came out, the person who had questioned him had already left.

....

....

Within Purple Star Academy, there was a sea of people. The academy had already arranged with the Elemental Fire City to

place some city guards to overlook the event.

The guards posted today were three times as many as normal. After all, there were countless wealthy and respectable people that had come for the event. In case something happened, the Elemental Fire City would have to dissolve.

The mayor of Elemental Fire City had already entered the Purple Star Academy. He had wanted to attending the meeting and exchange. Even Entwining City's lord had shown up.

At the square of the academy, the vast majority of the disciples of the Purple Star Academy had gathered around.

After the delegation of the academy had left, the students that remained could only respectfully listen from the surrounding area. They could not make any commotion.

Within the academy's square, there were representatives from various parties of Martial Arts Sects. Several forces were not even from the mountainous region.

Naturally, the Su Family had to bear the brunt of the demands, since not only were sects such as Wood Sect, but even more famous Sects such as the Soulless Sect, had come.

At the square, there were dozens of floating platform, that were floating above the ground by three meters. The platform was only for VIPs. The rest could only sit on regular chairs to see the exchange.

On the square, there was a massive array painted that formed an intricate system. This was where disciples could concentrate on enlightening exchanges, but also be able to conduct live demonstrations for each question.

The Purple Star Academy's academic exchange was held every three years and, each time, it had a profound impact on every one of the parties that had attended.

After a stick of incense, the general exchange began and the

disciples from the square began to announce the representatives.

“Lasting Heart Academy representative is present! Welcome!”

“Soulless Sect representative is present! Welcome!”

“Wood Sect representative is present! Welcome!”

“Su Family representative is present! Welcome!”

....

When the Su Family was welcomed, it caused a large commotion.

“Look, look! The representative from the Su Family....is actually so young....and even beautiful!”

“It seems that she is not that old. Why would the Su Family send such a young girl to come here?”

“Ze ze ze....born with bright eyes and white teeth, a delicate stature. Not a feature too much or too less, she truly represents a delicate doll. If I could get a relationship with her, I would have no regrets after I die!”

Many of the male disciples were frequently staring as their pairs of eyes seemed to lock on the representative from the Su Family.

“These guys!”

Next to her was Su Huoyu, who was furiously staring around with his eyes as he saw their line of sight were on the maiden. His heart became enraged.

“Qing Er, I will move you away! Just wait!” Su Huoyu said as he grinding his teeth.

But he could only watch the cute Qing Er walk up as his voice was drowned out by the crowd. She just continued forward with Su Huoyu.

The Su Family was on the north side of the venue. There were two platforms, one for Qing Er and one for Su Huoyu. There were some other regular seating arrangements behind them.

Qing Er walked past the Su Huoyu and took her seat as she waited for the meeting to begin.

Soon after, other disciples began to come in.

Lasting Heart Academy's representative was wearing long green robes.

Dressed in eagle adorned robes was the representative of Soulless Sect.

The Wood Sect wore golden robes.

Young master Mu Feng's arrival had indeed caused a commotion. Even the other representatives had raised their eyebrows at Mu Feng's smiling attitude as he greeted the others with grace.

After about half a stick of incense, the venue became quiet and everyone had arrived.

The participants held their breath as eyes all gazed at the venue and waited for the seat at the central hall.

Then the Purple Star Academy Headmaster sat on the platform, which was the chief seat.

Jiu!!!

Suddenly, a hissing sound swepted through as a thin layer of mist descended and enveloped the platform. This lasted for a few moments, before it completely disappeared. Soon after, they could see that another figure had seated down on the platform.

“Headmaster!”

“The Headmaster is here!”

“The Headmaster has truly arrived!”

....

The disciples of the Purple Star Academy all looked excited as they shouted.

The venue looked like it was flaring up.

The disciples repeatedly raised their eyebrows, as they gazed at the person on the platform's apex.

That was the most famous existence within the entire mountain region.

Ten thousand people revered that person.

Yet, in the corner of outer area of the venue, there was a person carrying a pitch black sword, equipped with a sword sheath, and black swordsman robes. His eyes swept across the people around the platform as he quietly left.

Chapter 79 - The Endless Circle of Lies

Purple Star Academy's headmaster looked like an abnormally old woman.

She had chicken skin, crane hair (TN: described as an elderly with rough and wrinkled skin and hair as white as a crane), and a senile, scrawny body with a slight hunchback. She wore a purple robe with star pattern imprints and held onto a withered, vine-like cane. She looked exactly like a volcanic rock in a purple star robe and, with her twilight eyes, she glanced down..

"We pay respect to Purple Star Headmaster!!"

At this time, every surrounding representative participant coincidentally stood up, faced and greeted the old woman.

"We pay respects to Madame Headmaster!!"

"I, a disciple, pay my respects to Madame Headmaster!"

Regardless of being outside or inside, whether they were students or teachers, everyone greeted together as the voices travelled like the sound waves, rippling in all directions.

Everyone looked respectful. Here at Mystical Mountain Range, Madame Purple Star had no shortage of authority. Even in the nearby regions, nobody dared to be impudent, and this was not due to the fact that she is noble, but because she devoted herself and contributed greatly to these regions in the recent years. Nobody can deny her contributions.

Looking at that old woman with tears of excitement, the students expressed complete excitement.

With her arrival, the entire atmosphere changed entirely.

This....clearly showed a person's true charisma.

Meanwhile, as Qing Er was deep in her thoughts, a vision came into her mind.

“Everyone does not have to be polite, please rise.”

Purple Star Headmaster smiled benevolently and said.

“Thank you Madame!”

Everyone exhaled, and withdrew their bows.

Looking at this, Madame Purple Star laughed with a pleased look.

“Today marks the Purple Star Academy’s triennial academic exchange event. All the numerous representatives from regions spanning a thousand miles have come to join today’s event. I am deeply honoured and express my honest gratitude to everybody here!”

“We do not dare, we do not dare!”

“Madame Purple Star is truly magnanimous!”

The representatives all called out.

“Haha!”

As she was laughing, Madame Purple Star said, “Alright, the hour is here and everyone’s time is precious, so I’ll not be courteous! Let’s get onto the main topic!”

With that, the people outside unanimously decided to listen intently.

Madame Purple Star’s cultivation was really high. According to others, she had cultivated to the realm of Spirit Soul stage. But, to what stage she truly possessed, nobody really knew. Many other cultivators were rumoured to hold the ninth or even tenth stage of the Spirit Soul rank. And it was highly possible that they will become the only few to attain the Spirit Star Stage in the three biggest regions; Entwining Secrets District, Great Cyan District, and Mystical Mountain Range.

Spirit Star Realm...

How can this strength possibly exist?

Uncountable cultivators have spent a lifetime training, but could never attain such a high level of power.

But what led the people to have deep admiration for Madame Purple Star was not just her cultivation level, but more of her research into Spirit Cultivation. The academic exchanges were actually for Madame Purple Star to publicly announce her research results on Profound Spirit Qi. Her discipline, painstaking effort, and willingness to share her research, made many people worship her.

“This time, I am researching on the effects of Profound Spirit Qi on a human being’s potential. I have been studying this for many years and, only in recent years, have I had a breakthrough! But I, Madame Purple Star, ultimately, am only an aged woman. There are many things that are not matched to everyone. Today I will present to you the end results of my research, feel free to improve on it...”

According to the previous events, Madame Purple Star would unveil and share with everyone all her findings in the past three years with regards to Profound Spirit Qi as a reference.

Normally, this is the quietest time, and no one would have made a racket. Even the people who were gasping for air would try to minimise the sounds of it, for fear that they would disrupt Madame Purple Star.

But...

This time, the Madame Purple Star had yet to finish presenting her findings for her study, one person stood up from the chair.

Madame Purple Star turned to look.

Surprisingly, the person who stood up was a representative from ‘Soulless Sect’, Wu Kong.

Wu Kong was robust and had a face full of oil. He wore a jade gown, accessorized with many talismans and trinkets. Looking

from afar, he actually looked like a tortoise embedded with jewels.

“Oh? Can I ask what objection Senior Wu Kong has?” Madame Purple Star, who was startled, asked.

Everyone uniformly turned to look towards Wu Kong.

Wu Kong clumsily executed a bow to Madame Purple Star before opening his mouth, “Madame Purple Star’s remarks, how will junior dare have any problem? This junior stood up, not to question Madame Purple Star’s words, but to question those little friends on the opposite side!”

Opposite side?

Everyone was startled, and quickly divert their attention to the people opposite of Wu Kong.

The Su Family!

The Su people were astounded.

Su Huoyu was slightly surprised, while Qing Er had already stood up from her seat.

She greeted respectfully: “I am junior Su Qing Er, I give my respects to all seniors who are present.” She continued in a clear, bright and sweet voice: “May I know what Wu Kong senior means? The Su family has not mumbled a sound ever since we got here, what question does Wu Kong senior have?”

“Ah!” Wu Kong grinned: “This is the triennial academic exchange, deemed with utmost importance by many. I never thought the family of Su is so arrogant to actually send a doll to a convention as important as the Heavens! Shouldn’t I question about this...?”

“Despicable!”

Su Huoyu stood up madly and shouted, “Wu Kong, what do you mean? Who are you calling a doll? Are you looking down on us?”

“Looking down?” Wu Kong snorted, “Isn’t it your Su Family that

is looking down on people? You are all young and tender (TN: Describing that they are Young people), with a bit of talent, and have only cultivated for a short period of time. Yet you all come here and join in this exchange with us. Ah, who is looking down on who, everyone can tell from a glance!”

“You..”

Su Huoyu fumed in anger.

Qing Er frowned and asked, “If it is like that, Wu Kong Senior, what do you suggest?”

Wu Kong laughed and replied, “Why not we do this. I will come up with some questions related to Profound Spirit Qi. If you can answer correctly, I will be convinced by your power and intellect. But if you answer wrongly, it would mean that you all have no rights to attend this exchange event, and your Su Family will have to retreat outside. How does it sound to the rest of the audience?”

“This is ridiculous!”

The Su Family stood up one by one, stared at Wu Kong with glaring eyes.

The students also started discussions with each other one by one. Some agreed with Wu Kong, while some thought that Wu Kong was overexaggerating the issue.

Qing Er did not speak up, neither did she state her stand.

Contrarily, it was Su Huoyu who was pushed to his limits. Slapping his hands on his thighs: “Come on, who is afraid of you?”

“Young master Huoyu! Don’t be reckless!”

Qing Er exclaimed hurriedly.

“What is there to be scared of, Qing Er! I, a young master, in any case, am also a talented disciple from the Su Family. With regards to Profound Spirit Qi, I too have studied considerably. Shouldn’t I be able to answer his questions?”

Su Huoyu stood with absolute confidence and snorted: “Wu Kong! I know exactly why you are picking the Su Family. A few days back, you invited Miss Qing Er for a drink and got rejected. You harbour a grudge, and thus came up with this plan to embarrass my family. Am I right? But you better put an end to this intention or I, the young master, will never let you get ahead of your plans!”

Once Wu Kong heard that, his chubby face turned as red as a pig’s liver, and panickedly replied, “Nonsense... what nonsense are you saying!? How can it be because of such a small matter, that I would evoke revenge? Why would my heart be that childish?”

“Humph, rubbish!”

“Rubbish?” Wu Kong raged. “Little doll, when I participated in the academic exchange, you have not even born fruits yet! (TN: saying she did not go through her first menstruation cycle) How dare you use such a tone to talk to me!”

As his sound resounded, Wu Kong begun to inhale deeply. He looked towards and saluted representatives from both sides, shouting, “Dare I ask everyone, are you all able to witness these dolls that know nothing come here with the pretense of having talent, to come here and discuss great secrets?”

“This...”

“What Senior Wu Kong has said, clearly speaks truth. They are simply too young, with fear of not having enough ink in their chest!” (TN: not well versed enough)

“That’s right, even their cultivation level is of utter substandard, that doll seems to only be at the Spirit Core level, how much can she comprehend the Profound Spirit Qi...”

“In this place, which of you is not a seventh or a eighth stage Spirit Core Cultivator?”

Representatives from both sides were murmuring in discussion.

Mu Feng, who represented the Mu Clan, did not say a word in participation. He did not support Wu Kong, nor helped the Su Family to speak up.

Madame Purple Star frowned and shouted, “Senior Wu Kong!”

Wu Kong quickly turned to face Madame Purple Star.

“In cultivation, it is obvious that there is no difference between the seniority, the aged and the young, nor the strong and the weak, so why do you bother about this? This matter... is nothing much!”

Madame Purple Star stated.

“But the people of the Su Family have already answered to the public. If I just let this matter go, then what prestige does the Soulless Sect still have left?” Wu Kong obviously did not buy into Madame Purple Star’s logic. Even though Madame Purple Star had great authority, Wu Kong had the support of the Soulless Sect! What did he have to fear?

“This...” Madame Purple Star became speechless.

“Humph! Wu Kong, stop talking rubbish and shoot away! You think I’m afraid of you?”

Su Huoyu angrily retorted.

“Good!” Wu Kong smiled coldly, “Then I will not make it difficult for you. I am only asking you about Spirit Core cultivation research questions. You better listen well!!”

“Just ask away!!”

.....

Clang!

A stone was moved, and the canvas below was also lifted. On the empty field filled with weeds, a big, sinister spirit array, drawn with blood, was unveiled immediately...

The big spirit array was still engraved there.

As the spirit array lacked one final ingredient, it was incomplete, and therefore did not release any Qi. Nor did not have any power. At most, it had a fishy smell. Adding on that it was far and remote from any city, no one would ever stumble onto it.

Su Yun briskly walk over to check on the array's status.

Luckily, there was not much wear and tear. But due to the passing of days, some of the lines of the spirit array was dilated. At that time, only a few improvements would suffice.

He opened his spatial ring and took out the contents inside, immediately lying down and carefully begun replenishing the array.

Time was short, so Su Yun's movements started to somewhat hasten, and his entire being started to focus.

The wind gently blew, the surrounding trees rustled with the breeze, and the nearby lake formed numerous ripples...

Kacha...

At this time, a few sets of light but fast steps were heard pacing nearer, and a low voice was heard.

"Who are you, and for what matters do you have here?"

Su Yun, who was still analyzing and focusing on replenishing the array, heard and immediately drew a blank.

He turned his head to look towards the people behind him, and saw a few wearing embroidered green clothes standing together.

Elite academy guards?

Su Yun was slightly startled as he secretly glanced at the badge hanging on their waists.

But he was not flustered, and even hurriedly stood up, saying, "Fellow Seniors, I am a student here."

"Please take out your student badge!"

One of the men spoke in a low voice.

The rest of them quietly surrounded Su Yun.

Clearly they did not believe anything.

Su Yun heart thumped for awhile, before calming down.

These few rascals were not so easily deceived.

He inhaled a breath, slowly held out his hand, grabbed the student badge on his waist and extended it out.

The badge was rented and the information on it was accurate, but Su Yun did not examine it carefully. If there were any questions that raised, he definitely would not be able to answer. But it did not matter, as the appearance of the badge was realistic. After all while renting the badge, the people there would take out similar looking student badges.

If he did not give the badge, he would definitely be apprehended by the Purple Star guards, or even killed.

Su Yun quietly whined as he did not think the owner of the academy had such strong grounds of guarding.

Thinking about it, it would be better to give...

“What are you hesitating for?”

The man asked in his low voice and moved his fingers quickly, stealthily touching the blade on his waist.

“Just take it.”

Feeling the chilling tension, Su Yun did not dare hesitate. He pulled down hard to tear out the student badge all at once and handed it over.

The guards saw his actions, and finally relaxed their tension.

The guard received the student badge and used his Profound Spirit Qi to scan it once. Instantly, his face changed. Without saying a word, he pulled out the sword on his waist and pointed it

to Su Yun.

Shua...

The surrounding guards quickly brandished out their swords.

Su Yun was startled, “What is the meaning of this?”

“Meaning? Humph, shouldn’t it be us asking you this question? You’re absolutely not our Academy’s student!”

“Impossible! This badge....obviously....obviously belongs to me!!”

Su Yun panickedly said.

At the same time, his heart was utterly shocked! Why and how did these guards just take one look and, without asking any questions, determined that he was an imposter?

“Still arguing?” The guard roared, throwing the student badge down and stared into Su Yun eyes, “You are a male! Why do you have a female student badge?”

Su Yun looked once, and was immediately stunned.

“Damnit!”

Chapter 80 - The Assault's Bottom Line

“Boss! Be quick! Prepare a Purple Star Academy’s Student badge for me! I will only give you fifty breaths of time!”

“About this... esteemed customer, today is Purple Star Academy’s martial exchange event’s opening day, and many people have already rented the badges to sneak inside to listen. I have rented out a great number of badges already. This period of time, I am sorry to say, but it is extremely difficult to get you an almost identical badge!”

“I will pay double!”

“Deal! Hey! Dear customer, take a look at this, here is a piece. Although it slightly differs from the rest, it will work!.”

“Take the money!”

“Good!”

....

Thinking about that event, Su Yun immediately understood what happened.

“Darn him! That ruthless owner, how dare he deceive me!”

He secretly scolded.

As time was of the essence, Su Yun hurriedly left the inn to infiltrate the Purple Star Academy.

Each badge records the student’s basic information. With the use of Profound Spirit Qi to construct a portrait, it will reveal the student’s detailed information.

Su Yun merely scanned through the portrait and did not check the detailed information. He felt as though the portrait had a little resemblance to himself and thus was sufficient. He didn’t expect that the detailed information of this particular badge represented a female!

The academy's exchange event opening was today. The person in charge for the badge renting must have been so nervous that he actually passed me a female's badge.

“Come, men! Take him away and hand him over to the elders for punishment!!”

The guards shouted.

“Understood!”

Everyone shouted in agreement, wanting to detain Su Yun.

Su Yun bit on down on his teeth tightly (TN: to grit one's teeth and bear the pain to bite the bullet), and stealthily placed his hands on his sword.

Although getting detained would not pose any real danger, it would cause a huge misunderstanding, and would be difficult to handle!

This was not what Su Yun anticipated, he had to get out of this difficult situation as soon as possible!

He secretly thought.

“Eh? Aren't you the Senior Limitless Sword God?”

At this moment, there was a loud cry of surprise.

Su Yun was startled, he turned his head and saw a man dressed in an armor of jewels walking towards him.

The guards, looked at him.

“What are you all doing?”

Seeing the guards pointing their swords at Su Yun, the man was stupefied.

“This man is suspicious, he took a fake badge and tried to sneak into my academy. He harbours ill intentions, and we will hand him to the academy to receive his judgement.” The captain of the guards shouted!

“This man calls for suspicion?” The man in an armor full of jewels asked in shock. Shortly, he smiled: “This man is a good friend of my family’s master, so I think there must be some misunderstanding!”

“Misunderstanding? How can this be a mistake?.” The guard snorted. “Also, who is your clan’s young master?”

The man dressed in a jeweled armor stated: “My master is Mu Feng of the Mu Clan, from the Mystical Mountain Range!”

“Mu... Mu Clan Young Master?”

The guard captain was evidently surprised.

Who did not know of the renowned Mu Clan?

“I would like to ask everyone not to make things difficult for this friend of mine!”

The man in the jeweled armor did not seem arrogant, and his manners remained calm and gentle.

The guard captain did not utter a word, but his gaze was set on Su Yun.

Su Yun recognized the situation, and quickly said: “I did not mean for this, but this is a rare exchange event that only happens once every three years! Thus, I forged a badge and attempted to sneak into the academy to listen. That’s all!”

“Oh? Then why didn’t you go to the field, but you somehow ended up here?”

The guard asked.

“It is crowded at the plaza, hence I wanted to drop by here and listen!”

Su Yun quibbled.

“Really?”

“Of course!”

The guards listened, and fell silent.

He looked up at the man with the jeweled armor, and took a peek at the token bound to his waist, then waved and said: “Let’s go!”

“Thanks!” The man in the armour returned by cupping one of his hands in a fist.

The guards did not utter a word and left.

After Su Yun realized what had happened, and let out a sigh of relief, wiping the sweat on his forehead, and cupped his fist to the armored man: “Thank you for helping me. If not for you, I think I would have been in deep trouble!”

“Please do not say that, Limitless Sword God. If not for you, my young master and I would have died in the hands of the bandits that day! Also, even if I didn’t come, I believe Limitless Sword God would also be safe and sound.”

The man in the jeweled armor said hastily.

Su Yun smiled: “I still do not know what your name is, brother.”

“Limitless Sword God, just call call me Mu Liu Qing!” the man in the armour smiled with his fists cupped.

“Mu Liu Qing? What a nice name!. Speaking of which... what are you doing here?”

“Oh, the cultivating exchange event has started already, hasn’t it? Being an escort leader, I have to take responsibility of my young master by doing patrols around the region! It’s better to be safe than sorry.”

Mu Liu Qing beamed.

Su Yun nodded, and out of the blue, he thought of something and expressed: “Liu Qing, whatever may happen today, please inform your young master of the Mu Clan as soon as possible, let him notify Madam Purple Star and the other representatives of Purple Star Academy to remain vigilant.”

“What’s going to happen?” Liu Qing did not understand: “What are you referring to, Limitless Sword God?”

Su Yun remained wordless.

He could not say anything bluntly, or else he might risk Mu Liu Qing thinking that he is part of what is going to happen.

“Just do what I told you.” Su Yun said after a long silence.

Mu Liu Qing listened, and although he could not understand, Su Yun had saved him and his young master’s lives before. Thinking that Su Yun would not hurt them, he did not ask more. Liu Qing then nodded and turned towards the academy’s plaza.

Swoosh, swoosh!

Suddenly!

A gust of chilled wind swirled, and two blood darts came flying in their direction.

Su Yun felt a chill down his spine, and quickly dodged.

Puchi!

Although Su Yun was agile, the blood darts were still travelling at a rapid speed, and managed to hit Su Yun’s back.

Su Yun groaned, and dropped on the ground.

And then.

Puchi!

The blood darts assassin attacked Mu Liu Qing in the back of the head directly, causing him to scream in pain, as he quickly fell dead to the ground.

“Liu Qing!!”

Su Yun clamoured.

But, Mu Liu Qing was already lying motionless!

Su Yun’s heart was enraged. Bearing the pain, he climbed up and

looked back to see a group of men dressed in full black armor, walking out of the forest. These black skinned, red eyed people, three meters in height, many of them even had huge horns on their heads, looking particularly violent, and emitting a violent reddish dark aura!

Demonic Qi!

These people are... Demonic Qi Cultivators?

Su Yun stared blankly.

As they silently approached, their murderous aura leaked out from head to toe. With their pair of scarlet red eyes and body drenched in fresh blood, it could be assumed that all the Purple Star Academy guards in the forest were already killed by them.

Not Good!

Su Yun, whose heart was alarmed and body was jolted, immediately retreated into a run.

The group of Demonic Qi Cultivators started to give chase!

“There’s no need to chase him!”

A demonic voice was heard from behind.

The Demonic Qi Cultivators stopped in their tracks.

“There are more pressing matters at hand! Fetch the others!”

All the Demonic Qi Cultivators nodded their heads in unison and, without making any sound, headed towards the school plaza.

....

Su Yun did not know how long he had been sprinting, but when it felt like he was reaching the academy’s borders, he stopped to catch his breath.

Beads of sweat filled his face, and the wound on his back was bringing an unbearable, tearing pain.

He gritted his teeth, reached out his hand to the blood dart on his

back and held on to it. He took a deep breath and pulled it out with all his might.

Chi!.

The blood dart had been ripped out, and fresh blood was spewing from the wound.

Su Yun quickly swallowed a Sagittate Tasselflower hemostatic pill and the wound stabilized, showing signs of healing.

The blood dart was made of a piece of razor sharp bone, but this was not just any bone. In fact, it was a demon bone, and was harder than steel.

Su Yun wiped the blood off the blood dart, and examined it carefully.

“There’s no difference in color, nor is there any stench. Seems like it does not contain any demonic poison!”

Su Yun heaved a sigh of relief and threw the blood dart away.

He never thought the people who attacked the Purple Star Academy this time round would be Demonic Qi Cultivators!

Could it be that Demonic Qi Cultivators from the Demons Continent managed to sneak into the Sky Martial Continent?

Screw it!

Su Yun clenched his teeth, endured the pain, and ran forward.

Drawing closer, he stopped his tracks swiftly. Using the big trees on the roadside as his cover, he advanced quietly.

The area around the Blood Dye Array was filled with deathly silence. Removing the stench that was solely possessed by Demonic Qi Cultivators and the air reeking of blood, there is actually nothing left.

Mu Liu Qing’s body was nowhere to be seen. All that was left was a pile of blood.

Su Yun could not help but feel sadness pulling at his heart.

In the Demonic Continent, the Demon Range possessed exceptional meat-devouring demons. Greediness was their natural disposition and, having a penchant for feeding on corpses, it was very likely that Mu Liu Qing's body was eaten up.

Having just been saved by a friend, he had already landed himself in deep trouble.

Su Yun's heart throbbed in pain. It was as if the deepest part of his heart was being attacked.

If...the person who stood in front of myself was not Mu Liu Qing, but Qing Er, then...what would I do?

If what was going to happen next was like what just happened, then what should I do?.

At the present time, he simply could not make out if there were any Demonic Qi Cultivators still lurking around. He dashed towards the Blood Dye Array and started tracing.

The Demonic Qi Cultivators took action, so time was of the essence, and there was no chance of delaying.

Su Yun's lip trembled, his face pale white, and his embattled hands were also shaking terribly.

“No...no...this cannot happen!”

He stared at his bloodied and painful back, increasing his speed.

Shortly, the Blood Dye Array lines were completed.

What was left was just to put in place the final material, then the array could be activated!

But before this, there was still one more task to be done.

Su Yun took out the hundred shimmering swords prepared earlier by Su Xing Yue and Su Xing Yang at the Su Clan, and thrust them into the Blood Dye Array.

The swords could not be pierced in randomly, they had to follow the Blood Dye Array's line arrangement. The Array's lines were not just a decoration. Each and every one of them had their individual effect. The insertion of the sword was Su Yun's improvisation. A typical Blood Dye Array would not be able to take in so many swords in one go.

The array shook, and the veins acted like blood vessels, transmitting an enormous energy over, and so each and every sword, that could not be pierced, like blocked blood vessels, sliced in and engaged the array, which became unmovable.

As a result, the whole wide array was pierced with sharp swords.

Once the blades finished, Su Yun hastily took out the final material; Revolving Circular Pearl. With his shivering hands, he placed it onto the Blood Dye Array.

Kacha!

A loud crisp sound echoed.

Chi!!!

A variety of shrill sword sounds erupted, like the sound of a hundred birds, shaking the heavens and earth....

To prevent the Blood Qi from breaking out, Su Yun did not dare move the slightest inch, stumbling to lie on the Blood Dye Array, in between the hundred swords, closing his eyes...

Gudong...

At this time, the entire Blood Dye Array took a change of events. The massive circular array was suddenly filled with a bloody fog, and the bloody fog fell to the ground and turned the ground into a pool of blood, and started fuming with bloody bubbles.

Half of Su Yun's body was immersed in the pool of blood, but he had yet to move an inch.

A vicious, scarlet red claw emerging from the pool, engulfed Su

Yun's body, and seemingly wanting to pull his body into the pool of blood.

Nevertheless, Su Yun remained still.

At the same moment, the hundred shimmering swords also started to submerge into the pool of blood, disappearing ever so slightly.

It only took a few breaths of time, and both the person and the swords....just completely dissipated.

Soon after, all that was left was a big patch of a scarlet red blood stain.

Chapter 81 - Limitless Sword God (Part 1)

Purple Star Academy exchange event venue.

At that moment, the entire place was dead silent, with all eyes staring blankly at the Man wrapped in robes amongst the Su Family.

His face was pale white, sweating profusely with an unsteady gaze, his knees going weak, and lips trembling badly.

On the other side, a vigorous man dressed in luxury clothes, and accessorized with several talismans, was attracting the eyes of many.

The atmosphere was a tad weird.

“Hey! I say!” At this moment, the vigorous lad spoke out suddenly. With a snobbish manner, he laughed: “Why are you wasting everybody’s time? If you can’t answer, then get out of this place, and bring your Su family out to listen!”

“You... You shut up, I, your father, merely forgot the answer. Allow me... Allow me to ponder about it once more.”

Su Huoyu flushed with anger, snarled.

“Hmph, then I shall give you an additional half an hour!”

The vigorous Wu Kong said and crossed his arms firmly on his chest, stood with utmost confidence.

To be able to faze the Su Family, he would, of course, be filled with absolute delight.

“I graciously honoured and entertained all of you, yet all I got was rejection. Humph, you are merely dolls but have the audacity to be so wild, so I have to let all of you know how powerful I am!”

Wu Kong laughed coldly.

Madam Purple Star could no longer bear what was unfolding in

front of her. Although she was the headmaster of the Purple Star Academy, with a cultivation so profound, and massive influence, the Soulless Sect was also not to be taken lightly. Speaking of just connections, the Purple Star Academy was no match for the Soulless Sect. Considering the whole picture, not getting involved in this would be Madam Purple Star's best decision.

“Spiritual movements!”

At this point of time, a crisp and clear voice echoed through as though a bell rang and broke the silence.

Wu Kong kept a straight face, and looked forward, only to find that the voice actually came from the girl standing beside Su Huoyu, dressed in pure white blademaster clothes, with a golden phoenix down on top; Qing Er.

Urgently, Wu Kong shouted: “It is not your turn to answer, it should be him, Su Huoyu! Do not get involved, or else you would be breaking the rules!”

However, Qing Er could care less, as her tender red lips continued to speak: “Once the Qi channels open, to obtain a person's true potential, only when he cultivates Qi through Spiritual movements, can there be...”

The soothing voice spilled over all directions, and spread through the plaza, people listened quietly and, slowly, all were enthralled.

This girl who wore no makeup, yet held beauty in her face, and was filled with wisdom and knowledge to explain clearly. To top it off, with her enchanting voice, many developed an unfathomable yearning.

Madam Purple Star who was sitting at the top nodded continuously, and looked at Qing Er with approving eyes.

Many of the representatives who were present had eyes shining brightly. Surprisingly, even the woodblock Mu Feng, who did not participate, could not help but look towards Qing Er.

“The rule is broken! You all have lost! I am betting with Su Huoyu, not you, so you can’t just blurt out the answer!”

Wu Kong exasperated.

This question was not simple, so the mediocre students would definitely not understand the reason behind it. Only the few outstanding student representatives would be able to comprehend.

Following Wu Kong’s outcry, everyone knew that the Su Family had given the correct answer.

Even though Qing Er had broken the rule that both parties had set, and answered immediately, she still proved that she was qualified to partake in this year’s exchange event, and also proved that the Su Family indeed had genuine talents! What Wu Kong claimed, that they do not deserve to take part, had already lost its colour. So... all the difficulties that he had created for the Su Family became meaningless.

Now that Qing Er had stirred up such a situation, the atmosphere took a change again. Wu Kong was infuriated, but he could not do anything to Qing Er.

On the contrary, it was Su Huoyu, who fell for the trap (TN: chinese proverb to say that a person is very gullible), and laughed heartily: “Right! Right! That’s the answer, I just remembered, it’s Spiritual movements... Err... whatever that means, it is this anyway, whether or not you believe, I was going to say this.”

Wu Kong’s chest raised, and his face turned purple, he held in his anger and shouted: “Being able to answer one question does not mean anything, you have to answer at least 3 questions to prove that you are qualified!”

“Three questions?” Su Huoyu was daunted.

Previously, he thought that the questions would be easy, so he stood with great confidence. When he heard Wu Kong ask the first question, he was completely dumbfounded. He had been in Spirit

Cultivation for so long, but he never actually heard any of these terms, so how would he know the answers?

Wu Kong refused to give up, but Su Huoyu cowered and remained silent.

Despite being a representative for the Su family, the implicit reason that he came to this exchange was only to get closer to Qing Er. His cultivation was no match for Qing Er, and he did not work as hard as Qing Er. Most of the time, he relied on good beads, medicine, and the environment to break through. But Qing Er was different. She worked hard in her cultivation and was well versed in many books. Her cultivation is considered to be one of the highest amongst the Su disciples. Speaking of talent, she sure was one.

“Master Wu Kong, today is Purple Star Academy’s triennial exchange event. If you would like to have a personal exchange with my Su family, we should bring it out and compete individually. I beg Master Wu Kong not to waste everybody’s precious time, and stop saying these meaningless things!”

Qing Er spoke up and, obviously, she had no intentions to entertain Wu Kong.

When Wu Kong heard it, he exploded with all his suppressed anger, stood out, and yelled: “You, this little wretch, who are you to discipline me? Looks like if I don’t teach you a lesson, you will not understand my authority, and how powerful the Soulless Sect is!”

With these words spoken, Wu Kong stood up from the rock. Looking at his position, it seemed as if he was about to retaliate.

People who were seated saw what was happening and felt utterly disappointed as they shook their heads. They will never see Wu Kong in the same light again.

Since Qing Er had put it that way, as a senior, Wu Kong was seen

as calculative, but now everyone could only see him as a petty, narrow-minded man.

“Master Wu Kong!.”

The young master Wu Feng of the Wu Clan spoke.

Wu Kong slowly turned, and set his gaze on Mu Feng.

“What Miss Qing Er said is not illogical. The scholars did not gather here to observe you and the Su family, so could you please quiet down and listen to what Madam Purple Star has to say?”

Mu Feng stated coldly.

Who is Mu Feng? He is the Mu Clan’s young master! The most capable of spirit cultivators in the Mystical Mountain Range! Having that position, even the Soulless Sect would have to pay them respects, so how would Wu Kong dare to offend him?

With that, Wu Kong was placed in an awkward position. He hesitated and groaned before sitting down.

“Okay! Everybody, I do not wish to pursue your past quarrels, so let us get on with today’s main topic!”

Madam Purple Star stood up and resolved the situation timely.

Seeing Madam Purple Star speak out, Wu Kong found his way out of the embarrassing situation, snorted, and sat down angrily.

Qing Er sat back gently, however, her face was filled with worry and, for once, she sighed deeply, yet no one took notice.

The exchange continued.

However, more and more people started to take interest in that young representative from the Su Family, and several people even secretly inquired about her identity.

Su Huoyu looked at Qing Er and was filled with ever growing anger.

Despite the fact that Qing Er had helped him out of this difficult

situation, he did not appear happy. After all, he is the son of the patriarch. He should be the one to enjoy the limelight.

“Young master Huoyu!”

Qing Er murmured.

“What?”

Su Huoyu frowned and asked.

“Please take into consideration the seriousness of the situation. Whatever Wu Kong says, all we have to do is ignore and, when this exchange is over, we will head back to the Su Family immediately. Do not engage with Wu Kong, lest the hatred develop even further. It is not worth it. (TN: A saying to say the gains are far from the losses)!”

Qing Er said lightly.

Infuriated, Su Huoyu replied: “What are you saying? Do you think I would be afraid of Wu Kong? Hmph! Su Qing Er, let me tell you! Don’t think that, because your cultivation is of a high level, and that you are knowledgeable, means that you can step all over me. Since when are you in any position to lecture me?”

“Qing Er didn’t have that intention!”

“Then you better shut the fuck up!”

Su Huoyu bellowed.

The Su Family’s clamor attracted eyes to Qing Er and Su Huoyu’s direction, but no one made a sound.

Qing Er lowered her head, not saying a word.

This girl always resigns to what came to her. Maybe, she just wanted a peaceful and stable life, that was all.

Seeing that Qing Er did not intend to reply anymore, Su Huoyu snorted and crossed his legs to sit down. He could not care about her anymore.

Whoooo!!!

At that precise moment, gusts of icy wind started to blow, rippling through the entire academy's plaza, the dust on the floor was lifted up into the air, the hair and the clothes of the people started to flutter.

Many, whose cultivation were low and did not wear much, shivered as the cold wind blew. They held on to each other and trembled.

“What happened? Why did it become so chilly?”

“Bastard, don't tell me that this is the Heart Chilling Wind? But isn't there a barrier to withstand the Heart Chilling Wind? How did it come to this place?”

“So cold...”

The students complained.

The outside seemed to have developed a large disturbance.

Madam Purple Star frowned, and sensed that this year's exchange will not go as smoothly as before.

Bang!

Suddenly.

An explosion rang from afar.

Everyone jumped out in fright.

Everyone stood up one by one, and peered in the direction where the explosion sounded.

“What exactly is happening!?”

Madam Purple Star yelled as she held on to her cane.

At that time, several guards who were drenched in blood, came running towards the academy.

Following them was an aura filled with Demonic Qi. Many who

were present looked terrified.

“Master! It’s bad, those demons have snuck in! They assassinated all of our academy’s guard defenses! They are heading here right now!!”

A guard howled.

With that being said, everyone broke into a cold sweat unanimously.

Madam Purple Star’s sunset hues eyes glared, and bellowed: “What did you say? Who managed to sneak in?”

“Demons! The Demonic Qi Cultivators! An innumerable amount of Demonic Qi Cultivators!”

The other guard cried as he shouted.

“Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

“How is that possible? Why are the Demonic Qi Cultivators here?”

“Don’t... Don’t they thrive in the Demonic continent? Why... Why did they... Why did they come here?”

“Oh God, what should we do now?”

The students panicked, losing their heads out of fear (TN: panicked and went crazy) and started screaming nonstop, their eyes were filled with terror.

How long had it been since the Demonic continent’s creatures last stepped into the Sky Martial Continent? Everyone knew that demons only existed in books and words. Not once had they seen one before.

“Without rhyme or reason, why are the Demonic Qi Cultivators coming to my Purple Star Academy? In addition... How did they manage to sneak in without anyone knowing? Unless... There is a spy in the Purple Star Academy!”

Madam Purple Star mumbled, and almost immediately, she took out a piece of purple rock from her waist, and threw it into the air.

Once the stone reached mid air, it exploded right away in all directions as if like flower petals.

This is just a warning to all members and students of the Purple Star Academy.

“City Lord Master!”

Once again, Madam Purple star turned around, and hurried toward the City Lord of Elemental Fire City and shouted.

The City Lord did not answer, despite Madam Purple Star’s calling.

Astounded, Madam Purple Star carefully gazed, only to find that the seat that belonged to the City Lord had disappeared into thin air.

Hua!

A burst of blood red fog floated rapidly toward the plaza, and covered the entire academy’s plaza.

“Oh no! They are killing their way in already!”

Someone exclaimed in horror.

“Retreat! Quickly retreat!”

An unknown representative stood up and started shouting.

“Unacceptable!” Madam Purple Star looked determined, and called: “This is the Elemental Fire City, and this is the Purple star Academy. Where can we retreat to? All the cultivating experts have gathered here, why don’t we team up and destroy the Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

“Destroy the Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

Everyone was shocked.

After listening, a voice cold as ice pierced through the air.

“Destroy the Demonic Qi Cultivators? Madam Purple Star! Just by relying on you?”

With that, a ray of darkness flew from afar, aiming straight at Madam Purple Star’s heart!

Calm and unhurried, Madam Purple Star waved her cane in an attempt to block, but just as she was about to raise her cane, her body suddenly trembled. She spat out a mouthful of fresh blood as a groan came out from her body!

Peng!

The ray of darkness pierced her body with precision, Madam Purple Star crashed off the platform and fell to the ground....

Chapter 82 - Limitless Sword God (Part 2)

“Madam Purple Star!”

Everyone gasped in shock.

Several of Purple Star Academy’s mentors ran over, and helped Madam Purple Star out.

But Madam Purple Star’s face was white and pale. What once were eyes filled with life now looked like a dead person’s. There was no life in her. Her spirit qi was weak and she kept vomiting out fresh blood, it seemed impossible for her to live.

Emerging from her chest was a black hole, fuming with thick smoke and a fishy stench.

“Demonic poison!”

A knowledgeable mentor glanced at the wound and managed to recognize it!

“What?”

The audience was surprised.

The students looked over at Madam Purple Star, who was lying down, and became dumbfounded.

Madam Purple Star was their pillar of support and, although it was an abrupt change, Madam Purple Star was still alive. Though they were afraid, their faith in Madam Purple Star stayed strong, believing that she could handle this. Nonetheless... If Madam Purple Star could not withstand the previous blow, how would they have any hope of victory?

The blood fog seemed to thicken every second, as it encapsulated everyone in the academy’s plaza like a mask. Everybody’s vision was fogged and no one could see through what the blood fog held within.

Only...

A series of gloomy and heavy footsteps could be heard walking instead. Moreover, it could be heard from every single direction! Such intense footworks!

Someone was getting closer.

Who could it be?.

Eyes darted in all four directions, but other than the blood fog, they could not see anything else.

The fear of hearing things but not being able to see, torments a person's mental state, and tortures their determination.

“Ah!”

Alas, a student who could no longer bear this ghostly atmosphere, screeched and sprinted out of the academy.

“Come back!”

One mentor shouted.

But the student would not listen. He plucked up his courage and ran towards the outskirts of the academy like a bullet train, not slowing down.

Then.

Just as he stepped out of the academy, a razor sharp claw as long as half a metre appeared from the blood fog, and pierced his body.

With one stab through his body, the student spat out a huge amount of blood, with both eyes dimming out of life. In an instant, his entire body's Qi vanished without a trace.

Everyone was stunned!

What appeared like a wolf slowly walked out from the blood fog, it had a massive body.

It had red eyes, and a body grown with hairs like steel, its sharp fangs showing and also had a pair of horns on its head.

With one claw pierced through the student's body, it used the

other claw to tear the student in half, and started to devour the raw flesh without restraint.

The viscera of the student started to fall out at the point where he was torn apart, and immediately a herd of skinny corpse-eating demons donned in black leather armour appeared from all directions.

The corpse-eating demons had a short and skinny stature with a bald head. Their eyes were of a deep hue of purple, greenish black fangs and spikes growing out of both arms; the lowest form of demons in existence.

Witnessing the appearance of the corpse-eating demons, scared the lights out of everybody, and almost made some of the female students faint.

Nobody dared to rush out of the plaza recklessly anymore, they all understood that they have been surrounded!.

The students gathered together, and representatives from each Sect hurried over and started to group together with the guards who possessed great powers and cultivators with high powers, started calling for outside help.

At this time, a group of lofty weird shadows leaned over from the blood fog outside of the plaza. The heavy stench they carried practically could cause one to pass out.

The people looked towards the shadows, and saw a line up of Demonic Cultivators dressed in armour as black as paint, skin either red or black, walking towards them with blades and spears made of bones.

One who had a blood red cloak strolled over, and following side were people who dressed with luxurious clothes.

It was unclear how the man in the blood red cloak looked, his body was fully clothed, and it was even impossible to distinguish if he was a male or female, his scarlet red eyes was the only thing

that showed through under his cloak.

This person seemed to be the leader of the Demons Cultivators. However, he did not attract much attention. Compared to him, the person standing beside him, called for more worthwhile attention.

“Esteemed City Lord!”

A few students called out.

Yes, the man standing beside the man dressed in a red cloak is the master of Elemental Fire City: Zhou Zi Bu!

“How is that possible? Why would Master City Lord be in cahoots with the Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

“City Lord Master, what exactly are you doing?”

“Are you in cahoots with the Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

Not only the students, even the representatives were shocked, and questions in their minds grew more and more confused.

“Cough, Cough.”(TN:Cough sound)

At that point, Madam Purple Star stood up.

She swallowed a golden shimmery pill, and she seemed to recover quite a bit, while the demonic poison decreased tremendously.

Her voice was weak as she replied to City Lord Zhou Zi Bu: “The Purple Star Academy is situated within the Elemental Fire City. For the demons to sneak in without a sound, they definitely needed the help from someone, or else, they would not be able to accomplish this ambush. Not just anyone, but someone with high authority! I once suspected the officers who guards the city gate, but I never thought that the person who would be willing to be a slave for the Demonic Qi Cultivators would be you, Zi Bu!”

City Lord Zhou Zi Bu remained expressionless, looking neither happy nor sad, and without any frustrations or anger.

“A slave for the Demonic Qi Cultivators? If you would like to think that way, so be it. I don’t care.” Zhou Zi Bu said nonchalantly.

“Esteemed City Lord! Why did you do this!?”

A student who once admired City Lord cried out.

All eyes with suspicion fell onto him.

City Lord remained silent for a while, with his beard dancing to the win, his eyes sunk and lastly, it fell onto Madam Purple Star.

“Madam Purple Star, do you remember my five year old daughter, Zhou Min, who lost her fight to her illness?”

His voice turned hoarse as he asked.

“Min Er?” Madam Purple Star’s eye seemed to flash through a complicated time, but quickly it regained back its gaze, and, with lips like the bark of the trees, she stated: “How could I forget?”

“Then why didn’t you save her?” City Lord asked, with a face filled with despair.

“She was at a point of no return.”

“Your Purple Star astronomy (TN:refers to the seven plants pre-modern astronomy) pill can bring back the dead. With that power, how can you not save her?.”

“Her illness was special. The “Purple Star Astronomy bead” could never cure her! If I forced it on her, it would’ve hastened her death!” Madam Purple Star yelled with all her might.

But, Zhou Zi Bu obviously did not believe.

“Nah, I think you just can’t bear to live without it! Anyway... anyway. Since you weren’t willing to lend a helping hand, then I can only invite my friends, the Demonic Qi Cultivators to help! They promised me that, as long as I do what I am asked to do, to help them sneak into the Purple Star Academy to capture this person, they would bring my Min Er back!”

Zhou Zi Bu said casually with his arms folded.

Madam Purple Star listened and got furious, she bellowed: “Zhou Zi Hu, are you blind? You actually believe what a group of demons said to you? They are using you, using you! Get your head straight!”

“Enough!”

Not waiting for Madam Purple Star to finish her sentence, Zhou Zi Bu howled with a stern face: “Min Er was my only child, I will not let her die so easily. I need to resurrect her! Don’t you dare try to stop me!”

“You...”

Madam Purple Star looked at him in daze. After a long time, she took a deep sigh. It was unclear if she was disappointed or touched.

For his daughter, he did not mind being condemned as a criminal for centuries.

It was hard to hate Zhou Zi Bu but, no matter what, at this point in time, he had already taken his stand as their enemy.

It was as if someone was about to say a word, and the man in the blood red cloak seemed annoyed.

He raised his hand high up to reveal a scaly, red hand.

“Kill them all! Also, capture the young master of the Mu Clan, Mu Feng! Make haste, we don’t have much time!”

Roar! !

A screeching shrill rippled through.

Following the words of the man in the blood red cloak, several demons emerged from the the red fog, seemingly as though they were starved, they rushed derangedly towards to students at the plaza, especially the ones that were feeble.

Mu Feng was shocked and confused, looking at the man in the

blood red cloak and asked: “Why do you want to capture me?”

“Simply because we need the Soul Stone technique!”

Donned in the blood red cloak, he let out a piercing laughter.

As soon as the Mu clan members heard, they scurried to Mu Feng and surrounded him amongst themselves, such that not even a drop of water could get through.

So the demonic Cultivators originally planned this attack to get their hands on the Soul Stone technique. Although the demonic Cultivators are strong in their powers, the Mu Clan did not lose out. If they insist on fighting with the Mu clan now, to obtain the Soul Stone technique, then they would face heavy resistance. It was not easy to defeat the Mu clan, it was also highly likely that they would attract several other countries attention and get annihilated. This was far too huge a risk to take.

But it was different this time around. The Mu clan assigned Mu Feng to partake in this year’s Purple Star Academy exchange event, therefore, the demonic cultivators made use of this chance and planned such an attack.

There were numerous demonic qi cultivators, at least a hundred of them. The one with the weakest power cultivated until the tenth rank of Spirit Intermediate Disciple Stage, and the most powerful was the tenth rank of Spirit Core Disciple Stage. No one knew how powerful the man in the blood red cloak was, but nobody dared accused him of being weak.

“We’re surrounded!”

“Fret not, we outnumber them. If we join hands, we could kill them all!”

“But... But they kill mercilessly. How... How are we going to fight against that?”

“I don’t want to die, would you please let me off the hook?”

The students stood in fear, even some of the mentors faces had turned white.

It had been more than a hundred years since the Purple Star Academy last saw such a commotion. The students all cultivated in peace, and lived peacefully, how would they ever see such a war? When did they ever deal with demons?

The demonic cultivators slaughtered their way in, every representative started using their superior techniques to resist. The students were definitely not strong enough to fight with the demonic qi cultivators.

“Do not worry about the others. Capture Mu Feng first, I want to retrieve the Soul Stone technique from his mouth. If he is unwilling to hand it over, then I will extract his soul and use it to exchange for the technique with the Mu Clan!”

The man in the blood red cloak shouted loudly.

The demonic qi cultivators stopped immediately, giving up on the targets right in front of them, and proceeded to rush towards the Mu Clan.

Mu Feng’s face turned deadly white, and his eyes filled with fear.

“Protect the young master with our lives!”

The Mu Clan yelled.

“Don’t be afraid, Young Master Mu Feng! Our Liu Clan is here to your rescue!”

“I, Qing Hong Men, will not let the Demonic Qi Cultivators succeed!”

“Let’s join hands together, everybody!”

Each party that yelled stepped forward bravely.

Still, there were people who were relieved of what was happening and was planning to leave.

They garnered their own people and stood aside, trying to avoid this fight as much as possible. Once the opportunity arises, they would make use of the chaos and escape with their lives.

In fact, the majority planned on doing so.

As for now, the Su Family had not made a decision yet.

Should they give their all and fight to the death?

Or should they give up on Mu Feng and take the chance to escape?

Chapter 83 - Limitless Sword God (Part 3)

The circumstances right then and there were chaotic. They needed to make a decision.

With her head down, Qing Er talked to Su Huoyu with an indifferent tone: “Young master, Zhou Zi Bu ganged up with the Demonic Qi Cultivators and has the entire Purple Star Academy locked down. No outsiders would know what exactly is happening here, but the Purple Star Academy ultimately sits in the center of Elemental Fire City, I believe that the news will travel fast. Similarly, we will have people coming to our rescue soon. What we need now is not to break out, but to collaborate with Madam Purple Star and the others to resist the Demonic Qi Cultivators! If we break out now, I’m afraid that the Su Family will suffer big losses. Even if we do manage to break out, the other representatives might revile on us! This will bring down the Su Family’s name!”

“What shortsighted opinions you have!”

Su Huoyu yelled: “If we do not run now, then how long do we have to wait till another opportunity arises? The enemy’s target is Mu Feng, not us, do you understand?”

“But... young master Huoyu, just look around us. We are surrounded by the blood fog, it puts our vision to a disadvantage. In addition, this blood fog is not an ordinary fog, it reeks of an evil spirit. I’m afraid the blood fog is a terrifying weapon from the Demonic Qi Cultivators, we should not take this lightly as it is difficult to get out of it!”

Once Su Huoyu heard that, his stubbornness gave way as he felt that what Qing Er said was sensible.

However, born as the Patriarch’s son, he was potentially the next master of the Su Family. No matter how logical Qing Er was, he would refute her. He did not want to be constantly stepped over by

Qing Er's talent. He had the urge to dominate Qing Er, to own her, and to become her true owner.

“Furthermore, although Mu Feng is the target for the Demonic Qi Cultivators, the Mu clan is the aristocratic clan of Soul Stones. With such powerful skills, Mu Feng might be the next nominee for the Mu clan. And since the guards protecting Mu Feng all possess remarkable powers, adding on Mu Feng himself possessing many Soul Stone Spirit Tools, there's no worries!”

Qing Er carefully studied the pros and cons, and informed Su Huoyu.

But the more Su Huoyu listened, the angrier he got, and the more frustrated he got.

“Qing Er, although you are the representative of the Su Family, do not forget your identity. I am the Su Family patriarch's son, so I am the leader here! Don't think you have the authority over me! If I say leave, then we shall leave, understand?”

Su Huoyu's voice was as cold as ice, and it rang through with determination.

Qing Er understood, bit her teeth, and did not refute.

“If you want to stay, then you shall stay. Let me see who will be the one to die! Let's go! Let's go! We will break out!”

Su Huoyu waved as he bellowed.

“Yes, young master!”

The Su Family people shouted.

“Su Qing Er, I will make you think differently of me!”

Su Huoyu glimpsed at Qing Er as he pulled out a weapon similar to a greatsword and ran towards the exit.

Qing Er hesitated. In the end, she clenched her teeth, and followed through.

“If I stay behind and Su Huoyu dies here, if the patriarch finds out, he would be furious. In addition, he would definitely blame me for it, and maybe the young master will be blamed for it!” Sigh, “Nevermind, I only hope Su Huoyu’s judgement is correct!”

Qing Er sighed again and murmured.

The Su Family’s people were the first to break away from the people at the academy. Others looked upon them and started spewing vicious words.

“Su Family! At this point in time, you refuse to cooperate with us, and yet, you dare to run away?”

“You think you can break out of this siege with your own powers? Zhou Zi Bu is a slave for the Demonic Qi Cultivators and they probably set traps all around the Purple Star Academy and you are just seeking your own death!”

“Su Family’s people are afraid of death, they are a disgrace. Everyone should stay away from that clan from today onwards!”

The representatives roared so loud, it pierced through everyone’s ears.

Without any question, the Su Family had become the talk of the town during this difficult time, even the connections the Su Family once had all went down the drain, simply because of the one decision Su Huoyu made.

Qing Er knitted her brows. Not making a sound, she followed all twenty of the Su Family’s people, running out of the plaza.

Nearing the fences, the blood fog got thicker, everything seemed blurry. Other than the red fog, they could not see anything, not even if they were stepping on a piece of white jade, everything seemed gloomy.

Crash.

Out of the blue, a weird sound rang, and a huge amount of dark

red fresh blood flowed through from the front.

“Ah!!!!”

The first few Su Family people, who were soaked in the fresh blood, were screaming when their legs came in contact with the fresh blood. Their legs immediately dissolved, and each of them fell deeper and deeper into the blood. After making a few sounds, they were completely dissolved by the blood.

Seemed like it was not blood, but made up of a lava like, sulfuric acid.

Su Huoyu was frightened, his face turned white, and beads of sweat dripped down profusely. Petrified, he quickly called out to retreat.

“Step back, everybody! Quick! Be careful of the blood! Retreat!”

Qing Er hurriedly yelled.

All of the Su Family’s members stepped back one by one.

Crash, Crash, Crash, Crash, Crash, Crash.

The floor started to shake vigorously, just as an explosion headed in their direction.

Qing Er’s face went pale. As she looked to it, she saw a gigantic shadow surface from the blood fog.

“ROAWR!”

The shadow materialized from the blood fog. At first glance, it was three metres tall with a boar for its head and the body of a human. It was a demonic pig guard!. This demonic pig guard had no fur on its body, it’s eyes were green, and was draped with heavy, metal chains. In its hands was a gigantic, meteor shaped, hammer-like weapon. As the blood mist cleared, it lifted its hammer and smashed it towards the front most Su Family family member.

The member who saw it could not avoid, and raised his Tiger

Blade in an attempt to block the strike.

Slam!

The gigantic hammer smashed onto the Tiger Blade.

Kacha.

The Tiger Blade shattered into pieces, and the hammer continued to smash in the brains of the Su Family family member. The brain exploded, just as a watermelon would. The heavy aura of the evil spirits eroded his body, and quickly disseminated it into pieces. It was a horrifying scene!

Hiss! ! !

Su Huoyu's body temperature sharply fell (TN: literal translation is to be drenched in cold air), while the others were scared stiff, watching in dismay as the entire scene unfolded.

They were definitely not a match!

“The lousiest Demonic Qi Cultivators and demons are already at least fifth rank and above of the Spirit Core Disciple stage. Most of us are only at the second or third rank of Spirit Core Disciple stage. With such a disparity in strength, we can never be a match to them!”

Qing Er gritted her teeth and said: “Young master Huoyu, we need to retreat now, regroup with the others, and wait for a rescue!”

“Regroup? We do not have any way out anymore, didn't you hear what they said earlier? If we go back now, where do we put our faces(TN: too embarrassed)?” Su Huoyu clenched his teeth: “Furthermore, they will be dead sooner or later, so why do we have to go back and die with them?”

“But...young master!”

Whoosh!

At this time, the demonic boar guard's hammer smashed right

through, and struck two of the Su Family 's members.

Seeing the disciples of the Su Family drop dead one by one right in front of her, Qing Er's heart wrenched.

Truthfully, Qing Er loved the Su Family deep inside her heart. They fostered and took care of the lord and lady, and reared the young master. No matter how the Su Family will treat her, no matter what the Su Family will become now or in the future, Qing Er can never erase the strong emotions she has for the Su Family .

“Hahahaha, fresh human meat! Fresh human meat!”

And in this time, a screech pierced through the blood fog, many strong but skinny shadows were headed in their direction.

Looking far, all of them were as skinny as sticks, and their fangs gave them away as corpse-devouring demons.

They ran like mad dogs, and as if their legs were not running fast enough, they placed their hands on the floor and galloped in this direction. Counting them, there were at least thirty of them!

Su Huoyu was stunned as he saw them.

“Back off! Quickly retreat!”

Qing Er yelled!

Which of the Su Family disciples dared to doubt her? They hurriedly retreated without pondering.

“Huoyu, bring out the treasure the patriarch bestowed on you! Use it as soon as possible!”

Qing Er shouted again.

But Su Huoyu did not make a move.

“Young master Huoyu!”

“Regarding that...” Su Huoyu's face was unsightly, he then said: “There is not a treasure anymore.”

Qing Er stood in shock, and remembered something: “Don't tell

me...yesterday you.”

“I had a bet with the Xiao family and some other young master representatives...” Su Huoyu admitted, as he continually took a few steps back, and said to Qing Er: “Qing Er, since you are so powerful and knowledgeable, for the time being, you shall defend for me! I can’t die. If I die, all of you can’t escape without a charge!”

“But...”

“Hold on!”

Su Huoyu yelled. He could care less about the lives of these Su Family members, and fled towards the academy plaza once again.

“Young master!”

“Young master Huoyu!” Qing Er grit her teeth and held on tightly to her embroidered sword: “If I don’t make it out alive, I beg of you, young masters, treat young master Su Yun well, and I shall die with no regrets.”

“That useless young master of yours, I will arrange somebody to award him with hundred thousands of spirit coins, however, what you must do now is to fend off these rascals!”

Su Huoyu limped as he ran, and shouted, without even looking at Qing Er. She was unsure if he would keep to his words.

But after pondering on what Huoyu said, Qing Er was relieved.

She closed her eyes, and held her embroidered sword even tighter.

The Demonic Qi Cultivators had approached from all directions. Su Family’s Qing Er shivered at the sight of their horrifying faces.

“Don’t be afraid, follow me and kill them!”

Qing Er grit her teeth, as she raised her embroidered sword and started the strokes of the Profound Spirit Qi that attributes particularly to the ‘Swift Wind Spirit Qi’. Like a poisonous snake

about to attack, she pounced on the nearest corpse-eating demon.

The corpse-eating demon held the lowest level of cultivation of the Demonic Qi Cultivators, especially the ones with red eyes. Being starved, they attacked without any consideration for defense, unable to avoid Qing Er's stroke. 'Ka cha', it got sliced into pieces as the Swift Wind Spirit Qi bestowed upon the sword acted like a razor sharp blade, slicing the demon into a million pieces.

The Su Family's reputation for talents were not falsified. As Qing Er waved her sword, she managed to behead a few of the corpse-eating demons. The other disciples of the Su Family saw what happened and their morale took a great leap. They fought forward and all the corpse-eating demons that rushed forward died under their swords like cannon fodder.

"Damn it!"

The demonic pig guard howled. Unknowingly, he pulled out a blood stained horn and blew it.

Wu!!!

The majestic sound of the horn boomed.

Qing Er, who stood closest to the proximity of the horn, did not manage to resist and got covered by the roaring sound of the horn. At this moment, everybody's bloodstream started to boil rapidly, which appeared as though it was tossed during a storm in the sea and raging waves. It was a tumultuous situation.

Many of the less powerful Su Family's disciples bled to death, their bodies looked as though they were going to explode. Not to mention them, even Qing Er looked like she was being tortured as her face went red and she clenched her teeth tightly. Her strength decreased tremendously.

"This is a chance!"

The demonic pig seized the opportunity. It threw away the horn in its hand and let out a shout. His massive hammer aimed straight

for Qing Er....

Chapter 84 - Limitless Sword Lord (Part 4: 1/5)

Outside the Purple Star Academy, high ranking generals of the Elemental Fire City led their army and marched crazily into Purple Star Academy, ready for assault.

Many of the city's knights and patriots also joined in to help Elemental Fire City's army.

The evil demon that suddenly appeared in the Purple Star Academy and City Lord Zhou Zi Bu secretly collaborating with the evil demons. This information bombarded and shook the whole of Mystical Mountain Range.

There were many evil demons and, with the aid of Zhou Zi Bu, they managed to create a massive energy barrier and demonic array. With the expert demon cultivators maintaining it, it would not be easy to break through.

Only, the longer they dragged the attack, the higher the number of courageous knights and warriors who stepped forward to join in the resistance would be. This caused the demon's defenses to be strained.

“Persevere! Once master has obtained the soul of the descendant with the Soul Stone technique, then we can torture him for his knowledge with regards to it! With the Soul Stone technique, we can defeat the demon blood sect! With their defeat, we can claim that we have control over the entire South border!”

A slender man held onto a blood red staff, with a skull necklace hanging around his neck. He was an old man with bright red skin. He scanned as he yelled this to every demon who stood defending outside Purple Star Academy.

“Yes! Master!”

The demonic qi cultivators replied respectfully in a low, hoarse

voice.

Although the demonic qi cultivators were getting torn into a million pieces by several experts each second, the demonic qi cultivators did not make a move. Whether they had red or green eyes, they did not fear pain or injuries, they did not even fear death!

Each and every part of them seemed to function like a robot.

With their wild hearts, all they could do is slaughter.

Roar!

This moment, a roar thundered. Following that, a cow-like devilish monster with no skin dashed onto the scene.

The devilish monster spread open its mouth, revealing its sinister steel-like teeth, and out came a blood red tongue which wrapped onto a crystal and handed it over to the Demonic cultivator old man.

The old man took the crystal and smashed it onto the floor.

“Rescue forces!”

The broken crystal showed these two words.

When the old demonic cultivator saw this, his expression stiffened and shouted in dismay: “Master, they have met with some trouble, General Jie Xue, you better send some help down!”

“Yes. Sergeant!”

A man two meters in height, donning a blood red armor quickly came over and muttered a few words.

This general had a fearsome build; His left arm was as thick and coarse as an elephant’s leg. His whole body stained with a scarlet red colour and he had his hair tied into two plaits, half of his face was hollow with no skin nor flesh, all that was left was a blood red skull, and his eyes were filled with rage. His right arm was covered with a blade embellished with a shark’s tooth, his presence was

overbearing.

A series of demonic qi cultivators, donned in dull coloured armour, with an evil stench, followed and proceeded towards the academy plaza.

On the way, there were numerous bodies of dead students. A few of the corpse eating devils gathered around the corpses and started feeding on them.

General Jie Xue saw them and immediately rushed ahead to kick a corpse-eating demon straight in the head, causing it to burst.

“Go and kill the people! All you starving dogs, feeding on corpses and refusing to help out, I will report to master, and have your corpse-eating demons cult go to hell!”

General Jie Xue roared through like a beast’s snarl.

The corpse-eating demons were frightened and, like startled birds, (TN: an idiom to describe birds startled by the sound of bowshot) ran in all four directions. No one dared to chew on another corpse.

General Jie Xue scoffed, then walked forward.

On the road, the demons that saw the impeccable general, all gave way and avoided his path, as though he was like a plague to them.

Bloop, Bloop, Bloop, Bloop...

The bubbles popped from the grass on the road side, and a pool of red blood appeared.

“Blood Dye Array?”

General Jie Xue was stunned, shocked to see this array as he saw the pool of red blood, only to see a man behind a blood red, metal mask, and clothed in a blood red blademaster robe emerging from the blood array.

At the same time, the hundred swords also appeared,

surrounding him. It was a terrifying scene.

The thick stench of blood filled the air, and a cold, murderous demonic Qi rippled out.

But emerging from the blood red pool were sinister, bloody hands, trying to pull this man down. After which, he laid motionlessly on the pool of red blood, not moving an inch.

The hundred swords were soaked in blood, and everything seemed red.

“Who is this person?”

Seeing him emit an evil aura, General Jie Xue did not order for an attack. Instead, he questioned in a low voice.

Since he had demonic Qi, he was most likely a demonic Qi cultivator.

“Don’t know.”

The demonic Qi cultivators who were standing on one side all shook their head expressionlessly.

General Jie Xue groaned softly, and walked towards the pool of red blood.

But the man who was lying on the floor had a sword on his back, and hung around his shoulder was a sword sheath. From the way he dressed, it did not seem like he was a Demonic Qi Cultivator, but he was covered in blood and was reeking of an evil aura, while this array he had set was the Demonic Continent’s most common Blood Dye Array. If he was not a demon, then could it be he is human?

But General Jie Xue was curious, these blood dydword was very peculiar.

What were these swords for?

Also... Why did the stench of blood reek heavier and richer than the normal Blood Dye Array?

General Jie Xue did not know, but, as a leader of a small group of demonic Qi Cultivators, he had to be clear of this man's identity.

“Who are you?”

General Jie Xue raged in a low voice.

But the man did not move, and was still lying motionlessly in the pool of red blood as the blood hands that were covering the body had eased their way back into the pool of red blood.

Roar!!!

The General Jie Xue let out a roar so terrifyingly loud and piercing that it seemed as though he wanted to shake the man awake and use his authority to challenge the man.

But.

Even with the roar, the man was still lying there with his eyes closed, as if he was dead.

“Then, I'll treat you like how a corpse should be treated!!!”

General Jie Xue seemed frustrated and, with a thunderous roar, he raised his right arm with the gigantic blade embellished with a shark tooth, and charged towards the man in the middle of the pool of red blood.

Just he said those words, the man whose eyes was closed, opened. One of his eyes was covered by the metal mask, and a streak of red blood vessel like, grain appeared. The pupil of his eyes dilated, and shimmered under the red light. Accompanying him was a mixture of undescrivable aura. And suddenly, a wind storm appeared, and flushed through the Blood Dye Array.

General Jie Xue noticed this and was alarmed. But since he possessed a great disposition of evilness, he was merely surprised, and had no fear.

There were few things that could create fear in a demon!

In a second, a thing that could make a demon scream in fear

appeared.

Those pair of eyes!

General Jie Xue made eye contact with the pair of scarlet red eyes!

To possess such eyes, you must be cultivating in the Demonic ways for at least three thousand years! Attaining that, it meant you have cultivated the disposition of the evilness and embedded it onto your bones!

General Jie Xue had been practicing the demonic ways for a hundred and thirty years, but he had never seen anything like this terrifying disposition of evil.

He shivered.

The resolve to attack this man was quickly diminished, as General Jie Xue's strength left, never to come back.

Weng Weng Weng Weng...

At this point in time, the hundred swords surrounding Blood Dye Array started to shudder. One by one, the swords started to fly out, and, with the human as their core, they quickly enveloped an area. As the swords gathered, and overlayed, it formed a huge blood ball.

The Demonic Qi Cultivators were stunned as they looked over with their pair of blood red eyes.

And then.

Shua...

The hundred swords split abruptly, still with a human as their core, floated right above the vicinity.

As for General Jie Xue, who was preparing to kill him, he had now been dissolved into a massive blood skeleton as all his flesh had been sliced off, and left aside, piling up like a mountain.

The man in red stood up with difficulties.

The devilish aura grew stronger in those pair of eyes.

“To reincarnate in this life, I have suffered much and have been through many life-threatening situations. I do all this for the sake of protecting my family.”

“Father and mother had gone to leave me, don’t tell me Qing Er is also leaving me alone?”

“No... at the very least, Qing Er has to live...”

Su Yun said as he panted.

He sensed that his head was heating up rapidly, and the blood in his body was boiling madly.

Blood?

Shocked and awoken, Su Yun remembered how he used a demonic Qi Cultivator’s body during the exchange of the Demon Blood....

That body was a rare chance that he used, which could match his own blood.

Probably, the blood in the disposition of evil had permeated through the soul. But even so, this, anyway, at least... it was good this way.

Su Yun sighed, and walked towards the student’s plaza.

The hundred swords floated in the air like feathers. They followed Su Yun in his tracks.

With the Blood Dye Array activating, it could possibly change a person’s Profound Spirit Qi and convert it into a demonic Qi. Although the difference in strength was not much, it would still be able to let a Spirit Cultivator use Demonic Qi.

The demonic Qi was possessed solely by the demonic qi cultivators. Anybody who had the Profound Spirit Qi would not be able to use it. Different from the swordsman’s ‘Swift Wind Spirit Qi’, which solely derives its power from its explosiveness, what

Demonic Qi emphasizes was control and depth.

In the world of cultivation, usually, when a human and demon fought, the demon would claim victory using Demonic Qi, as Demonic Qi could easily help attain a person's potential and allow them to perform better than usual.

This was similar to an explosion!

The reason why the humans feared the demons was because they are crazy, did not die, needed not rest, and reeked of slaughter, wars, and death. They are insane.

This, is what humans were incapable of.

And now, Demonic Qi exists in these ordinary swords, giving them a devilish nature as a head start. They would be more than willing to be controlled by Su Yun, and more than willing to kill.

This was why Su Yun asked Su Xing Yue and Su Xing Yang for the hundred swords.

To make use of the Blood Dye Array such that the swords would possess the "Demonic Qi" was easy, and, in that way, the swords would also be easy to control.

Once the Blood Dye Array had bestowed himself and the swords with "Demonic Qi", they would form an invisible chain to aid in the control. It would be easier to control these swords as compared to the ones previously used at the borders of Mystical Mountain Range to fend off thieves.

This time, a hundred swords flew in unity again.

But this time, it was no longer used to scare people.

This time, they were used to kill.

Maybe they were not unparalleled but, for handling the current situation, they were enough.

The blood swords spun around Su Yun like a tornado, spinning so vigorously that the surrounding Demonic Qi cultivators dared

not walk up front to confront this astonishing man. All of them retreated, and no one dared to stop him as he slowly stepped forward.

Chapter 85 - Limitless Sword God (Part 5: 2/5)

Bang! ! !

Qing Er's frail body convulsed continuously. It was too painful to control, and as she managed to quickly retreat back, she knocked onto the statue located right beside the academy's plaza. Her petite mouth spat out a bit of blood, and her spirit qi became chaotic.

Seeing the demon pig guard approach, Qing Er clenched her teeth.

In theoretical boundaries, Qing Er, who possessed the second level of Spirit Core Disciple, was no match to this demon pig guard. How was she supposed to deal with the demon pig guard who possessed many magical weapons, and not just any magical weapons, they were all extremely weird weapons.

Although Qing Er was the Su Family's inner disciple, she was born with a rather low status. Therefore, she was not respected by the people of the main house. She was only raised to be a talent and did not have many magical weapons. Thus, she could not match up to this demon pig guard.

The Su Family was suffering badly, and Qing Er knew that if she continued fighting, the Su Family might all die, and could only say: "Everybody retreat and head back to the academy's plaza. Reunite with Madame Headmaster and the others to fight together!!"

"Let's do what Miss said!"

"Young master should be doing fine over there! Let's retreat!"

"Cover for Miss, and let's retreat together!"

The Su Family shouted as they gathered together, and ran.

At the center of the academy's plaza, Madame Headmaster and the man who was covered in a blood red cloak had begun fighting.

The two took the match to the air, and charged at each other crazily, both releasing skills that created rays of purple and red spirit qi, which interweaved like raging currents. The scene was unusually liberating. Both of them emitted pulverizing Profound spirit qi, and no one dared to be under their feet for fear of being crushed alive.

The other representatives and students did not take it well either, as there were people sacrificing their lives each second.

The students gathered around the teachers and resisted the demonic qi cultivators who were rushing towards them.

It was a relief that most of the demonic qi cultivators that were attacking them were the corpse-eating demons, as they were greedy and low-lying creatures. The majority of the experts of demonic qi cultivators have gone to attack the Mu clan. Mu Feng stood in the middle of Mu clan, who gathered around to protect him. Lying around him were dead bodies of the Mu clan family members. The floor has become a river of blood, one after another, the demonic cultivators attacked as if there was no end.

Mu Feng turned pale, with fear in his eyes, hurriedly took off the ring from his finger and opened it, and started throwing protective magical artifacts one after another to save one's life, then he threw an already prepared Soul Stones altogether. A great variety of Soul Stone Spirits appeared, such as Wind Tiger, or Ice Eagle. All in all, there were at least more than ten of them. They helped to reduce the stress on the people of the Mu clan. However, this was only temporary, and even with the help of the Soul Stone's power, it was difficult to turn the situation around.

“Quick! Go help out the Mu clan. Do not let these evil, cunning, Demonic Cultivators get what they want. You have to protect master Mu at all cost!!!”

Madame Headmaster, who was sparring in the air, shouted agitatedly.

As this academy's exchange took a turn in events, it did not matter who died. The Mu clan's influence was too great in the Mystical Mountain Range. They and the Soulless Sect held great power! So, nothing must happen to them, or Madame Headmaster's academy would never live a peaceful life.

After the teacher heard, and without hesitation, he brought the students over to lend a helping hand to Mu Feng.

“Eh! Who...who will protect me! I am... am the young master of the Su Family!! If I die, all of you and Purple Star Academy will meet doomsday...Come, everyone!!”

With his calf injured, Su Huoyu staggered towards the academy's plaza with a limp. As he shouted, his eyes darted around in horror. The weapon he had in his hand shook tremendously, but once a demon spirit qi cultivator came near, he would throw out all the precious jewellery that was stored in the bag. These were items that he was not willing to give up, but, at this moment, he needed it to save his life. He had lost his will to fight, like a bird startled by the mere twang of a bow (TN: an idiom to say scared to death).

Everyone was in a life-threatening situation, so who would bother about Su Huoyu?

Suddenly, Su Huoyu saw a demonic qi cultivator who had a pair of horns on his head and a big build charge towards him with an axe made from bone. He instantly hacked at Su Huoyu.

Su Huoyu's colour drained from his face, and let out a miserable scream...

.....

“Young master Huoyu!”

Qing Er's heart jumped, and looked over quickly.

Qing Er saw Su Huoyu laying on the floor with both hands holding a weapon, resisting the demonic qi Cultivator's skull axe. His lips and hands trembled, almost giving way as he could not

contend against the big axe. His weapon also started loosening, and could no longer resist.

“Young master Huoyu!”

Qing Er panicked, and immediately rushed over.

Su Huoyu must not die, if he died here, Qing Er would not be able to get away with it.

Only.

Qing Er was just about to turn around, but she realized she could not move both of her legs.

She looked down to see a pair of white skeleton hands emerged from the floor, dead set on holding down her foot and trapping her. She could not move at all.

“Is this...the demonic qi Cultivator’s mysterious techniques?”

Qing Er widened her eyes and muttered.

Whoosh!

The demon pig guard’s enormous hammer crashed towards Qing Er, followed by a dauntless and brutal demonic qi that came through like a crashing wave!!

In this split second, Qing Er was trapped without a way out. If she did not care about Su Huoyu, why would she be caught by the skeleton hands? During a fight, becoming distracted is a taboo. It could determine the outcome of the fight.

Although Qing Er’s cultivation was high and talented, she did not have much experience. As compared to these demonic qi Cultivators who had been fighting for years, she was considered weak, and this puts her at a disadvantage.

Nevertheless, she did not give up.

Facing the humongous hammer, in an attempt to fend off this attack, she raised her sword which was coated with a layer of

‘Swift Wind spirit qi’.

But this move, though it had fended off the hammer, caused her to vomit a large amount of blood. She was injured badly.

She glared at him and gritted her teeth.

Whoosh!

Suddenly.

A blood red sword flew from the right and pierced through as though it was a red lightning. It landed right in front of Qing Er and resisted the humongous hammer.

Clank!

The blood sword did not seem very powerful as it shattered into a million pieces. But as it shattered, a thick demonic qi that was contained within the sword splashed in all four directions, just like a waterball that was broken, and changed the direction of the humongous hammer. The hammer brushed past Qing Er’s body and crashed into the statue at the side, demolishing it into pieces.

Qing Er stared in bewilderment at the blood sword that was broken in fragments.

The spirit qi in the air had yet dissipated completely. Having a deep understanding of spirit qi, Qing Er was able to feel it, even though the spirit qi was floating in the air.

There were two spirit qis in the air.

One of the two laid towards rapid, agile. It seemed like it was more powerful, stronger than the ‘Swift Wind of spirit qi’, but she had never seen a spirit qi like this before.

The other spirit qi was cold, violent, and it was no other than the ‘Demonic spirit qi’.

Two spirit qi? Why did this sword emit two spirit qi?

Also, looking at the quality of the sword, it did not seem good...

Qing Er observed the broken sword and jumped: “This looks as though...isn’t this a normal sword?”

Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish....

Right then, a series of rustling sound arose, as it were they were firecrackers being lit up. An arrogant spirit qi floated there, it was the usual ‘Demonic spirit qi’ and an indescribable mixture of spirit qi.

Qing Er turned abruptly and glared forward.

Only to see a ferocious blood dragon boltered over.

The blood dragon devoured any demons that it came across, it was unstoppable!!

“That is...”

Stunned, Qing Er gaped.

Lying in the blood dragon were razor sharp, scarlet red swords. They gathered in a bundle and, with a powerful spirit qi, they dashed into the demon pig guard.

With such compelling energy, and with incomparable gracefulness, there was no match for this sword. It made the surrounding demons flinch in cold sweat and quake in fear.

Pu Chi, pu chi, pu chi....

The blood dragon, made up of blood swords conjoined together, attacked the demon pig guard. It merely took two breaths as the hundred blood swords pierced through the demon pig guard. Just as if he was a gigantic hedgehog. Many swords pierced right through its body, while there were several other blood swords shattered upon hitting it...

The demon pig guard stayed still, and all positions were set.

Following.

Swoosh!

Those unbroken blood swords retreated quickly, as though they had received some orders. The swords fled from the demon pig guard and, in an instant, the demon pig guard's body was gushing with blood, spewing out from the wounds. Its gigantic body fell to the ground, dead.

This scene surprised everyone.

The people of Su Family retreated stared at the blood swords with surprised. Their faces were painted with amazement.

“No!! This is Demonic spirit qi, such thick Demonic spirit qi!! Don't tell me...the almighty demons have come?”

“But why would he kill the the people of Demonic clan??”

“Be careful of this man!!”

The representatives warned each other.

Qing Er saw a person, donned in a blademaster's attire, with a mask to cover the disfigured face. His hair floated in the air. On his back, he carried a precious sword as black as carbon, and a sword sheath hung on his waist. He held onto the shaft of a light weight, precious sword. Lastly, surrounding him was an innumerable number of blood swords.

Swords! Swords! And more swords....

This man was surrounded with swords. It was impossible to count how many swords he owned, or controlled!

What made people fear and hair stand was, right there and then, this man was covered in fresh blood, and he had a pair of blood red eyes, as if he was ready to kill.

This man walked over and, with each step, a blood red footstep would appear. It was not clear whose fresh blood was dripping down from his blademaster outfit.

“Eh?”

The man with a blood red cloak, who was fighting with Madame

Headmaster sensed the presence of this person, shook, and asked: “Who are you?”

Then.

The man did not say a word, but went up close with Qing Er quickly.

Qing Er, shocked, pulled out her embroidered sword, ready to make a move.

“Follow me!”

He said with a hoarse voice with a tinge of sadness in his tone.

Qing Er was shocked. Though it was hard to discern whose voice it was, but...deep down in her heart, she had some familiarity to it.

Who?

Who was it?

Why was it so familiar?

Qing Er could not help but put down the sword in her hand, and trusted this odd man.

“Miss, be careful!!”

The Su Family yelled, but... no one tried to get close.

The blood sword man was unwilling to say more, with one hand holding Qing Er’s waist, he wanted to bring her away from this with force.

“No! I can’t just leave, if you are here to save me then, please, bring Su Huoyu along! Young master Huoyu is the patriarch’s son. If anything happens to him, I won’t be able to get away with it! I don’t want to be dragged into it... please just help me.”

Sensing that the blood sword man had no ill intentions, Qing Er said promptly.

Although the blood sword man’s spirit qi was not considered as valiant, she was unsure why she thought this man’s potential was

way higher than hers.

The blood sword man heard, and frowned: “Su Huoyu? Where is he?”

“There!” Qing Er pointed to Su Huoyu who was whining on the ground.

Swish...

Without a word, ten over blood swords rushed over, flew over to Su Huoyu.

Su Huoyu had no time to defend, not even a murmur, and was pierced by the blood red swords, like a hornet nest. He died a horrible death.

“What?” Qing Er was shocked.

Chapter 86 - Limitless Sword God (Part 6, 3/5)

Shocked!

Completely shocked!

Not only Qing Er, even the people from the Su Family were flabbergasted.

“You bastard!”

Qing Er clamped her teeth tightly as she tried to break free from the man’s hand, pulling out her sword and pointing it at him.

“You...What are you doing? Why did you kill young master Huoyu!”

“Didn’t you wish for him to die?”

“This asshole, why wouldn’t I wish he was dead? But if he died, then my young master and I would be dragged into this, did you know that?”

Qing Er bit her lips.

The reason why she with Su Li Xiong to be reared under the patriarch was mainly Su Yun.

Old master and lady had passed away, and the young master of the Su Family had no one to rely on. Previously, he had offended many. If I did not enter the patriarch’s faction, then the young master would get bullied, or even be targeted for revenge, so I had to stay on in the main house... I need to protect young master.

Clenching her fist tight, Qing Er said.

But since Su Huoyu died in her care, it would be difficult for her to run away from the blame.

The disfigured blood sword man said coldly: “Su Huoyu is dead, but you’ll be fine. All you have to do is pretend that you’re severely

injured. Moreover, this event took place all too sudden that it can be taken as an accident. It is hard to control the manpower, and you are the talent that the Su Family has meticulously reared. Unless it is a grave mistake, the patriarch will not punish you! Take this pill, it's a fake injury dan made from the Blossom Heart Valley. Once eaten, you will enter a pseudo injured state. Hence, you could eat this when you are on the way back to Su Family. If you are injured heavily, the Su Family will not punish you, thus, you need not worry! Alright, there isn't much time, you have to leave with me quickly!"

After saying this, the man reached out his hand. In his hand was a green, medicated bead.

Stunned, Qing Er asked: "You... Who are you and why do you know so much about us?"

"Me?"

The blood swordsman wanted to tell Qing Er so badly, but he bit down on his lower lip and hesitated.

"You are hiding your identity, and also have killed master Su Huoyu, why should I leave with you?"

Qing Er retreated as she queried in a low voice.

Upon seeing this, the blood swordsman's heart dropped.

Upon closer observation, what Qing Er asked was correct. He had yet to reveal his identity, who knew what motives he had? Why should Qing Er put her trust in him? Although the Su Family had several disciples in succession, and Su Huoyu did not hold any high positions, ultimately, he was a son of Su Li Xiong, and his death had a great influence.

"If you don't come with me and stay here, you'll die. So why don't you trust me this time round?"

Su Yun, disguised as the blood swordsman muttered.

He would like to reveal his identity, but, if he did, he might bring endless worries to Qing Er.

He had stolen the Heavenly Crystal, seized the Everlasting stone, and even offended the Hu Qianmei, and Ming Ying School. The Immortal Sword Sect and the Ming Ying School would not let him off so easily. All Qing Er needed to know about him was that he was the useless Su Yun of the Su Family. There was no need for her to know about the ruthless Su Yun.

But, just as she was about to make a decision, her expression changed and shouted: “Be careful!”

Su Yun stood in shock, so Qing Er pushed him aside.

Bang!

A ray of blood sword dashed over, and pierced through Qing Er’s shoulder blade. She dropped to the ground and vomited fresh blood.

Though not fatal, this attack had caused a serious injury to the girl.

Su Yun was appalled.

He ensured that Qing Er would not recognize him in this dressing, so why did she still save him?

Looking at Qing Er who was lying on the ground, Su Yun’s boiling blood had become peaceful.

He walked over, and helped Qing Er up. From his storage ring, he retrieved a medicated bead, and stuffed it into the girl’s petite lips to stop the bleeding. He then turned around, and walked towards the man who initiated the attack.

And the man was no other than the man in the blood red cloak.

Madame Purple star was held hostage by Zhou Zi Bu and the man in the blood red cloak left the fight. While he did not capture the stubborn Mu Feng, he instead came right after Su Yun.

“You want to kill me?”

Su Yun said.

“You have killed my people, why shouldn’t I kill you?”

The man with the blood red cloak laughed: “Tell me who you are, why you are here, and maybe, I will let you go!”

“I only want to take her away!”

“I’m afraid not, no one is leaving here today!”

The man with the blood red cloak looked up. Under his cloak hid a pair of shimmering eyes that startled people: “I see that you have a disposition of evilness and Demonic Qi on your body. Tell me who you are, where you stand, what’s your power. And if you kowtow to me, I shall not kill you!”

“If I kowtow to you, will you let me take her away?”

Qing Er overhead and was puzzled.

This man... Was willing to put down his pride to ensure my safety?

Who is he exactly?

The man in the blood red cloak shook his head: “She is not demon!”

“By saying so, she must die?”

“I have to fake an accident, or else there’d be trouble and everyone here has to die! If you continue to resist me, you might not even stay alive!”

Su Yun fell silent after stating.

“AH!”

Just as Zhou Zi Bu got distracted, Madame Headmaster threw a strike leaving him with a huge hole on his chest. He fell from midair and landed straight on the ground, throwing up a few mouths of fresh blood before his eyes turned heavy.

“City Lord Master!”

The guards who served the City Lord Master cried in pain.

“Blood Soul... Master... Remember... Please... Please revive my daughter by all... By all means.”

Using his last breath, he shouted weakly, in a cold and hoarse voice. The sentences were broken and, once he finished his last sentence, he laid motionlessly on the floor and died.

“Hahahahaha, he’s so gullible! Though I am well cultivated, I don’t hold such powers. It isn’t an easy job to bring back a dead person! This idiot, how can you believe my words? Hahaha, he died with wishful thinking! Dumb. He is so dumb! Hahaha.”

The Blood Soul Master, worshipped by Zhou Zi Bu, laughed in ridicule.

“You are a ridiculously cunning bastard!”

Madame Headmaster yelled.

She had killed Zhou Zi Bu, but she felt remorseful. She had a thing with Zhou Zi Bu, but she never thought there would be a day like this where she had to kill him with her own hands.

“Ah!”

Madame Headmaster held on to her magic staff and rushed over with her body full of injuries.

As she was in the air, her wrinkly, thin palms changed a total of thirteen poses all in succession. It was as though she was drawing stars with her hands, she created a profound mysterious energy like rippling waves.

But, the Blood Soul Master had no fear. He stared at Madame Purple Star, who was dashing towards him and, with a sudden burst of movement, he turned into a ray of blood that crashed towards Madame Headmaster.

Hurriedly, Madame Headmaster created more techniques, and a

series of purple coloured stars covered the blood ray like a universe.

A thick and overbearing power burst out in all directions, causing tremors. The floor broke into pieces and the destructive Qi, like the after event of the ripples of the waves, floated in the air. No one dared to go close to the fighting area.

Mu Feng was still fighting with the almighty demonic qi cultivators. The bodies of the demonic Qi Cultivators, humans were lying all around, piling up like mountains. It was as though the fresh blood was going to drown the entire academy's plaza.

Su Yun noted and dared not interrupt. He picked Qing Er up and left without considering if she would mind it or not.

Even with the Blood Dye Array's help, if he was capable enough to control a hundred swords to kill, they were ultimately just be ordinary swords. While their power to destroy had increased several folds, it was not powerful enough. The swords could easily kill the normal demonic qi cultivators before arriving at the Spirt Core Disciple Realm. However, if they were to encounter Higher class Blood Spirits or the elite demonic Qi Cultivators, it would be considered as sending himself to his grave.

So what could be done now, was only to run.

Face pale and sweating, Qing Er pressed onto her wound, and wanted to say something. But she saw the man in blood fighting so hard to save her, so she did not resist.

“Who...are you exactly?”

Qing Er asked.

This silhouette... this spirit qi, it was so familiar... why did he come and save me?

Roar! ! ! !

Su Yun heard the loud roars and set his gaze forward, a group of

demonic Qi Cultivators and demons were heading straight over.

They either held axes, or pikes. Each and every one of the demons had thick fresh blood covering their body, each eye drowned in a desire for war.

“Su Family!”

Su Yun shouted loudly.

The disciples of the Su Family ran over, but none dared to venture close to Su Yun. After all, he was a man covered in fresh blood, and he had a spirit qi so vicious. Even though he saved Qing Er, but that did not mean anything.

Instead he said: “Take your lady away, I’ll handle the situation here!”

“Okay!”

Everyone replied.

Su Yun handed Qing Er over to a female Su family member and used the hundred swords to kill the demons.

The blood red swords spun at a very fast speed just like they were a churner. Approaching the demons, they sliced each and every demon into a million pieces and, in return, about seven to eight swords were destroyed for each demon killed. At this rate, there would not be enough blood swords to kill the demons.

He had no one to blame for not cultivating a level high enough, so he could not control higher grade swords. If he had managed to do so, the ending would not have come to this.

Once this matter is over, I need to practice properly.

Su Yun clenched his teeth.

Very quickly, the demons were all killed, but Su Yun was only left with four blood red swords.

He took out the ‘Thousand Deep’ from his sword sheath and left

with Qing Er and the Su Family.

Once they crossed the path of fresh blood, they would be near to the outskirts.

“Stop! Who are you!”

A group of Demonic Qi Cultivators guarding the Purple Star Academy rushed over and yelled.

Su Yun’s demonic Qi was so strong and thick, the elderly amongst the demons roared in a demonic language mainly to test Su Yun. If he could not answer, then the elderly would send people to kill him.

“It’s me! I’m tasked by the Blood Soul Master to bring these people out! Open the door quickly and let me leave!”

Su Yun answered in a demonic language calmly.

Qing Er and the people surround him seemed frightened listening to them chatter one sentence after another in a demonic language.

So actually, this man is a demon....

How could humans understand the demon language? The elderly saw that the man could speak the demon language fluently, and let out a relief. But he was always vigilant and he stared at the people of Su Family: “All of them are the normal Spirit Core Disciples? Where does the Blood Soul Master want you to bring them to? The invincible cultivators from the Elemental Fire City are all rushing here. Once you get out of this place, you’ll be dead. Don’t you know that?”

“I know, but... this is the orders I got from Blood Soul Master!”

Su Yun replied in a demonic language but, he already had his hands in the sword sheath and was holding on the the shaft of Thousand Deep sword.

Qing Er seemed to understand Su Yun’s intention and quickly said: “Please stop, they have a lot of people and they have at least a

rank of ten in the Spirit Core Disciple cultivation. You are no match for them! Stop it now! Let's retreat back to the plaza!"

But.

It was too late.

This was the last line of defense. Su Yun could not give up.

Moreover, all he had to do was to create a pitfall!.

As long as he could bring Qing Er away from this place....

No matter how strong the opponent was, he had to fight!

"Let's go!"

Su Yun bellowed and dashed out like a savage shadow, he landed right in front of the elderly in a defenseless position and pulled his sword in the direction.

Hong!.

The Thousand Deep sword set off a magnificent light.

The first of the three explosive strikes resounded....

Chapter 87 - Limitless Sword God (Part 7, 4/5)

Swish!

With a sudden attack, Su Yun's massive and ferocious sword slashed over towards the elder. There was no time for the old demon to defend.

The sword chopped its way through the elder's frail shoulder, and on the sword emitted 'True Divine Spirit Qi', blowing up the elderly who fell backwards to the demons.

A riot broke out amongst the demons. One by one, they threw their stares over and, without saying a word, dashed over.

There was a gap in between the defense line!

"Let's go!"

Su Yun spoke.

Qing Er's pupil dilated and looked at the disfigured blood swordsman in amusement, as if wanting to say something. But every time the words were almost spilling out, she could not say anything.

Eventually, she just gritted her teeth and brought her people away as well.

The elderly flew with the attack of the sword, but it was nothing much. The strength of the sword was not fake but, though he looked frail, Qing Er could not determine his cultivation. According to the thick aura he was emitting, Profound Spirit Qi, she knew the elderly's cultivation was not simple.

What cultivation rank did Su Yun hold?

The fourth stage of spirit intermediate realm!

Even if he used the [Limitless Sword Arts] to control a hundred

swords, or the Blood Dye Array to increase his spirit qi's power, and so what is he had the divine sword in Limitless Sword sheath to amplify his power... how much could he amplify his strength?

Maybe, if he met up with the fifth or sixth rank of the Profound Spirit Cultivators, he could easily defeat them.

But if there was a cultivator that possessed fifth or sixth stage of spirit core realm... then it was a given that he could not claim victory. Even if the Su Family's talent, Qing Er, was used for the fight, there was not a chance for them to win!

It was impossible to rely on magical weapons and Profound techniques to make up for their deficiency in cultivation.

The demons flooded in like water. Su Yun ordered the four blood swords over while the people retreated quickly, scanning around to see if there was a place to hide.

“Little rascal, to have the audacity to resist so many demons! Are you looking for death? Quickly run already!”

The sword elder felt the surrounding dense Demonic Qi, flew out and shouted.

“Not yet!”

With a fixed expression, he stared ahead.

After chopping down the commander of the demons, these demons scrambled over. The gap had yet to be loosened, and so the people who came along with Qing Er had went over to attack furiously, which was near to the walls of the Purple Star Academy.

The energy barrier surrounding Purple Star Academy suffered several blows. When the time was right, all that was required was to tear down the walls and the people could enter from the outside.

The rest was dependent on Qing Er.

Su Yun sighed in relief and pierced his last four blood swords into the demonic Qi cultivators.

Pu chi!

The four blood swords disintegrated in rays of blood-like light, piercing through the chest of the Demonic Qi Cultivator.

But, in the next second, a huge hammer chopped from the side and crushed the four blood swords into small pieces.

The hundred swords he had prepared for this had all been destroyed.

Su Yun's eyes opened wide as he looked at the demon who destroyed the blood swords in shock.

It was another demon pig guard.

"Though I don't know who you are, since you hurt the commander, you should be dead! Everyone, tear him into pieces!"

The demon pig guard waved his huge axe and yelled.

Su Yun turned green after hearing what he said and retreated quickly.

The heavenly crystal was still recovering, and could not be used. To come face to face with so many demons was practically to stand at death's door.

"Bring this rascal to me! All of you, go to the region to defend, don't let out a gap. If we can't even contain the few that managed to escape, once the people outside attack, we all have to die!"

Instantly, the Demon elder stood and patted on the shoulder that was slashed by Su Yun and howled.

"Yes, esteemed commander!"

The demonic Qi Cultivators did not dare to disobey the elderly's commands, and so they shouted in respect, followed by heavy footsteps as they marched towards the walls behind Purple Star Academy. Using their Demonic Qi, they maintained the demonic array.

Once the demonic array was formed, the gap was sealed. Nobody could enter or leave Purple Star Academy.

At least Qing Er and the Su Family had left.

Su Yun sighed. Without any hesitation, he turned and ran away.

But how could the Demon elder let him off the hook so easily?

Swish!

A ray of black Qi came over, striking Su Yun's back. He stumbled for a few steps, before rolling onto the floor, spitting out a mouthful of blood. His power depleted tremendously.

"Your power is so weak yet you have the guts to challenge me. You have no idea what death tastes like. Wait till I eat your flesh, suck your blood, and draw out your soul, then you'll understand what's powerful. And you'll see what kind of people you should never, ever mess with!"

The demon elder clenched his fist and walked over to him. Red specks of light flickered in his sunset hued eyes, blood vessels start to bulge around his eyes, and his teeth came loose and started to change into razor sharp fangs...

He extended his hand and pierced right through Su Yun's heart, wanting to dig out his viscera to devour.

This elderly must have evolved from the lowest level of corpse-eating demon.

Once again, Su Yun kept a calm expression and threw 'Thousand Deep' sword towards the demon elder..

But just as the sword flew out...

Ba ta!

A wrinkled hand lightly pinched the edge of the Thousand Deep sword, stopping it in its tracks. The demonic Qi exploded. The demonic Qi and the Pure Divine Spirit Qi had disappeared into thin air.

Su Yun's stared blankly.

“What a powerful cultivator! His power is so much higher than you, Su Yun! What audacity you have, to challenge such a powerful cultivator?”

The anxious sword elder anxiously articulated.

“To save my family, what do I dare not do?”

Su Yun replied.

“Aye, never mind! I'll help you this time round!”

The sword elder sighed. As he was about to strike to eradicate the commander of the demons...

“Not needed!”

Su Yun expressed anxiously. Twisting his wrist, the Thousand Deep emitted a strong ‘True Divine Spirit Qi’.

Unable to defend in time, the ferocious True Divine Spirit Qi blew him away.

Su Yun crawled up as quickly as he could, and sprinted while holding onto his chest.

“The three strokes of Thousand Deep's True Divine Spirit Qi gets stronger with each stroke, hence it could force the bastard to retreat. However, this is only temporary! Once the three strokes are used, it will become an ordinary sword, what else do you have to go up against him?”

“For as long as we can hold on, we will hold on! Qing Er and the Su clan have left Purple Star Academy, so the people outside can arrive anytime. By that time, the demon army will be utterly defeated, then I will survive! All we have to do now is delay!”

Su Yun panted and said.

“Survive?” The sword elder shook his head: “Have you forgotten how you looked like now? Not a human nor a demon, and you reek

of demonic Qi. How will you explain that to them? How will the people attacking from outside believe you are a human? How can they not kill you? I think it's better you think of a way out of this place!"

Su Yun took a deep breath and expressed: "To remove the Blood Dye Array is no difficult task, so senior doesn't have to worry about this. What's important now is...."

Bang!

Su Yun had yet to complete his sentence when he was attacked from behind again. He fell forward and knocked into a few big trees before landing on the ground.

He screamed in pain before shouting: "The most important thing now is to...eradicate this old bastard..."

"Okay!"

The sword elder nodded and replied.

"Die!"

The commander of the demons jumped up suddenly and turned into a herd of black clouds, covering Su Yun.

Everything that the black clouds covered, be it stone, grass, fake mountains, or even bodies, all dissolved into pieces.

Seeing the black cloud charging over, Su Yun's heart dropped. He flipped, and dodged the black clouds, landing on the area where all the trees had dissolved into small pieces.

He sprinted as the black clouds chased behind him.

"Almost! Little rascal, you can reach the academy's plaza soon! Once you join hands with them, you can also survive! After all, you saved Qing Er, so they will not see you as a Demonic Qi Cultivator!!"

As Su Yun was nearing the academy's plaza, and the sword elder stated elatedly.

With the injuries on his body, Su Yun tolerated the pain without making a sound. He swallowed the blood that was in his throat and moved forward.

The elderly knew that he could not catch up and so he turned back into his original form and chased. When he came near to Su Yun, he threw a fist out.

With the intention to kill.

But as though as Su Yun had eyes grown on the back of his head, he turned just at the moment the wrinkled, yet vicious fist was speeding through and hacked downwards.

Thousand Deep's third sword!

A resounding sound rang through!

The rays of the Thousand Deep Sword were set free.

Like fireworks, it was only beautiful for a split second.

A burst of energy as heavy as hundred thousands kilograms took the form of Qi emerged from the sword, and landed ruthlessly on the demon elder's palm. The Qi absorbed into this skin and to other parts of the body and was charging around violently.

The demon elder knew there was something odd about Su Yun's sword, but he never thought that each sword was more powerful than the previous one. He took note of it and waited for the sword to come closer to turn into a defense position where his demonic Qi exploded from this fists and very quickly, lined up to form a line of defense.

But the situation remained the same...

Bang!

The demon elder took a blow and flew back, knocking into a pillar at the side. This attack was abnormally vicious, and his Demonic Qi was turning in turmoil. He vomited a mouthful of fresh blood. At the same time, the pillar collapsed, burying him

beneath the rubble!

Su Yun was delighted!

“Quick, let’s go!”

The Sword Elder cheered.

Su Yun nodded, who in the right mind would hesitate? He turned around and ran for his life.

Nearing the academy’s plaza, they saw endless number of the corpse of the demons, yet saw very few demons. The demons must have been sent to the plaza to help out.

I’m unsure of what the situation was like at the plaza, but hopefully it will be better at Madame Headmaster’s side.

Su Yun thought.

In his memory, this crisis was enormous for Purple Star Academy, but not many knew the specific details, thinking there was a higher up trying to cover up the truth and it would be hard to dig it out.

But there was one thing everyone knew, the Purple Star Academy would not decline just from this.

No matter how bad the situation was, no matter how many students or representatives died.

Hua la!

The entrance was turned into a blood river. Su Yun crossed over it and entered the plaza.

The moment he stepped into the plaza, a vigorous wind hit on his face.

Stunned, he looked up and was shocked to see what stood in front of him....

Chapter 88 - Unleashing the Sword!

Half of the disciples who attended the conference had lost their lives at the hands of the demons. Many elders and their representatives were also badly injured.

And the main character of this incident was Mu Feng, the one the Demonic Qi Cultivators came specifically for, was left all alone in this world. There were no survivors of the Mu Clan left, as they had all fought and sacrificed their lives for Mu Feng.

At that moment, everyone gathered up as they were already surrounded by the demons.

When the ambush happened, the majority of the people in the academy either fled, or were killed off by the demons. The people on the plaza had no reinforcements. On top of that, Zhou Zi Bu became a spy and manipulated the academy's power. In essence, the people in the academy were forced to a corner.

A few of the elders held up and were still able to support Madame Headmaster because they had sat right in the front.

She had wanted to use her spirit Qi to heal her wounds but, as soon as she moved, she immediately vomited three mouthfuls of blood continuously. With a pale and white complexion, her gaze turned dull, as though she was losing her life Qi and was nearing death.

The Blood Soul Master's side did fare any better. In the midst of the demons, they gasped for air as though they were about to die from suffocation.

“Madame Headmaster is a scholar, she is very knowledgeable about the Profound Spirit Qi, and has a high level of cultivation! It was obvious Zhou Zi Bu had planned this all along in the dark, yet she could fight till now, brilliant! She is brilliant!”

The Blood Soul Master stated. Though his words were filled with

awe, his tone was arrogant.

No matter how powerful you were, didn't you die in my hands?

“A strong build with a thick aura of Profound Spirit Qi and a sturdy spirit will be able to increase the powers of us, demons! The target is Mu Feng, but if we can destroy all of you, and draw your bodies, then the demons will be able to break through and become stronger! In the near future, it will be easy for us to destroy all those Demon Blood sect worms, which is also one of the reason why I will attack you!”

The Blood Soul Master laughed sinisterly: “Now, which one of you will be willing to submit to me? I promise, when I suck your flesh and soul, I will let you die peacefully!”

“What a despicable demon, how can he still stand there and torture the hearts of people?”

Madame Headmaster supported her body and stood up. With a resolute face: “If you want to kill, so be it. If you don't then get out now! Why are you wasting your time here saying things that aren't important? We will never bow to you!”

“Yes! We will never bow to such despicable demons like you! Worst come to worst, this battle will come to an end!”

An elder from the Purple Star Academy stood up and yelled. With his raging eyes, people who knew him were well aware that half of his students died in the hands of the demons.

Seeing how determined Madame Headmaster was, several other representatives also shouted out.

“If you want to kill, then come straight at us! Why are you still talking so much? Don't tell me you're starting to be scared of us yeah?”

“Come on! At worst, we'd all be dead, what's there to fear?”

“Bastard!”

Even when they were at wit's ends, they yelled continuously without any fear.

Being able to fight till the last moment, how many would fear death?

The Blood Soul Master frowned, as he never thought these guys would not be afraid of death!

Roar!

Right at that moment, the demons at the side let out an alarming roar.

The Blood Soul Master turned curiously towards the plaza and saw a man drenched in fresh blood. He was carrying a bloodsword and a blood red sheath as he ran over.

“Huh?”

The Blood Soul Master laughed: “Didn’t you run away? Why are you back again?”

Su Yun was shocked, but he did not say a word. He looked around for an escape road.

It was obvious that Madame Headmaster could not hold on any longer. This bunch of demons were well prepared, and, in addition to that, they had Zhou Zi Bu working as a spy to help them. This attack was so sudden that Madame Headmaster and her people were caught unprepared, but it seemed like going against her still resulted in the crushing of some demon practitioners.

Scanning around, there was no escape road. The commander of the demon clan was catching up. If he did not come up with a plan soon enough, he might die here.

In daze, he noticed an alley suddenly.

The alley could lead to the Blood Dye Array.

He could not care less. Madame Headmaster might not be able to hold on any longer. What was more important at that point was to

keep his life safe.

The moment he was about to make a move, two demons ran out of the alley.

Shocked, Su Yun retreated quickly.

Su Yun did not have much strength left, how could the Blood Soul Master not see through this? The aura of this person was not strong, and his cultivation was considered low, so he would not last long.

“The people outside should be attacking soon, but we still have enough time to enjoy a feast!”

Waving both hands like sticks, the Blood Soul screeched in laughter and shouted: “ Okay! My slaves, let’s begin feasting now!”

With that, the bloody aura around the Blood Soul Master grew and his eyes was becoming increasingly filled with evil.

He looked at Madame Headmaster greedily as he licked his dried lips. In his eyes, there was only hunger.

It was not just him, the demons around him started to drool and stared at the group of people impatiently.

A shiver went down Su Yun’s spine, the two demons that ran out from the alley was glaring ferociously at him.

“Rascal, you’ve got nowhere to else to go eh?”

Su Yun did not give up. The sword elder inside could only sigh.

“These two monsters ain’t scary. What’s scary is the commander that is chasing us. The plaza is filled with Demonic Qi Cultivator’s demons, and the red fog array has yet to subside, there is no way I can escape.”

Tightening his fists, Su Yun was filled with hatred and discontent.

He never even thought he would land himself in such a plight.

He must not die. He had yet to finish the plan he started, so he could not die here.

Su Yun stared at the small alley with determination as though his heart was filled with ice.

If he rushed into the small alley, there might be a chance of survival!!

“Kid, in this situation, you only have one way to save yourself, but you’ll have to use its help!”

The Sword Elder suddenly said.

Hearing that, Su Yun became calmer and asked: “What method could that be? Please enlighten me!”

“On your back!” The Sword Elder merely said this two words.
Back?

Confused, Su Yun turned and as if he thought of something, his face brightened up, “Senior, do you mean... the death sword?”

“The Blood Soul Master has a high level of cultivation, but when he fought with Madame Headmaster, he used up a huge portion of his energy. You can use this death sword to exterminate him!”

“But it is impossible to pull out the death sword. What’s all the meaning in saying these?”

Su Yun gritted his teeth.

“If you can’t pull it out, it’s because it isn’t content with you! Since it isn’t content with you, you can try and persuade it, and ask of it to help you temporarily!”

The Sword Elder muttered.

“Convince it? Is it that simple?”

“It all depends on one’s action, this is the only way to save yourself. If heaven isn’t able to move it promptly, what else do you have in mind?”

The Sword Elder sighed again: “Though I still have some strength, but that wouldn’t be enough to resist the Blood Soul Master. The only thing that can save you right now is the death sword, and that solely depends on you.”

Su Yun fell silent after hearing his piece.

Immediately, a fierce determination plastered over his face.

What other ideas did he have at that moment?

No, as such, there was only one way to try.

He reached out for the death sword behind his back and held on to the sword sheath.

But.

The sword did not move an inch no matter how hard he tried to pull it out of the sheath.

In anger, Su Yun lashed out: “I know my powers are weak, but I need your help right now! Quick, come out of the sheath and help me!!”

Su Yun mustered all his strength and tried again after his pleading, but the death sword stayed completely still in the sheath.

“Fuck your mother! Are you coming out or not?”

Su Yun could not help but cursed.

“Rascal, um... don’t curse! Beware, it might get angry. Besides... it does not have a mother for you to fuck.”

“.....”

“....”

Wu!

Right then, a wu rang through. The two monsters that emerged from the small alley rushed over, clapping their four claws towards his brain.

Su Yun did a flip and parried the attack.

As he got up, he placed the Thousand Deep Sword back into the sword sheath and clasped his hand on the shaft of the sword, pulling with all his might.

“You better fucking get out!! Come out!”

Su Yun pulled with his might but the death sword would not budge.

Swish!

The demon claws attacked once again.

The colour on Su Yun’s face drained, but he still managed to avoid the attack.

Bang!

The humongous claws crashed onto the floor and in that split second, the ground exploded. The demonic Qi surged, splashing in all directions.

Swiftly, Su Yun pulled out Thousand Deep and sliced one of the demons. But when the sword sliced through, it merely caused a superficial wound on it.

The three swords strike had been used and the sword itself had no energy anymore. It was equivalent to an ordinary sword, with no powers at all.

Bug eyed, Su Yun picked himself up and ran.

“Little rascal!!!!!”

A snarl rang throughout the plaza.

Su Yun lifted his gaze to look and saw that the demon who was sliced by the Thousand Deep was chasing after him again.

His face twisted and eyes raging in fire. It could be seen that he could not wait to gnaw Su Yun’s bones, chew his flesh off, and skin him...

The commander of the demonic clan.

Su Yun's heart trembled.

If the death sword still did not help, it was a definite he would lose his life!

Su Yun clenched his teeth and his heart sunk. A horrible scene was painted in his head.

The rain at night was heavy, and the grave that sat at the peak of the mountain looked so lonely.

It was that hopeless and despaired eyes.

It was the face that spoke the exhaustion from hoping...

If I die, nothing would be changed, everything would return back to how it was.

God has given me one chance.. Am I to waste it like this?

“Death Sword!”

He shouted with his hoarse voice.

“Is your existence merely for a massacre?”

The words fell as though the rocks were rubbing against one another, causing friction that pierced the ears of others, but each word tug the strings of one's heart.

“The existence of the sword is not merely just for massacring, but it is for protection.”

“A sword is between the heavens and earth. The true purpose of its existence is definitely not for the sake of being created as a tool of death.”

“I, Su Yun, have made several mistakes, and lost loved ones. When I awoke, I regretted everything. I can turn myself into a demon to protect the ones I have lost, I can do anything for the things I care about. I can also forsake my state of mind, abandon my soul, and used the dirtiest method to handle this situation.

Maybe I am a despicable person, maybe what I'm doing is not noble. But I don't care because I have a clear conscience in all the things I've done. As long as the people that I care about are living well. That is the only thing that I want."

"What about you? Do you only admit to the powerful ones? Do you only care about the existence of power?"

"Do you think that the only people that can realize your potential are the ones with the greatest power? Do you think the weaklings ain't good enough for you?"

"If that's the case, then you are so wrong!"

"I, Su Yun, will admit that I'm weak. I only possess the fourth stage spirit intermediate realm, but so what? Will I always remain at the fourth stage spirit intermediate realm? Will I always be the weakling? No, maybe in the next second, I can be a powerful one."

"Now, I need your help, not your empathy!"

"This is not a request, but an order!"

"Whether or not you will unsheath, and if you'd help or not, I will attack. Though I have no way out, I'm not afraid of battle, even if the opponent is a hundred times stronger than me!"

"I'm not afraid!"

"And you... are you afraid?"

Su Yun muttered, but he did not pull the sword this time round. He stared at the commander of the demon clan and the other two monsters who were running towards him...

He stored up all his True Divine Spirit Qi, and held it in his hands. He had decided.

There was no second thoughts!

Even if he was unarmed, he would fight with all his life.

Because...

He was unwilling to die!

His soul was unwilling to give up!

Keng Qiang. (TN: A deep and ringing sound came out)

At that moment, a ray of black light shone from the black sword sheath. A long black sword flew out and circled in the air, and stabbed steadily into the ground, right in front of Su Yun.

Chi!!!

A shrilling sound rang in all four directions!!!

The Death Sword!

Chapter 89 - The Power of the Hundred Swords

Die!

A sinister word appeared on the black sword in a blood red colour.

The sword trembled while everyone stood in shock.

Like a stormy sea, its intention to kill engulfed everything in all four directions. The temperature in the plaza dropped tremendously. Even Madame Headmaster, who was preparing to attack the Blood Soul Master, stopped to look over.

“This... what is this weapon?”

The commander of the demonic clan quivered uncontrollably. With his sunset-like eyes filled with surprise, he looked over at the sword.

The two demons stopped in their tracks as well, hesitating.

Granted that their powers were not considered strong, but they were smart enough to know that this sword held extraordinary powers.

But....

Their hesitation did not stop Su Yun.

At this moment, the sword and the person feared nothing at all.

Ka Cha.

He rushed towards the two demons and raised the black sword.

The blood red word ‘Kill’ written on the black sword was ominous and magnificent at the same time. The sword whistled, just like how waves collided with one another.

“How reckless! Do you think owning a pretty good weapon means

you can resist us? Our cultivation realms are so different, you will never be able to fill up this gap between us!!!”

The commander roared.

In the next second, Su Yun dashed across.

Unknowingly, his speed seemed to increase by a fold and, like a tornado, he got near to a monster and pierced the Death Sword through him.

Da!

The demon was not in time to dodge and was stabbed. Only, a weird sound emerged.

The people fixed their gaze and looked...

The death sword did not pierce through the thick skin of the demon...

Many seen it and was shocked. The sword had such great powers, could it be that it just was a reputation but had no substance?

The commander laughed: “Hahahaha, now that we know this sword is worthless! This is unimpressive! Hahaha...”

His piercing laughter sounded throughout.

But, the Death Sword was obviously agitated. At once, the Death Sword emitted a great amount of Death Qi, the kind that could wither all flowers and plants at once, and cause the bluestone to overgrow. It reached out towards the monster as though it had many hands.

Straightaway, the demon shriveled at a rapid speed. His flesh was drying up, and his sockets turned hollow. The skin dried and, within a few breaths, he turned into a shriveled corpse.

This abnormal scene was not inferior to the Thousand Fox Charm’s red sword, which had the ability to feed on the energy of corpses.

The commander stopped his laughter and was stunned by this odd phenomenon.

“Demon!! Evil!! This is the sword of demons and evil!! It can actually feed off the enemy’s energy and turned it into its own gain!! This is the sword of demon and evil!!”

The Sword Elder yelled: “How can the ancestors keep such a sword!! Impossible!! The ancestors would not do such a thing!!”

Su Yun did not understand why Sword Elder was so agitated, but at the moment, he felt relaxed.

When the Death Sword emitted the Death Qi, it was as though it used up a big portion of its Pure Divine Spirit Qi. In fact, it was feeding off the enemy’s blood and flesh, and so, the Pure Divine Spirit Qi was filled up and moisturized. Everyone would be infatuated by such feelings.

The commander’s hair stood as he saw such a strange sword.

Su Yun was not polite at all. He turned his body immediately and charged towards the other demon.

“This is too evil! It actually made use of the sword holder’s Pure Divine Spirit Qi to turn it into Death Qi then, it would feed on the life of the enemy and turned it into the sword holder’s Pure Divine Spirit Qi. Utilizing this method, there will be no chance of death! The sword holder will have an unlimited Pure Divine Spirit Qi, but in the long run, Su Yun’s body will not be able to handle the evil energy and break down!”

Even though the Death Sword was known for its iniquitous disposition, but no one expected it to be so demonic.

“Even if I can’t take it, I have to bear with it. This is my only chance, and also, the only time it will trust in me. Just let me go wild this time round to kill incessantly!”

Su Yun muttered and another Death Qi was released, drawing life from the demon’s body, and advanced towards the commander.

The life was drawn from and turned into Pure Divine Spirit Qi to fill up Su Yun's body. Whatever Su Yun's had ever felt before, all his pain, fatigue, and helplessness, was being swept away as his shriveled body was being filled with such intense power.

It was as though Su Yun's will to fight was ignited. The Death sword trembled vigorously and, with intention to scare others, it pierced towards the commander.

But!

The commander stood still and stared at the incoming black sword.

“Looking at its power, this sword probably holds a purple rank in the heavenly weapon. Though it is powerful, but to me, it is just a toy. Hey, ant, do you think you can rely on this sword to kill me? You're too naive!! I'll give you a taste of true ultimate power!!”

With that, the commander extended one of his finger and clamped the the edge of the Death Sword with ultimate precision.

The Death Qi rippled!

But the commander was someone that was well known for his power. With such great demonic Qi gushing over like the rushing waters, it blocked off the Death Qi to prevent it from taking its effect on the commander's body.

Whilst the Death Sword was powerful, the commander was not weak either. With Su Yun's cultivation so low, the viciousness in the Death Sword might not be released.

The Death Sword was being suppressed. With all his might, Su Yun tried to push the sword forward.

But the commander's shriveled fingers were like steel, clamping steadily on the edge of the sword. It was hard to move an inch.

Suddenly!

The commander lifted his leg. At the sole of his feet were five

bony spikes and these were the commander's toe nails.

They were encircled by the demonic Qi, and it attacked Su Yun's abdomen.

So vicious!

Su Yun loosened his grip on the Death Sword and retreated to dodge this attack.

The commander missed, but between his fingers, he was still clamping on to the black sword. He then laughed again: "Such an ignorant ant, did I scare you so much that you have abandon your sword? Hahaha... just like trash!"

Trash?

Su Yun murmured, and stared at the Death Sword.

A sonorous sound was heard.

Promptly, the Death Sword shone a ray of black light, followed by a thick black Qi that overflowed the sword sheath like a dragon. Very quickly, it coiled itself around the sword...

Wong...

The sword let out a cry which rang so loud it was as though the vessels were launched in the sky and the magnificent weapons were triggered. The suppression, violence, and the desire to wreak havoc were all untamable. It flowed in all directions.

Stunned, the commander looked around. With a suspicious green eye, he looked at the sword sheath behind Su Yun's back.

This unsettling sound seemed to come from the sword sheath.

Also.

The cries from the sword were getting louder and louder!!

The force was astonishing.

As though the Blood Soul had sensed something, he yelled: "Hou Yue, get away quickly!"

“What?” The commander asked.

Swish swish swish swish....

At the speed of light, the sword sheath opened and released a multi-coloured heaven swords to wreak havoc. All of them were rushing towards the commander.

A tinted and brightly coloured Ancient Colour Sword...

As heavy as the mountains, the Stone Heart Sword...

A boundless sword intentions, the Inexhaustible Sword...

A majestic Heaven Spirits Sword...

A calm and quiet, Soul Leaf Sword...

And the intangible Invisible Sword...

These swords flew out with each of its intention, engulfing the entire place like a stormy.

A sword like a dragon, and with a hundred swords, it was inexhaustible.

At this moment, no one could stand an advantage, no one was able to match up with such powers!

Instantly! There was only one thing in the commander's vision.

Swords!

Swish swish swish swish....

They rushed towards him like heavenly dragons. In a split second, they pierced through the commander's body. Circling in the air, the swords pierced again and again in a crazy manner. The commander's body was minced alive!

A pool of fresh blood and minced flesh, even the bones were chopped into pieces.

And all this happened in a split second.

Madame Headmaster was shocked.

Mu Feng was stunned.

Even the untamable Blood Soul Master was stupefied.

No one had ever seen such an odd sword technique. In terms of techniques, this sword by itself was definitely superior to any techniques of the Immortal Sword Sect.

It possessed extreme viciousness. With the inexhaustible hundred swords, it connects the heaven and earth like a hundred lightnings.

Panting, Su Yun held on tightly to the Death Sword in his right hand, with the edge of the sword supporting on the ground, it was as though he had lost all his energy and was sweating profusely.

The hundred swords cried animously above his head, and each sword was drenched in fresh blood. They were all cruel and violent, not a single one of them had calmed down.

Each and every sword had the word 'Death'.

This was the mark that the Death Sword left when it conquered them.

“What a ferocious sword!!”

The Blood Soul Master was dumbfounded. He looked at Su Yun and under his cloak, his eyes were filled with greed and desire.

“It’s such a waste that a person like you, with such low power, is using this formidable sword!! Why don’t you let me take it instead!!”

With that, the Blood Soul Master rushed towards Su Yun.

Madame Headmaster had lost her will to fight, and had resigned her fate to anyone who wanted to kill, but it was different for Su Yun.

In addition to that, this odd sword actually made Su Yun stronger than several of the other sword masters. This was enough to show that this sword was extraordinary. Everyone would desire to own

this sword, especially the demons.

“Heng!”

Su Yun moaned and holding on this fatigued body, he pounced onto the Blood Soul Master.

“Looking for death!”

Without avoiding nor retreating, Su Yun barged forward. The Blood Soul Master raged and with both fists, he pushed a bundle of blood fog at Su Yun.

The hundred swords flew once again, arranging themselves right in front of Su Yun, forming a line of defense.

Clank! ! !

The blood fog dispersed the moment it touches the swords.

Su Yun felt a strong and thick energy in his body, and his blood was boiling as if his blood vessels were about to burst towards the blood fog.

At the back of his throat, he felt that he was about to vomit out blood.

Restraining himself, he stared at the Blood Soul Master with his red eyes. In the air, the Death Sword struck.

The hundred heaven swords separated and flew up high. Upon landing on the ground, the swords arranged themselves nicely,

A shrilling sound resounded through.

“Blood Demon Shield!”

The Blood Soul Master yelled, and used his hands to resist it.

Clang!

His hands were spewing fresh blood, and immediately, there was a blood shield forming on his brain as thick as 3 inches, congealing like ice.

Dang dang dang dang...

The hundred swords crashed against it, forming large amount of spirit Qi ripples. The blood walls shook but was hardly breached.

Su Yun glared and tightened his grip on the Death Sword. Once again, he steered the hundred heaven swords in the air, splitting them into two groups, and attacked the Blood Soul from both sides.

The Blood Soul smirked: “You think I am at wits ends after fighting with Madame Headmaster? Hmm, you have guessed right, but your own powers are too weak! The sword is formidable... but the person holding onto the sword is not! I do not fear you!”

He waved both his hands and suddenly, the blood shield broke into two pieces, and flew to his left and right sides.

Clank clank clank clank....

The hundred swords were once again blocked.

Su Yun turned solemn and his face tightened.

This Blood Soul Master was definitely a tough match!!

“The next move is mine then!”

With a roar, the Blood Soul opened his move and spat out regiments of blood pillars!!

Swoosh!!!!

The blood pillars flew out from the mouth and dispersed, turning into innumerable blood red souls. The souls screamed in pain as they surrounded Su Yun....

Chapter 90 - Profound Spirit Essence Opened!

Su Yun looked startled, a look of astonishment plastered on his face, but quickly, the shock disappeared as a look of steadiness quickly replaced it.

Onlookers were secretly astonished: Why does he not fear anything?

He raised his black sword, aimed at one of the hundred thousands of blood red souls and attacked.

Not holding back anything, the Pure Divine Spirit Qi attacked like a shooting star.

The blood red souls that were near to Su Yun started to bite on him, tearing apart the flesh on his shoulder and leg. But he did not change his move, he beared the bitings of the souls and advanced.

The edge of the sword approached nearer and nearer!

Chi!

The blood red soul which had been locked down was struck by the sword, piercing through it completely. The Pure Divine Spirit Qi exploded within and tore it into a million pieces.

As the blood red soul was being torn apart, the surrounding blood red souls also burst into red fog, disappearing into thin air.

“What?”

The Blood Soul was shocked! Was it that easy to break my technique? How was that possible?

“Hundred Thousand Blood Demon technique! You are part of the Blood Demon Heaven Dao!”

Still holding tightly to the Death Sword, Su Yun glared at the Blood Soul and said.

“Who are you? How do you know about the Hundred Thousands Blood Demon technique?” The Blood Soul quivered as he asked: “You’re obviously a demon, why do you want to help the human! You’re a demon! You have everything about the Demon Clan at your fingertips! Why do you help these people? Why! You demon!”

“I am not a demon...”

Su Yun murmured.

But in fact, his soul was already infected with demon Qi, and would never be purified.

The hundred thousand blood demon technique was the highest technique in the Blood Demon Heaven Dao. Su Yun, who entered the Demon Sect, had once carried out a mission to protect a strong Blood Demon Heaven Dao cultivator. He had used three of his lower demon souls in exchange for this technique. The cultivator then sucked in these three souls and was comfortably executed by the demon.

Although he knew the Hundred Thousand Blood Demon Technique, Su Yun did not have sufficient Demonic Qi, and could not cultivate it. To know the methods, but not allowed to utilise it, was truly regretful. When the Blood Soul utilised this skill, Su Yun relaxingly dispelled it as he knew the spell inside out.

“Despicable! I don’t care if you’re a human or demon, since you have chosen your side to be against the Blood Demon Heaven Dao, then you shall die!”

The Blood Soul was enraged. His body emitted a blood Qi, and dashed towards Su Yun.

Su Yun stayed calm. Even when a flying sword landed near his feet, he casually retreated and dodged it. At the same time, the two flying swords by his side flew towards the Blood Soul.

Each of the hundred swords started to fly, pulling the sky and the ground. This made people looked up in awe, and it was an

unforgettable feeling.

Su Yun maneuvered the flying swords back and forth across the plaza in the air. Then, the flying swords separated and attacked crazily at the Blood Soul. Rays of brilliant lights scrapped through the sky.

The Blood Soul then turned himself into several pieces in a split second, dispersing into all directions to resist this attack by the blood sword.

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

....

...

The sounds was never ending as the Flying Swords continuously clashed onto the blood shield.

The flying swords were fast, but the blood shield's frame could block even faster, and even with a hundred flying swords, they were unable to cut the Blood Soul even half an inch.

“Hahaha... Your ability only amounts to this much?”

Seeing that Su Yun was powerless, the Blood Soul laughed heartily, pleased with himself. Suddenly, the cloak behind him flew up by itself, a ray of blood light flew out, shooting towards the sky.

A blood eye appeared in the sky and stared directly at Su Yun. In a blink of an eye, the blood eye shot out a ray of blood light with a profound deathly Qi towards Su Yun.

Su Yun escaped quickly. The blood ray landed on the ground

instead and exploded, creating a pit of black hole.

This scene shocked everyone.

Chirp!

Chirp!

Chirp!

....

The Blood Eye attacked ferociously, with an increasing speed, the entire plaza was scattered and smashed, many demonic Qi Cultivators and students were affected.

“At this rate, we definitely can’t hold on! Young rascal, let me lend you a helping hand!”

The Sword Elder shouted.

“No, senior, you are a soul. You have already used your soul power several times, and your soul will only get thinner and thinner!! Let me handle this person, please don’t interfere!”

Su Yun said quickly. With his icy cold eyes, he looked over at the demonic Qi Cultivators and charged towards them.

Swish!

The evil charm of the Death Sword followed the movements of the arm and pierced through a demonic Qi Cultivator’s body.

The Death Qi was released and immediately, the life of the demonic Qi Cultivator was drawn and converted into the Pure Divine Spirit Qi to nourish Su Yun’s shriveled body.

The Demonic Qi Cultivator then died.

Su Yun moved again, and attacked on another Demonic Qi Cultivator.

Then, the third Demonic Qi Cultivator.

The fourth Demonic Qi Cultivator...

The Demonic Qi Cultivators were turned into a dried up corpse one by one, and a huge Pure Divine Spirit Qi complemented Su Yun's body.

“Huh?”

The Blood Soul frowned as he studied the situation. Intertwining his fingers, he controlled the Blood Eye in the sky and elicited a stronger attack on Su Yun.

Su Yun seemed to have absorbed sufficient Pure Divine Spirit Qi. He fended off the flying sword and maneuvered another hundred swords towards the Blood Soul.

“Heh, you're still unwilling to give up?”

The Blood Soul shouted in a low voice: “Everyone here retreat. Do not let this man absorb Profound Spirit Qi anymore. I want to see how much Qi he has before I kill him!”

“Yes, Master!”

The Demonic cultivators and demons all retreated one after another, disappearing inside the blood mist, not letting Su Yun kill anymore, to absorb their life energy and transform into Profound Spirit Qi.

But at that moment Su Yun no longer needed to change the Qi, with the hundred swords shuttering in the sky, approaching to kill the Blood Soul.

But during his movement, the blood shield was equally fast in moving.

As the second in command of the Blood Demon Heaven Dao, the skills of the Blood Soul were not odd, and the treasures on his body were considered surly and abnormal. Even if he had fought with Madame Headmaster, and had to face with the Death Sword and Su Yun, he still did not waiver.

With no accidents occurring, all the hundred swords were

blocked as per the previous bout, ‘ping ling pang lang’, the sounds were incessant.

Su Yun took a breath in and stepped on his flying sword underneath his feet and flew over.

“Hahaha! Okay, since you’re so eager to die, then I shan’t play with you any longer! Die then!”

The Blood Soul Master raged and raised both his palms to incite the blood fog. Very quickly, the blood fog turned into a mouth as big as a great white shark and swallowed Su Yun.

But at that very moment.

Another change occurred!.

Seeing Su Yun leaping suddenly, jumping off his flying sword, at the same time flinging out the death sword in his hands, aimed at the Blood Soul.

The Blood Soul was slightly startled, seeing that Su Yun’s hand movement quickly change, one after another different mysterious hand gestures forming with his hands, and in an instant, all of the absorbed Profound Spirit Qi spurted out from Su Yun’s body like a fountain, seeping out of his skin, all being released out!

“The Spirit Essence opened! The Qi channels opened? Young rascal, what are you doing??”

The Sword Elder called out.

“To stake all on one throw!.”

Su Yun grit his teeth and muttered: “If this continues, I will die for sure. I can only stake it all in this one throw now!”

“To stake all in one throw?”

The Sword Elder was surprised and shouted quickly: “But you opened the Spirit Essence and the Qi channels, so you’ll put everyone here in danger! You will get heavily injured as well! Previously, you used the Blood Dye Array to increase your true

power, to increase the demonic Qi around your body, and everybody treated you as a demon, and the demons saw you as their own. If you open the Spirit Essence and the Qi channels, you will use all of your Pure Divine Spirit Qi, and there will be none left in your body. You won't be able to create any Pure Divine Spirit Qi within a day!. As such, you will never walk out of Elemental Fire City! These people will never let you off!"

"If I don't do this, I will die at the hands of the Blood Soul Master sooner or later. From this point, isn't the ending all the same?"

Su Yun's complexion was increasingly pale, and the voice that came out of his mouth was increasingly weaker.

Only to see the blood red color sword sheath suddenly tremble open, in addition the blood dyed hair, floating without wind, all these were due to the Profound spirit Qi releasing from the body.

They quickly turned into Pure Divine Spirit Qi and rushed toward the Blood Soul's hundred swords, forming an interconnected chain.

"Huh?"

The Blood Soul was slightly startled, feeling that something was amiss.

It was just in that instant.

Hua la!.

All of the swords flying towards the blood soul suddenly burst forth sword shadows, resulting in all the swords seemingly splitting into two. One shadow sword, one real sword!.

Heaven Splitting Sword Technique!.

That was a total of two hundred Divine Swords!.

How much Pure Divine Spirit Qi was used since they used on two hundred Divine Swords?.

In a split second, Su Yun had no Qi left. He fell heavily to the

ground and vomited a mouthful of fresh blood. He was already losing all his energy.

At the same time, all the two hundred mystical swords, when the real sword clashed onto the blood shield, the shadow sword followed through and completely smashed through the blood shield towards the Blood Soul.

“What?..”

The Blood Soul Master widened his eyes and hurriedly defended. But it was too late, the change was too sudden. The swords split to surround him for an attack. This sudden change left him defenseless!

Puchi Puchi Puchi.

The Qi Swords multiplied, the Blood Soul Master trembled frantically as his skin and flesh were pierced through in a moment.

But, his cloak finally showed its use. The Qi swords could only sliced superficially and not deeply. It was not enough to injury the viscera.

“Don’t even think of killing me with that!..”

The Blood Soul clenched his teeth and glared at the motionless Su Yun. with his face twisted he shouted.

Just as he finished his sentence, a black sword suddenly pierced through his chest, ‘pu chi’.

Similarly, with the cloak acting as his line of defense, the sword did not manage to pierce deeply. But... the deathly Qi was emitted strongly from the sword as though like a mouth of a ghost, it engulfed the Blood Soul Master.

The Blood Soul Master’s face was deathly pale with not a bit of blood anymore, as his whole being was stuck in astonishment.

Chi...hu...chi...chu...

The Death Qi inside the Blood Soul Master was intruded. His

blood and muscles started to atrophy, while the bones started to shake. As though time was slipping by very quickly, his life also disappeared quickly.

The Blood Soul Master hurriedly resisted this Deathly Qi by inciting his inner Demonic Qi, but just as he incited the Demonic Qi, the demonic Qi which was holding up the blood shield was taken away. The blood shield disappeared and the hundred swords pierced right at him.

Puchi puchi puchi.

The hundred swords pierced through the Blood Soul Master, making him a honeycomb, as the figure in the swords shivered, with both eyes pierced by the swords. Every inch of the body had a sword in it, resembling a hedgehog, looking alarmingly sinister and making people who saw the scene tremble in fear.

The death sword took the chance to draw the huge amount of life. Within seconds, the life in the Blood Soul Master was completely drawn out and his Qi dissipated rapidly. He died right away.

Pudong!

The Blood Soul Master's body scattered and smashed as his body fell on the floor, making a depressing sound.

The plaza fell silent. Madame Headmaster, Mu Feng, Mu Kong, and the others stared speechlessly.

Chapter 91 - Limitless Sword God (Finale)

Sou Sou Sou Sou...

Ancient Colour Sword, Stone Heart Sword, Inexhaustible Sword, Heaven Spirits Sword, Soul Leaf Sword, Intangible Invisible Sword... the hundred mythical swords pulled out of the Blood Soul Master's lifeless body and independently flew out, toward the Everlasting Sword Sheath.

Shua shua shua shua shua...

The hundred swords flew back into the sheath.

Everything was silent.

What sorcery?

Madame Purple Star, who was heavily injured, slowly supported herself strongly with care, opening her old eyes and watching the scene unfold.

She majored in Spirit Cultivation for so many years, and was thorough with the studies of magic treasures, yet she had never seen such a weird scene ever before.

What was this mysterious technique?

Or was it a magic treasure?

Who was this person?

What was in the sword sheath?

How... did he manage to rely only on a fourth stage of spirit intermediate realm and managed to kill a spirit soul realm cultivator?

Since this power was the highest one could attain, how did he manage such a skill?

Her curiosity grew crazily, but she could never understand...

“Madame Purple Star... This... Just what is this... this

technique?”

The teacher beside her swallowed his saliva, asked in astonishment.

“I...I do not know..”

Madame Purple Star shook her head, bitterly replied: “Even I do not know who is this person... looks like it... my knowledge is still too shallow!”

“He is called Limitless Sword God!”

Just then, a weak voice sounded from behind.

Everybody looked over to see that the man who was drenched in blood was no other than Mu Feng, who was injured pretty badly.

Mu Feng stood up with much difficulty. Pressing onto the fresh wound on his abdomen, he stared at the disfigured man who had just crawled up.

“He is called Limitless Sword God....He saved me before.”

“But... His body is so rich in Devil Qi! He is man from the Devil race!! He is definitely someone who came from the Demonic Continent!”

Wu Kong, who was standing aside shouted.

“No!!!”

Mu Feng yelled and kept a straight face. He gazed at Wu Kong: “I don’t care if he is a demon or not. He saved my life once and killed the Blood Soul Master. To avenge the Mu Clan who died protecting me, he saved all of us!! So what if he is a demon? He is still Mu Feng’s benefactor!!”

Wu Kong’s lower lip stammered, and he was at a loss for words.

Madame Purple Star did not speak. He was not someone they were willing to be grateful to, and it was the truth that he was somehow related to the Demons, but it was something that can

never be let go, even after a hundred years.

The disfigured man who donned on a blademaster clothe and carried a sword sheath on his back stood up, slowly.

He limped and his body swayed, as though he was a drunkard.

The disfigured man looked extremely pale.

He strived towards the place where the Blood Soul Master had died and walked towards the black sword. Each step was heavier than the previous step as if each step was taking up his life.

Finally, he arrived in front of the corpse of the Blood Soul Master. This process seemed to take a century.

He reached out his hand and grabbed for the Death Sword.

His five fingers trembled as he moved. Finally, he held onto the the sword hilt. With one breath, a strong aura slipped out of the hilt of the black sword and extended to all parts of his body...

The Death Sword had suck the life out of the Blood sword. At this moment, he bestowed him the power again.

The sword elder sensed it and suddenly realized it.

No wonder this rascal dared to open the Spirit Essence and the Qi channels to push his Profound Spirit Qi to its limits. The Death Sword had made used of the Death Qi to draw out life and turned it into Profound Spirit Qi to nourish his body once again. Because of this, he was so daring.

This little rascal had greater vision than me, and that was impressive. He was courageous and was strategic.

The Sword Elder felt inferior.

Holding on to the Death Sword, it bestowed him the Profound Spirit Qi. Su Yun's body was replenished and he had some life in his face again.

Not saying a word, he took a deep breath in and placed the Death

sword back into the sword sheath behind his back. He then looked over at Madame Headmaster, Mu Feng and the others before he left.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

At this moment, a series of explosion sounded through In the midst of the blood fog, flesh and blood were flying everywhere. Innumerable of demons and demonic Qi Cultivators were burnt. Intense fighting and screams were heard.

“Everybody, go to the plaza! Rescue Madame Headmaster! Quick!”

“Kill all these despicable Demonic Qi Cultivators!”

“Kill them all!”

The shoutings were endless, while turmoiled profound spirit Qi flew towards them continuously.

Su Yun’s face changed color, yet he just stood there, quietly watching the scene unfold.

The blood fog started to dispersed, and one by one, shadows started running over.

There were shadows coming from all directions. On each face was filled with anger and hatred.

This was the hatred towards the demons.

“Young rascal, be careful!”

The Sword Elder muttered.

Su Yun nodded and reached out for his back.

There was no escape route.

But when the time comes, Su Yun would not mind using his last breath to fight his way out.

He did not care if the person was upright or evil, as long as it posed a threat to him, then they were all evil to him.

“What a thick Demonic Qi aura!! There is one more Demonic Qi Cultivator!!”

Right at this moment, a vigorous young lad found Su Yun and shouted out loud.

“Kill!! Kill this Demonic Qi Cultivator, kill them all!”

“Let these bastards return back to their Demonic Continent!!”

They shouted in unison continuously.

Tightening his grip around his sword, Su Yun was prepared to attack.

But a faint and determined voice rang through.

“Stop! Do not hurt the Limitless Sword God!!”

Though the voice was weak, but the person obviously was using all his energy to voice out.

Everybody looked toward and was shocked to see the person who said this was the Madame Headmaster.

The commander of ‘Elemental Fire City’ stood up and rushed forward to pay his respects to Madame Headmaster: “Academy master, this person reeks of Demonic Qi Cultivator. It’s for sure he is a Demonic Qi Cultivator, why can’t we hurt him?”

“He killed the Blood Soul Master, and saved all our lives! He is no ordinary Demonic Qi Cultivator!”

Madame Headmaster pressed onto the wound on her chest and said weakly.

“What?”

Nobody understood and their faces were filled with surprise.

“This man saved Madame Headmaster and the others?”

“He killed the Demonic Qi Cultivators?”

“Who is the Blood Soul Master?”

A disorderly sound rang.

It was obvious though, Su Yun was not willing to stay any longer.

He took a few steps back and pulled out ‘Thousand Deep’ from the sword sheath and threw it into the air. Then he leaped onto the sword and flew away.

“He’s going to run!”

“We can’t just let him go!!”

Another yelled.

“Don’t you dare make a move. If anyone hurts him, then you are going against the Mu Clan!”

Seeing there were some who did not heed the advice, Mu Feng panicked and yelled in anger.

The Limitless Sword Lord had saved him several times, so how could he let others hurt him? Whether he was a human or demon, it did not matter. In Mu Feng’s heart, he was one that bestowed him with two lives. He was Mu Feng’s benefactor.

Who was Mu Feng? What was the Mu Clan’s standing? As long as the people had some sort of spirit cultivation in Mystical Mountain Range, they all knew about him and the Mu Clan. When Mu Feng shouted, it startled many of them and, at the same time, it also stopped the people who were killing the demons to retrieve awards. Nobody dared to make any trouble. They all looked upon Su Yun as he left the place.

The city’s commander of defense saw and was confused. There were many people acting weirdly just for the sake of that demon Qi Cultivator, whom everybody just stared with their eyes open as he flew away.

Very soon, the man disappeared.

“May I ask Madame Headmaster, do you know this man?”

Promptly, a young lady donning a white blademaker outfit

walked out from the crowd.

The young lady looked pale with one hand holding onto a sword and her shoulder armour still on, she was stained with Demonic blood.

Behind her, were the people of Su Family who were also injured.

Qing Er.

Madame Headmaster had some impression of this young lady.

“It was also the first time they had met earlier!”

Madame Headmaster swallowed the recovering wound bead passed down for the side and asked.

“Did you just call him... Senior Limitless Sword God?”

“Yes!”

Without waiting for Madame Headmaster to say anything, Mu Feng started blabbering: “When I was rushing to Purple Star Academy earlier on, I ran into some thieves. This man appeared out of nowhere to help me out. If this person did not help me, I, Mu Feng would have died. This man is Limitless Sword Lord. Though he has an aura of Demonic Qi, he has a chivalrous heart!”

“Limitless Sword God?”

Qing Er murmured these words, but her heart was empty.

Why did this man save me? Unless... He really had a chivalrous heart?

What happened in the the Purple Star Academy travelled across the entire Mystical Mountain Range, and also the surrounding regions.

The reputation of Limitless Sword God also started to spread.

As he was injured, and had an aura of Demonic Qi, his identity was not revealed.

No one knew where he came from, who his master was, and

nobody knew what his surname was, or where he was located as of now.

People only remembered that pair of blood red eyes, the injured man, and that odd black sword... the sword that startled the world.

Was he an upright person? Or was he evil? Was he human? Or was he a demon? Nobody could give a clear explanation.

But following the rumours, a new champion had emerged.

Senior Limitless Sword God. This name was known in several regions.

The commotion at Purple Star Academy attracted the attention of many powers, sects, and clans. People started investigating the places where there was a possibility that Demonic Qi Cultivators would appear, and there were others who started investigating who the Blood Soul Master was, and how he managed to enter the Sky Martial Continent.

Though there were times the demons would harass the Sky Martial Continent, attacks like the Blood Soul Master's, who brought an entire army to attack, were very rare.

When this happened, representatives were sent from each region and clans to investigate. Because Su Huoyu died in this, Qing Er dared not delay any longer. She swallowed the Pearl bead pill the Limitless Sword God gave her.

The bead entered her abdomen and, as though she had been drugged by the demonic poison, she could not get up. The disease attacked her lungs and internal organs. She was then sent to the Su Family to recuperate.

Seeing this, the patriarch of the Su Family, Su Wei Li, did not blame Qing Er. Besides, this was nothing anybody could stop from happening. The other representatives were also injured badly. It was not just Qing Er.

And at this moment, within the Immortal Sword Sect.

In the heaven's palace, a magic Qi floated.

A lady, whose skin was as fair as snow, and eyebrows that looked like mountains from afar, stood in front of a circle mirror.

The circle mirror was flickering with different images, but very quickly, these images disappeared.

The young lady seemed calm, but there was something weird in her eyes.

Hua!

A shadow flew out into the palace.

The young lady inclined and walked towards the person to pay her respects.

“Xian Li pay her respects to Grand Elder!”

Her voice was gentle and graceful as though the summer's wind.

“Please rise, Xian Li!”

She was a middled aged woman. Taking a good look at Xian Li, she nodded: “Now, Limitless Sword God is known, and he even used the Heavenly Crystal to kill the Blood Soul Master! He has become the hero in everybody's heart! I'm afraid everyone is leaning towards him now!”

“But evil will forever be evil. This man is cunning and despicable. His methods are vicious. He massacred the whole Gu Xie Sect, stole my Heavenly Crystal and my Everlasting Stone. He is guilty as charged! It is a must to bring them back the Immortal Sword Sect!!” Long Xian Li muttered: “I will act upon it now, and move towards Elemental Fire City to find out the whereabouts of Limitless Sword God and capture him!”

Chapter 92 - Ming Ying School

“Leaving?”

The middle aged woman shook her head: “Elder Xian Li, why do you desire to personally track down the Limitless Sword God?”

“Limitless Sword God appeared at Purple Star Academy, where I myself originated.” Long Xian Li sentimentally thought back, saying indifferently.

“News stated that Limitless Sword God killed the Blood Soul Master, saved the Purple Star Academy as well as Mystical Mountain Range’s numerous sects representatives, and are in their graces, if you wish to obtain information from their people, it seems highly impossible, and even our own Immortal Sword Sect will be suspected!”

The middle aged woman reasoned out.

“Be suspected?” Long Xian Li lobed eyebrows slightly frowned: “Grand Elder thinks that, since our Immortal Sword Sect did not partake in this year’s exchange event, suddenly appearing at Elemental Fire City to investigate on Limitless Sword God’s whereabouts will let the people’s imaginations run wild?”

“Correct, for the sake of the Heavenly Crystal, you will blow up the matter! This will not be good for our mission to retrieve the Heavenly Crystal!”

“Then... Grand Elder’s meaning is?”

Long Xian Li raised her starry and beautiful eyes and lightly asked.

“There is no need to go to Fire Elemental City anymore, everyone will be thinking of looking into and investigating Limitless Sword God’s whereabouts, so going there will be useless. I think... it would be better to start elsewhere!”

The Grand Elder lowered her head and thought for a while, then promptly asked: “Xian Li, the last time you talked with me, you suspected one of the Su Family’s persons, yes?”

“Yes!” Long Xian Li nodded her head.

“Then you can go to Su Family to take a look.” The Grand Elder said softly.

“Su Family, why?”

Long Xian Li did not understand.

“There are people who previously saw Limitless Sword God at Purple Star Academy saving the Su Family representative Su Qing Er, and protected her to leave the academy!”

“Oh?” Once Long Xian Li heard, her heart sunk slightly. She moaned lowly and replied: “But, I suspect that the one who can most likely be Limitless Sword Lord... has already died in the Su Family’s Clan Refinement event.”

“Died in the Su Family’s Clan refinement event?” The Grand Elder brows frowned slightly: “You saw that with your own eyes?”

“Although I did not see it with my own eyes, the Su Family had people who witnessed it.”

“Is that so?” The Grand Elder shook her head: “And you believed it?”

“Grand Elder, what are you saying?”

“What if the Su Family lied to you, and Limitless Sword God was really one of theirs? That means Limitless was definitely the one you were suspicious about! There is definitely something fishy about this, the matter between Limitless and the Su Family’s young miss. I feel that there are clues there that we can start from. You cannot go to Elemental Fire City, if you want to go... you should go to Su Family!”

“Go to the Su Family? That cannot be done.” Long Xian Li shook

her head: “Last time, I abruptly intruded on the Su Family and aroused their suspicion. If I were to go again, I will definitely be investigated by them!”

“You just need to find an excuse to go there!”

“Find an excuse?”

Long Xian Li frowned: “What excuse?”

“To investigate Limitless Sword God!”

The Grand Elder softly said: “The Heavenly Crystal is a treasure that everyone desires, but whether or not it will be our Immortal Sword Sect’s item is based on chance. If anyone finds out that Limitless Sword God has the Heavenly Crystal, they will definitely think of a way to try and get it! Initially, it was due to the Heavenly Crystal that we could not investigate Limitless Sword God, but now it is different. Limitless has something that we can openly investigate about! We can completely use that as an excuse, and proceed to Su Family!”

“What is that something?” Long Li Xian asked.

“The Sword!”

Grand Elder continued: “It is exactly that special sword technique of his!! It was said that Limitless Sword God killed the Blood Spirit with a hundred swords exploding into him! A hundred!! That is a really high level special sword technique, my Immortal Sword Sect’s sword technique is used to aid martial artists to fly, and not to murder. To use magic swords to kill their enemy, I am afraid only the Sect’s Leader can do that, but even our Sect leader is unable to control so many flying swords! So, you can act as a diplomat on a mission to the Su Family, and find the Su Family miss to interrogate her. If she does indeed keep in contact with Limitless Sword God, then we will see if Limitless Sword God’s divine sword techniques are similar to our Immortal Sword Sect’s technique, and we need to determine if he is our Immortal

Sword Sect's disciple!"

Long Xian Li heard and fell silent.

She extended her jade fingers and caressed the circular mirror and whispered: "If that's the case, then Grand Elder need not send me to the Su Family. You can find someone else to do it and I will sneak into the Su Family to conduct the investigation! This should be better!"

The Grand Elder nodded: "Elder Xian Li's idea is good. You are the third elder of my sword sect. You control the martial swords, and hold a high status. If I send you out, you'll only attract attention from the others. That was something I have neglected!"

Having said that, the Grand Elder pondered and said: "Then, Xian Li, who do you think is the best choice?"

"Yan Shan!"

Long Xian Li thought for a while and stated.

.....

.....

.....

Zoom!!!

A ray of red light beam rushed out from the mountain range into the clouds.

It landed on a dark mountain range, and the people there looked up into the sky where it came from.

A breakthrough!

Everybody knew the meaning of this red light beam.

Only.

Such a ferocious light beam... who could have cultivated such a breakthrough?

In front of a huge red door on a mountain embedded with a cave.

The people donned a variety of clothings and wore masks over their face. They then rushed over.

The leader had two sabers hung around his waist. On his body, he also had several long black needles hung onto him. Following him around, the needles did not stop moving. They collided into one another creating a slight sound like the mosquitoes buzzing.

The people following behind all had their heads down. Nobody dared to make a move, neither did they dared to look around.

The red door was massive, with a height of at least ten meters. At the top, there was a blood red python engraved on it. It seemed powerful, and in front of the door stood two young ladies wearing red clothes, their faces covered in red mesh.

Seeing this person, the two ladies lined up and wrap their fists to say in unison: “We pay respects to Protector You!”

“Yes!”

The man who was coming forward nodded. The black needles around his waist all drooped, and the people behind him looked up. His lifeless eyes seemed to regained some colours as well.

The man lifted his sword lightly and looked at the red door to ask: “How long has Protector Qian Mei stayed behind closed doors to train?”

“Reporting to Protector You (TN: the chinese is actually zuo (right), but the following name changes to you (left), so i shall stick to you), Master had been isolating herself for seventeen days!”

“Seventeen days? Just seventeen days?”

The masked man seemed surprised.

He bit his lower lip, thought and said: “Inform Protector Qian Mei, let me see her!”

“Reporting to Protector You, the master is undergoing closed

door training, no one can disturb her!” The two ladies kneeled and voiced in unison and in fear.

“If you don’t go, then I shall kill you!”

The man’s voice was very calm, as though he was talking about something that was very ordinary.

With that, the two ladies trembled even more, and dared not stand up.

Without saying a second word, he waved his hand and a ray of blue light exploded, killing the two of them.

Simply killing after saying it, and not in the least bit sloppy!

“STOP!”

A voice rang through and the heavy red doors opened suddenly. A ray of red lightning rushed out and collided with the blue light.

The man observed the situation and quickly kept his blue light, dodging the collision with the red lightning.

But the red lightning circled in front of the man and retreated back into the red doors.

The man locked his gaze.

Looking inside the red door, a girl who looked roughly twenty three years of age stood there smartly in a red dress. The girl looked like she came from heaven, born with fine and detailed body features, enchantingly charming, especially her ears, a pair of cute fluffy fox ears trembling slightly, and a white fluffy fox tail constantly moving at her buttocks.*

This was the real Protector Hu Qian Mei from the prestigious Ming Ying School.

“Oh?”

The man tried to dodge her line of sight, and suddenly raised his arms, blue light bursting forth, chopping into both girl’s arms.

Chi la!

The two ladies lost one of their arms and fell to the ground in pain. They screamed in pain as their beady sweat dripped down profusely.

“Forget the death penalty, let you two taste this punishment instead.” The man said.

Hu Qian Mei saw what he did, her face changed as she got so angry that her chest was violently moving up and down. She moved quickly, landing in front of the two ladies, did not say anything, and vertically sliced her red sword with an intent to kill.

But the man did not seem like he had the intention to fight. He retreated continuously and raised his left hand to form a mysterious hand sign. A ray of black light was emitted and he fended Hu Qian Mei’s attack.

“Master Protector Hu, I am just helping you teach these few fearless slaves a lesson, why are you getting so angry?”

The man stated his piece and with another mysterious hand sign, he sent Hu Qian Mei back: “Protector Hu just got a breakthrough. The body’s still weak. Please do not try and spar with me or else you might get injured. I wouldn’t be able to answer to the Sect Leader.”

Hu Qian Mei face was black with rage, tightly clenching the red sword in her hand.

She secretly clenched her teeth, and took a flash of medicinal pills from her storage ring, threw it to the two ladies and said: “Take it, grab your arms and get out of here!”

“Yes... yes... master...”

The two ladies stood up hurriedly. Bearing the pain, they accepted the medicinal pills and walked towards the red door.

The man’s expression changed a little: “Replenishing bone and

tendon pill? This is a spirit level medicine pill!! And you gave it to the two slaves?”

“So what if it is?” Hu Qian Mei retorted: “Even if they are slaves, they are still my people. They had their limbs broken for me, so why shouldn’t I help them to recover?”

The man looked in disbelief and shook his head: “What a waste!”

Hu Qian Mei kept the sword in the sword sheath hung around her waist and stated blandly: “I wonder why Protector You has come to find me? If there’s nothing else, please go back! I don’t have much energy to entertain you!”

“Protector Hu sure is cold!”

The man produced a smile, which was covered by a mask, where ordinary people would not be able to see.

“As I look towards the red door, i saw the red clouds gushing in the sky, and immediately knew that Protector Hu had broken through once again! I thin, you are close to entering the Spirit Star Disciple realm already, right?” he asked with excitement.

“You came here just to ask for this?”

“I’m just curious. Protector Hu was promoted to the ninth rank just a few years ago. I never thought you can get into the tenth rank so soon... I’m afraid that I’m not your opponent! This talent, ah... I’m so envious off it!”

“Envious?”

Hu Qian Mei grinned. She sat on the rock at the side and crossed her leg. Laughing, she said: “Since you know that your powers aren’t a match for me, then you better know your limits from today onwards. Or else...” there was a killing intention behind those innocent eyes: “I will kill all eight of your precious spirit masters!!”

“Hahahaha...”

The man laughed out loud for a long while before stopping: “If you want to kill, go ahead! I don’t mind!!”

Hu Qian Mei knitted her brows and she became serious.

“Protector Hu, you are so gifted, and the level of your cultivation is not low. I have been staying in the ninth rank realm for so long. If I don’t have a breakthrough soon, this will affect my cultivation in the future. I will cultivate for two more years, and if there’s no news from me, I want to propose a marriage for the sect leader!”

“You want to marry the sect leader?”

“No, I want to marry you!”

“Then you have to bring up the marriage to me!” Hu Qian Mei smiled.

“You won’t agree to it!” The boy shook his head.

“Do you think the sect leader will make me agree to it?” Hu Qian Mei smirked as though she was a fox.

The man did not say a word, smiled, and turned to leave.

A moment later, a voice sounded out from the silence.

“Alright.”

Hu Qian Mei’s face sunk after hearing that. She started worrying as she sat on the rock, watching the man leave. It was only long after then she regained her smile. However, there was still a tinge of suffering written on her face.

*All TN & editor comments will be at the bottom.

*TN: So kinky ????

Chapter 93 - Seen Through?

Hu!!!

A heavy sound of breathing was released.

In the deserted grass field, Su Yun sat in the lotus position and started tuning his Qi.

“I didn’t expect this!! I really didn’t expect this. Young rascal, your luck is pretty good! The death sword drew the life of the Blood Soul Master and converted it into Profound Spirit Qi to nourish your shriveled body. But unexpectedly, the blood soul’s life contained such a thick essence of Death Qi. Once you finished absorbing them, your body will recover at an astonishing speed. You will also get to increase your power tremendously!”

The Sword Elder was elated as he chirped.

“I didn’t expect it either!” Su Yun opened his eyes gradually and laughed: “I owe it to the Death Sword. Though opening the essence of the spirit had caused me to be injured badly, but the Death Sword converted the death qi power to provide me with energy and allowed me to recover so rapidly. In a few days time, my body has healed completely. This is considered a blessing in disguise!”

“Haha, young rascal, your luck is so good. You managed to become a hero after saving one person and still, benefitted from it! Zezeze, this is definitely genuine dog shit ass luck!”

Su Yun gasped for air and took off his blademaster outfit, which was drenched in fresh blood, and changed into a white robe, which he had prepared earlier on and stored in the storage ring. He removed his metal mask and hung his sword sheath over. Carrying the Death Sword, he continued on his journey.

“Young rascal, you need to focus on cultivating. With the Everlasting Stone for assistance, and your body being strengthened by so many treasures. Within ten years, you will make a name for

yourself!”

Sword Elder said.

“I know!” Su Yun stepped forward, his eyes filled with determination: “Senior, I crave for power more than anyone else. Without Death Sword’s help, I might have lost my life at the hands of Madame Headmaster!”

“Can you still pull it out?” the Sword Elder asked.

Su Yun leaned slightly to his right to look at the black sword hilt which was also covered in devilish patterns. He took a deep breath and shook his head.

The Sword Elder did not say another word.

It had been a week since she got back to the Su Family. Qing Er was back in the Su Family earlier than Su Yun. Qing Er was also sent to be mended for her injuries, but, thankfully, the demon poison was not too serious. After a few days, Qing Er recovered.

The patriarch of the Su Family did not look into the case of Su Huoyu. This incident was too sudden, and each sect took a huge loss. The Su Family’s losses were considered minimal.

Hearing that Qing Er was safe and sound, Su Yun sighed in relief and went back to the outer sect to hand over his mission.

As the mission was not complete, he was fined a thousand spirit coins. It was fortunate that Su Yun had gained six hundred thousand spirit coins from Su Huoyu, so this little money was nothing to him.

Once everything was over, Su Yun went into a little wooden hut and started cultivating, not caring about a thing in the world.

When he cultivated, he made use of Profound Spirit Qi. Together with the help of the Everlasting Stone, Su Yun was able to grasp and comprehend the Profound Spirit Qi and he improved daily.

Complementing cultivation was the [Limitless Sword Art] and

the [Heaven Splitting Sword Technique]. In the past, Su Yun would only cultivate the [Limitless Sword Art] but, after he fought with the Blood Soul Master, he found out that the [Heaven Splitting Sword Art] had showed an unexpected effect and made him focus on it as well.

Without the [Heaven Splitting Sword Art], he could have been the one to die.

Behind the mountains and forests.

Su Yun held onto Thousand Deep, recalling the initial fight with the Blood Soul Master, and followed the traces and uses of the demonic Qi.

During a fight between Profound martial artists, half of the matter was the Profound techniques and the other was the Qi. The so-called limb skills were very rare. Of course, there were many in the Sky Martial Continent who used their body to kill as a method to achieve great powers, but they too, were rare.

The preservation of the Everlasting Stone cleared the heart like a mirror, and emptied the mind such that he could remember the very first moments vividly.

Su Yun slowly enjoyed the first massacre, and drew experience from the fight.

The Profound Spirit Qi seemed to have received some sort of orders, and the memories started to revolve in Su Yun's mind. The Qi leaked out from the Spirit Essence and through the Qi channels into other parts of his body, and lastly, out of his skin. They circled around Su Yun continuously.

This 'Pure Divine Spirit Qi' was part of the Profound Spirit Qi. First, they would circle around, then they would blend together like small teeth before overlapping with another, forming groups. Lastly, they would twist and turn into a ray of snow white light, rushing into the clouds.

The light started to dim after it was far away. It was impossible to sense it but... this was a disciple of the spirit intermediate realm of at least a fourth or fifth stage.

Su Yun opened his eyes gradually, with a crystal clear vision and a charming appeal.

The spirit essence grew and there were at least twenty earth spirit essences. The Profound Spirit Qi grew thicker.

“To learn the principles and traces of the Profound Spirit Qi from the Blood Soul Master is a breakthrough! I have to say, the Blood Soul Master is an expert!”

Su Yun lamented and stood up, feeling fresh.

He reached out for Thousand Deep and released its Profound Spirit Qi before putting it into his bag. He then took off.

Following the [Limitless Sword Art] first sword, Su Yun was able to manage the sword after practicing it. Speaking of which, the Immortal Sword Sect's sword arts and the limitless sword sect's sword arts seemed to pale into insignificance after comparison. Flying on the sword did not seem too difficult.

Promoted to the fifth stage of spirit intermediate realm, Su Yun could not help but reminiscence the time when he was with the Heavenly Crystal and the Sprite's Shadow.

If he did not receive help from the Death Sword during the fight at Purple Star Academy, then, with the help of the Sprite's Shadow, the Blood Soul Master would be killed on the spot, while he was not injured at all.

But obtaining the Sprite's Shadow was not an easy task.

The preparation was troublesome. It would take at least a month to prepare.

Returning to the small house, the 'Spring Crystal Furnace' was almost done with boiling the medicine . Su Yun sat beside the

furnace and waited for ‘strengthening muscle cultivation pill’ to be ready.

At noon time, the sun was scorching hot. Other than the spirit cultivators, there was no one to be seen outside.

Suddenly, a series of drums and gongs were heard from afar. Alongside with that were heavy steps of a group of single horned bulls.

Suspicious, Su Yun looked over only to see a group of people donned in luxurious clothes crossing the Bronze Street.

A huge purple horn beast cart stood in the middle of the people. The outer sect people ran out of the house to watch this spectacular view.

This group of people had luxurious blademaster clothes, with a sword mark hung over their waists. In their hands, they held a long sword, and rode on strong white horn bulls, walking around the streets arrogantly.

Right in front, there were ten Spirit Stallion leading the way. They were rode by the disciples of the Su Family and beside them were the outer sect’s elite disciples from holding umbrellas, sheltering them from the sun. Obviously, these were Su Family’s welcoming troop.

Su Yun fixed his gaze over at the flag in the middle.

On the flag etched a gold sword, floating with the wind.

Immortal Sword Sect!

Su Yun knew about them.

Why did the Immortal Sword Sect come to the Su Family?

This power held an imposing aura. He wondered which expert from the Immortal Sword Sect would come over.

Deep in his thoughts, his eyes unknowingly fell onto the eye-catching purple horn cart in the middle.

Noticing this, his face started to drain of colours: “Huh, this looks like... Bai Yan Shan’s cart?”

Could it be that Bai Yan Shan was coming over to the Su Family as part of the Immortal Sword Sect?

But, what was she doing here... never mind, why was he thinking so much? He and her were just human (TN: saying that humans can do whatever they want), he would not let himself meddle into her matters.

Su Yun shook his head and turned back to his ruined hut.

Ka cha.

Right at this moment, the Spring Crystal Furnace made a crisp sound.

Su Yun was happy. He ran over quickly and turned off the cultivating pill array underneath the furnace. When he opened the lid, a fragrant aroma filled the house.

He looked into the furnace to see the the jade green pills sitting quietly.

“Such a great aroma! The pills look moist. I think this is big enough! 90 marks!”

Su Yun smiled ears to ears and reached out to bring the pills out.

“What is this pill?”

At the moment, a crisp and clear voice sounded through from the side.

Startled, Su Yun turned quickly to see a lady wearing a white gown, with a gorgeous face standing by his side.

The girl had no makeup on, yet she was still so beautiful. She was tall and graceful, with skin as white as snow. It was hard to estimate how soft or how exquisite it was, but just by the looks of it, it could steal someone’s heart away. She also had a pure and holy temperament, as though, if you desired for her, you’d be

scared of ruining her. She was as beautiful as a fairy meant to be looked at from afar, and not to be touched.

Long Xian Li?

Why was she here? ?

Seeing this person, Su Yun was surprised. He also began to panick.

As though sensing the anxiety in Su Yun, Long Xian Li turned icy cold.

“Limitless Sword God, it’s been long since I last saw you!”

She stated coldly, her voice filled with a murderous tone.

Could she recognized me??

No! How could she recognize Limitless Sword God so easily? I have covered myself up, unless all these were her guessings.

Su Yun’s heart beat fast, but he kept his cool.

He dared not admit it. Afterall, he left no trace that he was Limitless. He would not confess to that, not a chance.

Furthermore, she was not like Hu Qian Mei, the fox spirit, whose methods are cunning. She was an upright person. If she had evidence, she would not kill me.

Thinking of that, Su Yun acted quickly: “Are you Elder Long? What did you just say? Limitless Sword God? Who is this Limitless Sword God? Are you talking to me?”

“You don’t have to maintain your act! Limitless Sword Lord!” Long Xian Li moved her finger and a ray of white light appeared. By the time the light dispersed, a dazzling sword was pushed against his neck.

“Previously, I cast a ‘thousand tracking technique’ on your metal mask and followed you from Blossom Heart Valley to the Su Family. Coincidentally, you appeared in both places, if you aren’t

Limitless Sword Lord then who else is? ?”

How could it be?

Just because of that she thought I was Limitless Sword Lord? Should I say her sixth sense was too good, or her thinking was great?

“Elder Long, you need to think through carefully. This word is so huge, anything can happen. You can’t act just based on that... whatever technique you used, it may lead you to killing the wrong person!!” Su Yun exclaimed.

“Oh? So you think this is coincidental?”

“That’s right!”

“How dare you act like this!” Long Xian Li maintained her icy cold expression: “When I went over to the Su Family to investigate, and asked about you, the Su Family all claimed you died in the Martial Bone Mountain. But, as of now, you are standing right in front of me, cultivating a pill!! Your Su Family ganged up to lie to me, and you lied to me too! You must have some relationship with the Su Family and you must be Limitless Sword Lord! If you don’t hand out the Heavenly Crystal and the Everlasting Stone, then don’t blame me!”

“You want to kill me?”

“Do you think I won’t dare!”

With that, Long Xian Li raged with a murderous intention and waved her long sword and slashed towards Su Yun’s shoulder.

Without hesitation, she went for the kill.

Chapter 94 - A Fairy's Emotions

The sword tip revealed was very ruthless, and the power of the Sword Qi seemed like it was possible to directly sever a person's throat.

This sword.

Had no hesitation at all!

But, Su Yun still did not move an inch, instantly closing his eyes, allowing her to go for the kill.

Hua.

The sword, which was instantly on the verge of pressing onto his neck, suddenly stopped, with the sword tip producing an impression like a tornado blowing, causing Su Yun's hair and clothes to blow up.

Long Xian Li noted and frowned: "Why didn't you make a move?"

Su Yun opened his eyes slowly, and stared at the surrounding in shock. He quickly stated in a frightened voice: "Make a move? Make what move?"

Long Xian Li groaned sarcastically: "Stop pretending! Limitless Sword God, you think that by acting dumb and shocked, I will just let you off? Pull out your sword at once and fight me."

"Elder Long, do you have a 'problem'?" Su Yun continued to offend.

"You..." Long Xian Li was angry. Her face was all red.

"I am but a Spirit Intermediate Disciple Realm. How can I even fight with you? If you want to kill me... just do it. I am not capable of being your opponent. Why make things difficult for a small fry like me?"

Long Xian Li eyes moved swiftly after she heard him.

The reason why she attacked him was just to force Su Yun to make a move. “If Su Yun was Limitless Sword God, he should be exposed with this move. But, it seemed like I had found the wrong person... This person would rather die than make a move. Could it be he was telling the truth? He thought that his powers were weaker than mine and he was no match for me? Was it all just a coincidence and he was not Limitless Sword God?”

Thinking of this, Long Xian Li felt relief and emptiness at the same time. She was confused and anxious.

“Let me ask you another question!” Long Xian Li puff a breath, her voice remained graceful and crisp.

“Please ask away, fairy!” Su Yun sneakily extended his hands pushed the sword against his neck away.

Fairy?

Long Xian Li thought: “This person’s personality seemed stable. Previously, he was not afraid to die. Now that he saw some hope in getting to live, he would also sprout some words that were soothing to the ear? He was no different than a normal person.”

Shrugging the thought off, Long Xian Li stated: “Previously at the Blossom Heart Valley, you were only just broke through spirit intermediate realm. Why do you hold a fifth stage spirit intermediate realm today? How many days has it been only? Can you explain why your cultivation speed is so fast?”

Speaking of which, Long Xian Li turned serious: “Is it... with the help of Everlasting Stone?”

Su Yun trembled slightly and his heart beat fast. He quickly refuted: “No!”

“If you can’t give me a logical explanation, then I’ll kill you!” Long Xian Li’s voice turned cold again.

Not doing anything and immediately threatening to kill?

Su Yun was frustrated, but he did not show it all. He said unhappily: “If you want to kill me, then please do so now! Please don’t use this to scare me again!”

“You think I don’t dare?” Long Xian Li’s hand seemed to have accumulated the Profound Spirit Qi.

“I can’t believe the third elder of the Divine Sword Sect, Long Xian Li, is actually a person who abuses her authority to bully another who are weaker than her. If this news travels out, I wonder how the world would see you!”

“You...”

Long Xian Li was offended by this rascal, and her chest undulating due to the anger. Following the movements of her chest, slowly moving up and down, it was a scene that could make anyone’s eyeballs drop out.

Su Yun secretly removed his eye contact from the twin peaks and looked back up, swallowed saliva, and replied: “Actually the reason is very simple, telling you won’t hurt. But I wish you will not go out and spread this!”

“Oh? You are really Limitless Sword God?”

“Of course not!” Su Yun would take this secret with time to his grave. He then pointed the the Spring Crystal Furnace and said: “I’m a Pill Cultivating master and I’m good at it. The reason why I can increase in cultivation level so fast is because of my magical pills!”

“Do you take me as a three year old kid? The highest rank of pill requires a powerful Profound Spirit Qi to control and cultivate, you’re merely a fifth rank of the Profound Spirit Intermediate Realm. How is it possible that you cultivate such high rank of pills?”

Long Xian Li muttered. She obviously did not believe in that.

With that, Su Yun laughed sarcastically: “You really are a person

with long hair, but no knowledge!” (TL: person that grows old with a lack of knowledge)

“How dare you humiliate me?” Long Xian Li clenched her teeth so tightly that a few of them were crushed.

She had always been calm and peaceful. She was not sure why she was so fidgety and anxious, like a demon, when she met him. Everything he said would agitate her.

What happened to me? Long Xian Li reflected, but the man opened his mouth to say something.

“You want to kill me again? Yes you can, but before that, let me explain myself for a bit. Most of concocting High level medicinal pills is dependent on the furnace and cultivating pill array, and to utilise these two things will definitely require thick and strong Profound Spirit Qi. But it does not require you to use your own Profound Spirit Qi. As long as you spend money, anyone can hire a cultivator to impart their Profound Spirit Qi into your furnace and pill array, then you can use it to cultivate the pill. After that, it all depends on your individual skills in using the furnace and the pill array’s fire already. The quantity, quality, and variety of the ingredients require thorough research, and the most important thing is the pill’s recipe. Some pills have more than one recipe, and many pill recipes are constantly undergoing improvement and revision, until finally reaching the perfect existing recipe. All in all, everything that I said, it is not possible to explain it to you in a short time! To sum it all up in one sentence: I am skilled in concocting pills, and my level of cultivation speed is so fast due to eating many pills, understand?”

Long Xian Li was shocked.

Had she ever embarrassed herself so much?

After deliberate consideration, inside Broken Rush City, he could differentiate between the real and fake nine stalked spirit grass, so surely his understanding in medicinal pills and ingredients was

profound

It was clearly at a high level of attainment. And even at Blossom Heart Valley, Pill King Zhang Mo was super hospitable to him, reckoning that this person was someone with genuine talent, therefore being deemed important to Zhang Mo.

Thinking about this, Long Xian Li could not help but begin believing in his words.

She turned her gaze towards the few emerald jade pills at the Spring crystal furnace and unexpectedly asked: “What is that?”

“Absolute Foundation Pill!” Su Yun Replied: “This is a fortification male type pill. Any man who uses it will have a sturdy body and strong blood vessels. It is very potent.”

Once Long Xian Li heard that, she flushed red from her cheeks to her ears, and lightly said: “How can you concoct such a vulgar medicinal pill?”

“Potent means it is vulgar?” (TN: Potent can mean two things, one is very strong, second would mean like a viagra, that can make a man last long) Su Yun was ineffable: “I was just describing the effects of the pills to you. In the end, I merely just want to depend on it to grow my physique! It’s you who is letting your imaginations run wild, ok?”

Long Xian Li looked at him with her beautiful eyes, coldly asked: “Since you say this is the male pill, there should be a female pill then?”

“Of course!” Su Yun nodded his head: “The female pill smoothenes the mind, allowing the girl to look very radiant, full of vigor and look even more sharp!”

“Oh? Isn’t that just an ordinary beautifying pill?” Long Xian Li asked.

Su Yun laughed: “That is just its normal efficacy. Although it cannot compare to beautifying pills’ number of results, its best

point can definitely be compared, which is that it allows the user to never look old!”

“Never look old?” Long Xian Li stared blankly.

“Yes, it means that your current looks will always remain, and will not change with the flow of time. If fairy is able to follow my prescription to take this pill, it will allow your beauty to always be with you. Even when you pass away, you will still look as sweet and charming as ever, never looking old!”

Su Yun acted like a salesman, using a voice that was filled with attraction as he said that.

Long Xian Li’s beautiful eyes flitted with anticipation.

To love one’s own beauty, everyone was guilty, especially women, who cared more about their appearance. Everyone would wish that they themselves could be forever young, to be beautiful forever.

But, this only lasted for a moment and disappeared quickly. She breathed in and coldly said: “Appearance for us, is just a mortal skin in the end. Even if you remain young forever, even if you grow old with wrinkled skin, so what? Upon death, everyone will still be dried up bones, so why bother?”

“Fairy is definitely unaffected by this!” Su Yun held up a good sign with his thumb (TN: the ok sign we modern people use with our clenched fist and raised thumb), and said: “I was still planning on gifting Fairy a bottle of the Female Pill, but since Fairy put it this way, then that means I can save it for later on....”

Once Long Xian Li heard that, her eyes showed traces of disappointment, but she did not make a sound.

Su Yun could not help but laugh in his heart when he saw her.

This Male and Female Yin Yang Pill was also taken from Blossom Heart Valley’s secret manual,

It was also an unused secret manual covered in dust, hidden deep inside Blossom Heart Valley's Hundred ingredients chamber, where no one ever browsed through. Though many words in the book were blurred with age, Su Yun spent countless nights mending up the badly damaged parts, so only he knew of the recipe.

"Since fairy is not willing, then there is no need for me to be reluctant! After all, what fairy said is right. Regarding outer beauty, it is just mortal skin, it does not matter!"

"You... This person!" Long Xian Li knew Su Yun's heart was like a mirror, instantly seeing through her own intent. She put down her sword and snorted: "You already knew, but still acted dumb. Don't tell me you really wanted to expose me to clarify everything, then you're contented?"

"I, this person, am really a rectum!" (TN: that is its literal translation, what he really meant to imply was that he is a dumb and slow witted person)

"I don't think so!"

Long Xian Li said, but she herself would not persist to demand. Since she said she did not want it, if she were to change her mind, it would not portray a good image.

Su Yun did not speak.

But after Long Xian Li hesitated for awhile, she said: "Since you are not Limitless Sword God, it means I have wronged you!" After finishing, she took out a secret manual from her cloth bag and placed it on the table.

"You can concoct your Male Pills, and have a sturdy build, but merely depending on pills to assist in cultivation will have its repercussions. This is my Immortal Sword Sect's cultivating method for a strong physique, you can take a look to learn it. Treat it as my apology to you."

Finishing her sentence, she turned and prepared to leave.

“Oh?”

Su Yun took up the blue leathered secret manual and swept the dust and read.

[Three body Induction Method]

A heart ranked high level body cultivating secret skill.

Secret skills were commonly split into the ordinary, heart, spirit, earth, profound, core, sky, noble and master ranks. Each rank had three levels, low, medium, high.

This cultivation technique, if I learnt this secret skill it would be very good, a heart ranked third level technique, as it is an uncommon item. Although this woman is rude and unreasonable, but her reasoning, her ability to admit her mistakes and her attitude is not too bad.

Su Yun thought hard.

Since this brat is definitely Limitless Sword God, but still goes on lying to other people...

But just as Long Xian Li almost reached the door, she abruptly stopped in her tracks.

“Oh yes, Su Yun!”

“What is it?”

“That day at Broken Rush City, Senior here has yet to thank you!”

“That small matter. Moreover, you’re a fairy who is concurrently the third elder of Immortal Sword Sect! being able the help fairy is my honor!”

“You, this person, have such a dishonest mouth!”

Long Xian Li shook her head and was about to leave.

Just then in a flash, her body turned haggard, almost falling

down.

Seeing that, Su Yun was startled.

“What’s wrong with you?”

Chapter 95 - Every Day

Long Xian Li stabilized herself and took out a shimmering blue pill from her storage ring and stuffed it into her petite mouth. Closing her mouth slightly, she stood still and started accumulating Profound Spirit Qi and looked slightly better.

Curious, Su Yun got closer and sniffed: “Are you poisoned?”

“You sure are capable of some things.”

Long Xian Li could not deny.

Su Yun closed his eyes and sniffed once again, this time with more seriousness. In his nose, he sniffed a tinge of sourness, and the rest was an aroma that could freshen one’s mind. This was not a perfume, it was her natural smell.

Seeing this rascal kept sniffing, Long Xian Li frowned: “What are you doing?”

Su Yun came back to his senses: “Nothing much.”

With that, he did not care about Long Xian Li. Instead, he walked back to the Spring Crystal Furnace, took out a few pills and transferred them into a bottle. He left one pill for himself, which he swallowed, sat himself down, and started revolving his Qi.

Long Xian Li saw this and thought of something. She took a few steps forward and asked: “You’re so good with medicated pills, do you know what I am poisoned with?”

“Hmmm?”

Su Yun opened his eyes and rolled his eyes at Long Xian Li: “Fairy, you are the elder of the Immortal Sword Sect. How could you not know what poison you have in your body when you’ve been poisoned so long ago?”

“This poison is unusual...Huh? How did you know I’ve been poisoned for a long time?”

“I can smell it from your scent!” Su Yun chuckled: “And what you just ate was not the regular healing pill. Though this pill is said to be able to cure all poisons, but to cure that poison in your body, you need to eat this for at least three to five years before you can remove the poison completely from your body!”

After hearing that, Long Xian Li stammered, biting on her lower, pink lip and sighed: “This poison was done by one of my seniors. She wanted to kill me, so she cultivated this poison specially for me. I was distracted and fell for the trap. Su Yun, do you have the method to cure this?”

“No.” Su Yun replied frankly.

While he had some relations with Long Xian Li, Su Yun did not want to interfere with her matters so much. Afterall, he was Limitless Sword God. If she found that out, he would be dead. Therefore, the earlier he cast her aside, the better it would be.

Long Xian Li knitted her brows after hearing him: “Are you always this petty? Haven’t I apologised already?”

“They are two separate things. You have wronged me, and apologised, that’s what you should do, but I’m not obliged to cure the poison in you!”

Su Yun’s eyes remained closed, and he started nursing himself.

Long Xian Li stared at him quietly for a pretty long time before she nodded head, and left without saying a word.

She came quietly and left hastily. For people like her, she could not possibly beg.

The ruined hut regained its peacefulness. Su Yun then continued to cultivate, but he was not polite either. He made full use of [Three Body Induction Method] that he shamelessly took, yet he cultivated it justly and with honor.

He must admit that Long Xian Li was generous with her attacks. Using this secret recipe of the stamina pill ‘male and female yin

yang pill' , the body would strengthen quickly and the person would gain energy. A person's health would also get strong. Even though the appearance would look skinny and usual, the muscle and bone content would increase in power.

In the following days, he woke up, cultivated, and slept. He would practice the martial arts behind the mountains, then gather the ingredients he needed to cultivate a pill. After which, he would consume the pill. There did not seem to have any twists and turns.

After consuming the stamina pill, there was a window period. If he continuously consumed the same pill, the body would develop a resistance towards it and would not be able to absorb the benefits of the pill.

The Su Family shop offered a limited variety of ingredients. It was not easy to cultivate a high rank pill. In addition to that, to purchase all of Sprite's Shadow's ingredients was difficult. Now that Long Xian Li was in the Su Family, but Su Family had yet to announce the arrival of the third elder of Immortal Sword Sect, it was clear that between Long Xian Li and Bai Yan Shan, one was dark, the other was bright (TN: to say that one came in as a disguise or an ulterior motive). Both of them seemed to come to investigate the case of Limitless.

If I leave the Su Family now, and went out to purchase the ingredients, I would attract the attention of Long Xian Li. If she took a step further and investigated the ingredients I had bought, I might not be able to clear my name.

Wait a minute!

If I used the reason of cultivating a pill to buy something....maybe I could lie my way out.

Time was running out, and there was a need to make full use of each second. As he was cultivating, he was preparing, too.

Every day he would wake up to the sunrise, then cultivate and

head back to sleep. This continued.

The green smoke spiraled out of the stained chimney on top of the ruined hut. As Su Yun rushed an array, his nose sniffed the aroma coming from the furnace.

Right at that moment, he stopped rushing the array and stood up happily, opening up the lid of the furnace.

A purple ray of light lit up, then two shimmering and fragrant beads stared back at Su Yun.

They lay quietly in the furnace and resonated as like purple jems.

“The colour looks good!”

Su Yun lifted them up to study them. Though it was not as beautiful as they were before, they were considered good enough for a cultivating pill.

“Oh? What is this pill? The aroma is tempting.”

A clear and graceful voice rose once again behind Su Yun.

Shocked, Su Yun turned around to see that Long Xian Li had reappeared quietly behind his back.

“Could you at least knock before you enter?”

Su Yun said grudgingly.

“Why do I have to knock? The door’s not closed.” Long Xian Li stated blandly.

Defeated, by one sentence.

Su Yun shook his head and turned to place the two purple pill on the table. He then took out the spirit pen he purchased earlier to expedite his body’s Profound Spirit Qi to cover the head of the pen, and wrote something in the book that was on the table.

The Profound Spirit Qi on the head of the pen started to distribute alongside the writings of the pen.

“What are you doing?” long Xian Li was curious, she asked oddly.

“Control array!”

Su Yun explained simply.

“Control array?”

“Yes! Control array! One that can increase the efficacy of the absorption of the pill, like nine stalked spirit grass. But this would be inferior to the nine stalked spirit grass!”

As Su Yun drew, he explained.

“Oh.” Long Xian Li replied blandly but stood aside to watch in silence.

After about two joss sticks later (TN: the time taken to burn the joss stick was how the chinese estimated the time, each joss stick takes about half an hour to burn), the completion of holding the array was done. He casually extended his finger to touch the array and it immediately emitted a ray of light that was mellow and full. The light revolved around the two purple pill and slowly drew closer to surround the purple pills. Lastly, it penetrated into the purple pills.

Immediately, Su Yun dispersed the holding array and picked up the pills to study it carefully.

“Since the holding array can increase the absorption of the pill, then why can’t you use this holding array on the other pill?” Long Xian Li asked again.

“Not every pill needs to increase its absorption.”

Gazing at the purple pills, Su Yun said: “The simple pills are easy to absorb and so, it does not require the control array. But the emptiness spirit pill I’m holding on to now is made up of very complex components. It’s unusually dense on the inside of the pill, and the human body can’t dissect it so there’s a need to use a control array. Do you understand?”

Long Xian Li remained quiet.

Observing this, Su Yun handed one pill to Long Xian Li: “Fancy giving it a try? This pill’s contents have been completely dissected and harmonized, so it’s very easy to absorb.”

Long Xian Li raised her eyebrows: “What pill is this?”

“Didn’t I already say it? It’s called the Emptiness Spirit Pill, regarding its effects... eat it and you’ll know.”

Su Yun smiled, but a weird look flashed across his eyes.

If Long Xian Li dared not accept this pill, then it would prove that she was still suspicious of me. If she courageously accepted this pill, then it would prove that she no longer suspect me.

I guess she will not take it.

Su Yun’s heart turned solemn.

But not waiting for Su Yun to think, a white and gentle hand reached out and took the purple pill.

Shocked, Su Yun saw Long Xian Li staring at the pill before she pushed it in between her pink lips and swallowed it.

That pose was so tempting.

“You’re not afraid it’s poison?” Su Yun came back to his sense and asked weirdly.

“Though you are full of shit, and you’re dishonest, I think you’re still a good person.” Long Xian Li said as she closed her eyes slightly.

Could a person be dishonest, full of bullshit, and still be a good person? Su Yun could not catch up with this woman’s thinking.

“Also, I can smell the winter heart fish Qi, dried chrysanthemum, and moonlight stone powder in this pill. There’s no poison in it since these are all ordinary ingredients.”

“Oh...” Su Yun realized: this must be the main point.

Without saying anything, he swallowed the other emptiness

spirit pill, sat down with knees crossed and started absorbing the benefits of the pill.

Long Xian Li did not need this pill as her cultivation level was high. Even though the emptiness spirit pill was considered higher than Su Yun, he could not absorb that easily, but Long Xian Li could easily dissect it and absorb it.

“Huh?”

Instantly, Long Xian Li shocked, she quickly sat with her knees bent and started nursing herself. Within a few breaths, she opened her eyes and exclaimed: “This pill actually has the effect of curing the poison in my body?”

“The effect isn’t huge, it merely just stabilised the injuries in your body so you won’t eat so many of the panacea pills.” Su Yun said with his eyes closed.

Long Xian Li fell silent.

Not knowing how long time had passed, the sun started to set. Su Yun then opened his eyes.

He stretched his body and his bones started cracking.

“So invigorating!”

Su Yun groaned incessantly.

When he fully opened his eyes, the woman who was like a fairy was still standing in front of him.

“Why haven’t you left?”

Su Yun did not understand.

“I’m just curious!”

Long Xian Li bit on her lower pink lip.

“What are you curious about?”

“If people like you decided to invest in one power, you’ll be famous. Even if your cultivation is not high, based on your

understanding of pills and arrays, they will guarantee your wealth and rank. You need not worry about shelter or food. Why... why do you still stay in the Su Family as a foreigner?"

Other than the four walls, there was nothing else. Even the wooden window was broken, how sad.

Su Yun head and let out a bitter smile.

"I once thought of leaving!"

"Then why didn't you?"

"The time's not ripe."

"Time's not ripe?"

Long Xian Li did not understand what he just said.

"There's one person in this prison that I must take with me! If she doesn't leave with me, then it's meaningless for me to leave alone!"

"Is it Qing Er?"

Long Xian Li asked suddenly.

Su Yun looked at her and nodded.

Su Yun and Qing Er's relationship was known to everyone. There was nothing to hide.

"I've heard a lot about you during my stay in the Su Family. Why is it so different from what I heard and what I see? You're so weird."

"How can you believe in what you heard? Most of them are just rumours."

Su Yun said and stood up promptly to clean the furnace.

"That's right."

Long Xian Li nodded and said nothing again.

The moonlight shone like frost.

Su Yun fished up all the residue in the furnace. By the time he turned around, Long Xian Li was gone without a sign. She really was a mystery.

Chapter 96 - What's wrong with you?

It had become a routine these few days when he woke up.

When it was close to evening, Long Xian Li would appear in the small hut without a sound and discuss with Su Yun about pills and the reasoning in medicine. Of course, as a cultivator, Su Yun would also ask about things regarding Profound Spirit Qi, but Long Xian Li had no answers to those questions.

In his previous life, Su Yun could not cultivate because of his gift. But he learnt something from the Evil Religious Sect: The Profound Divine cultivation usually depended on oneself to figure out. Though there was help from the Everlasting Stone, he had no guidance. With the guidance from Long Xian Li, he was enlightened (TN:sudden flash of insight and all is clear).

There was something unclear between the two of them.

When midnight struck, Long Xian Li would also leave without a sound.

Su Yun knew that she probably went on investigating Limitless Sword God.

Even though he had tried testing her the other day, and was sure Long Xian Li had no doubts about him, he was still worried.

And that was because of Qing Er.

When he appeared as Limitless Sword God to save Qing Er at Purple Star Academy, there was a crowd. And though it was chaotic and many might have not seen that scene clearly, the Su Family who were saved saw it clearly. But Qing Er only cared about him when she was in Su Family. If Long Xian Li attacked Qing Er, she might be suspicious again.

Nevermind, as long as he did not admit that he was Limitless Sword God, hiding the Everlasting Stone and Heavenly Crystal properly should do.

Su Yun sighed as he thought.

Although Long Xian Li could guide him in cultivating Profound Spirit Qi, there were many things he could not do when she was around. Afterall, he was Limitless. If he let the cat out of the bag, then things might take a turn.

But Long Xian Li seemed to be interested in the pills, so it was not convenient to banish her. With regards to power, she could easily strangle him with one hand, and, even if he used the Heavenly Crystal, it would be hard to defeat her.

Everyday, when he cultivated, he used it with the pill, and his cultivation level increased enormously. To breakthrough into the realm of the sixth rank was unusually easy.

The sun was setting.

Ka cha.

A gentle sound rang in the hut.

The spirit pen in Su Yun's hand started to fly.

“What are you doing?”

Long Xian Li turned with her beautiful eyes and stared curiously at the paper on the table.

“Writing a list of ingredients.”

Lifting his head, Su Yun tapped the spirit pen on his chin and thought for awhile and started to write on the paper.

“Done!”

He threw the spirit pen aside and picked up the spirit paper to look at.

“The list of ingredients?”

Long Xian Li extended her gentle and soft hands and stated blandly: “Is this regarding the ingredients? Let me see!”

“You won't understand!”

“Is there anything in this world I don’t understand?” Long Xian Li groaned.

Su Yun glanced at her with his doubtful eyes and passed the list over.

Long Xian Li grabbed the list lightly and swung it slightly before putting them in front of her eyes. In a split second, her beautiful eyebrows tensed up.

After a while, Long Xian Li opened her mouth and asked grudgingly: “What’s all these?”

“Ingredients!”

Su Yun laughed: “I intend to cultivate a pill you’ve never seen nor heard before. But as of now, I’m still lacking in ingredients. These are the ones the Su Family does not have and I have to get out of the town to buy!”

“Then, why are you still standing here?” Long Xian Li did not understand.

“Because cultivating a pill requires a lot of preparation. I don’t have the time to leave the Su Family so I need you to help me!”

After hearing it, Long Xian Li’s fair face turned dull: “How dare you send me on an errand!?”

While both Su Yun and Long Xian Li had spent the past few days discussing about pills and cultivation, the relationship between them was unique. But this would not change anything, Long Xian Li was ultimately the third elder of the Immortal Sword Sect and her status was noble. It was something Su Yun could not match to.

“Oh? You’re still keeping your status as the third elder of the Immortal Sword Sect over here?” Su Yun asked.

Long Xian Li promptly kept her silence, but she then kept her angry face away and stayed silent, only to moan coldly before she turned and left.

She left early today. It could be because she was offended by Su Yun, but he did not care about it. What he wanted to do, he would do it.

Peaceful days like these continued for awhile.

In the next few days, Long Xian Li did not drop by. It did make Su Yun feel a tad lonelier. Xin Yu and Xing Yang were both stationed within the house, so, when things got busy, there was no one he could talk to.

But, this silence was broken quickly. News that caused chaos traveled to Su Yun's ears.

Qing Er and Bai Yan Shan had set out to spar on the seventh month.

Seven months later, the Southern Continents and all other regions would hold a massive meeting. This meeting happened triennially. All the sects would gather to form this massive meeting.

Qing Er had strongly asked to spar with Bai Yan Shan, but was rejected by her. Qing Er did not give up. Instead, she forced her way through to make Bai Yan Shan give in, but alas, she was stopped by the patriarch of the Su Family, Su Li Xiong. Because of this, Qing Er was grounded.

As the news spread, doubt grew in Su Yun's heart. Qing Er was always careful. Why was she so reckless this time round? He was worried something might happen, so he did not think so much and rushed towards the patriarch of the Su Family.

The patriarch was no stranger to Su Yun. After contacting Xin Yue and Xing Yang, they both planned for him to slowly and carefully enter the premises.

Remaining still in this small premise.

Two ladies with sabers stood right in front of the door of the small premise.

In the night, Su Yun glanced over at the slaves guarding the small premise at the door. He considered his surroundings and noticed the defense for this small premise was not strict, and so, he climbed the wall and went straight over.

Qing Er's disposition was gentle and calm. For Su Yun, she would listen to the patriarch. Su Li Xiong would not reckon Qing Er would escape from the prison and so he did not set up a strict power to oversee her.

Su Yun entered the small premise very carefully and went into the house.

Ka cha.

The door opened lightly.

“Who?”

A voice sounded through, and together a sonorous sound rang, the treasure sword was pulled out of its sheath, shining in the dark.

“Qing Er, it's me!”

Su Yun went in straight away and whispered.

In this dark house, Qing Er donned in a blademaster outfit, with one hand holding onto the treasure sword. She was shocked when she saw Su Yun entering: “Young... young master, you... why are you here?”

“I heard you are being punished by the patriarch and are put behind bars, so I came here immediately!”

Su Yun explained.

Qing Er heard his explanation and felt a tinge of warmth in her heart.

Ever since the incident where the young master was beaten up by the people inside, he had changed unknowingly. He no longer caused any trouble, and he knew how to care about others.

Did old master and madam's soul have some effect on it?

Deep in her thoughts, Qing Er smiled: "Young master, I'm fine."

Seeing a young lady so delicate and safe and sound, Su Yun finally could let go off the burden in his heart.

"Qing Er, you've always been calm. Why are you so reckless this time round to agitate Bai Yan Shan? What's this for?"

Su Yun asked.

Qing Er sighed: "Young master, Qing Er was forced!"

"Being forced? Why do you say that?"

"Bai Yan Shan came to the Su Family as a representative of the Immortal Sword Sect with the intention to investigate Limitless Sword God. They heard that the Limitless Sword God had once saved the people of Su Family and thought the Limitless Sword God had something to do with Su Family! Therefore, there was a dispute. Even if Bai Yan Shan did not open her mouth, the people of Immortal Sword Sect would interrogate me relentlessly about Limitless Sword God. In addition to that, they will spy on me. Hence, I challenged Bai Shan Yan to spite the patriarch so he'll ground me. This way, things will be a lot more peaceful!"

"That is all?" Su Yun asked again.

Qing Er shook her head: "Yes, young master. Qing Er dares not hide anything from you. It's one thing to achieve peacefulness but, on the other hand, the Limitless Sword God did save my life once. Qing Er would never betray him, even if Bai Shan Yan cancelled the wedding she had with young master, it will be a humiliation to you, young master. It'll be difficult for young master to return to the Su Family. If she doesn't want to accept the fight, that's fine too. But, if Bai Shan Yan accepted the invitation to fight with me, then Qing Er will definitely return the justice to young master!"

After hearing this, Su Yun was filled with gratitude.

Speaking of intentions, he was no match for Qing Er. This fight, whether it would happen or not, she was hoping for either.

“But... Bai Yan Shan rejected my invitation to spar!” Qing Er sighed again and said: “This girl is proud and arrogant. She never asks about people who had a lower power than her. To confront me and spar is something she can never understand. I’m afraid she only sees me as someone who does not qualify to fight with her.”

It seemed as though Qing Er wanted to stand up for Su Yun badly and not ask for peacefulness.

Su Yun chuckled nonchalantly: “Don’t care about her. It’s her issue that she’s proud. But you have to be on your toes when you’re here with the patriarch. Pay attention to the things you’re doing daily, and plan each step and move. Always be careful!”

Qing Er heard and was shocked: “Young...young master, aren’t these the words I told you...?”

“Ah...ah, is it? I must have heard it so many times.” Su Yun laughed embarrassedly. Previously, Su Yun would cause all sorts of troubles in the house, and Qing Er would always say the same thing to him.

Qing Er did not say anything but she studied Su Yun carefully with her bright eyes. After a long time, she then sighed: “Young master, I don’t know why, but Qing Er feels that you’re no longer the young master I know...did something... did something happen?”

Su Yun was surprised at how intuitive Qing Er was. Ever since he woke up, he never went back to who he was before. How could she sensed this? But if he explained the reincarnation and time travel, she might not be able to accept the fact and would be confused. It was better to wait till she had escaped the Su Family before he told her everything.

“Qing Er, I will say something I will do in the future. I will take

you away from the Su Family!”

Su Yun sighed and said.

“Leave the Su Family?”

Qing Er shook her head: “Young master, why are you thinking like this? Let’s not talk about why we’re leaving the Su Family, but about the power the Su Family holds, and the influence the Su Family can bring. These are things we could never imagine. If we leave right now, we will be killed and there will be no chance of surviving.”

Su Yun remained silent but he let out an assuring smile: “As long as you’re safe, I’ll settle everything else.”

With that, Su Yun stood up and left the small premise.

Looking at young master’s shadow leaving the compound, Qing Er trembled in shock: “What is wrong with Young Master?”

....

When he arrived home, it was already midnight. There was something bothering Su Yun’s heart and so, he did not rest. He then immediately sat with his knees bent to cultivate.

Long Xian Li most probably would not drop by in the middle of the night, so he could use this time to cultivate Limitless Sword Art.

A swift flying sword crashed chaotically in the air, the sharp Qi was like knives slicing everything it touches.

The sky started to paint with white colours. Su Yun then left the back of the mountains panting heavily,

When he returned to the small hut, he sat down to nurse himself. But in an instant, a sound ‘luo deng’ landed and a series of footsteps rang by his ear side.

Su Yun opened his eyes and looked over to see Long Xian Li breathing lightly she was sweating slightly and she just stood

beside him.

A gush of aroma rushed into his nose, it was a scent so intoxicating.

“What is up with you?” Seeing Long Xian Li, Su Yun chuckled: “Fairy, your cultivation is so high, how is it that you seemed to just finished a fight? Have you lost your energy?”

Long Xian Li kept her silence and sighed lightly. She glanced over at him and brought out a pile of ingredient from her spatial ring on her jade fingers and laid it across the table.

Su Yun looked over and was stunned.

Chapter 97 - The Troublesome Poison

There was a dazzling line up of items on the table, at least more than ten different types. There were bright smooth gems, magical wood emitting Qi, and different types of sparkling shiny threads....

All these things could be found in the list of ingredients Su Yun previously wrote.

“You... You went to buy all these ingredients for me?”

Su Yun tilted his head and asked in surprise.

“I am interested in everything about that medicinal pill I’ve talked to you about, so I bought these for you. You take these medical ingredients and, when you’re concocting the pill, just let me watch at the side, and that will do.”

Long Xian Li lightly said.

“If fairy wants to watch, it will definitely be allowed.” Su Yun laughed: “Never would I think that Fairy would actually immediately rush a thousand miles to gather all these ingredients for me, thank you!”

“There is no need for thanks. A thousand miles, in my eyes, is just a small issue, but it was because along the journey I met a few hooligans, and consumed some energy when dealing with them, that’s all!” Long Xian Li said.

“Fairy is strong, and has my respects!”

Su Yun laughed, feeling a bit of happiness. Before, he was feeling worried over obtaining these ingredients. Little did he expect that Long Xian Li would surprise him, and everything was settled.

He sorted out the items properly, and had to admit that Long Xian Li really did have skills. If it was Su Yun personally retrieving these ingredients, it would have taken at least a month.

“But, coming back, are all these items really ingredients for

concocting pills?”

Long Xian Li suddenly asked: “I saw five silkworm threads, gold and jade leaves, and etc. I have never heard about these things to be of relevance to concocting pills, more like making cloth arrays...”

Su Yun heard this and jumped a little, but laughed it off and said : “You just have not seen its usage in concocting pills, that does not mean they cannot be used to cultivate pills, and what’s more, all these items are not just meant to cultivate pills. Most of these are assisting materials to help cultivate pills.”

“Really?”

Long Xian Li nodded her head, felt that it made sense.

She was suspicious before, but thinking about how Su Yun was knowledgeable towards medicinal pills, and the pills that he made were monstrous and multicolored, she left the suspicion at the back of her mind.

Suddenly, Long Xian Li face turned white, with her chest undulating slightly, pain flitting across her eyes, and body suddenly felt very light. She struggled to stand straight, almost falling. Looking again, her soft and supple lips was overflowing of dark red blood...

“What’s wrong with you?”

Su Yun was shocked, and immediately asked.

“Not a big deal.” Long Xian Li lightly breathed in a mouthful of air, and took out a panacea pill from her storage ring, and was going to swallow it.

But before the pill entered the mouth, it was snatched away by Su Yun.

“Su Yun...What are you doing?” Long Xian Li did not understand.

Su Yun shook his head: “Although this thousand poison pill dispels poison, it is actually counteracting poison with another poison. Frequent dosage of this pill would lead to it integrating with your poison wound, and it would leave behind poison arteries. When it really reacts, the consequences will be very dire and incurable!”

Long Xian Li long eyelashes trembled, and fear filled her eyes.

Su Yun then threw the thousand poison pill, and questioned her: “Where is your injury? Can you let me take a look?”

“Previously when I killed those hooligans, I did not suffer any wound!”

“I am talking about the place you were poisoned at!” Su Yun said: “Previously the Emptiness Spirit Pill that I gave you could control the poison in your body, but you had to ruin your luck, and cause the poison to act up. That is why this will happen. If you do not dispel the poison in your body quickly, sooner or later, your cultivation will be affected!”

Long Xian Li’s complexion turned white after hearing that. She heavily said: “Never before would I have thought that Senior Sister actually hated me to the bones, to actually use this poison on me. Immortal Sword Sect has been passed down for thousand of years, but it does not have any antidotes against poisons. Looks like I have to seek help from the powerhouses of Blossom Heart Valley!”

“Powerhouses from Blossom Heart Valley?” Su Yun opened wide his eyes and laughed. “Blossom Heart Valley only has a handful of powerhouse, but you are lucky to be standing in front of one now!”

“You know how to concoct pills, and know how to cure poison as well?”

“How would people who know how to concoct pills not know about its polar opposite? This doesn’t amount to much.” Su Yun laughed: “You painstakingly helped me to retrieve all these

ingredients, so I should help treat you until you are well. In this way, there is no loss.”

Su Yun did not like to owe anybody, and, leaving aside the matter of Limitless Sword God, Long Xian Li brought herself across as someone who is honest and serious, with no false words.

Regarding Limitless Sword God, there was nothing else to attract attention to it. Since their current position was different, there was no need to mention anything.

At this moment in time, she knew that her own cultivation path was important, and Su Yun felt that he was not far from the sixth level of the Spirit Intermediate Disciple realm already. Moreover, Long Xian Li repeatedly hastened her travels to purchase the ingredients, resulting in the suppressed poison acting up again. In any case, he felt guilty.

One sentence from Su Yun led Long Xian Li's eyes to dim: “So after this, you wish to cut off all ties with me?”

Hearing this, Su Yun was caught in a trance.

Did this sound like anything that the warm, simple, and elegant fairy would say?

Long Xian Li felt that something was off, and her cheeks turned slightly rosy. She lightly inhaled one breath, recovering her senses back to normal, and changed her facial expression rather quickly.

Su Yun was used to seeing this, laughed: “It is not cutting off ties, just helping out each other. All these ingredients are very important to me, and you managed to help me get them. I naturally want to return this favor to you, since we can be considered as friends, right?”

“Friends?” Long Xian Li thought for a moment before nodding her head.

“Then where are you injured at? Taking a look, since someone with your strength is barely able to take the pain, the poison must

be really potent! We must not delay!”

Su Yun was serious.

Long Xian Li heard, went into deep thoughts and did not say a word.

Su Yun was slightly suspicious: “Fairy? Xian Li, what’s wrong? Where are you injured? Can I take a look?”

“Males and females have differences. You have good intentions, Xian Li knows, but regarding this... I think it is better to let it go.”

Long Xian Li wavered for a moment,

“If you’re not going to treat it, then what are you going to do? Leave it there?”

“In the coming few days I’ll go to Blossom Heart Valley to find some cure.”

“Ah, I know Blossom Heart Valley very well. Your cultivation is very strong. Honestly, other than those old elders, valley lord, and the Pill King, no one can cure your poison. Other than the valley lord, all of them are males. Isn’t it wrong if you went to find them too?”

Seems like the wound on fairy is more shady than it looks, I’d rather that I gain the advantage than those old geezers.

Su Yun thought.

If Long Xian Li knew of his ill-intentions, it would not be known if she would stab him to death.

But to say he was cunning was merely subsidiary. Su Yun still wanted to repay Long Xian Li for helping him buy the ingredients.

Long Xian Li was still hesitating.

Su Yun smiled. Without forcing her, he said: “Xian Li, it’s totally up to you whether you want to seek a cure or hide from medical treatments. Consider it carefully.”

After saying his piece, he started tidying up the ingredients on the table.

Long Xian Li stood one side in silence for a long time before she said something with her graceful voice.

“Su Yun, maybe... I’m too constrained!” she said lightly.

Su Yun lifted his head and looked at her.

He found Long Xian Li nibbling her lips, seemingly like she had made her decision.

“This poison my senior put in me sure is suffocating. As I’m chasing for my ultimate sword dao, with this poison in my body, I won’t be able to cultivate smoothly. Since you have a method, then please help me cure it.”

She sounded determined as though she went through a lot of thinking before coming to this decision.

Su Yun noticed and chuckled: “If you eat this thousand poison pill to treat the poison with poison, it may succeed. Then you can think of how to treat the side effects of this thousand poison pill later. If you’re worried about the man and woman problems, it’s better if I don’t treat them. But just note, the thousand poison pill take a longer time to cure you, you might have to suffer for a bit.”

“It’s alright.” Long Xian Li sighed a fragrant breath and said, “It’s decided. Su Yun, just do it!”

Looks like she made her decision.

Su Yun nodded his head, did not reject, and walked over.

Long Xian Li walked towards the side of the ruined bed and extended her jaded hands, grasping her satin like clothes and gently pulling it downwards.

The satin like clothes draped down her flawless, smooth skin. That wonderful, curvy silhouette was etched into Su Yun’s eyes.

She was as beautiful as a jade, so delicate and elegant that she was

practically a work of God. It might seem too much if there was something more on her, yet it felt like something would be missing if she was lacking anything.

In addition, she was noble and pure, and had a temperament that could not be intruded. Her disposition was as calm as the water. All these things could excite men's desire to conquer her greatly.

If he could get this partner to cultivate with him, then, no matter how tough the journey was, he would still feel blissful.

Su Yun looked straight and felt remorseful. To be placed on par with this woman, only Hu Qian Mei's fox charm can be comparable.

The white satin like clothes continued to slide down, and Su Yun could sensed his mind trembling even greater.

Could it be that the wound...

Long Xian Li took off the satin like clothes right above her right breast, and a small part of her bosom was exposed. Anyone who saw her pure white, smooth skin would lose their soul.

The lady remained calm and tranquil, but her face was blushing red. A tinge of panic flashed through her eyes, then a tinge of complexity. It was hard to know what she was thinking.

But the one thing that caught Su Yun's eyes was a long scar just on top of her right breast and below her shoulder blade, caused by a long sword.

The scar was black. Even though the bleeding had stopped, the black scar stood out on her fair skin. It was unusually eye-catching.

"You...take a look at this poison... what poison is it?"

Long Xian Li trembling voice said.

"Oh...Ok..."

Su Yun secretly swallowed some saliva, his voice going dry, feeling that his entire being was feeling weird.

He pinched his own body, and regained some of his senses.

What's wrong with me? Why is my state of mind wavering? Long Xian Li believes in me, and in this way, if i harbor these kind of evil thoughts, how can I live up to her trust in me?

Moreover, Qing Er was still being bullied in the patriarch, how could I even think about such things?

Su Yun swallowed his breath hardly, and the fire in his eyes faded. Soon enough, he resumed clarity.

Long Xian Li quietly looked over, and, seeing how quickly he regained his composure, her own shyness went down by half. Quietly, admired Su Yun.

“Does it hurt here?”

Su Yun stretched out his hand, and gently pressed on the wound.

Long Xian Li's tender body slightly trembled, as her pure white neck gave rise to a spot of rosy red, she lightly shook her head, and used a breath to reply: “It's not the pain, there is just some numbness there.”

“Numb?”

Su Yun frowned, thought for awhile. Suddenly, he inched his head forward, pressing close to the wound, and took a sniff.

The distance of his head was extremely close to her soft breasts, and was welcomed by a full fragrance of her sweet body scent. This intimacy would immediately cause someone to be extremely ashamed!

“What are you doing?”

Long Xian Li was taken aback. Face turning pale, her hand trembled, and a slender and snow white sword appeared, piercing towards Su Yun.

She was astonished, as there was no reaction at all....

Chapter 98 - One Hundred Demon Extermination God Array

Whoosh!

The glowing snow sword shot forward like lightning towards Su Yun's head, its speed so fast that it was off the charts. If people with cultivation levels like Long Xian Li suddenly made a move, with Su Yun's current level then, he could not even react to it at all.

But.

When the sword edge flew close to Su Yun's head, it took a turn and pierced to the table beside him. The table then immediately shattered into a million pieces.

Su Yun's heart dropped and his expression changed: "What are you doing?"

"I should be asking that." Long Xian Li's face was red, and she was gasping for breath: "You wastrel, how can you be so frivolous?"

"What the fuck!"

Su Yun could not help but cursed: "You're my patient and I'm your spirit doctor. Now that you're poisoned, I have to analyse the makeup of the poison in your body before I can cultivate an antidote pill for you. Unless you expect me to use my naked eyes to differentiate what poison it is??"

Long Xian Li heard this and her anger dropped by half, but with a cold expression she asked: "Is there no other ways?"

"Though I do know some silver needle techniques, I also need one good one ready. This was already difficult. If an ordinary silver needle penetrates your skin, your Profound Spirit Qi underneath your skin would break it. Hence, the using needles for the medical

technique would not work for you.”

“Other than that, there’s no other methods?”

“Oh, there’s still one!” Su Yun exclaimed.

“What is it?”

“This...” Su Yun hesitated: “You probably won’t agree to it!”

Long Xian Li heard and said blandly: “Tell me about it!”

Su Yun opened his mouth abruptly, revealing his big tongue, and shook it. He then said: “Lick my tongue so that I can analyze the makeup of the poison.”

Such actions and behaviour were downright vulgar!

“I’ll kill you, wastrel!”

Long Xian Li’s chest rose up and down and she pulled out her sword. With another moment, the satin like clothes flowed down from her smooth skin and exposed an inner garment with a pair of mandarin ducks sewn onto it.

Her perky breast held the inner garment high. Two soft bosoms perked like a summit through the inner garment.

Su Yun was shocked.

Long Xian Li was stunned too.

But never had he thought that Long Xian Li, a person as noble and elegant as a fairy would wear an undergarment with a pair of mandarin ducks....

“That...” Su Yun opened his dried mouth and felt his abdomen burning. Instantly, there was a reaction below from eating the male and female yin yang pill, causing it to erect as hard as a metal pillar.

If there was no reaction at this point, then it would not be a mind issue, but a man’s issue.

Long Xian Li quickly came back to reality and hurriedly covered

her chest with her hands and pulled up her clothes. Her face was pale. She bit hard on her pink lips and her beautiful eyes started swelling with tears.

“Have you seen enough?”

A voice as cold as a knife rang through.

“No...ah, this is an accident.” Su Yun coughed and said.

Long Xian Li kept quiet and blushed, but her eyes were sparkling more than ever. To make such a strong person like her feel so wronged, Su Yun felt proud of himself.

But this lady's method was too strong. He must know his limits, or else she might lose control of herself and kill him. Then that would be a great loss.

Su Yun took a deep breath and walked over.

“What are you doing?”

“Let go of me!”

Long Xian Li paused and loosened her trembling small hands.

Su Yun went past her head and sniffed the wound. He then turned around and walked towards the Crystal Spring Furnace.

“Is..is that all?” Long Xian Li asked in shock.

“Do you want me to lick it?”

“No way, wastrel!”

“Yeah, right. Even if you're willing to, I won't be. You think you're high in demand!? That everyone would want a bite of you? What if you didn't shower for days and your body is covered in sweat?”

Su Yun said as he took out the ingredients from the storage ring.

Long Xian Li felt she was going to explode in anger. Her hands and the sword shook uncontrollably. After she had cultivated her temperament for so many years, it was broken by this shameless

man.

She gritted her teeth and moaned. The door of the ruined hut opened suddenly and a ray of light shone through. She then disappeared without a trace.

“Just like that she has left? Didn’t she say she wanted to see me cultivate the pill?”

Su Yun glanced outside and shouted, yet no one replied.

This poison in Long Xian Li could not be classified as simple, but could not be considered as complex, either. It could only be labelled as rare because the process of injecting the poison was complemented by the usage of Profound Spirit Qi. This kind of gas poison was unlike the serum poison and the nature of ordinary poison. This poison could pretend to be Profound Spirit Qi, and be undetected by people during the process. The most powerful thing about this poison was that it could easily penetrate all Profound Spirit Qi, so when the poison was released it could seep through like the water. Even though Long Xian Li was strong, her protection Qi could not fend off this poison and thus, she was poisoned.

The person who cultivated this poison definitely did not have a low level of cultivation.

After blending the ingredients, Su Yun placed them aside and took the ingredients Long Xian Li had purchased to start preparing.

There were many ingredients. A few of them were exquisite ingredients which could be bought from the market, but most of them were rare ingredients.

These rare ingredients were at least at the Spirit level. They could not be bought by money, as they needed at least a month to spend on these rare ingredients.

But Long Xian Li managed to get all of them. Where could she

even get them from? Hopefully she did not borrow by using her name as an elder of the Immortal Sword Sect.

Blood potion pen, bone scroll rope, flying moon sky mirror, star pearl and the nine jade heart needles set.

These things were monstrous and multicoloured. They did not look like ingredients, but like tools.

In fact, they were tools to set up an array and had nothing to do with cultivating a pill. He felt guilty for Long Xian Li, as these things were to be used for obtaining the Sprite's Shadow.

If she knew about this, then it would be a disaster.

Su Yun put the ginormous 'flying sky moon mirror' away.

'Flying sky moon mirror' was just like a piece of thin grass paper, but it was crystal jade in colour. This 'flying sky moon mirror' was fifty feet tall and wide, and was made up of the rare 'sun and moon turquoise,' which experts obtain from the heaven and earth. They specifically used a carving knife to carve out inch by inch. The 'flying sky moon mirror' could not be bought by money. To obtain this item, one could only wait for auction news at the 'sun auction.'

Once he laid the flying sky moon mirror on the floor, Su Yun picked up the blood potion pen and started drawing carefully on the 'flying sky moon mirror.'

Pictures of devilish images started appearing on the 'flying sky moon mirror.'

Hundred Demon Extermination God Array!

This array was equally famous to the Heavenly Demon Big Array. The Hundred Demon Extermination God, the ancestor of the demon sect, created this extreme array. It used the massacre of immortals by a hundred demons in the name of God in the demonic continent as the portrait of the array. Then, it would conduct an arrangement that made this array incredibly powerful

and vicious. It was not easy to build this array. Although Su Yun practiced setting up this array a few times, only sixty percent of the time did he managed to set up the array completely and successfully because, if there was a mess up in between, the entire array would fail and the process was very complicated. It must not be disrupted.

The portrait was drawn and the star pearl was placed right in front of the array.

After ensuring the origin of the array, he used a nine jaded star needles set to prick his finger. His fresh blood dripped and penetrated the origin of the array, breathing in Profound Spirit Qi. He continued this for forty nine days straight to bring this array to life.

This big array must ensure that a free space was saved, or else the big array would come to life automatically when it was completed. When the time was near, and the spirit Qi was gushing into the sky, the Su Family, including the patriarch and his servants, all felt it.

When it was completed, he used the bony scroll rope to tie up the hundred demon extermination god array on the 'flying sky moon mirror,' as it can stabilised the array in the mirror and seal off the energy for a while, so it would not cause any injury or harm. The 'flying sky moon mirror' could satisfy all the requirements of the array. When two of the items were placed together, it could form a movable array, a gigantic scroll.

Of course, even when he had placed all ingredients, Su Yun was stalled at the cycle where his blood was dripping down into the origin of the array. This would take a while.

He dared not choose to carry this forward in the daylight. If he met up with Long Xian Li, it would be hard to explain it to her. Therefore, he only started doing this every night.

Long Xian Li didn't come for the next few days. He did not know

what happened either, but it was yesterday that he saw Bai Yan Shan and her people from the Immortal Sword Sect raise their flags, leaving the place as though she did not managed to retrieve any intel.

Su Yun thought and looked at the blue bottle on his new table, then shook his head lightly.

“Do you not get in contact with the outsiders of the Su Family?”

At this moment, a familiar crisp voice sounded like a bell through his ears.

Su Yun turned and saw the beautiful silhouette standing there again without any signs.

“You’re finally here!”

Su Yun smiled.

“I’m here to bid farewell.”

Long Xian Li leaned to one side and said lightly.

“Farewell?”

“Yes, I’m going back to Immortal Sword Sect!”

“Oh yeah, you’ve been here for a while already! There’s no news from Limitless Sword God?”

“There’s nothing, maybe we will go to the Purple Star Academy to look for some clues!”

“Oh.” Su Yun remained quiet.

Long Xian Li looked at him with her beautiful eyes and a tinge of hesitation flashed through them. Finally, she opened her mouth: “Su Yun, are you willing to come with me to Immortal Sword Sect?”

“Huh?”

Su Yun was startled and stared amusingly at the lady.

“When was Long Xian Li so open minded?”

Probably feeling that his words seemed too ambiguous, Long Xian Li started blushing. She took a deep breath and calmed herself down before saying: “Don’t misunderstand. I just don’t wish to let such a talent go to waste. You’re very knowledgeable about arrays and medicine pills, but if you just stay here at the Su Family and they don’t recognize your abilities, it’s such a waste. If you’re willing to serve the Immortal Sword Sect, then I can help you bring Qing Er away and let the both of you join Immortal Sword Sect, and be protected by them. I believe the Su Family will not turn their back on us regarding this!”

A powerful pill cultivator is of the utmost importance to any sect or powerful cultivators. The blossom heart valley was not powerful, yet no one dared to offend was because they had a master of pill cultivation, and seeing that Su Yun had such knowledge about the pills, this was the obvious move. It seemed like, comparing him with the Pill King and the rest, he was a lot more important.

So this was Long Xian Li’s intention.

Su Yun sigh a breath of relief and was moved. But he shook his head instead.

“Are you rejecting me?”

“Actually, I would very much like to say yes, but you won’t be able to do it.” Su Yun smiled bitterly.

“Unable to do what?” Long Xian Li knitted her brows.

“Yes, what you’re seeing is just the facade. Firstly, Qing Er is very important to the Su Family. The Su Family will never let Qing Er leave even if it’s the Immortal Sword Sect requesting for it. That’s to no avail!”

“Oh?” long Xian Li asked blandly: “Why is that so?”

“Because Qing Er is the one that the Profound Sky Sect wants.”

Su Yun muttered.

“Profound Sky Sect?”

In Long Xian Li’s eyes, there was shock. Instantly, as if she thought of something, her face lit up.

“Are you trying to say... that the Su Family has intentions to climb over Profound Sky Sect’s head?”

“Maybe things aren’t as simple as we thought, but it’s up to them. I just want to take Qing Er away from this place.”

Su Yun shrugged his hands tiredly.

Long Xian Li looked at Su Yun quietly, and there was a tinge of sadness written on her beautiful face.

“You... do you like Qing Er a lot?” she asked lightly.

Chapter 99 - Heavenly Scales Fish King

Hearing Long Xian Li's question, Su Yun stood there like a monk, and kept on rubbing his head. (TN: monks have bald heads, it's fun to rub the head, meaning he did not know what to reply)

Do I like her?

He thought for a bit, unsure if he liked her or not. He wanted to say that he did not like her, but could not say it at all.

"She is the last of the family I love, and is very important to me. Although we do not have any blood relations, in this world, the one I care about the most is her, and the one she cares about most is me." After thinking for a long time, Su Yun spoke up.

Long Xian Li heard what he said and, with a flicker of light in her eyes, nodded her head, but did not say a word.

She took out a few Pearl bead pills from her bosom and placed them on the table.

"This period of time, interacting with you, has led me to benefit in my knowledge of pills and medicines, and you can be considered my teacher. The Su Family has many complicated affairs, so you must definitely be more careful. Although you have a secretive mind, your cultivation level is too low, and you cannot stick your head out for everything. If you can avoid danger then avoid it, as people will usually aim for the head. You must not show off your power, and lead people to worry. If you have any troubles, you must definitely come to the Immortal Sword Sect to look for me. This is my Immortal Sword Sect personal concoction of the Sprouting bud pill, which requires uncommon materials to be refined. No matter how good you are in concocting pills, you might not be able to get it. It will aid you to easily break into the sixth stage of Spirit intermediate realm, which you can only take once per level! You don't have to be anxious or worry about anything regarding cultivation. You have to be steady, to act with undue

haste would only produce the opposite of your desired result...”

Long Xian Li slowly advised, with her voice softly floating into his ear like the spring wind, bewitching anyone that hears it.

Su Yun quietly watched her soft and supple face, and his heart raced, a feeling he’d never felt before.

“I have probably said too much,” Long Xian Li started to blush and ended abruptly with a few sentences.

After putting the pill bottle in her fingers down, she turned to leave.

“Wait.”

Suddenly, Su Yun somehow mysteriously reached out his hand, and held her own soft, boneless, and small, tender hand.

Long Xian Li trembled from head to toe, and looked at him with her beautiful yet completely astonished eyes.

But.

But strangely, she did not struggle, and just turned her smooth face to one side, not looking at him.

Su Yun did not let go, but mockingly laughed: “Then, can I ask you a question?”

“Speak.”

“Do you treat everyone like this?”

“You....” Long Xian Li beautiful eyes had a look of worry and, with an angry expression, she retracted her soft and boneless small hands, heavily sighed, and turned her body. In a blink of an eye, she was out of the wooden house, and had already disappeared.

“Eh?”

Su Yun scratched his head, looking a bit confused.

He only wanted to understand more. After all, when he confronted Long Xian Li previously, he was Limitless and he

always felt that she was a very cold woman. Now that he had seen her, it seemed that he was wrong about it.

Exactly what kind of person is she?

“Don’t tell me this little girl from the Immortal Sword Sect has fallen for me?” Su Yun examined himself closely, feeling that it was highly likely.

.....

.....

After Long Xian Li left, the small ruined hut turned peaceful again.

But Su Yun did not rest. Once he finished cultivating for the day, he started some preparation work.

After eating Long Xian Li’s ‘sprouting bud pill’, his Profound Spirit Qi acted up quickly, with some signs of breakthrough. Su Yun did not delay any further. He sat down with his legs crossed and started tuning his Qi and comprehending.

But with just a week’s worth of work, he rose from the Spirit Intermediate Disciple fifth stage to the sixth stage.

In a month’s time, he had ascended another stage. This speed was astonishing.

Su Yun was beyond happy. The amount of Profound Spirit Qi that Su Yun managed to cultivate awoke the sword elder, who was in deep sleep for half a month. Knowing Su Yun had another breakthrough, the sword elder seemed to be speechless and shocked.

Of course, the everlasting stone and ‘sprouting bud pill’ exhibited a lot effects.

After the breakthrough, he could not slack on his cultivation, but time was tight. He needed to make full use of the time for preparation work.

Today, Su Yun stayed in the ruined hut and used the nine jaded heart needle set. Drips of fresh blood containing Profound Spirit energy fell onto the hundred demon extermination god array, painting the array bloody red.

Du!

At this time, a series of hastened knocks came from the door.

Shocked, Su Yun immediately dismantled the nine jaded heart needle set and rolled up the 'flying sky moon mirror,' then went to open the door.

But without waiting for him to open it, the tottering door was kicked opened by somebody else.

“Who is that?”

Su Yun's expression sunk and shouted in anger.

“Inner Sect Disciple Su Xin Zhen!”

The person arrogantly and angrily shouted back: “Where is Su Yun?”

“I am here!”

A soft mutter came out.

Su Xin Zhen raised his eyes to look, did not see any human figure. Only a massive iron fist flying towards his face.

The Iron fist was very fast, producing winds behind it with a Strong Qi. He did not even have the chance to dodge and got hit by the Iron Fist. His entire body flew backwards, thrown out the door, and fell to the ground. Only after being pushed into two rolls did he manage to climb back up, with a massive nosebleed.

“Xin Zhen!! Are you ok?”

“How dare you touch us disciples of the inner sect. Are you tired of staying in the Su Family?”

Two other inner sect disciples ran over to help Su Xin Zhen up.

One of them grit his teeth and stared at Su Yun. his eyes were filled with anger.

These are the three disciples of the inner sect. They wore luxurious clothes and had a token ring hung around their waist. All of their Qi seemed strong and were Profound Spirit disciples of the first level cultivation. At the outer sect, they seemed friendly. But in front of Su Yun, they were not worth mentioning.

“Staying in the Su Family?”

Su Yun smiled slyly and said: “Didn’t the Su Family set rules that the inner sect disciples are not to beat up the outer sect disciples? What can all of you do even if I beat him up?”

The regulations of the Su Family stated that the disciples of the inner sect should not bully the disciples of the outer sect. But this regulation did not have its effects. The disciples of the outer sect hindered the power of the disciples of the inner sect and were bullied. They dared not let anyone know and, amongst the regulations, there was not one that stated that the disciples of the outer family should not bully the disciples of the inner sect. Because of that, the patriarch thought that such regulation was not impossible. Are the ones who had the power to bully the disciples of the inner sect fit to be disciples of the outer sect?

But there was one exception, and that was this freak.

“Su Yun! You’re crazy!! I’ll teach you a lesson today on how to be a person!”

Su San Feng rushed to Su Yun in a fit of anger, with his fist accumulating the Profound Spirit Qi.

As compared to the disciples of the outer sect, this fist was fast and fierce, and the fingers between the fist wiggled continuously. The speed at which the fist changed direction was quick, and it was covered in bursts of meticulous skills...

But, Su Yun restrained all his Qi within his body. This group of

people assumed that Su Yun was only a Profound Spirit disciple with only a rank of tenth in the realm. To let these disciples of the inner sect know what his cultivation realm was like now was as easy as ABC and would humiliate them at the same time.

The fist had yet come close to Su Yun before, suddenly, a hand extended out and stopped the fist quickly.

Pa!

A crisp sound rang out.

The fist, which was traveling at such a fast speed, was brought down.

The inner sect disciple Su San Feng was distracted and, as he looked towards Su Yun, he received a ferocious kick to his abdomen.

Boom!!!!

Su San Feng was immediately kicked and flew out, hitting the back of his head on a large rock. When he dropped onto the floor, he had already fainted, not moving at all.

One kick caused an inner sect disciple to fall unconscious. Was this fellow still an outer sect disciple?

Su Xin Zhen and the other guy was stunned.

“You guys should have heard of my name, Su Yun, right?”

Su Yun patted himself, walked over and coldly stared at the two guys: “So what if I slaughtered Su Kuang? Have you guys forgotten? Do you need me to slaughter a few more inner sect disciples, so that you all will have a better impression of me?”

As his voice came down, a domineering and dense baleful aura flitted across his eyes.

The both of them were scared out of their wits, and finally Su Xin Zhen remembered the inner sect disciple who competed at the competition and died a horrible death, creating a disturbance that

no one could forget.

“You..You are the Su Yun that killed Su Kuang?” Su Xin Zhen who was trembling, asked.

“Does the outer sect still have another Su Yun?”

“.....”

They were so intimidated that they were completely unable to say anything.

No one could expect that this outer sect disciple could be so ruthless!

Su Yun frowned, and asked: “Say, what are you looking for me for?”

“The... The... inner sect has released a command: three... three days later, they want...want those who have been chosen... to go... go to Tai.. Tai Qing Lakeside to destroy a monster...” Su Xin Zhen found his courage to speak.

“Three days later to head to Tai Qing Lakeside to destroy a monster?”

Su Yun heard what he said, lowered his head, and went into deep thought.

After a short while, he raised his head and asked: “What monster is it?”

“It is said to be the ‘Heavenly Scale Fish King’.”

“‘Heavenly Scale Fish King’? That old monster that has been living for five hundred over years?” Su Yun was flabbergasted.

“It should be...that?”

“This time, how many people did Su Family deploy?”

“Roughly.. Roughly sixty or more.”

“Who are they?”

“Twelve of the inner sect disciples. The others are the disciples of the outer sect.”

“Did the Su Family send such a team over to seek death?” Su Yun laughed sarcastically: “All the other teams there had an exceptional level of Profound Spirit Qi to go against the Heavenly Scale Fish King! To send such a team over is basically to kill them.”

“I heard the mission this time round was proposed by other sects in hope that we, the Su Family can help out with something. There are many sects going to kill the Heavenly Scale Fish king. The Su Family is going only for show only. They are only required to pull off some profound techniques, and they need not fight for their lives!”

Su Xin Zhen wiped away the blood from his nose.

“Oh...”

Su Yun nodded his head, but he remembered about a particular treasure.

The Heavenly Scale Divine Eyes!

A treasure that would create a large disturbance in the world.

Heavenly Scale Fish King would only produce one every five hundred years. The only thing was that many people still did not know that the Heavenly Scale Fish King’s eyes could be refined into a treasure and, if one could attain the Divine eyes, it would provide over a hundred thousand beneficial uses.

The two inner sect disciples carefully stole a look at him, thinking of when they would be able to leave. But what they saw was a twinkle in Su Yun eyes, like he was considering some things.

“Is it mandatory to attend this mission?”

Su Yun suddenly asked.

“Yes, everyone has to attend. The attendees will receive a supply provided by the Su Family. if they do not attend, then they would

be dealt with according to the Su Family regulations!”

Su Xin Zhen exclaimed hurriedly.

Su Yun nodded his head: “I understand, I will participate!”

“That... That’s great, then we will meet three days later. Su Yun, I... we are leaving!”

Su Xin Zhen stood up in a hurry, smiled and said. Then he quickly ran to the unconscious Su San Feng and left.

“Hold up!”

Suddenly, Su Yun yelled. The two trembled and turned to look at Su Yun in fear: “Is... is there anything else??”

“Pay for the repairing of the door before you can leave!”

Su Yun pointed at the broken door on the floor.

“About that... how much money?”

“How much money do you all have?”

“I... I only have four hundred spirit coins with me...”

“What about you?” Su Yun looked to the other one.

“I have... I have five hundred and eleven spirit coins...” the person trembled as he said.

Su Yun pointed at Su San Feng who was in coma: “First, throw out all the spirit coins on him first.”

Su Xin Zhen dared not delay any further, he quickly disrobed the spirit coin bag around Su San Feng’s waist and threw it hastily at Su Yun.

Su Yun caught it and studied it. He then said: “To repair the door, I still need nine hundred and eleven spirit coins!”

“.....”

Chapter 100 - The First to Take Action Gains the Advantage (1/4)

Within the elegant courtyard.

Bang, bang, bang...

A series of explosion rang within the courtyard.

From afar, a loud voice broke the silence and all the slaves working in the courtyard got a shock. One of the slave who was carrying firewood in his arms even dropped them to the ground and darted his eyes in all directions in fear.

But, nothing happened in the surrounding.

Not only that, nothing in the courtyard moved. Not even a speck of dust was lifted up.

A person who wore a jade crown and donned with a jaded green robe. On one hand, he held a sword. The edge of the sword pierced through a pseudo rock. The sword shimmered like the spring waters without piercing the inside of the pseudo rock. Instead, it just touched it lightly.

Then....

Hua la.

The wind blew and the pseudo rock immediately turned into powder and fell to the ground....

The slaves who stood at the side stared in shock.

“Sword explosion technique! The Profound Spirit Qi was suppressed within the sword. With the use of Qing Gong, the Qi was pushed out of the sword and into the target’s body, resulting in the explosion of the Profound Spirit Qi . But this explosion did not result in any wreckage yet it had a shocking ability of slicing. Every kind of explosion could elicit nine thousand nine hundred

and eighty one slices, tsk tsk tsk, this power is astonishing!”

A handsome man with a plaited hair clapped as he stood one side, he was smiling ear to ear as he complimented.

Su Dong Fang who was wearing the jaded green robe released the sword in his hand. Without changing his expression: “This sword explosion technique may seem shocking but to attack the bull’s eye is no easy task. If not used correctly, then it would be of little value.”

“With Master Dong Fang’s power, why do you have to insult others? When your sword is aimed correctly, it’s also enough to give a hard time to the opponent! I believe within a few years, Master Dong Fang will be able to enter the main house and become the successor of the Big Clan elder!”

Su Huang Ming, the man in plait stated.

“My father the big clan elder holds the duty as a patriarch with responsibilities, and it cannot be passed down. I know what I am capable of!”

Su Dong Fang kept his sword and waved his hands at the slaves so that they could clean up the area in this place. After that, he walked to the pavilion and sat down to pour himself a cup of tea.

“Huang ming, why have you come here?”

“Oh, it’s nothing big. Yesterday, I sent three outer sect disciples to announce the mission of the Tai Qing lakeside, but they were all beaten up by an outer sect disciple!”

Su Huang Ming walked over and poured himself a tea as well. He drank up his tea before saying a word.

Su Dong Fang did not mind either, he said blandly: “Outer sect disciple? Do you know which gang did it? They are quite gutsy.”

“Gang?” Su Huang Ming shook his head: “Not a gang, the opponent is only one person!”

“One person?” Su Dong Fang was stunned. The cup in his hand trembled and the water spilled over.

One outer sect disciple beat up three inner sect disciples? This was shocking.

“Yes! Just one person!” Su Huang Ming smiled with his eyes: “It is the one who killed Su Kuang, Su Yun!”

“Oh?” Su Dong Fang laughed: “It’s that person again? Sigh, I didn’t expect he would offend our Master Huang Ming this time round! How outrageous is he! I wonder how you, Huang Ming, would like to deal with him?”

It’s not like as if you don’t know how I work. But I’m a tad worried as this time it is a person from the Su Family!” Su Huang Ming said.

“Aye! What’s there to worry about?”

Su Dong Fang placed the cup down and waved his hand: “Just do what you have to do, if anything happens, I’ll deal it for you!”

“If I kill that little rascal?” Su Huang Ming asked slyly.

Su Dong Fang fell silent after hearing, after which he then laughed: “That, I can settle too!”

“Looks like I didn’t waste my trip here!”

Su Huang Ming stood up, turned and left.

“Su Yun, ah Su Yun, you’re too careless. You even dare to offend anyone!” Su Dong Fang shook his head, stared at Su Huang Ming who was leaving, stood up and left for his personal room.

.....

.....

Three days later.

The Su Family inner sect mission.

Venue of the mission: It is located one thousand three hundred

miles from the Tai Qing city at the shore of the Southern China Sea. This place is well loved and protected by the people of Tai Qing.

The plaza at the outer sect of the Su Family.

All the chosen disciples came to the plaza and gathered together to wait for the inner sect disciples.

Su Yun stood at the back of the crowd alone. Ever since he killed Su Kuang, he was completely isolated. Everyone knew he offended Master Dong Fang. feared being dragged down, they kept a distance away from him. Even previously those who would greet Su Yun dared not speak a word with him.

After half an hour, an uproar broke out within the crowd. The inner sect disciples led by Su Shi Long walked towards the plaza.

The outer sect saw the uproar and started gathering around the plaza. The scene was splendid and crowded.

Su Shi Long stood on the grandstand of the plaza and silence filled the plaza.

The disciples of the inner sect wore bright clothes as they stood behind Su Shi Long. lined up, they looked impressive. As compared the outer sect disciples' simple living, they seemed like world's apart.

Su Yun studied the inner sect disciples and did not find Su Xin Yue or Su Xing Yang's presence. It seemed like they were on a mission.

There was no peace in the inner sect since he got in. Neither was there time for him to cultivate. Most of the time was spent on carrying out the missions of the inner sect. Only after some time was he fully accepted and nurtured by the inner sect.

Su Shi Long's scanned the plaza with dignity and his gaze fell on the Su Yun, who was standing behind the crowd. He snorted before opening his big mouth.

“I believe all of you know what the mission is for today, right? Yes, it is to help all the sects to exterminate the Heavenly Scale Fish King at Tai Qing lakeside!”

“Heavenly Scale Fish King is the ultimate demon at Tai Qing lakeside and has a cultivation of at least eighth rank Spirit Soul Disciple realm. It has been sleeping in the lake for close to a hundred years. Recently, he has been stirring up some trouble. The Protector of Tai Qing passed away close to thirty years ago, and the current Protector lacks experience and the capabilities to deal with the Fish King. Thus, he had asked for help from everyone!

“The Fish King stirred up trouble and had cost the lives of many. Up till date, there are three cities and seven counties that had been converted. Countless common people are missing. This is a chance to fight for honour for the Su Family! All of you have to give your all in this fight, to ambush and kill the Fish King to gain honour for the Su Family. Is that clear?”

“Yes, Master!”

All of them shout unanimously.

But everyone knew that this was all just talk. The Su Family is only one out of the many households. Their main objective was to flourish and leave a legacy. Those knight-errant, emergency relief heroic acts to save the world were all done by the sects. The Su Family merely wanted to be named after this time, otherwise, they would not send so many outer sect disciples out.

The spirit intermediate disciples and spirit core disciples are fighting a Spirit Soul Disciple? That would be a laughing joke of the world!

Su Shi Long nodded his head in satisfaction and, thereafter, he raised his hand to wave it slightly. A man with plait emerged from behind.

The man had a yellowish colored, long face. His gaze was

powerful and, between his brows, emitted a strong Qi, like an arrow ready to be shot out.

“Su Huang Ming!”

Su Shi Long shouted.

The man immediately wrapped one fist in his palm and saluted: “Master, Huang Ming is here!”

“This time, you will take care of leading the group! Remember, you have to ensure the safety of the Su Family Disciples! Do not disappoint the Su Family!”

Su Shi Long instructed.

The man respectfully said: “Huang Ming is determined live up to Deacon Master’s expectations, and will be responsible for my Su Family’s trust!!”

“Very good! Once you all have packed your supplies, immediately depart!”

Su Shi Long nodded his head before turning to leave.

“We respectfully see off Deacon Master!”

Everyone shouted loudly.

Ten outer sect disciples carried the mission in boxes and walked over to give one to everyone.

The box mainly contained healing medicine, rejuvenating Qi pills, and some other lower ranked hidden talisman to help keep lives. Although it was no expensive but it was useful.

The people who received the box all opened the box eagerly. The outer sect people gathered together and peeped at the inside of the box curiously. Only the inner sect people did not care. They had seen much pricier things in their daily living.

“Who has yet to receive the box?”

A disciple of the outer sect shouted.

“Me!”

Su Yun shouted at him.

He saw Su Yun and brought a box over.

Su Yun stretch his hands out, ready to receive the box.

But at this point of time, a hand suddenly stretched out from the side, snatched the box, and took it away.

Su Yun was startled, turned to look, only to see the owner of the hand was the man who was previously standing on the stage, the plait haired Su Huang Ming.

“Ah, Young Master Huang Ming!”

Someone hurriedly called.

Su Huang Ming ignored him, his eyes carried a bit of laziness and arrogance, staring at Su Yun, the box in his hands continuously swaying.

Su Yun frowned, wrinkling his brows, his eyes looking straight back at Huang Ming.

Su Huang Ming had walked to confront Su Yun and set his gaze on Su Yun to study his body features. Su Yun’s head was taller, leaving Su Huang Ming to be half a head shorter than him, and, adding on Su Yun’s well proportioned physique, gained a sense of prominent superiority.

But Su Huang Ming had a group of inner sect disciples as followers behind him for backup, and practically all the inner sect disciples were under him. To talk about power, Su Yun was practically losing by eight thousand ten hundred miles.

“You are Su Yun?” Su Huang Ming opened his mouth.

It was as if he was smiling on his face, but his eyes squinted.

“Is there a problem?” Su Yun asked.

“Three days ago, you beat up Su Xin Zhen and the other people.

According to regulations, I cannot give you the supplies!" Su Huang Ming said arrogantly.

"When did Su Family have such a regulation?" Su Yun asked with his brows knitted.

"There wasn't in the past. But now we do!"

Su Huang Ming threw the supply backwards and said: "And this regulation is set by me. Why? Do you have any objections?"

As he was talking, the other twelve inner sect disciples gathered their power and encircled Su Yun. All of their faces were calm and their fists clenched tight.

Were they trying to pick a fight?

It did not seem so simple. These people all held anger in between their brows. If they only wanted to help Su Xin Zhen vent anger, they would not be like this.

Su Yun thought. He knew Su Huang Ming was not friendly to him and so he kept all the anger to himself and kept calm: "No."

"Good!"

Su Huang Ming patted his shoulders and muttered: "May you have a safe journey!"

After that, he patted Su Yun's shoulder again and left with his face beaming in a smile.

Su Yun stared Su Huang Ming's back as he left, his heart turning cold.

"Don't tell me Su Huang Ming would really kill me for those people? They carried such great killing intent in them. I'm afraid they only wanted an eye for an eye. I couldn't care less. Whatever reason they have, at least... I have to be the first to take action to gain the advantage."

Thinking to this point, Su Yun finalized the resolve to kill them in his heart. He then turned and left.

Table of Contents

[Limitless Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1 – The Trash Master and Phoenix Maid](#)

[Chapter 2 - Not Paying Back](#)

[Chapter 3 - The Appearance of a Fellow Traveler](#)

[Chapter 4 - Mysterious Devil Technique](#)

[Chapter 5 - People Sneaking in the Night](#)

[Chapter 6 - Limitless Sword Arts](#)

[Chapter 7 - The Seven Limitless Swords](#)

[Chapter 8 - I Am Strong Enough](#)

[Chapter 9 - The Crescent Moon Fruit](#)

[Chapter 10 - The Lost Treasures](#)

[Chapter 11 - Secrets of the Crescent Valley](#)

[Chapter 12 - The Wicked Disciples](#)

[Chapter 13 - I am called Sword God](#)

[Chapter 14 - A Genuine Righteous Individual](#)

[Chapter 15 - Are you going to block me?](#)

[Chapter 16 - The Heavenly Crystal](#)

[Chapter 17 - Fighting and Fleeing](#)

[Chapter 18 - A Spirit Novice's Counter-attack](#)

[Chapter 19 - Sixty Thousand Spirit Coins](#)

[Chapter 20 - Mighty Young Master](#)

[Chapter 21 - Su Dong Fang](#)

[Chapter 22 - The Thirst for Power](#)

[Chapter 23 - Tournament Selection](#)

[Chapter 24 - Who is Second? Who is First?](#)

[Chapter 25 - An Overnight Reversal](#)

[Chapter 26 - No Mercy in Battle](#)

[Chapter 27 - Eating Raw Marble](#)

[Chapter 28 - The Disparity in Strength](#)

[Chapter 29 - The Surprising Victory](#)

[Chapter 30 - The Hidden Devil Technique, One Move to Kill](#)

[Chapter 31 - Su Family's Punishment](#)

[Chapter 32 - Inside the World of the Everlasting Sword Sheath](#)

[Chapter 33 - First Sword: Engraved Dragon Blade](#)
[Chapter 34 - Borrowing and Taking](#)
[Chapter 35 - The Forbidden Technique, Becoming the Devil](#)
[Chapter 36 - A Few Steps Below](#)
[Chapter 37 - Battle of Gu Xie Mountain](#)
[Chapter 38 - The Sky Shrouding Sword](#)
[Chapter 39 - Simply Not Giving Up](#)
[Chapter 40 - Spirit Lord Qi](#)
[Chapter 41 - Grass](#)
[Chapter 42 - Do you admit you are an idiot?](#)
[Chapter 43 - One Hundred Loopholes](#)
[Chapter 44 - The Pill King](#)
[Chapter 45 - Su Family's Summon](#)
[Chapter 46 - One Sword, Two Blades Training](#)
[Chapter 47 - Mandatory Trial](#)
[Chapter 48 - Inside Martial Bone Mountain](#)
[Chapter 49 - He left just like that](#)
[Chapter 50 - A Resolute Person's Revenge is Ten Years](#)
[Chapter 51 - Hidden Killing Intent](#)
[Chapter 52 - Senior, Save Me](#)
[Chapter 53 - Cutting Weeds and Pulling the Roots](#)
[Chapter 54 - If you have the Guts, then Come in here!](#)
[Chapter 55 - Dead](#)
[Chapter 56 - The World behind the Gate of the Fragmented Void](#)
[Chapter 57 - Triple Yuan Gas](#)
[Chapter 58 - Blade Dress](#)
[Chapter 59 - A Beauty](#)
[Chapter 60 - You are Su Yun?](#)
[Chapter 61 - Back to the Su Family](#)
[Chapter 62 - Really True](#)
[Chapter 63 - Want to die? Just come here!](#)
[Chapter 64 - Fine, Just Slaughter them all \(Part I\)](#)
[Chapter 65 - Assassination of the Quiet Night \(Part II\)](#)
[Chapter 66 - The Biggest Inconvenience \(Part III\)](#)
[Chapter 67 - Once in a Millennium Rare Physique \(Part IV\)](#)
[Chapter 68 - At Wit's End \(Part I\)](#)
[Chapter 69 - What Date Is Today? \(Part II\)](#)
[Chapter 70 - A Hundred Swords \(Part III\)](#)
[Chapter 71 - A Fraud \(Part IV\)](#)

[Chapter 72 - This Handsome and Talented Fellow \(5/5\)](#)
[Chapter 73 - Prohibited Drug Master \(1/5\)](#)
[Chapter 74 - My Supply of Goods Is Extremely Abundant, I Have Everything That You Need \(2/5\)](#)
[Chapter 75 - The Damned Sword \(3/5\)](#)
[Chapter 76 - A Sword's Hidden Intent \(4/5\)](#)
[Chapter 77 - The Situation Isn't Really Good \(5/5\)](#)
[Chapter 78 - The General Assembly](#)
[Chapter 79 - The Endless Circle of Lies](#)
[Chapter 80 - The Assault's Bottom Line](#)
[Chapter 81 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 1\)](#)
[Chapter 82 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 2\)](#)
[Chapter 83 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 3\)](#)
[Chapter 84 - Limitless Sword Lord \(Part 4: 1/5\)](#)
[Chapter 85 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 5: 2/5\)](#)
[Chapter 86 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 6, 3/5\)](#)
[Chapter 87 - Limitless Sword God \(Part 7, 4/5\)](#)
[Chapter 88 - Unleashing the Sword!](#)
[Chapter 89 - The Power of the Hundred Swords](#)
[Chapter 90 - Profound Spirit Essence Opened!](#)
[Chapter 91 - Limitless Sword God \(Finale\)](#)
[Chapter 92 - Ming Ying School](#)
[Chapter 93 - Seen Through?](#)
[Chapter 94 - A Fairy's Emotions](#)
[Chapter 95 - Every Day](#)
[Chapter 96 - What's wrong with you?](#)
[Chapter 97 - The Troublesome Poison](#)
[Chapter 98 - One Hundred Demon Extermination God Array](#)
[Chapter 99 - Heavenly Scales Fish King](#)
[Chapter 100 - The First to Take Action Gains the Advantage \(1/4\)](#)